



独一无二的天赋觉醒，逆天改命  
校园学霸，商业精英，武功高手，异能王者，逆天妖孽  
最强妖孽的崛起之路

# ARCHFIEND

BOOK 01

*Uncanny Night Visitor*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

**Archfiend**

(最强妖孽)

by

**Uncanny Night Visitor**

(厄夜怪客)

# Synopsis

---

Qi Condensation. Foundation Establishment. Core Formation. In the current world, only these three realms are known to be achievable. Nascent Soul is but a legend and the realms above it lost to the the long river of time. The modern era is known as Cultivation Civilization, a balance of power and civility, excess and moderation. While cultivation remains a secret practice, it has long since exposed itself to the mundane world, quietly intertwined with each facet of society. While the world appears to be at peace, what lies underneath is a conflict between human, cultivator, and demon, brewing for ages and waiting to implode. Yet in the wake of humanity's rapid industrialization, qi—and consequently cultivation—is dying.

Besieged on all sides by demon and human, Xu Yangyi, our protagonist, strives to reach the apex, armed only with esoteric knowledge and his cool pragmatism, and to avenge the unjust deaths of both his parents. Embroiled in conspiracy and with adversity waiting at each turn, he is undeterred in his conquest to seek the Grand Dao and break free of this world's shackles, claiming his title as the pioneer of an era!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by XTB @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1: Disciplinary and Investigations Unit

---

Within a blood-soaked room, there was a small child that appeared to be alone. He kneeled on the floor with a shocked expression as he incredulously surveyed the room that he had once called his home with wide eyes.

From the wreckage, the reeking smell of blood assailed his nostrils as if it sounded the knell of a death god, urging him to hurriedly turn back, flee towards the door, and never return. His legs trembled violently as he saw blood flowing out from his parents' bedroom, an abnormal red and an irregular quantity, making him feel like he had seen a demon. Sluggishly moving his legs, he walked over step by step like a robot.

Steeped in thick, sticky blood, his shoes made a squelching sound as they pulled up dark-red threads. "Urragghh..." Already, a soul-sucking screech rang out from the rusty bedroom door. Soon afterwards...

The boy saw another set of eyes and a face that he would never forget for all eternity.

Crash... The world turned black and white. The image of the face froze and crumbled away like a withered leaf in the wind.

Tightening his palm, Xu Yangyi awoke from the dream realm he had encountered countless of times. He subconsciously clenched his fist, only feeling his sweat-covered palm.

"Huff..." He picked up the mug in front of him and rocked it: "It's already been ten-odd years..." He held the mug and calmly looked outside: "I wish I could turn It back into a dream..." He pursed his lips for a sip. The tea was already ice-cold.

He was approximately twenty-one or twenty-two years of age. His brows were strong and course without any curve, appearing

like two swords soaring upwards. His gaze was steady and his eyes half-lidded. Not obese, but neither thin, he was nearly 1.81 meters tall. From everyone's view, they could see the faint swell of muscle beneath his police uniform.

In Sanshui City's Disciplinary and Investigations Unit office for major cases, it was commonplace to be in uniform. Especially since he was the current sitting captain. It happened to be August, and the evening heat smeared the floor, causing steam to rise from underground. It wouldn't be unwarranted to say that the office was a steamer basket.

The temperature was such that it was even more unbearable on the outside. Not a single person was still wearing the police uniform, and for the most part, were wearing short sleeves. He was the only one acting strictly according to the rules, so that even the button on his neck was fastened tightly. It was strange, though, there wasn't even a single trace of sweat on his neck. And even more, he hadn't even shouted it was hot at all. It was as if he didn't have any feelings towards the cold or heat.

The electric fan above whirled, its ear-piercing sound offending his hearing. In his present surroundings, there were ten people near him wearing shirts, men and women using datasheets to fan themselves, seated in a circle together. Directed to Xu Yangyi's gaze, there was disdain, there was envy, and there were all kinds of negative emotions. Nonetheless, there was only a sole expression not present that should've been when met with their sitting captain.

Respect.

Sanshui City wasn't a big city. Moreover, it had no connections to wealth, with two of the 100 poorest counties under its control. If not for this, as the city's grand Disciplinary and Investigations Unit, they wouldn't only have had a few high-powered electric fans installed in such sweltering weather. They had been forwarded a special case this afternoon, yet as the time for the

meeting drew near, and all of them had gathered to discuss the matter, they soon discovered their captain was sleeping!

“Captain, have you awakened?” A man around forty years of age looked coldly at Xu Yangyi sigh, his nostrils not concealing his snort in the slightest: “We’ve been waiting for half an hour. Is captain going to hand out orders or not?”

“I’m awake.” Xu Yangyi turned his eyes, taking a pen in his hand and spinning it. He nodded towards the middle-aged man: “Vice Captain Chen, is something the matter?”

“Of course, something’s the matter! You aren’t listening!” A single sentence made Vice Captain Chen slam the top of a chair. His voice suddenly increased a few degrees in intensity and the data folder in his hand was flung out, rustling. “The major murder case! The serial killings of twelve people! It’s been a full week since it was transferred to the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit, but we haven’t made a bit of progress! Captain Xu, we’re all like a family, so I won’t speak politely! How is this case to be handled? Who is going to handle it? How much strength do we need to handle it? We want orders!”

He suddenly stood up, streaking the rustling folder of data in front of everyone’s faces that were either stupefied or sneering and said: “There are about ten-odd of us in the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit! All of us are waiting on you, Captain Xu, to deliver a command! We’re going to inform the chief of this! We’ve been waiting on you for over half an hour, but you said fifteen minutes ago! When the killer appeared for the first time, he carried out an unusual attack! And you’re actually asking what’s going on now!”

Xu Yangyi faintly swept his eyes over: “I remember saying it very clearly. I shall personally accept this case myself.”

“Poh!” A glob of phlegm landed on the side of the trash bin. A man approaching forty years of age cleared his throat: “My



apologies, I suddenly had a bit of an itch in my throat.”

The smile on Xu Yangyi’s face never once vanished: “You have a complaint?”

“Oh no, oh no..... The new captain’s just taken up office, but in the two days he’s taken up post, this is his first directive. How could I dare be unsatisfied...” A sneer hung at the corner of the man’s mouth, hardly concealing his laughter: “I only desire the captain’s command...”

Thonk! Before his voice had even fallen, a pen nailed into the table beside him. Penetrating through the wood, the pen slightly trembled!

“The fuck!” Young police officer at the man’s side nearly hopped up in fright. Was this still a pen? Was this still a fucking pen? Wasn’t this truly a blade?

“It’s fake, right...” A police officer around thirty years old looked at the pen in a daze, feeling the wild palpitations of his heart. The table wasn’t thick and the wood was rather thin, but to hurl a pen into it, could this be achieved without formidable martial skill? Was this still the most ordinary of fucking fountain pens!?

He didn’t know how many experts could achieve such a feat, but in any case, in the entire investigations squad, not a single person could accomplish this! Everyone’s eyelids jumped, looking at the pen blankly. They looked at Xu Yangyi in even more of a daze, who was sipping his cold tea in content. They suddenly felt the flesh of their entire bodies begin to ache unfathomably.

“Fuckin’ A...” A young police officer swallowed the saliva in his mouth, whispering: “This is qigong, huh...”

“If I haven’t remembered incorrectly, you’re the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit’s third-in-command Old Zhu?” Xu Yangyi raised his eyes and said casually.

“Yes...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze appeared tranquil, yet Old Zhu felt like

a blade had carved through him in a flash. He calmed his mind and opened his mouth, yet he found his voice was somewhat unsteady.

“So it’s like that...” Xu Yangyi gently caressed the cover of his tea cup, asking indifferently: “Is your throat unwell?”

“No... Not at all... It’s not itchy...” Old Zhu clenched his teeth a few times, forcing a smile and sitting down.

Vice Captain Chen was rendered dumb for quite a while, as well. It wasn’t known when, but the documents that were just swishing in his hand and lending to his might had already stopped rustling. The only thing that could be heard within the room was the whine of the electric fan. The calm was somewhat frightening.

“Captain Xu.” It wasn’t until a while had passed that he braced himself to speak: “...This case, it’s related to the welfare of our brothers.”

The teacup lid gently closed with a clang. Vice Captain Chen had still wanted to say something, but ultimately couldn’t help but to shut his mouth involuntarily.

“Are you pressuring me?” Xu Yangyi wiped away at the remaining specks on his teacup with his thumb. He propped his head with his right hand and looked at everyone, raising his sword-like brows: “Yeah?” The room warmed by the summer heat had suddenly become somewhat frighteningly cold. “Just this once.” He tidied his police uniform and stood up, appearing as if the matter had never happened and pushed the door open, walking out.

“Hey... Hey! Captain Xu! How should this case be handled?! Are you going to give us an answer?!”

“Wait.” His voice echoed out from the hallway.

The room was silent.

Everyone, you can see me, and I can see you. No one had expected that this fairly youthful captain, who was transferred in the last

two days and hadn't exercised his might would erupt with a violent wind, making everyone not dare to speak further.

“Wait for his mother's fucking &#^@!” Vice Captain Chen slammed the table fiercely: “It's easy for him to say it! The brothers have been hoping for a big case to show up, but you want to fucking accept it by yourself?! Where are the brothers going to eat?!” His voice was furious, but it was oddly forced rather low. After all... the fountain pen in the table was too striking.

“Vice Captain Chen, the hell you scared for?! Let him go talk! What, can't we not go talk, too?!” Old Zhu stood up: “Why?! Vice Captain Chen was the most promising for the captain's position. Why was a brat without a hair on his upper lip that hasn't even accepted a single case made the captain?!”

“In this day and age, hard work is worth less than a good background.” A woman around thirty-one to thirty-two years of age snorted coldly in disdain towards the shut door: “Didn't I say it? What the hell does he even know besides boot-licking?”

“That's right! What is he showing off in front of us for? Big fucking deal he's got strong martial arts! Does he dare go to the Public Safety Martial Arts Competition? There are plenty of friggin' amazing people there! It's stupid!”

“Fuck, he's just putting on a show in our deserted Sanshui City! Who does he think he is?”

“Hehe, maybe that kid got fucking sent down to our ordinary neck of the woods to put on a show!”

Vice Captain Chen gritted his teeth and drank some tea. The flavor of the tea was rather bitter, so bitter that he wasn't able to say a single thing.

“Who is he putting on that police uniform everyday for to see?” A woman provoked as if she was swatting a mosquito in front of her, furrowing her eyebrows: “He wants the higher-ups to send

someone for an inspection, heh, so that others will be taken as a measuring pole straightaway... Take a look at this button, it's fastened so snugly. My clothes are longer than the others... To say nothing of work, when did you learn the art of face? Besides imitating others, what have you done, Captain Xu?"

A young police officer coldly snorted: "Besides acting like this, does he even know of the world? It's obvious that everyone knows Vice Captain Chen is the most qualified to be the captain. Who would've thought that the top would stick a guy in at the last second?"

"Although our Sanshui City is a poor and remote place, good or bad, it's our city. Over a dozen years, we've accepted no few number of cases..." A police officer said meaningfully: "That's to say in the end, whoever has power is whoever is at the top. Vice Captain Chen has endured for so long; it should be his turn."

"Hehe, I want to transfer a Detective Conan that I know, too. How 'bout fucking that?"

"This is the police department's Disciplinary and Investigations Unit for major crimes. Who doesn't have the fucking qualifications in this kind of place? Who doesn't have a few big cases under their belt?"

"The last person to take up post, Captain Gong, got transferred. We rank according to seniority, and were based on the foundation beneath our hands! But all of a sudden, a new captain gets transferred in! Who can accept this?!"

In any industry and in any department, paratroopers were absolutely bitterly detested things...

Moreover, it didn't need to be said it was this young brat!

With great difficulty, you would endure until you laid eyes on a managerial position, but if all of a sudden, the boss's relative came in to stand on top of your head and take a shit on you, what would

you feel?

Xu Yangyi, Male, Unmarried, Age: 21, Specialty: Blank, Academic Background: Blank, Political Affiliation: Blank, University: Blank...

Would you dare to believe a resume with four to five blanks?!

Who here isn't simmering with experience? Who hasn't climbed towards the top step by step? Why did you have to be air-dropped in?

Calling these things to mind, Vice Captain Chen's veins wildly pulsed. He inhaled deeply and snorted: "If a truly awesome person came here, we wouldn't say a thing. But what the hell has that fucking emotionless brat come here to do? Once he sees a true crime scene, won't he just piss his pants in fright?"

"Top Brass just doesn't get it, as well." Old Zhu smothered a cigarette out and spat out: "We went together to respond yesterday, but Chief Zheng was ambiguous about it and dismissed it vaguely. It's like he doesn't know that a paratrooper's come to our Public Security Bureau's major Disciplinary and Investigations Unit! Moreover, a paratrooper that's even wet behind the ears and who has never even seen a case! What kind of freakin' business is this?!"

"Hehe..." Vice Captain Chen sneered and poured a mouthful of bitter tea down his throat, wiping his mouth: "Go to him, then, alright? I! Do! Not! Care!"

"Who fucking knows that leader's grandson?! Son of a bitch! If he wants to speak, then let him fucking speak! I want to see who Chief Zheng is going to look for in the end!"

## Chapter 2: M-Files (1)

---

Xu Yangyi didn't know of all that had occurred in the office of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit, but even if he knew, he still wouldn't care about it in the least bit.

The present him was strolling unhurriedly towards Sanshui City's Security Department where the first-in-command Bureau Chief Zheng's office was located.

After he pushed open the door to the chief's office, the air conditioning blowing upon his body was an immediate unparalleled relief. Across from him, there was a middle-aged man seriously telling something to his secretary.

He wasn't tall, at most around 1.73 meters. His hair was sparse and his face square. His face was filled with great changes due to how long he had held his high station, carrying a prestige that wasn't angry, but still possessed might.

Upon hearing the door hadn't been knocked on, but rather pushed open, Chief Zheng's gaze lightly swept over, yet he didn't say a thing. Rather, he gently opened a folding fan in his hand and rocked it neither slowly nor swiftly: "A country has laws and a family has rules. Without regulations, there are no boundaries. The ancestors spoke well..."

"That's..." The assistant listened to the words that appeared to hold a second meaning. The gifts of his mind automatically filled in the blanks without delay, and he glanced at Xu Yangyi. Without a sudden move or indication, he smiled at Chief Zheng and said: "However, the military police department have transferred someone in this time..."

"Everything has a system, has regulations." Chief Zheng gently held his teacup and blew on it: "He wanted to be transferred in. It's not like I didn't try to reason with him. However, to come straight to find me, the question is... Is it to find Lieutenant Colonel Li or is

it to find me, Chief Zheng?”

“Good tea.” He pursed his lips in satisfaction: “Urgent business isn’t just business, systems aren’t just systems, and codes aren’t exactly codes... Is anyone able of overstepping authority to transfer in personnel and make the bureau chief act directly for him?”

“An emergency, sure. We walk through successive procedure, so that everyone is relieved. The time it takes is a bit long, however no careless mistakes arise.” Chief Zheng shut his folding fan with a snap, and his gaze calmly fell on Xu Yangyi who was standing besides a bookcase. He said to his secretary in an authoritative manner: “You leave first. Tell him that whatever the matter may be, everything has rules, has regulations. Are the people of the Public Security Bureau not tense? Our men aren’t enough on their own to investigate the major murder case that was just transferred. Go, alright.”

The secretary left, and Chief Zheng coughed, seeing that Xu Yangyi hadn’t responded. Standing up, he wrung the door handle a few times, and his expression immediately changed into a smile. The folding fan in the palm of his hand softly flapped twice, and he grinned as he walked over: “Young Xu... come, come. Sit, what would you like to drink? This old man hasn’t embarrassed you, right? Work is still going smoothly?”

His smile was like the blooming of a Persian Chrysanthemum, completely different from moments ago. It was without the might of a superior looking upon a subordinate, but rather like he had seen an old friend. A smile of matchless sincerity.

“None. It’s going swimmingly.” Xu Yangyi took out a cigarette: “May I?”

“Of course... Really, Young Xu, how many times have I said it? My office is your office. You don’t have to be so polite with me, Uncle Zheng. Come, come, sit. Let’s take our seats and chat.”

With a conversation like this, there were only two possibilities.

One: Xu Yangyi was Chief Zheng's long-separated younger brother.

Two: Xu Yangyi truly was a gilded paratrooper sent down. His background was so grand that Chief Zheng couldn't afford to offend him, didn't dare to commit an offense.

"Young Xu, you see..."

Seeing that Xu Yangyi had sat down, Chief Zheng hesitated to speak several times and smiled. But just as he opened his mouth, Xu Yangyi who was sitting across from him and looking at the faint flickering of his cigarette butt said calmly: "Duck."

"???" Chief Zheng found it somewhat baffling, but in the next second, the window behind him suddenly shattered explosively!

Crash! Like a gigantic fist had made its way in from the outside, not only did the window shatter, but even the aluminum frame had gone entirely flying!

A sliver of sparkling, translucent glass came flying past the side of Chief Zheng's ear. Time seemed to freeze as he saw the side window that seemed to shower like a rain of flowers from the corner of his eye. Every single sliver reflected the side of his terrified face. Already, the blue window curtains had been blown open in the wind, yet his mind hadn't completely responded to it.

Boom! In his frightened state, he had become slow, like he was in a world of silence. His body was flung back with a great force, knocking into the bookcase despite his best efforts. Xu Yangyi had kicked him.

As if time had taken flow once more, the crashing of countless bullet-like glass shards riddled the entire room! The body of the mangled window frame laid in the center of the room! He trembled from head to toe, wanting to stand up, yet he found his foot lacked the slightest bit of strength. Even his hand supported on the table was trembling!



“What... What happened...?” Against his will, his voice shuddered fiercely. If he had been standing by the side of the window a moment ago, right now, he would’ve been ushered away to the hospital! However, he immediately reacted closely following!

Impossible!

This was a bulletproof window! It couldn’t be seen from the outside, but it was actually a centimeter thick! What kind of bullet could shatter the entire window? A sniper bullet would only be able to cause a spider’s web of an impact!

It was evident that some object had punched in from the outside though! Yet this was even more of an impossibility! This was the twentieth floor! City Hall was the highest building in the entire city! You could overlook the whole city from here!

His forehead slick with sweat, Chief Zheng could hear the echo of his beating heart at the side of his ear. He wanted to fidget, but he discovered his body had become terribly soft. Gritting his teeth he said: “Y-Young Xu...”

“Hush...” It was unknown when, but Xu Yangyi had already stood up. His expression was abnormally solemn, and he raised his finger: “There’s something here...”

These words were like a switch. Chief Zheng’s Adam’s apple jumped in his throat; he dared not speak further. In his field of vision, he looked around in fright, to suddenly discover...

The window curtains!

The window curtains should’ve been hanging down by the sides of the window, yet at this moment, they were eerily suspended in midair!

At the top of the window and also the bottom... they were floating. Such a feeling was as if a invisible man had charged into the window, shattering the bulletproof glass and aluminum

window frame! Afterwards, the window curtains just happened to cover his body, not falling over!

Because of the covering, a shape had appeared!

It was broad daylight, yet such a strange phenomenon had occurred. Chief Zheng gritted his teeth rigidly, as to prevent himself from giving voice to his alarm. His cold sweat dripped desperately.

Just a moment ago... there was something he couldn't see. From an extremely distant place, it had crashed into his office with maximum speed, shredding through the City Hall's defensive measures. Until now, there had never been such a grand entry before his eyes.

This thing... could shatter bulletproof glass... As for the strength of its impact... He didn't dare imagine what the result would've been if Xu Yangyi hadn't pushed him away just now! Afterwards... Chief Zheng's heart soon began to palpitate!

There weren't any changes to Xu Yangyi's expression, yet the direction that his eyes followed had changed. Since the beginning, It had pressed up closely against the wall, looking at the floor. But now... It slowly lifted Its neck, going from the side of the window and then arriving at the carpet, and then again...

In front of Chief Zheng!

"Chatter... chatter..." Chief Zheng's teeth chattered lightly. With It fixed onto him like this, Its gaze was incorporeal yet tangible. His connection with It just now seemed to tell him: Something has come in. It's wholly capable of using its mind to make out its environment.

There was something... right in front of him, looking at him unblinkingly. Behind the intruder... Xu Yangyi was storing his power, waiting to strike, unknown and greatly terrifying. Just as Chief Zheng's hand was about to slowly press the bell on the table,

Xu Yangyi said in the softest of voices at the side of his ear once more: “Don’t move.”

Like he was a robot, he accepted the command. He wouldn’t dare to move even once, but his entire being trembled incessantly.

“Slowly, slowly lie down...”

Chief Zheng’s heart was already filled with terror. He hadn’t seen it, but Xu Yangyi who was in front of him had his hand pressed against his own left eye. The other eye was a furious blood red, yet the pupil was white!

Within his eye, there was another image!

The color of night fall filled his eye with a jet-black expanse... In front of him was... a tremendous serpent that was a meter thick in diameter. Its body was outside the window, but its head had already neared Chief Zheng’s face! The distance between the two was less than 50 centimeters!

Its jet-black scales glittered in the twilight of the setting sun. It had a bloody maw wide enough to swallow a grown man whole that dripped light yellow-colored saliva.

Outside of the window, on a distant building, there was a toad idly basking in the sun.

The toad wasn’t strange, but... it was no less than over a dozen meters high and more than 30 meters long in its enormous stature! If said that the toad was a whale, then maybe someone would believe it!

The creature was lazing about like so, lying deathly still atop the building. There was a single three-meter-long horn on the top of its head and it had long feelers hanging down, like it was an illusory stone carving.

Beneath the center of Sanshui City’s stadium, there was a multi-color-tinted centipede, curling its body, and resting on the lawn.

A centipede wasn't curious as well, however, in the same manner, it was over 20 meters in length! A centipede of over half a meter in height! Such that each and every section of it was armored on both sides with a golden ornamental pattern that was similar to a pair of human eyes!

Furthermore, at the far reaches of the river bank, there was a tremendous salamander. Beneath the water, its enormous silhouette approached no less than 25 meters in length. On the surface of the water, it cast a black shadow. Yet within that shadow, there was a freighter that just happened to be sailing by at lightning speed. It appeared to be completely unaware that there was some sort of monstrosity lying beneath the water.

It was by the red expanse of his eye that all which stopped beyond the line of sight of all men was revealed. Every scene was reflected upon his retina. As if it existed in another dimension, there was simply no one that was capable of breaking through this barrier.

A city of demons!

Red in color, isolated from men, as if it was an ephemeral scene that could cause fear upon coming into contact with it.

Sizzle... At this time, Chief Zheng looked on in fear... at the carpet in front of him that beyond all sense or reason had a hole corroded into it. His pupils began to shrink back!

It had come...

Those things had arrived...

It truly was them! They were right in front of him!

The more he was left to only look at Xu Yangyi, the more terrified he was, the more frightened he was! He didn't know what was in front of him! It was as if a person had opened an elevator in the middle of the night, and the person inside said: "Sorry, it's too crowded!"

A nameless terror frantically spread through his entire chest!

But at this moment, Xu Yangyi moved.

Chief Zheng didn't see how the other moved. He seemed only to have seen an afterimage. In the next second, a loud crash rang out! A kind of noise like a fist impacting upon armor suddenly echoed throughout the entire room! Moreover, the sound was almost within his reach!

"Hissssss..." A strange roar rang out extremely gently throughout the room. Following, the unnatural floating of the window curtains finally fell down! The room became deathly silent.

Xu Yangyi retracted his fist. In that split second ago, he had felt as if he had struck armor. He hadn't exerted the entirety of his strength; it was nothing more than a warning, but the serpent's hardness exceeded his imagination.

"Is it... Is it gone?" Chief Zheng finally shivered with all of his might. Moments ago, fear had pressed down upon his heart. Now, he could finally vent his feelings like a surging oil well. There was no need for words, but rather actions.

"It left." Xu Yangyi sat down in Chief Zheng's seat. His eyes had already recovered to their normal state. Chief Zheng trembled as he supported himself on the table top. His fingers trembling in disarray on the table, he silently and slowly stood up.

Sliding on his foot, he propped himself on the table in a panic. He didn't dare stand too far away, staying at Xu Yangyi's side. Presently, Xu Yangyi was sitting in his chair, but he simply didn't dare to sit down.

Xu Yangyi popped the collar of his shirt, and Chief Zheng discovered there was a transceiver underneath: "Mao Ba'er, I reckon that thing a moment ago hasn't left. Why would a demon want to attack me? Do they not fear death?"

"Late-stage Qi Condensation, but it's really weird. The qi

fluctuations are pretty irregular. The highest value doesn't surpass the peak of the initial stage. For the most part, it maintained a normal level of the initial stage. It was no lower or greater than yours." A male voice could be heard from the transceiver: "To speculate on the root cause, this demon's mind must be extremely muddled due to some unknown situation. We, as demon hunters, have to lose a normal way of thinking and depend on the subconscious mind to take action. It's quite likely it's taken you as its target. Have you heard of the Lighthouse Theory? The two of you are like two lighthouses. You can see it, and it can smell you. As for why things are like this, that's beyond my ability to speculate. However, there are already two sure facts. You wanna listen?"

Xu Yangyi nodded. As if the other side had seen the same, Mao Ba'er subsequently said: "One, from an examination of the victims' wounds and the degree of its strength a moment ago, the demon form confirms it as the true culprit of Sanshui City's serial killer case."

"Two, in the event that it is the objective of the graduation exam, you'll have more than ten more points added on."

Chief Zheng hadn't heard the conversation, rather an expression of tired relief stretched across his face as he looked at Xu Yangyi. He constrained himself for a while, but ultimately said: "Young... Captain Xu, this business... you... sir..."

"Relax." Xu Yangyi hung up the transceiver, looking at Chief Zheng who had terror stretching over his entire face and raised his brows: "I said so. I'm a 'professional'."

"If not for that, how could you invite me to come from distant parts and lower your heads to criticize me to lead this unit?"

## Chapter 3: M-Files (2)

---

Chief Zheng's smile stiffened on his face. His expression was seldom cautious, but looking into Xu Yangyi's eyes, he still said in a fairly trembling voice: "Just now, that really was a..."

"What do you think?" Xu Yangyi asked, not answering.

Chief Zheng glanced in lingering trepidation at the floor covered in bulletproof glass and the window frame. The answer was already extremely obvious.

"I want to see the M-Files." Xu Yangyi said: "You should know of where I come from."

Chief Zheng didn't open his mouth.

The other's background was too much of a secret. He preferred to keep a respectable distance in concerns to that mysterious organization. If it weren't for the serial killer case being far too strange, and the fact that he knew at a glance this was a strength far above the boundary of a superhuman, he would've been absolutely unwilling to request the other to come.

It wasn't... It wasn't that the case was strange, but rather the "person" who committed the crime! That in itself was an oddity without peer!

He remembered those wounds and the victims' wretched conditions. It was absolutely not something a human could bring about!

"You come from Heavens Law." Chief Zheng finally sighed: "China's most secretive special forces, not answering to any organization or territorial administration. As to who directly governs it, no one knows. You come from the Yuyang City branch, first in your class. Currently, you're in the middle of your graduation exam."

"Then, you know..." Xu Yangyi softly rapped the table, saying

indifferently: “When I was eight, I had already encountered these things.”

Chief Zheng looked at Xu Yangyi in astonishment.

“That day was my birthday.” Xu Yangyi’s vision drooped, and he looked at the faint flickering of his cigarette butt. His voice didn’t hold a single lick of the flames of anger, and moreover, it didn’t have a trace of melancholy: “When I came home, I discovered my home had become a killing ground.”

Arriving at this point, his voice trailed off. No less than two seconds later, he broke out into laughter: “Thus, I am the champion of Heavens Law’s Yuyang City branch.”

“I have always... always been searching for It.” Xu Yangyi looked at Chief Zheng, his voice neither hurried nor slow: “For the debt of my mother and father and for throwing my life into chaos since then, as well.”

“Gulp...” Chief Zheng’s throat tightened. With his hands on both armrests of the sofa, his knuckles paled!

Abnormal... No... A ruthless man... This was an honest-to-god, ruthless freak!

Who would even laugh upon mentioning such a matter? Who wouldn’t even have a change in their expression when bringing up such an affair? As if he was reiterating the story of another, not holding a single iota of emotion?

No one... In his leather shoes, Chief Zheng fell back, somewhat unstable. Even if he was first in command of the city’s Public Security Bureau and had bore witness to many abnormal cases, he had never seen such a person!

It seemed Chief Zheng lacked the concise logic of speech, yet he knew Xu Yangyi had taken these feelings, this murderous will, and let it settle at the very bottom of the abyss that was his heart.

Like Xu Yangyi was walking towards others nonchalantly, he



would gently unsheathe his blade and slice through the other person's throat inch by inch, perhaps so that he would even be able to leisurely watch the other person's blood run dry until there was none...This kind of fiend in sheepskin only needed several words to make him feel...

That he wasn't a human like he was.

"I'll give it to you at once..." Chief Zheng branched off into another topic, fishing out a handkerchief and wiping away at the cold sweat on his head, even if the temperature the air conditioner was spitting into the room was only twenty degrees celsius. He silently stood up and carefully examined the door once more, taking out a key from his inner pocket. Cautiously opening the hidden compartment of the bookcase, he restrained his breath and took out a paper bag. As he stroked the object, his hand trembled.

There were some things... that had had never been taken record by any man. Only the first-in-commands above the city level held a nebulous understanding. They were sealed off in a strongbox of the highest secrecy, unable to be spoken of to any man, until death from age. It was necessary to deeply conceal it.

He had taken a look at this highest of secrecies, and as the first-in-command of a city, he had the qualifications. So, he was even clearer that which was recorded within... was simply beyond his wildest imagination. So much that it was such an absolute secret, that in case he made an announcement, it would arouse a societal upheaval! Even if it was the tip of the iceberg, it terrified him so much that he nearly resigned to return to a life in the countryside!

Chief Zheng shut his eyes, steeled his mind, and sucked in a deep breath of air. Each and every page, all of them were nightmares... those strong-armed by a government coverup. Indeed, a truth that could not be disclosed...

Every truth was recorded within this manila folder. Every half a year, a person sent from the top would come to examine and

receive the materials. This file was known as the M-Files, the Monster Files, a file of monstrosities!

He remembered too many of the things inside, since once they were peered over, these things were simply hard for a man to forget.

1993, the Yangtze River's dam failure in Sanjiang City. Seven hours before the dam broke, a hundred villagers in Dayang Village witnessed a ten-meter-long black carp batter against the floodgates. Three hours after the dam broke, a man from Heavens Law had come and isolated the entire scene. Intense tremors could be heard from the ground, and three villages down river had saw ten washbin-size black scales rolling along with the blood-red river water.

Presently, there was a Dragon King Temple within Dayang Village.

2004, the famous, mysterious incident of the Sanjiang No.2 secondary school. If you asked about it to anyone now, they would all know, as so far as the No.2 secondary school had changed into an experimental school. After the event, 60% of students had transferred.

[It was a distressed ouija incident.](#) Two classes of over twenty students had remained at school during vacation. By the time eight o'clock rolled by, all of them were injured simultaneously. They had been cut open from their singlets, and their internal organs had vanished without a trace. That same day at three o'clock at the wee hours of the morning, an emissary dispatched by Heavens Law had entered the scene. To this day, the inhabitants of the entire city recall the fierce surface tremors in the vicinity of No.2 secondary school on that night.

This incident was one that he had personally "cleaned up". After the event, he was plagued with nightmares for an entire week. On account that the two rooms had blood-dyed feathers piled up all

over the floor, each one about the size of a book.

2010, in Sanjiang City's Nankai County, Sanjiang City's biggest industry was steel, and the steel mill in Nankai County had exploded. Over a hundred men had witnessed a gigantic rock fly out among the fire.

There were too many... Chief Zheng pursed his lips, the palm of his hand completely covered in cold sweat.

Since he had finished looking over the banded charts of data, the exhaustive post-event reports, how it was connected with the news, the internet, how the navy was used to smooth out the effect, and how the recollections of the masses had slowly been trivialized... Upon observing these familiar and tedious government techniques, from the major participation of the city government's first-in-command, and to minor matters like the appointment of every secretarial assistant. He knew from how each step was carefully made as if it was a reconstruction that it was truly... absolutely not a falsehood.

There were some... things that ordinary people simply wouldn't be able to see... Together with humanity, and in union with China's history, and the world's history, accompanying it at birth for several thousands of years!

They had never left, never disappeared. Walking alongside humans past the Prehistoric era, past the Stone age, past the Age of Enlightenment, past the Feudal era... and stepping together once more... into the Age of Information!

They, they were at the side of every man. Like the light on the other side, surviving tenaciously among mankind.

They were known as demons.

And while every one of China's officials were aware of demons, and like they knew of the darkness, they knew that at the same time standing against the darkness was light—Heavens Law.

No one knew of their true identity, besides that they belonged to China's central government, but they didn't classify under any jurisdiction. In the security system, at any place where a "special incident" occurred that was incapable of being resolved, they had to be immediately contacted. Outside of Heavens Law, no one knew what their inner workings were like.

The manila folder was light in his hand as Xu Yangyi received it. His vision sunk as he opened the paper bag, looking through page after page.

The sound of rustling reverberated within the room. Perhaps the matter that had occurred moments ago was too dreadful or perhaps this kind of deathly stillness was too unendurable. Chief Zheng laughed awkwardly and asked: "Heavens Law... What are the forces like?"

Xu Yangyi's hand paused, and he lifted his head to smile strangely: "We... All of us have truly seen them with our own eyes, experienced them, and have watched these seemingly supernatural, ancient monsters make alliances with... other kinds of monstrosities."

"You can understand it as such."

Not speaking further with Chief Zheng, Xu Yangyi switched on his transceiver: "Mao Ba'er, I just finished looking over Sanshui City's M-Files. The demon in Sanshui City is of the sauropsida serpentes variety. It should've come in from the outside."

"A serpent?" A voice from the transceiver suddenly spoke: "It's not It?"

"No." Xu Yangyi's vision trembled: "Every day, I dream of Its appearance. The victims' wounds and that of my parents' that year are very similar, so I specifically rushed over here... But it absolutely isn't It."

The other didn't ask why he was so sure, since he understood. In

these many years, Xu Yangyi held a great understanding of the characteristic injuries It created.

“Strange...” The voice from the transceiver sighed: “Every one of Heavens Law’s students have personally encountered these living fossils. You guys are fortunate; walking on a path of cultivation that ordinary people can only read about in novels. Yet, you guys are unfortunate, as well... The cost of this path is too great... yet Heavens Law’s primary objective is to help you guys seek out your assailants. Everyone at the branch has already found theirs... It’s just you alone... Heavens Law’s network encompasses all of China, but never has anyone seen It...”

Pausing, the other party continued: “According to my calculations, your opponent’s average strength is somewhere between 70% and 120% of the initial stages of Qi Condensation. Do you want reinforcements? I must remind you out of friendship, if you accept reinforcements, the total points for your graduation exam will be reduced by half.”

“I don’t need it.” Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and cracked his knuckles, the popping sound echoing.

“Then, how can you be certain of its direction?”

“It’s quite simple...” Xu Yangyi laughed: “It’s not like the local ‘natives’ don’t. If I ask, things will be clear.”

“They care a lot more than me that a formidable opponent has ‘settled in’...”

Shutting off the transceiver, Xu Yangyi lifted his head to look at Chief Zheng, who had a complex expression written all over his face, and suddenly laughed: “Do you know what’s most capable of promoting harmony between species?”

Chief Zheng shook his head. Currently, he wasn’t of any mind to think about this sudden question.

“It’s life...” Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes: “It’s the great

convention that cannot be opposed... Chief Zheng, I'll only remind you once... Demons are a kind of race. An inhuman, intelligent community... The hierarchy of their society... is absolutely not as simple as you think it to be... Moreover, it's not something you've read in a novel."

They weren't parasites of human civilization. If it were truly so simple... what could these hunters in the darkness be considered as? Mere pesticides?

[Drinking together from a golden goblet, our naked swords mutually unswerving.](#)

Xu Yangyi deeply respected these bonafide monstrosities that had survived since the Prehistoric era. This was a living fossil in the darkness. He would accordingly give the other party due respect. However, when the time to mark his ledger came to head, he absolutely wouldn't stay his hand.

Absolute serenity. When the time came about to take action, he would be completely unburdened!

笔仙. I did some localization magic here. I never actually heard about this, but this is considered Chinese Ouija pretty much. Pronounced Bi<sup>3</sup> Xian<sup>1</sup>. So two people hold a pen over a piece of paper and the spirit is supposed to do the writing for them while they ask questions.

This is a pretty cool phrase: 金杯共汝饮, 白刃不相饶. From what I found, it means: I'll share a cup with you in the drinking parlor, but on the battlefield I will be unforgiving. In a way, it is the mutual respect between warriors.

## Chapter 4: Venture Pharmaceuticals (1)

---

He stood up, pushed the door open, and left for outside. Chief Zheng immediately chased after him and questioned: “Young Xu... Young Xu! This case! How should this case be handled?! W-why did they find me? I d-didn’t hear of this kind of precedent w-when I took up office!”

Presently, above all else, he didn’t want Xu Yangyi to depart. Recalling the scene that had just happened, his heart grew weary with trepidation. An invisible death god had cut across thousands of meters... and charged through the bulletproof glass from some place in the city, transforming everything into rubble!

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes, not answering the other.

This was the Lighthouse Effect... Furthermore, it was unknown whether this demon had become bloated in its self-confidence or gone insane. It had actually dared to take action against him.

A lighthouse illuminated people, and people could see it, as well. The moment he had arrived at City Hall, he and the demon had become each other's lighthouse. After two days, the beast finally couldn’t bear with it anymore and made the first move.

“I’ll be taking over this case. No one else is allowed to get involved.” His steps were nimble and firm as he walked ahead, and he didn’t respond. On the contrary, his manner of speech left no room for questions. Chief Zheng followed behind him, his appearance completely unlike a superior in relation to his subordinate. Instead, he was listening respectfully and nodding incessantly.

Xu Yangyi suddenly stopped in stride, looking at Chief Zheng deeply: “That includes you.”

“Sure!” Chief Zheng immediately responded, and his heart settled for the most part. In order to suppress these things, how

much effort had the government dispensed? The money and energy expended was simply an astronomical figure! Behind every news story when the masses asked “why”... there were far too many hidden secrets that could not be spoken of.

“Second, organize an absolutely reliable fire squad. In three days, I’ll be beginning to prep operations.”

“Not a problem.”

“Third, in concern to the authorizations of the personnel dispatched to this case, no one else is allowed to interfere.”

“This...” Chief Zheng muttered to himself in hesitation. This was tantamount to skinning him of all of his power as the Public Security Bureau’s first-in-command in regards to this major case. Furthermore, it was evident Xu Yangyi was telling him that he wanted to strip him of his privileges and also wanted him to promise it from out of his own mouth!

“Is there a problem?” Xu Yangyi turned his head to look at him.

“No... No problems!” Chief Zheng’s voice fluttered softly, yet it made his heart grow cold. Gritting his teeth, he immediately responded: “This case... I won’t lay a hand on it! The police and the military police are yours to command! If you still require the army... I shall coordinate it!”

If it wasn’t necessary, he was absolutely unwilling to personally broaden his knowledge of the contents of the M-Files, and what those monster files were truly like.

It was quiet. The only sound that remained was the crunching of Chief Zheng’s leather shoes pounding the floor. Throughout the whole journey, no words were exchanged, and as the pair arrived at the entrance of the Public Security Bureau, Xu Yangyi raised his brows and said with reservation: “Chief Zheng, is there something else?”

Chief Zheng had continued to follow behind him.



“N-nothing at all!” Chief Zheng’s old face blushed. From the bottom of his heart, he had believed the other party still had some other request. What was up with this kid? If nothing was happening, didn’t he know to speak?

Xu Yangyi nodded: “Then, I’ll step out first.”

At this time, a voice suddenly echoed out from behind them: “Chief Zheng, wait a moment! Hold on!”

As Vice Captain Chen trotted over to them, Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows and made to leave. Nonetheless, Vice Captain Chen had already yelled out: “Captain Xu, I’ll have to trouble you to wait, too!”

“Old Chen.” Facing Vice Captain Chen, Chief Zheng’s mood was finally relieved of much tension. As he conversed with Xu Yangyi moments ago, he had unwittingly put himself in a servile position, simply not caring that Xu Yangyi was in his early twenties. According to age, Xu Yangyi should’ve still been a youth studying at university.

That kind of pressure, a formless one, made him feel extremely restrained. It wasn’t until now that he recovered his prestige as the chief of city security.

“Something’s the matter?” He swept over Xu Yangyi coolly from the corner of his eye and promptly supplemented: “If anything happens, you can inform Captain Xu first, since you’ll be reporting to him. It’ll be fine as long as you coordinate with him with the best of your ability.”

Vice Captain Chen stopped upon hearing these words. He nearly choked on his spit! Was this a fucking joke?!

You’re making this big boy accompany this paratrooper that was tossed down willy-nilly!? This was a serial killer case being followed up on! Accompany your mom’s goddamn &@^\$!

Why did he have to accompany him? How was he supposed to

accompany him? This pudgy-faced brat that had never seen a crime scene? Wasn't this placing the entire Disciplinary and Investigations Unit under his command?

“Chief Zheng, this is pertaining to the case!” In violent fury, it was easy for a man to lose his rationale. With burning rage assaulting his mind, Vice Captain Chen simply didn't look at Xu Yangyi. Moreover, he hadn't seen the meaningful look within Chief Zheng's eyes, gritting his teeth and saying: “Am I not considered a senior of the police department? Old Zheng! You and I came out of the academy at the same time! How is this case to be handled? Who's responsible for it? Is it okay for you to tell me what the heck is going on?!”

Vice Captain Chen looked on as the position of captain failed to land within his grasp. He didn't have Chief Zheng's methods, but they were of the same age. He had endured until his hair had grown white only to see the dawn of a new captain, yet not even waiting for him to fall into fantasy, it was suddenly killed off by the descent of a paratrooper! How could he not be angered? How could he not be furious? Anyone in the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit could tolerate this tone, but he wouldn't bear with it anymore!

The corner of Xu Yangyi's mouth slightly curled up. Rather than say these words for Chief Zheng to listen to, it was better to make a deliberate display of things.

You want to come down and be the gilded plate, fine, no problems. But in any case, you can't make me do something without just cause, right? How are the merits going to be divided, huh? Your poseur ass waltzed right in during this time, and moreover, it wasn't I that received your position! You mustacheless brat, what do you understand of how to handle a case? I'll let supervise the case, and when you find the killer, you'll see a living ghost!

The major serial killer case... It's heard within the province that

it's attached with great importance, but with this opportunity, you, an emotionless paratrooper, got dropped down to carve up our flesh piece by piece?

Chief Zheng's brows suddenly tightened. What madness! What foolish drivel! A person of Heavens Law had been invited to come by the city! Nonetheless, Vice Captain Chen didn't tighten his trap and instead was stirring up a ruckus! Wasn't it enough of a mess already to resent him?!

These several lines were like several staggering blows, leaving Chief Zheng's head spinning. Meaningfully pulling on Vice Captain Chen's hand, he laughed awkwardly: "Old Chen... We're both old friends. Food may be eaten indiscriminately, but words cannot be said carelessly..."

Fuck! Vice Captain Chen nearly cursed. His temperament was fiery to begin with, so upon hearing these words, he clenched his teeth angrily. What was up with today? What damned illness did you catch?

Chief Zheng who he had knew well for many years had delivered to him some strange words! Was this to remind him... of Xu Yangyi's great background?

Who was that bastard son of a bitch?!

A beautiful misunderstanding had come about like this. Chief Zheng simply didn't dare to speak of this matter. This two-bit idiot Vice Captain Chen only knew he didn't get his position and even had to obey the commands of a brat now?

Not even speaking of what the outcome would be like, Chief Zheng had used these words to warn him! How was this something that he as an elder of decades was able to continue to endure?!

"Old Zheng, what do you mean?" Choking on anger, Vice Captain Chen glared at the other, grinded down on his teeth, and said: "What? Even after so many years, you still don't trust me? Two

years ago, who handled the bank robbery? And then that last one from that year, who arrested those two killers on the run? Why? You're letting that paratrooper take charge? You kidding me?! He's going to handle the case?!"

"I won't stand for it."

He didn't expect that before he had even finished speaking, the indifferent sound of Xu Yangyi's laughter would float pass. Xu Yangyi seemed as leisurely as if he had just finished his afternoon tea.

These words angered Vice Captain Chen even more that his eyes turned somewhat white. I won't... You should just fucking go!

"I won't obey!" Vice Captain Chen sucked in deeply: "Chief Zheng! I apologize, I was a bit worried, but the entire province is following this case! Do you believe in him or do you believe me!"

Chief Zheng's facial features hung low. In his heart, he had already cursed the other to death! He believed in Vice Captain Chen's case-handling abilities, however, could he handle this case? Would he dare to do so? For him to let Vice Captain Chen handle it would be the equivalent to harming him!

This case... Hehe, I truly still can't believe in you!

However...

This could not be said...

He had zero desire to imagine what the consequences would be like if every city's M-Files and all the people involved with it were exposed.

"Chief Zheng, you have to say something!"

"Say something? Sure." Chief Zheng let out laughter as cold as ice. Fine, if you can't read between the lines, then it serves you right that someone airdropped you! Soon after, he looked at Vice Captain Chen and said loud and clear, enunciating every word: "I.

Shall. Say. It. Once. More.”

“Captain Xu has full responsibility over this major case! Old Chen, you should do in accordance to what he says! Otherwise, don’t blame me regardless of the many years of face between us!” He finished speaking, brushed his sleeve aside, and left.

Vice Captain Chen was left in a complete daze. It was completely out of his expectations that Chief Zheng would be so uncaring of the present situation! Moreover, he didn’t think the man would directly denounce him! Was this really his old acquaintance Chief Zheng?

“Good... Good!” Vice Captain Chen glared at his back for a while, turning his head and leave: “Who gives a fuck! I won’t do it!”

Chief Zheng simply didn’t pay attention to his threat, swaggering away without a second thought.

Vice Captain Chen smiled meaningfully at Xu Yangyi at his side, using his eyes as blades to execute a death by a thousand cuts on the other.

The paratrooper didn’t speak... but surprisingly the presence behind him had made the chief of the city’s Public Security Bureau speak on his behalf! The top brass was making him listen to the commands of this brat?!

Was this the Central Committee’s three generations of officials? Capable of settling the public opinion of a city? I’ve worked at the Public Security Bureau for several dozens of years, but I have to obey the commands of this recent graduate who doesn’t even a single hair on his upper lip?

Mumbling and so on, Vice Captain Chen brushed past and left. The crook of Xu Yangyi’s mouth faintly raised upward. Don’t think he hadn’t heard it clearly...

“Who the fuck is a bastard? Coming over here to fill the numbers, he doesn’t even know anything about how a standin

should act! He's just blindly going through the motions!"

Xu Yangyi sat down leisurely in his Audi and suddenly laughed. "Indeed, I don't understand how to handle a case..." He popped open a drink and smiled in satisfaction: "However... my fist is great enough..." Blue smoke puffed through the roof of the car, and the vapors wound his eyes shut: "It looks like I'll have to question some of the 'locals'... I hope they'll cooperate..."

In his eyes, the balance of the world in comparison to ordinary people was far more than just money. He could perceive things that an exceedingly great amount of normal people couldn't. In that same vein, those things could sense him in the same manner.

Like a lighthouse on a dark night, the traveler saw the lighthouse, and the lighthouse illuminated the traveler.

"Smelling the fragrance of blood, I seek the temple of spiritual peace. A ruined scene, the specter of debauchery sings..." Xu Yangyi blasted the stereo of the car, and the compressed heart-shaking rhythm echoed out. He laughed: "Deliver Me..."

One of the Three Great Forbidden Songs... truly matched his style. Followed by the ghost-like drifting of Deliver Me, an hour later, he parked his car at the entrance of a building. The building was quite ordinary, extremely ordinary, that is, if you neglected the enormous toad at the top of it.

This passage is pretty unique that the author does some of it in english. Unfortunately, while he does get some of it right, it looks like nonsense, so I had to fix it. Trying to actually find lyrics for these three forbidden songs on western internet is actually impossible apparently, since I can't find it, but luckily, our Chinese counterparts have preserved it well on their internet. If you can read Chinese, look up 世界三大禁曲 on Baidu. On western internet, at best, you'll be able to find out the names of these songs and perhaps a clip on youtube.

## Chapter 5: Venture Pharmaceuticals (2)

---

At night, the street lights had already turned on, and there were still many buildings shining with light. In the flickering neon, there was a toad in the darkness, motionless, as if it was a genuine stone carving. Its enormous body was illuminated by the neon light, emitting a kind of bewitching oddness.

This was the scene within Xu Yangyi's eyes. In the eyes of others, there wasn't anything here at the top of the building.

"Sir... You are?" The person at the front desk saw Xu Yangyi enter and didn't obstruct him in the slightest. The police uniform on Xu Yangyi's body was the best method of passage.

Xu Yangyi raised the official police credentials in his hand: "There's someone in your company related to the serial killer case. I need to enter at once."

"S-serial killer case?!" The voice of the person at the front desk suddenly raised. In the past month, twelve people had died in a series of bizarre deaths. He had even heard that cram schools at night had been canceled! Was this true or false? Was this a real police officer? Was there really a suspect in the building?

Tossing his credentials on the top of the receptionist's desk, Xu Yangyi wasted no time here and headed directly towards the elevator.

Ding dong... The elevator halted on the fifteenth floor. He stopped it precisely and looked around on the floor, discovering the entire level was a conference room. Shareholder conference rooms, the conference rooms for all kinds of groups, research conference rooms... His right hand lightly grabbed at the air, placing it before his nose and sniffing it, and he set foot into the shareholder conference room in certainty.

"Good evening, I'm rather sorry for the disturbance." Pushing

open the door, he slightly bent his body to bow in courtesy: “Could you appear in front of me? If you don’t want to die.”

There wasn’t a single soul within the conference room. An artificial bonsai plant could be faintly seen atop of the table. Through the branches of the bonsai plant... the massive backdrop of the conference room glass window could be seen. Outside, the specks of lights were like the resplendent glow of a starry sky, illuminating this unusual night.

No one replied.

“Don’t get excited. I understand your worry. I just want to chat as peacefully and calmly as possible.” He smiled gently, grabbed a chair, carefully lifted it up, and set it down. There wasn’t even a sound as it fell on the thick carpet. He slowly sat down, gently patting his police uniform: “You’ve been trudging along within human society for so long and finally seized a cooperation opportunity with a well-known company. If not, you’d be worried because a demon’s appearance doesn’t change, and their bodies don’t grow old. Meanwhile, you’d have to change locations every few years because your neighbors and classmates’ suspicions. You don’t have to worry where to eat, as well. Moreover, you’ve got your own stable hunting ground. You can even get a huge bonus. I get it.”

“However... my patience is limited. You see, this is my graduation exam. Can’t we understand each other...? Personally, I’m rather anxious. When I get anxious, my temper isn’t too great...” He languidly fished out a lighter and lit a cigarette, taking a deep drag from it and looked around the conference room that was as still as a mortuary, appearing like he was talking to himself. After waiting three seconds, he laughed: “[Now that peace has failed, I will use force. My courtesy has been exhausted.](#)”

His face still carried a trace of a gentle smile as before, and he grasped the lighter in his hand, which was amped up the greatest scale, placing it on the meeting room table before him.



Crackle... The tangerine-yellow flame illuminated the entire room, serving to drape shimmering soft evening glow on the corners within the darkness.

In the next second, a strange transformation unexpectedly arose!

What he had used wasn't a natural gas lighter, but rather the most common of types. Just as the time pointed to nine o'clock, the lighter flame suddenly flashed three times. Soon after... it became as red as blood! Atop the table... hazy and strange, under the illumination of the flame, a demonic shadow was dragged out!

It wasn't a man, but rather the shadow of a gigantic toad! Swaying gently in the darkness, the creature trembled as It rocked back and forth.

Crackle... In a split second, the formerly gentle flame popped off like a firecracker, like that of a hopping demon! It spewed out a hellish, dim light!

Woo...Woouoooo... All the chairs around appeared as if there were people sitting on them and pulled out to the four sides of the room simultaneously! An authentic wood chair on a heavy platform made a heavy sound as it was dragged out! The sounds resonated within the empty room!

Swish! The window curtains suddenly scattered open! The blowing of the night wind gushed into the room like a breached dam!

"Your patience falls short to my imagination..." Xu Yangyi stowed his lighter, laughing grimly and blowing the flame out: "Speak not of the spent wick, but the [rootless water](#) lighter fluid. It's tasteless and odorless to humans, but to demons, it's the most disgusting stink, even unbearable to smell. I didn't believe you could endure it for so long."

The flame was suddenly extinguished, and the world returned to the control of darkness in a flash once more. With such an extreme

contrast of sight, many people would feel it to be extremely unsuitable. However... this kind of unsuitable feeling simply didn't fit Xu Yangyi.

Within the darkness, a glimmer of light appeared. It wasn't the light of a lamp nor was it any artificial illumination. Moreover, it wasn't a light that appeared in front of Xu Yangyi, but rather atop of his head! The light was blood red, only a single sliver, it was...

The pupil of a demon, something that Xu Yangyi couldn't be even more familiar with!

"Courting death." He laughed grimly. In the next second, there was a strange sound of wind coming from an incomprehensible angle, cleaving through the air!

Wind Edge Technique... Distance apart: 0.65 meters. Strength: 70 kilograms... Speed: around 70 meters per second... His brain was like the most accurate calculator, listing out a great string of figures in an instant.

There wasn't any light within his eyes, but there was an incomparable deepness, like a pair of glittering gemstones on a dark night. His eyes settled as usual, seizing every of the most minute of changes within the darkness.

A slight ripple came into view at the left side of his body. This formless power combined with a berserk speed pushed apart both air and drag resistance! The ripple was the indication that the wind edge was on the verge of ramming into his body!

Swish! A clear and concise sound like that of the Grim Reaper's sickle rang out ear-piercingly at the side of his ear!

Bump! In the next second within the darkness, a sound like that of a blade chopping into a wooden stake could be heard. Soon afterwards, within the vacuous darkness of the room, the surprised shout of a man echoed out: "Huh?!"

It was in this moment that Xu Yangyi moved.

There was no sound of wind and there were no footsteps, like a cheetah walking in the forest, using the thick pads of its paws to tread on the wind and set foot on the clouds. There wasn't any sound of movement. There was only the whistling of soft wind. If you didn't listen carefully, it was the kind gentle whistling coming from the window blowing on the window curtains.

“Argh!!!” A blood-curdling screech came out from the darkness. Following the indication of a soft noise, the lighter shone once more.

Xu Yangyi forcefully tightened his hand around a person's throat with a death grip. He didn't have such strength at the police station, but now, his veins were completely present, causing people not doubt the degree of his hand strength one bit.

“Urgh... Urgh!” The person being lifted up could only produce bursts of dry heaving from his throat. He was a youth around seventeen to eighteen years in age, however, he was wearing a Versace T-shirt and trousers. His financial situation was clearly rather well off. However, his blood-red eyes and golden vertical pupils were things that a normal human simply wouldn't possess.

Xu Yangyi glanced over at his left hand in passing. There, a large opening had been already been cut into his police uniform. The cut hung suspended starting from his shoulder and halfway down his sleeve. The slash was incomparably even, like a blade had cut through the cloth.

A handful of blood had already begun flowing along down the cut on his police uniform, trickling on the floor and making a dripping sound. Under the dim radiance of the lighter, it was extremely frightening.

“Do you know...?” Xu Yangyi's other hand seized the youth's chin, and he used the strength of hand to push back, forcing the other's head to raise upwards by a great extent. The youth's legs kicked against his body, but it was like kicking against stone. He

said to the youth whose eyes began to blanch, neither slowly nor hurriedly: “You should know, every person in Heavens Law has their own unique nickname. Guess, what’s mine?”

After three seconds, there was no response. The youth’s throat was as if it was being gripped by a vise, and he was simply incapable of answering. The only sound he could make was that of a restrained choking. Both of his hands tried to break off Xu Yangyi’s hand for dear life, but it was like grabbing onto an iron hoop; he was unable to shake it off even a fraction.

“It seems like you don’t like interacting with people too much.” Xu Yangyi flicked away cigarette ash. His action was neither slow nor hurried, but also cultured and refined. In spite of the youth beginning to foam at the mouth, he laughed and said: “Remember it clearly. My nickname is... [The Grinning Reaper](#).”

“Isn’t it rather awesome? To be honest, I like it, too...Don’t roll your eyes, I’m not lying to you.” Xu Yangyi’s smile vanished, moving closer to the side of the other’s ear and gently whispering: “In all of my life, there hasn’t been a single demon of the same stage that’s dared to take the initiative to reveal their demon pupil before me.”

Bang! He casually tossed the other aside, and the youth landed on the ground like a pile of hemp bags, rolling for about two to three meters. Xu Yangyi wiped his hands, sat down peacefully, and coldly watched the youth clutch at his own throat. Frantically coughing, the youth covered his flushed throat to prevent his coughs from rising up.

“Cough, cough, cough!” Like he wanted to cut open his lung, the youth suddenly grabbed the teacup in front of him and downed it in a single gulp. He shut his eyes in rest for a good couple seconds and opened his eyes while gnashing his teeth in fury: “To dare to act towards me like this... Sanshui City’s Cao Family won’t let you off!”

Xu Yangyi puffed out a mouthful of blue smoke and laughed: “Venture Pharmaceuticals? The Cao Family?” The youth gasped for breath, not replying. Xu Yangyi flicked away at his cigarette ash and said: “What can they do?”

“Seven years ago, the Cao Family emerged as a new force to be reckoned. Their all-encompassing health supplement was heard so much that all the country’s citizens could recite it by heart. In a few years, they grossed a few hundred million. The name of Venture Pharmaceuticals has a proper ring to it, too...” He paused as if he was sorting out the information. It wasn’t until several seconds later, he laughed at the youth: “However... you know, there are some mad scientists in Heavens Law that are always sitting on their hands. Especially, being perfectly aware of some other intelligent organism, they couldn’t be even more terribly idle...”

“Dew Congealing Grass.” He looked into the youth’s eyes, and the other was evidently stunned: “I asked myself, how could the new health supplement be so good? Well... if you add in cultivation materials, even if it is a teensy bit, the effect on mortals will be as clear as day. You and the Cao Family got something really good going on. I guess... you’re their technology director? You joined in with them under this pretense?”

“So, even if the Cao Family looks on helplessly as you don’t age over the passage of seven years, they’ll turn a blind eye to it. On the contrary, wouldn’t they completely cover up your existence? Indeed, it’s a harmonious symbiotic relationship... like a rotting animal and the maggot on its body. It’s sickening.”

“So what?” The youth’s form was that of a young man, yet at this moment, he was completely calm. His manner of speaking and movements simply weren’t like that of a young man. Contrary to expectation, he was like the water of a deep lake... Tranquil and murky in its depth, a lake that had long endured distress.

“Demons are forever young and don’t age. Is there anything

wrong in me seeking a host?” He glanced somewhat fearfully at Xu Yangyi: “[The Shennong Convention](#) is still in place. You human cultivators can’t interfere in the internal affairs of our demon race’s business without any reason at all; that’s going beyond your authority! I have the qualifications to go the Nantong Province’s highest cultivator court to sue you! You’ll be faced with at least 50 years of imprisonment!”

Xu Yangyi’s head leaned against the chair, lifting his hand and waving it to cut the young man off. He said without a single change in his voice: “I only want to ask you one question.”

He smiled at the other: “Tell me, if a normal person had just entered, what would’ve happened?”

先礼后兵: Literally, courtesy first, soldiers after. Meaning is to use force after peace. (in event peace fails)

无根水 - noroot water or rootless water. From what I was able to research, this is actually a medicinal material that ancient Chinese used in medicines and stuff like that

微笑死神 Literally Smiling Death God. I think Grinning Reaper sounds cool.

Shennong Convention: 神农架公约’. Shennong as in the farmer god in Chinese mythology.

## Chapter 6: Venture Pharmaceuticals (3)

---

“You would die of course.” The youth sneered: “Don’t tell me I should trust in any low-level agent of Heavens Law that comes knocking on my doorstep?”

Bang! Before he had even finished speaking, he abruptly flew back! Moments ago, his stomach felt as if it had been struck by [Guan Yu](#)’s Green Dragon Crescent Blade! Xu Yangyi simply hadn’t waited for him to finish speaking and sent him flying back with a kick!

The youth dared to swear that he heard the sound of his ribs fracturing.

“You...” He looked at Xu Yangyi incredulously. The sharp pain of his chest was like the swelling of a tide. There, a large depression had already sunken in. A footprint could be vaguely seen! He grinded his teeth rigidly, and his voice transformed into a roar in an instant: “You... insignificant human! You maggot that won’t even live for a hundred years! You go so far as to dare violate the Shennong Convention?! I’m the Cao Family’s technology director! You actually...”

Boom! In the next second, Xu Yangyi planted his heel on the back of the other’s head as he smiled, suddenly forcing him down onto the table and causing a loud sound!

The excessive use of strength made the entire table tremble. As if his eyes desired to split open, the youth looked at the other with unparalleled hatred. While he could simply move, he dared not do so. On the contrary... his newborn fear made him begin to faintly shiver from head to toe.

“Recite it with me.” Xu Yangyi calmly played around with the lighter. In the darkness, the light it created at his back made his expression unclear to see, yet the steady sound it carried brought with it icy coldness like that of a knife: “For the construction of



favorable societal boundaries and to found a harmonious society.”

“You fucking...”

Bang!

“Argh!”

Xu Yangyi increased the strength of his foot once again. On top of the youth, it was a like a tremendous mountain boulder, making him simply unable to display more anger! Because of the strength exercised just now, the table top was already beginning to split open with a thin wooden crack! The teacup placed on it was faintly trembling!

He would truly die! With this thought, a numbing fear swiftly pervaded the youth’s body from head to toe..

“I’ll recite it! I’ll recite it!” His train of thought was like arcing electricity, yet his brain still hadn’t responded. Already, his body couldn’t help but yell as it teared at his throat: “F-for the construction of favorable societal boundaries and to f-found a harmonious s-society!”

“I like people that cooperate.” Xu Yangyi retracted his foot and laughed: “See, there’s no need, right? [You’ve refused the toast but to drink a forfeit.](#)”

The youth grinded his teeth, stood up, and sat down in a seat. He gripped onto a teacup so hard that his hands went white. This man... Since the beginning, Xu Yangyi simply didn’t desire to be “courteous” to him!

That so-called period of time hadn’t exceeded over three seconds! Who would appear and chat with a hunter that had come knocking on their door? At this moment, his demon’s intuition was telling him that the other really wanted to kill him... Truly dared to kill him!

What bullshit convention?! The other side simply didn’t give a rat’s ass! Disregarding Xu Yangyi’s expression that looked serene as



lake waters, if you tore away at the seam of his skin, you would discover that he was a genuine demon!

It wasn't until the youth was kicked into a wall did he discover that Xu Yangyi's words didn't match the smile he was wearing on his face! At this moment, the youth really believed it. Truly believed in the nickname The Grinning Reaper!

"You psychopath..." The youth grinded his teeth rigidly and said with an incomparably resentful, humiliating, and hateful voice: "You go so far as to wantonly raise your hand against a demon despite the human-demon convention..."

Xu Yangyi swept his eyes over the other indifferently: "I question, you answer."

"Age?"

"Eighteen..." The youth glanced at the look on Xu Yangyi's face, faintly knitted his brows, and immediately said: "That's the age on my ID! I'm thirty-three!"

"How many hosts have you found?"

"Five! I swear I haven't killed more people than that!"

Xu Yangyi laughed and raised a brow: "I estimate it to be true, as well. The accuracy of the wind edge aimed at my neck was pretty terrible."

The youth's hand on the side of the table made a cracking noise as it clenched.

"Why did you find a host?"

"Aren't you asking what you already know?" The youth said gloomily: "Demons don't get older and never age, but our lifespans are the same as those of humans. When we come to realize the gravity of the situation is when we also stop aging. Could you tolerate your neighbor for a few years or over a dozen years that doesn't age? If we don't find a host, where would our identification

papers come from?”

Finished speaking, he sneered at Xu Yangyi: “Yet isn’t this the doing of you humans? To use the internet, you need identification papers, but who is going to fucking pull it out? You need papers to find a job and to attend school! You even need papers if you want to travel! Consider these things... [Taobao](#)! Website registration! You actually need identification to play games! It’s written clearly in the Shennong Convention... Thus, what I am most sick of dealing with is you weak, cunning humans!”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak, taking a drag of his cigarette and saying expressionlessly: “Qi Condensation... Foundation Establishment... Core Formation, these three great realms... walking step by step, all are struggling with the heavens, but you actually have the gall to go fool around in the human world?”

The youth sighed deeply and looked at Xu Yangyi’s gaze that carried a hint of coldness, his words carrying a bone-ingrained resentment: “You think I want it to be like this? As soon as a spirit vein is found, it’s the government that gets to set up auction first and allows selected people to bid on it. Soon after, the high echelons of Heavens Law start up a project immediately! Have you heard of the Nine National Offices? You haven’t, huh? Everyone knows that there are only eight offices... just to give to Heavens Law in preparation! Where do you think the spirit stones that you use to cultivate to the middle-stage of Qi Condensation come from?”

“Afterwards, with each of those of the great Core Formation realm, the Core Formation humans and the Greater Demons partition it. Hehe... It’s the Digital age now. Those days where if a Greater Demon massacred a city, a factory exploded, or a dam was breached, which could be concealed, are over. The sitting premier dreads having to bear the blame! Who dares lift the cover of the last several thousand years of darkness? Hehe... No one dares!”

The world belonged to humans... Cultivation was to cultivate

longer to live longer. Qi Condensation, a 100 years of longevity. Foundation Establishment, 200 years of longevity. Core Formation, 300 years of longevity. As for Nascent Soul that followed... To say the least, Xu Yangyi had never heard of it. The realm had long vanished over a century ago.

Cultivation had three great realms: Qi Condensation, Foundation Establishment, and Core Formation. For the corresponding [realms of demons](#), it was Form Transformation, Firmament Stepping, and Origin Crystallization. As for what came after... no one had witnessed it. Each realm required a staggering accumulation of resources. It didn't need to be mentioned that spirit stones were the best goods that could be circulated for absorption.

It was because of the government's support that humanity had enough resources to cultivate. Of course, it was sufficient in relativity to the demons.

As for demons, after triumphing in Form Transformation, their spiritual livelihoods would be easy. They could enter and leave grand mountains and great rivers as they pleased and search for ancestral remnants, obtaining the fortunes of superhumans from long past. With the addition of bloodline inheritance, demons were over a third more powerful than humans within the same realm!

This kind of disparity, especially after a demon cultivator could expel and reabsorb their origin crystal, was even more apparent. As for the primordial beginning of transformation between human form and demon form at will, such a demon was like a Nascent Soul realm human. In the same manner, they had already become nearly extinct long ago.

On one hand, there was victory in the amount of human cultivators; the base number of those with spiritual roots was great. On the other hand, the demons beat out the humans in terms of strength when it came to the abilities of individual soldiers. However, in "life", the major heart of the issue was that both sides had long ago shared intimate, harmonious relationships

with each other. The Greater Demons wanted humanity's strength to accumulate their own resources, and likewise, humans didn't want to force the demons too strictly. If a Greater Demon went mad in this kind of peaceful era and wreaked havoc all around, the balance of the game between countries would change.

At the very least, it was like this on the surface.

"Continue." Xu Yangyi flicked the table: "Sanshui City... How many hunting grounds does it have?"

"Eight." The youth answered without the least bit hesitation: "The awareness of demon territory is extremely strong. Every demon has cut out their own territory. They wouldn't let other demons enter their hunting grounds, otherwise, it would be equal to the declaration of a life-or-death struggle. I think... that the Public Security Bureau doesn't wish to see such a situation, as well. However, in the same vein, it's not every demon that can cultivate. At the least, it's only the demons at the initial stages of Form Transformation that establish their own hunting grounds. I guarantee that with myself included, the number of demons at Form Transformation doesn't exceed eight!"

Xu Yangyi didn't have any expression whatsoever. He himself was part of Heavens Law. In fact, his understanding of human-demon relations in comparison to Chief Zheng wasn't much better.

What he genuinely understood was... the most effective and fastest ways to kill demons. No matter if it was a demon, a fae, a ghost, or a devil, he could practically set himself to the task of finding the other's Achilles' heel.

Others merely acted to master the surface of the knowledge and nothing more. Slaughter, however, was his true speciality. In light of this aspect, he could even be considered an honest and simple man. At the very least, he was a simple person.

"Have any other demons come recently?" Xu Yangyi asked stonily.

“Of course...” The youth began to laugh cruelly: “I know what you’re looking for... What about it? Heavens Law accepted Sanshui City’s mission, but is unable to find the killer? You... Argh! You... Lighten up a bit! Dammit! Let go of my hand!”

Xu Yangyi’s hand was already gently pressed down against the other’s carotid artery. Merely, he hadn’t glanced at the youth at all, but was rather looking at the indistinct flickering of the cigarette butt in his hand.

“I want an answer.” He smothered the end of his cigarette by pressing it between his fingers: “No bullshit.”

Demons, in the same manner, were a society. He wasn’t of the mood, and the duty as well, to obey the hierarchy of their society. Simple and rough was the style of his investigating conduct. His execution of policy only sought after results.

You’re not going to speak? Sure. I’ll follow orders and change my methods.

“You fucking psychopath...” The youth’s lips shivered. He had truly been frightened. In all these years, he had never met a person of Heavens Law. In the passage of thirty-somewhat years, he had long since never revered humanity’s branch of special forces. Besides, he hadn’t killed that many people at all; he wasn’t a carnivorous demon. Heavens Law also didn’t possess the skill to cast his body out with a gaze.

But tonight... this youth in his early twenties before him made him begin to rethink everything once more.

“I admit defeat today.” Watching the retreating hand, the youth sighed in relief and sneered: “The person you want to find is in an abandoned building in the south of the ninth division in the real estate district. From this day onwards, may our paths never cross again!”

The youth finished saying these words and opened the door with

a swoosh. Just as he was leaving, his face suddenly turned ashen, and he turned his head: “You still haven’t asked for my name.”

“Really?” Xu Yangyi looked at the night scenery, lost in thought: “That’s not important at all.”

Bang! The door rang like a trembling mountain. The youth charged outside the door, carrying an unequalled burning fury.

“That whore-raised bastard...” No one had seen it, but as he left the door in a flash, he pursed his lips forcefully and glanced at the door and sneered: “You truly believe Heavens Law is omnipotent? Don’t forget, you’re only a student that still hasn’t even graduated! Hehe... You haven’t thought to why it’s carrying out a wanton slaughter in Sanshui City? Is it that none of the demons care? Is the Shennong Convention truly a joking matter?

“It’s not that they don’t care... It’s that they don’t dare to take control of this matter... There’s not a single demon in Sanshui City that dares to rear their head... Hehehe... I’m really looking forward to it... The scene of it tearing you to pieces...” His body was like an illusion, beginning to drift apart into the air in layers: “... Relax... When the time comes, I’ll ‘help’ your soul pass onto the afterlife...”

Guan Yu is a figure in Chinese history during the three kingdoms era. He is regarded as being the most loyal of bros.

Refused a toast but to drink a forfeit. A colorful chinese idiom meaning that a person refused to do a request, but in the end is forced to that that request and then some.

Taobao: Chinese amazon/ebay I believe

化形, 天梯, 内丹. These are the three realms described for demons. Respectively, they are Form Transformation, Firmament Stepping, and Origin Crystallization. Of the three, the one I’m most iffy about is Firmament Stepping, since the literal translation is Heavens Stairs/ Sky Ladder. Of the three, the last one, Origin

Crystallization is like that of Core Formation except for demons. Like human cultivator cores, demons have a “crystal” as their core. I tried to mirror human cultivation realms in terms of naming for demons.

## Chapter 7: Friendship Boat

---

By the time Xu Yangyi returned to his room, it was already eleven o'clock in the evening.

“What happened?” A voice could be heard from within the closed room: “I have no choice to remind you, but the time period the graduation exam is limited to is a week. Right now, five days have already passed. The provincial branch is waiting on the Yuyang City branch’s summary report... I hope I don’t have to repeat to you how low Heavens Law’s graduation rate is? And of how many people are watching each branch’s exam?”

“I found the demon.” Xu Yangyi started up his computer and glanced at the web page. Subsequently, he knitted his brows: “...Mao Ba’er... I’ve warned you many times, you’re only my manager. My allowance each month before I’ve graduated is only a thousand...”

“What’s the problem?” The voice within the room echoed out suspiciously.

Xu Yangyi looked at the opened string of Taobao web pages, his eyes narrowing somewhat dangerously: “At 50 bucks a pop, Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s purification talismans have to be circulated for half a month to step into Qi Condensation...The Drifting Snow of Mount Emei’s Nine Hidden Monasteries’ Jade Pools can enhance a smidgen of spiritual energy, but the most important aspect is the absolutely great taste... at 500 a piece? A live explanation of the secret to cultivation, a single reward is a 100 bucks, and you rewarded five times, using all of my alipay... Get the hell out.”

A locking sound fell upon the room, and Mao Ba’er ran off without a second thought. Xu Yangyi picked up his cell phone and looked at it. Just great... Of the 10,000 that he had deposited, only 800 remained.



Ding dong... At this moment, a familiar sound rang out from the web page. He glanced at it: Are you sure you want to mail the Jade Pool Drifting Snow to Yuyang City? According to our regulations, this is our online shops final question. To state once more, this store is dedicated for cultivation. Without a photograph, the result will ask you to please seek customer service. Disclaimer: this store is under the protection of a S-rank law by government policy. If ordinary people buy this shop's treasures as they please, this shop cannot take responsibility for all the consequences that happen afterwards.

Connecting to customer service ID: [Mie Jue](#).

Xu Yangyi swiftly used his spry hand to swiftly hit refund.

The shop owner of “Five Year Crown—Mount Emei’s store for the cultivation of your personal Dao” was stunned.

You... canceled? Mie Jue asked uncertainly.

I bought the wrong item. Xu Yangyi typed without feeling the least bit guilty: What about cultivation? It’s just a joke. In what day and age would you still believe in it!

No... Fellow Daoist, didn’t you also just confirm your identity as a cultivator a moment ago? How come now...

You’re mistaken. Xu Yangyi shut off the Taobao without a bit of guilt. He opened QQ—the amount of people he had on it were quite few—to look for a husky portrait and sent a message: “Get ready to evacuate tomorrow evening. After this business is finished, we’re going to discuss today’s matter again.”

“For what does thou blameth the sickness of study... This one understandeth...”

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and looked for two seconds: “Are you certain?”

“Thou speaketh as white as the profundities of ivory silk...”

“I’m going to report to the school to change my manager right now; I can’t communicate with Martians.”

“My computer was having some issues a moment ago. Clear out tomorrow, right? Not a problem.” The husky portrait immediately said vaguely: “Relax, it’s our first collaboration. I’ll give it my hundred percent!”

Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette and took a faint drag, replying with a single hand: “Your hundred percent is to use my alipay to settle the bill?”

“That’s not important... Gosh! It’s time for my beauty sleep! See ya!”

The husky quickly turned grey, not one second more and not one second less. The friendship boat could be said to have capsized.

Xu Yangyi didn’t pay attention to him, slowly taking drags of his cigarette. He clicked on the treasure shop known as “Since Time Immemorial”.

“It’s here?” He asked. A customer service agent named Yan Nanzi was ringing the doorbell.

“So it turned out to be Fellow Daoist Xu. Your advance purchase of the lectures, Concerns of A Cultivator’s Self-Cultivation and Future Programming, has arrived. Our instructional series is lectured by one of China’s ten great Core Formation cultivators, Daomaster Cloudcrane, who goes by the web handle of ‘Idle Clouds, Feral Crane’. Through the field of science, rational analysis, and a good many actual examples that offer evidence one by one to dissect the environment of the new cultivation age, how to properly handle the resources of both humans and demons, how it is a massive industry of the entire nation and so much as the entire globe, and the formation of these mega corporations’ cooperative relationships. It won’t let you win straight off the bat, but you’ll end up coming right at the finish line.”

“... ” Xu Yangyi’s hand paused: “I’m sorry, can I pay this in installments?”

“I apologize. This store doesn’t accept paid installments in any form. Perhaps Fellow Daoist doesn’t know, but Daomaster Cloudcrane’s web seminars all come from Heavens Law’s General Hospital. He himself holds the post of academic doctoral advisor to masters students for The Study of Society and Cultivation and The Structure of Society and Cultivation. If you don’t have the opportunity to listen to the teachings of the cultivation world’s premier educational institution, this alone is capable of dispelling the doubts that muddy the way of the Grand Dao. Fellow Daoist, please take a look, the last cycle’s lesson on The Composition of Qi Condensation and How to Distinguish Excellent Social Connections reached 500,000 units in sales. It has surpassed the lessons of the other few Core Formation cultivators in business. Daomaster Cloudcrane is also publicly recognized as the foremost Daoist educator.”

“I don’t have enough money.”

“Fellow Daoist, nowadays, scientific methods are employed to analyze cultivation. This isn’t the Cultivation age anymore, but that of Cultivation Civilization. How does the human body absorb qi? What is the division of composition of the essence of qi? Perhaps it is the proton? A quantum? How is it circulated within the human body? How do the ancient circulation techniques promote its operation? All of this is analyzed in detail for you by Daomaster Cloudcrane... What I’m trying to say is that to miss out on this would be your greatest loss. In understanding of the financial hardship that many initial stage cultivators face, our shop doesn’t support payment in installments. However, we do support payment with items.”

“I can pay with items?” Xu Yangyi’s eyes shimmered, and he immediately asked.

The times were different.

Cultivation was a thing of the past that dated back several hundred years, several thousand years, and as far back as over ten thousand years. Currently, cultivation had already become a kind of civilization. In comparison to the ancient cultivators of several thousand years ago, there was a substantial difference!

This so-called civilization has strengthened humanity's adaptation and perception of the objective world in line with the human spiritual pursuit. It was the cultural spirit that a staggering amount of people approved and accepted of and the sum of human innovation and spirit in addition to public order and civility. It caused humans to cast off the assembly of retrograde situations that composed all societal and natural conduct. These ideals coursed through the concept of family, tools, language, script, conviction, religious ideology, law, the ideas of city-states and nations, and so on.

Present cultivation was a practice polished so quietly that it was secretly integrated into the lives of every person. It influenced small aspects like clothing, food, home, and work, and then to major aspects such as secretive mining reclamations and the contrast of strength between nations.

In the age of science, Cultivation Civilization, which was incapable of being explained by science, just happened to slowly become the [endless expansion of the primordial apex](#).

“It’s quite simple. If you hunt a demon, there are auctions undergoing at the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion in every city. Our store holds a close collaborative relationship with the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion and through the appraisal of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s experts, they can send the assessment to our shop. If the object and the price of the treasure are equal, our shop will make the delivery. If the price isn’t the same, we’ll have to ask Fellow Daoist to continue his best efforts. If the value exceeds the price, our shop will reimburse Fellow Daoist with the excess portion. You see?”

A contract adhered to prosperity. Xu Yangyi glanced over it for a fair period of time and nodded: "It's not a problem. I'll have prey tomorrow night. My manager will contact the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion."

"Very well, I wish you good health and merriment. May you eternally remain without heart devils, not chance upon thunderous calamity, and your cultivation soar by leaps and bounds."

Shutting the computer off, Xu Yangyi needed a good sleep. Flying, at the minimum for human cultivators, was the threshold of the graduation exam!

The graduation rate in Heavens Law wasn't high, yet every single graduate was an elite. However, the cultivator community was so big that they merely made up a million people in China's preliminary statistics! Did a Dao Master require an intelligent and capable assistant? Did Foundation Establishment seniors want for themselves right-hand men to settle their issues without worry and attend to inconvenient matters? Did Qi Condensation cultivators not want to join some organizations to enlighten themselves? To seek assistance?

There were job openings everywhere, but... excellent talents were yet too few in number!

Each year's major graduation exam was everyone's opportunity to display their abilities. He was extremely understanding that even Core Formation masters would be closely following the graduation exam's list of names. Their think tanks would make evaluations from every aspect, from a student's potential, inner quality, and strength. A majority of people would enter a branch of Heavens Law, but in the case a person was extremely favored by a Dao Master or some super organization, while they still wouldn't know how they would be treated, it would be absolutely far better than their present circumstances!

Inhaling deeply, he shut his eyes. Tomorrow's demon extermination would be his first; he was determined to succeed!

Time passed quickly. Through the night, nothing whatsoever occurred. On the next day, Xu Yangyi sat down in his seat and drank his tea as always, indifferently observing the chatter of his "subordinates". He took today's newspaper coolly, watching all the people in front of him.

To tread into cultivation, a person had to be born with type of thing called spiritual sense. Simply put, a person could send out countless "feelers", and through these "feelers", they could perceive the world.

In other words, they could see things. It didn't require him to use his sight at all. On the contrary, perhaps it could be said this "vision" let them see through that which was true and that which was false. For example, he could see things that the ordinary people of Sanshui City were simply unable to see. Let alone ordinary folk, he would still be unconcerned granted such a thing was before him, as well.

Presently, his newspaper concealed the front of him, making it seem like he couldn't see a thing, yet his spiritual sense swept over the appearances of all the people present.

They chatted and cracked melon seeds between their teeth. There wasn't a single person paying attention to him.

If he was to slay a demon, he would need firepower support, but he didn't hope for the support to be of any use. The critical point was... that after he and the demon truly started to battle, both of them would throw caution to the wind and grind themselves down to the last bone. On one side was one of humanity's superhumans and the other side was a living fossil that had carried on since ancient times. His earliest fear was that the other was greatly older than him by over a dozen years. If he didn't completely kill his opponent, the other would flee, and the entire city would become

the floor of an unexpected catastrophe!

As long as the firepower support could obstruct it... just a little bit, the government and the agents of Heavens Law would be able to completely suppress the matter. In China, the power of the government was formidable. Completely different from that of western multiparty nations.

The question was presently... How was he to make the people who viewed him as an eyesore obediently listen?

Mie Jue = 灭绝. The thing is, I'm not sure if this is a name or something along the lines of an online username. Given the nature of the characters, I'm inclined to believe it's more of a screen name if anything along the lines of "Extinguished" as the name.

太极 = Taiji. Referred to in Chinese mythology as the origin of things or perhaps that which is supreme/absolute/omnipotent and omniscient. I translated this as primordial apex. Perhaps this is one thing better off left untranslated.

## Chapter 8: The Most Complicated Seems Most Simple

---

Ding dong... Shutting off the computer, he lightly rapped the table. In a flash, customary calm fell over the room as everyone's sight was trained on him. All of the were stunned, and the loud clamor of discussion instantly broke out. They simply didn't place this young, muddle-headed paratrooper in their eyes.

"Settle down." Xu Yangyi picked up his cup, taking a sip of tea neither hurriedly nor slowly. The sound of discussion quieted down to an extent, and Vice Captain Chen cast a roll of his eyes as usual. "Tonight, I'm going to apprehend the serial killer. Once the arrest is done, I will leave Sanshui City." Xu Yangyi blew on his tea, making the tea wedge quietly bob up and down.

In the next second, everyone present went silent.

You got eyes on me and I got eyes on you.

Vice Captain Chen widened his eyes at Old Zhu, and Old Zhu widened his eyes back in return. Had they seen a ghost in broad daylight? The greenhorn had said he was going to arrest a criminal? Even more, a serial killer?

What was he shooting off his mouth for?! He had slept over yesterday's discussion! And today, he was going to catch a criminal?! Do you think you're Sherlock Holmes? Or [Conan and Kindaichi](#)?!

"Captain Xu..." A forty-odd-year-old police officer murmured uncertainly. Speaking about the job, he was serious, as well: "Handling a case is a very rigorous job... We need the location of where the criminal will appear and investigate his modus operandi... We don't have any of these things....."

"I have been very rigorous." Xu Yangyi waved his hand: "The information source is unquestionably reliable. The city leadership



has approved of it; if anything happens, I shall bear the responsibility.”

“How can you bear the responsibility?!” Anger sprouted from within Vice Captain Chen’s heart. He suddenly stood up, and his voice resounded like a copper gong: “After you finish handling this case, you’re leaving! How can you bear the responsibility? Isn’t it going to be me that gets to inherit this crock of a mess?!”

“Now you see here!” He pointed at all the people present: “We of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit are hoping for a big case, so that our names will ring from east to west! The brothers and sisters are all longing for this case! In the past, Captain Gong would take a hands on approach with a case! Think it over step by step! These words are unpleasant to listen to, but you’re a rookie! Are you as experienced as we are? If you take charge of this case, what’s going to happen if a problem comes up? Are you scared that I’ll steal your thunder?”

“Captain Xu, everyone knows you’re a gilded plate. It doesn’t matter, which department doesn’t have someone like that?” A female policewoman seemed to speak respectfully: “However, a gilded plate should know how a gilded plate is to act. You shouldn’t touch that which can’t be touched, getting contributions is proper business, wouldn’t you say?”

The implication—no—what she was saying was clear as day. The most disgusting person was one that didn’t understand diddly-squat, but still insisted on charging into battle with a grasped blade!

The present Xu Yangyi had evidently taken on the role as a person detested by even dogs. Xu Yangyi wasn’t angry at all, sweeping his eyes over everyone. This was a job and was to be treated like one; he had always followed the rules to a tee. “I can’t talk about the information source. No one can hear of it, as well...”

“Hehe...” Old Zhu laughed hollowly and added on a few words:

“So, none of us can hear of the captain’s source... Are you saying there’s a rat among us? Who’s the rat? The triads? There seems to be no such thing in China. Narcotic traffickers? Our Sanshui City is located in the far west; there’s not enough profitability on the left side of the country. Drugs have always floated in from the southeast. Captain Xu, I just can’t take what you’ve said at face value.”

Xu Yangyi was still neither arrogant nor impatient, speaking indifferently: “Listen until I’ve finished speaking.”

“There’s no need to speak!” Vice Captain Chen snorted coldly and stood up. Not to mention any disrespect, in the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit, anyone could make a rebuke as long as they obeyed their commands. However, the captain couldn’t be scolded in any measure! Furthermore, of the people in the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit, how many of them had cool and collected temperaments? Everyday, they had run-ins with the dregs of society, wishing they could arrest and beat the crap out of them. They only admired strength. Without strength, one simply wouldn’t continue to get along in this setting.

So what you’re a paratrooper? Even if you were a [galactic marine](#), it wouldn’t be of any use. At worst, I’ll just kiss some ass and get a better job somewhere else! I’ll resign and become a private detective!

Xu Yangyi closed his eyes.

“I don’t approve of your leadership, Captain Xu! If leadership is needed, I, Old Zhu, and Old Qin are all capable! The psycho killer is also up for everyone’s contribution...”

“Shut the fuck up.” In the next second, the teacup lid suddenly flew out, and eight cries of alarm rang out afterwards.

“The fuck!”

“What’s going on?”

“What’s happened?!”

“Goddamn...”

The chairs of a few people had been cleanly bisected!

Ding! A fragile sound rang out; something had struck into the wall. The echo reverberated uninterrupted.

The room was silent like it had returned to the day when Xu Yangyi had threw the fountain pen.

Old Zhu’s forehead was slick with sweat, and he trembled as he faced towards the place where the last brittle sound had rang out from. However, upon a mere glance, his entire being petrified, completely left dumbfounded where he stood!

There was a teacup lid in that location. A normal, delicate porcelain teacup lid. It was an extremely brittle, elegant porcelain, yet it had been handled like a sharp sword. Less than half of it was embedded into the wall, as for the other half...

It was completely stuck in the wall!

This fragile teacup lid had still been in Xu Yangyi’s hand in the last second, but in the next, it had split apart three chair legs like a hidden weapon, accurately nailing into the wall! Moreover, the lid hadn’t injured a single person!

Vice Captain Chen cast his gaze over, and subsequently, so did Old Zhu, who after hissing coldly, went deathly still once again.

After that, it was Old Qin and then the remainder of the others that followed.

One, two, three...

Everyone had seen that teacup lid!

This was different than the hurled pen during last occasion. When the pen plunged into the table, it was obvious that the table was extremely cheap. While perhaps none of them could accomplish such a feat, it was still within the scope of human

understanding. This time, it had completely exceeded that which they could grasp!

All of them felt their throats go cold.

“Hehe...” Old Qin, a middle-aged woman, laughed hollowly, a laugh even more unsightly in comparison to weeping and stuttered: “T-t-this is a special teacup, right...”

No one paid any heed to her, or perhaps it was because everyone still hadn’t recovered from their shock.

“Turn around.” Xu Yangyi’s voice echoed from behind them. Everyone sluggishly turned their heads and looked at him as if he had grown a second head.

“I tried to play nice, but none of you listened.” Xu Yangyi had already opened his eyes: “Congratulations, you’ve thoroughly pissed me off.”

“Time and time again, over and over... How many times have I reminded you all? But none of you listened, none of you still didn’t listen...” He suddenly slammed the table with a bang. Xu Yangyi stood up with eyes raging: “I’m not your fucking wet nurse!”

“The municipal committee has spent no small amount of effort to invite me. You ought to love me for joining this unit!” Xu Yangyi glowered with his sword-like brows, his voice even sharper than a knife, absent of his ordinarily deadened appearance. He pointed at the door: “Don’t like how I do things!? Then get the fuck out of here right now!”

No one moved, or rather... didn’t dare to move. It seemed like no one had expected that this was his true fury. The flying pen from last time had truly only been a minor warning.

“Leave, don’t you see I’m pissed off?” Xu Yangyi downed a gulp of tea, paused forcefully, and sneered grimly as he observed the crowd: “Frogs at the bottom of a well, how is one to know of the greatness of the Yangtze and Yellow Rivers? I’ll tell all of you two

things.”

He stuck up two of his fingers: “One, I was invited by the person you normally grovel and shout leader to. Open your ears up, I was invited! Why? It’s precisely because of this case.”

Thump thump. The table made a noise as it was struck heavily, but no one uttered a word.

The teacup lid was behind them; they wanted to speak... yet they had to restrain themselves.

While his voice became serene once more, it was frighteningly icy. Being looked at by each and everyone of his silently dumbstruck “colleagues”, he snorted: “Two, this is a case that none of you can touch.”

“I’m finished speaking.” He sat down on his chair, crossing one of his legs over the other and holding his teacup with both hands: “You don’t like how things are being done, GET THE HELL OUT!”

“The few of you that were students of the police academy, can you tell me how to write the two characters for ‘obey’? I gave you all face, yet all of you still want to climb over me? Hehe... Who gave you all such self-confidence? Who the fuck told you I was a paratrooper?!”

“The first time I reminded you, you didn’t understand. If you still don’t get it the second time around, it serves you all right to stay as small-time cops for your entire lives!”

His deafening voice reverberated within the room. Not a single person dared to look him in the face. This was might. Even if all of their might was added together, it would still fall before Xu Yangyi at this moment.

Xu Yangyi coolly observed everyone. Originally, he hadn’t wanted to argue with these people in particular; they were all mortals, they weren’t the same as him. It wasn’t necessary to argue. However...

It was essential that the capture be carried out tonight! He still didn't have his diploma; right now he was only an intern! How could things take so much effort? Thus, the most complicated seemed to be the most simple. Rather than argue with them and explain himself, it was better to use thunderous methods to leave them completely speechless.

The result was evidently quite good.

"If anyone has objections, I'll give you three seconds to stand up and get out."

Old Qin was fairly absent minded. It seemed as if at this moment, she had seen Captain Gong of the past once again. No one said anything, even Vice Captain Chen, Old Zhu, and Old Qin, the three most senior members, were silent, as well.

"Since there's nothing else, then I..."

"Hold up!" In the end, Vice Captain Chen gritted his teeth and said: "You... No, Captain Xu, you were really invited over by the city leadership?"

To make the higher-ups request him... How great was his reputation? However, he, Vice Captain Chen, on the contrary had never heard of this person's name. Moreover, that wasn't to mention that Xu Yangyi was in his early twenties; what could he know? His accumulated experience was insufficient!

Vice Captain Chen had been totally suppressed by the other's might. He chose to accept it as the truth, yet he still held his skepticisms.

"There are forces whose names you aren't capable of knowing." Xu Yangyi said without much thought: "The mission location will be announced tonight before we set off. Everyone isn't to advance the line; you will be on standby 500 meters behind. If anything escapes, no matter what it is, shoot it dead on the spot. This is your sole duty."

Silence fell, and after two minutes, Xu Yangyi flipped open his cell phone again. It wasn't until Old Zhu's eyeballs rounded into saucers that he asked: "F-finished?"

"Are you guys hoping for the major battle strength to be a heavy firepower squad?" Xu Yangyi lifted his head with a smile that wasn't a smile: "We're finished. Although I really don't want to say it to you guys, I'll still say it. Believe me. WE'RE DONE."

Even until everyone left, they still felt dazed, walking amidst clouds and mists. How would you feel if the bunny rabbit transformed into the big bad wolf in the blink of an eye?

That was their present moods. Furthermore... this big bad wolf's background was too mysterious. In a minute or two, their impressions of Xu Yangyi's character in the past two days had been overthrown in a split second.

"Vice Captain Chen..." Old Zhu patted Vice Captain Chen's shoulder from behind and said softly: "Are we... really going to obey him?"

Vice Captain Chen was silent for quite a while, until he gritted his teeth: "We shall!"

"What he said wasn't wrong! Compliance is our primary directive. However..." He snorted coldly: "If he screws up tonight, even if I have to pierce through the heavens, I'm going to gut that paratrooper!"

"I don't believe there's no law of the land in this world! I really want that big-talking showboater to fuck up! Even if I can't eat this rice bowl, I don't care how great his backer is, I'm going to pry him open with my bare hands!"

柯南金田一 AKA Conan and Kindaichi. Was staring at this chinese for a while trying to figure out what it was besides giving a go at it in google. Turns out I already knew, but didn't realize the chinese pronunciation. If you don't know, Conan and Kindaichi are

respectively two of Japan's greatest fictional detectives. You guys probably know of Detective Conan (anime), but Kindaichi is an older Japanese detective story, rated as one of Japan's best. If not THE best detective story in Japan.

宇宙陆战队 - Galactic marine. Kinda had no idea what this was at first, but it seems to be a term related to starcraft. I do not like starcraft LOL.



# Chapter 9: Berserker (1)

---

At night, half past eleven.

Three cars drove on a road leading out towards the city outskirts. Everyone was in the car with their eyes hung low, their expressions solemn.

The sound of the car was extremely quiet and smooth, as well. As the scenery outside the windows extended further and further into the outskirts, the buildings on either side became more and more infrequent. Everyone's heart was filled with complex feelings.

They were really going to arrest the criminal... Their superiors had truly approved of it!

"Old Chen..." Old Zhu loaded up his rifle with bullets, scanned his surroundings, and said lowly: "Could it really be true... what Captain Xu said, that he was actually requested to come? How was the last-minute notification approved?"

Holding a cigarette in his mouth, Vice Captain Chen slightly narrowed his eyes with the corner of his mouth hanging because of his vaporous smoking. After a while he snorted: "I still didn't believe it before... but now, I really do believe in it a bit. Why was our response to Chief Zheng met with ambiguity? Why isn't the Mayor and Municipal Committee Secretary saying anything? If he was invited to come, then everything would've been relayed!"

"He's not a paratrooper?" Old Zhu pinched a bullet between his fingers, still a bit reluctant to believe: "How old is he? Even if he started studying from the womb, his work experience isn't nearly as long as ours. How is this possible?"

"Whether or not he is, everything will be clear tonight." The policewoman Qin Wanyu took an ammo clip, loaded her rifle with it, and exerted her strength on it as the ammo clip made a screeching metallic sound. She tidied the police uniform on her

body: “If you don’t believe it, how can I? I’ve never even heard of a kid being invited before! Anyways, it’s no use saying this now. We’ll know soon enough.”

After ten more minutes passed, the car stopped. As everyone of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit got out of the car, they were thoroughly stunned.

Ahead of them was an unfinished construction site. It wasn’t all that big and there weren’t any buildings in its surroundings.

The sound of the late night wind poured in from a dilapidated window through a ruined corridor and drifted out from the other side, like a countless number wraiths wailing as they revolved around the building.

Not a glimmer of light or a sliver of human presence could be seen within. The ruined building was like an enormous beast perched in the darkness. It seemed to give people an indescribable sensation of sinister terror.

Yet this wasn’t much to consider at all. The crux of the matter was the heavy encirclement of people stationed in front of them!

“Captain... Captain Gao?” Vice Captain Chen was looking at a man in the not so far off distance and asked in amazement: “Why have you come?”

“What, you want to stop me...?” Captain Gao laughed towards the side and lifted his chin: “Take a look over there. That’s Major Zhou of the military police. Sanshui City’s three forces are also in attendance; All of the captains have brought their squadrons over.”

There were over a hundred men... A wire fence that not even a water drop would be able to escape from formed the surroundings of the run-down building!

The people of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit glanced at each other simultaneously.

Had they seen a ghost? Was this the arrest of a criminal? Wasn't this using a heavy fist to strike a housefly?

Not to mention a single criminal, even ten, twenty, no, a hundred criminals wouldn't be able escape by any means!

The machine guns reflected a dead appearance beneath the moonlight, black in color and deathly still, bearing a sensation that made the courage of men tremble coldly without exception. What kind of criminal required such military weaponry?

"This is fucking crazy!" The end of Old Zhu's cigarette fell out of his mouth, and he observed the current scene in amazement, his lips trembling: "I've handled cases for many years... but I've never seen a spectacle like this before!"

Layer and layer of doubts arose within his heart. Who had said the criminal was here? How had the transfer of the entire city's ordinance passed through the city government? What criminal required so much action? Was [Batman](#) sealed off inside?

"You don't know? I still don't either!" Captain Gao heavily gulped: "The order that all of Sanshui City's army, military police, and public security have received is follows: 'in case something appears within the perimeter of a 100 meters, do not hesitate to shoot it dead on the spot at all costs'. Hehe... In all my years I've been a police officer, I've never heard of such a command!"

"Thing?" Officer Qin keenly caught onto this word and it flashed across her mind, yet she didn't understand any of it. She only felt this command was too strange: "It's not a... person?"

Who fucking knew?

Vice Captain Chen and Captain Gao exchanged glances, both of their eyes reflected a loss.

"The city government has gone dumb. I heard a paratrooper came to fuck around and bullshit." Captain Gao waved his hand: "How great is this kid's background that all these people are

moved to arrest a criminal? This is in the fucking defiance of the heavens!”

“Have we come to the wrong place?” A new police officer’s forehead was drenched with a cold sweat. The somber atmosphere of the present scene made him simply not dare to speak loudly: “How about we ask the captain?”

“You guys haven’t come to the wrong place.” Before the police officer’s voice even fell, a familiar voice rang out from behind him. Xu Yangyi walked over: “Your mission is to deal with the aftermath.”

“Captain Xu!” At this time, Vice Captain Chen was still of mind to argue with Xu Yangyi and immediately turned his head and said: “Why have these people come?” We’re only arresting a killer! Who the heck is it? C-Captain Xu! You...”

As soon as he turned his head, he was stunned in his entirety. It wasn’t only him that was dazed; everyone that got a look was stunned, as well.

Xu Yangyi was standing there rather calmly. There wasn’t anything different about him ordinarily, however... he was surprisingly geared in camouflage! He wasn’t wearing his police uniform!

“Captain Xu...” Old Zhu was dazed for quite a while and said trill of voice: “Your... gun?”

“Gun?” Xu Yangyi rubbed his fists and locked his slender fingers together, producing a cracking sound: “I don’t need one.”

“This... This is the heavy firepower you spoke of?!” Vice Captain Chen’s voice was shaky as he pointed at the encirclement of men before him: “You transferred the entire city’s armed forces?!”

Xu Yangyi glanced at him indifferently, the corner of his mouth faintly turned upwards, yet his next words made Vice Captain Chen nearly leap!

“Stay where you should, rookie.” Xu Yangyi loosened up his shoulders and narrowed his eyes: “Special things... should be handed over to the specialists to take care of.”

Vice Captain Chen choked back on the breath of air in his chest, and even as his lips trembled for a period of time, he still didn't regain his composure. He only used his finger to point falteringly at Xu Yangyi, his lips shivering.

Xu Yangyi paid no heed to him and said into the microphone line he flipped over from his collar: “Ready?”

“No problems... After you enter, I'll activate the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation immediately and isolate all visual and sound... I'm really looking forward to our harvest this time!” Mao Ba'er's familiar voice rang out from the transceiver.

Xu Yangyi nodded and inhaled deeply. His gaze began to turn cautious, and he lifted up his hand. Even if his mind was in disarray, not a sound could be heard at this moment.

The only noise left remaining was the low hum of the summer night insects. Such a deathly still silence, a terrifying silence, a tense silence was like that of a heel maggot slowly creeping upwards every person's heart.

Captain Gao's vision flickered, and he raised his hand. The troops under his command wordlessly raised their rifles. With another wave of his hand, the army soldiers on the other side raised their rifles.

Clip clip clip... Like a silent rallying song, a sonata of firearms, the rifles were loaded.

Xu Yangyi took a long, deep breath, raising his leg and moving forwards. His silhouette seemed to become weaker and weaker, darker and darker. In not much time, he couldn't be seen any longer.

“I've already entered the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation. You

can relax, pretty boy.” A strange laughter could be heard from the transceiver, yet Xu Yangyi didn’t laugh, rather he kneeled on the ground with a single knee and took out a bamboo stick from his pocket. Inside the bamboo, there was a floating liquid that refracted the brilliance of the moon.

“Demonslaying Crossbow? Pretty boy, you’re willing to part with this capital?”

“Well, if you hadn’t touched my money, I would’ve originally had more than a single crossbow bolt.” Xu Yangyi shook his right hand, and with a swishing noise, the camouflaged sleeve on his right hand crumbled apart in a flash. An exquisite, rectangular iron case was fastened on to his hand.

Klack... Klack! Following a light burst of noise, the crossbow that was tightly attached to his wrist suddenly sprung forth like the flapping wings of a tiercel desiring to take flight. Originally, it had taken on the form of an iron case, but like a transformer, it swiftly morphed into an exquisite and compact crossbow!

The crossbow exterior wasn’t different from the ones seen on television at all. However, it was carved with mysterious and arcane runes all over its body! Moreover, the runes were flickering with blue edges that made the heart tremble!

On it’s flight groove, there was an arrow, simple and unadorned. The iron bolthead was already extremely mottled, merely, the rust-worn bolthead was dressed with an even more profound talisman.

“Are you sure nothing is wrong with the formation?” Xu Yangyi asked once more, taking the bolthead and inserting it into the water inside the bamboo pipe without delay. “If the true body of the demon is seen by ordinary people, not to mention me even graduating, I’ll be lucky if I don’t get sentenced.”

“Relax.”

Xu Yangyi closed his eyes and tightly pursed his lips. This was his first demon extermination... For all his many years of cultivation, he would finally be able to see the result today!

In the end, what kind of trash was it? A psychopath that killed twelve people, had extremely strange spiritual force fluctuations, and dared to attack the city hall...

“Let me see what you got.” As he opened his eyes, they were already filled with an eerie killing intent.

A wisp of a deep-blue netherworldly flame began to rage from the bolthead! The night wind whistled, and Xu Yangyi lift his hand up reticently.

Cricket... Like the chime of a bell and the cry of wildlife, the night wind blew over his hand, and a devilish blue flame the length of his arm roared out, yet it burned unhindered. Its dazzlingly radiance made the moon in the sky lose its color.

At this moment, the wind rolled and the clouds moved. Killing intent filled the air. A soundless killing intent that could cause people to tremble in silence!

With a wave of his hand, a cloud-penetrating bolt, a blue bolthead carrying an eye-dazzling blue edge, loudly charged up into the sky with a swoosh! Its splendor was identitical to the moon!

Hum! An azure shower of flowers with bewitching flame tails dragging a meter in length came into view in the sky. From the bolt, one tail split into two, two tails split into four, and four tails split eight... In the blink of an eye, the brilliant blaze seemed to the draw the outline of the trajectories of a celestial chart in the middle of the night sky, making the starry ceiling lose its color.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh! The sound of shattered sky barraged the ear without end, stony rubble pierced clouds, and raging waves beat against the shore. Bolts that were resplendent like shooting

stars carrying long flaming tails launched towards the black-painted building with a speed incapable of being seized with the naked eye.

Streaks of blue flame scars interweaved in the sky, and the black clouds pulled back. Like a stratum of blue clouds tearing open the black night, the moon and stars were dim without luminance.

Yet just at this moment, the run-down building stirred. Like the entire building was the chasm of the devil's box, countless black shadows suddenly bore out from the pit! In the next second... all that was caused by the bolthead completely faded away! The only thing remaining was the blazing curtain formed by the interweaving azure flame that colored the entire sky.

Xu Yangyi's expression finally turned grave in a split second. In that flickering moment where he had fired long ago, both of his eyes had metamorphosed into a red color, taking in that flashing shadow, capturing it entirely within his eyes.

A towering black shadow... A shadow that completely engulfed all of the flames; it was... a serpent.

A boundless black serpent shot out like arcing lightning from the runned-down building and then retreated demonically once more. The inside of the building seemed to have become the nest of an immeasurable serpent!

蝙蝠侠 = this is what the Chinese call Batman, folks. Literally: Bat Hero



## Chapter 10: Berserker (2)

---

Swish... Xu Yangyi disrobed himself of his coat and folded it neatly, placing it on the ground. As he stretched out and loosened up his neck and wrists, cracking sounds echoed out.

“This is a berserker.” Xu Yangyi leaned his upper body over lowly, and the moonlight shed upon it. His muscles weren’t developed, yet they were tight and delicate, possessing an astonishing explosive force. His posture was like that of a hunting cheetah, and his ears were like that of a wild beast, slightly trembling as they caught onto each and every sound of blowing wind and rustling grass in his surroundings.

Every one of his nerves stretched out to the extreme. Not only was this his graduation exam’s final subject, it was moreover the first genuine demon he had confronted. This creature wasn’t one of those Form Transformation demons, but rather a berserker that was incapable of assuming human form!

For some demons, Berserker Syndrome occurred as they were on death’s door and unable to make a breakthrough. Such resentment would lead to these demons madly hating humans, believing them to have squeezed down upon their own room for survival. Their bodies were no longer capable of sustaining a relative human form, but rather they would transform step by step into their most primal demon form, ultimately completing their demonification.

During the course of these events, a berserker would become increasingly addicted to killing and progressively more ruthless. Then, at the instant it fully demonized, its hatred towards humans would arrive at the zenith! A mad carnage would unfold!

No matter whether it was human or demon, due to Berserker Syndrome, they had to kill! Their existences already threatened the fragile bonds between humans and demons.

Suddenly, a penetrating, void-shattering sound mixed with low

hissing traveled across 500 meters like a sharpened arrow that had left its bow string! Carrying a bright-red color and with a speed that humans simply wouldn't be able to react to, it broke across the sky!

Xu Yangyi's gaze unexpectedly saucered, and he twisted towards his left side reflexively.

Boom... A noise echoed heavily, like a tremendous fist hammered the ground. At this moment, everyone on the outside was stunned.

"Old Qin... You felt that?" Vice Captain Chen asked the policewoman suspiciously: "Just now... did the ground quake?"

As if they were being separated by a gigantic glass screen, they simply couldn't hear the sound coming from within. But while they couldn't observe the scene inside, the heavy feeling on the ground passed into their bodies.

"It's like..." Officer Qin furrowed her brows. What had happened? The ground was suddenly shaking?

Within the "glass", the ground at Xu Yangyi's side was already inundated with many half-a-meter-sized holes! The clothes that he had placed there had long vanished into thin air!

In midair, a blood-red shadow was in the midst of an explosive retreat. He simply didn't consider it as his two legs trudged forward, his entire being rushing forward like a sharpened arrow leaving its bow string!

Huff! Like an artillery shell was fired, the grass at the side of his foot dispersed in a great circle with him in the eye of it.

Xu Yangyi leapt over a dozen meters in distance! Up in the air, the red shadow and the black shadow that was his figure were like chasing stars overtaking the moon! He unwaveringly stared down the shadow retreating at lightning speed and suddenly caught onto the tip of the red shadow with both of his hands!

"Hiss!" Soon after, a sharp hiss cried out. Xu Yangyi was like an

enormous stone sculpture, falling down from midair to the ground with the weight of a thousand [catties](#). With a rumble, the dust that covered the ground scattered about like a shock wave with him as nucleus of it!

The night wind blew forth, brushing away at the dusty mist. It was an enormous tongue. Covered in nauseating yellow saliva, the meat of the tongue was red in color.

One end of the creature wasn't within the building. It wasn't known when, but many gigantic holes had already appeared on the structure. Inside the building, there was a thing refracting the rays of the moon. At the back of Its tongue, there was a rolled up pile of tattered clothes. From where he stood, Xu Yangyi firmly pulled the tip of Its tongue like a tug-of-war.

He pulled with a single hand from where he stood, and the blue arteries of his hand began to reveal themselves, every muscle and vein clearly visible. His legs had already dug out a ravine over a dozen meters in length in the ground! Surprisingly, his feet couldn't be seen anymore!

Pure strength, bodily strength, this was a [maneater](#)'s most terrible aspect! A demon's body was much more powerful than that of a human's!

"A competition of strength?" A cold light flashed at the back of his eyes: "How unfortunate. My strength is no laughing matter, as well."

On both of his hands, a series of runes mystifyingly revealed themselves. Immediately following, the muscles all over his entire body expanded like they were filled with air. From his stature of 1.8 meters he transformed into a giant exceeding over two meters!

"Solution Ninety-Five—Dragon Biting!"

The qi of Xu Yangyi's entire body coalesced in his hand, and a simple, incorporeal blade surprisingly appeared. He suddenly

chopped down with it!

“Hiss!” Just as the seemingly illusory blade was about to touch Its tongue, a blood-curdling screech followed in the wake of four bloody florets! A tongue that was no less than the thickness of a man had been severed from the inside like a taut bow!

In the next second, the entire ground began to tremble!

Xu Yangyi firmly fixed his eyes below his feet. How enormous was this demon? He knew that the demon at the top of the Venture Pharmaceuticals building was no less than thirty to forty meters in size. The body of a berserking demon... would absolutely not be any smaller!

It... was on the cusp of revealing itself!

Bang! Like the eruption of an underground fountain, the ground around him suddenly burst open! Immediately following, the ground didn't halt at a single section, but rather countless areas! It was as if an infinite number of fountains buried beneath the ground had completely ruptured forth with a rumble!

The yellow grains of sand that filled the sky were like night-time clouds and mists, making even the moon lose its color.

“My god! What's going on?!”

“What's happening!”

“Earthquake?! Earthquake!”

Vice Captain Chen looked around at his surroundings in amazement; the ground was obviously shaking! He had started to believe it was of his own imagination, but he discovered in the next second that it wasn't so!

Ka thunk! At his side, the water cup he had placed on the hood of the Disciplinary and Investigation Unit's car had spilled over!

Everyone hefted their rifles at command. In this moment, not a single person was still standing steadily! It seemed like there was a

gigantic creature beneath the ground just about to drill out of the earth's surface, as if it was charging out!

Officer Qin supported herself against a car in astonishment. The tremors beneath her feet were far too intense, however, at the moment she managed to regain a bit of her standing, her eyes suddenly needed!

“My... god...” She sluggishly looked ahead of herself. There weren't any changes with the pitch-black run-down building. However...

It was because it was without a shred of change!

This earthquake, so abrupt and so fierce, caused everything to shake! A soldier holding his gun wasn't even able to grasp onto his rifle! Yet the building hadn't shaken! As if the building hung suspended in the middle of a snow globe, the area all around the building trembled. In comparison to the motionless building though, it was simply far too inharmonious!

“Old Qin! Old Qin!” Old Zhu approached and tugged at her, yet he was brushed away by her hand.

“What's happened to you?!” Old Zhu worriedly pressed down on her shoulder: “Get down now! Don't you know this is an earthquake?!”

Officer Qin appeared not to have sensed such a thing at all. She only looked at the seemingly static building, her lips trembling.

“Is this... sorcery?”

Within the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation, sand had already covered the ground and dust had blocked out the moon.

At the center of the cloud formed by dust, wind, and air, a tremendous shadow like Optimus Prime calmly towered within, as if it was a guard dragon in the mists.

It was a serpent.

A tremendous serpent, a black serpent like the blackness of death. Its skull was three to four meters in size, Its sapphire eyes were pervaded by a layer of abnormal red, and Its gigantic maw was like an abyss. In the midst of the dust-filled sky, Its two eyes were like two enormous blue searchlights, carrying a deathly still gaze as it looked at everyone.

Its length could not be reckoned, Its height could not be distinguished, and Its thickness could not be discerned.

Yet it didn't stop here... there were also more than a hundred little serpents on top of the ruptured surroundings. Even the smallest one could be said to possess the thickness of a man's waist. Nevertheless, they were simply incapable of being compared to the tremendous serpent that was approximately as thick as a room!

Standing in front of the serpent in contrast, Xu Yangyi was like an ant standing across from a tree.

Swish! The serpent's head slowly drew itself upwards, accompanied by a long hiss. The monstrous serpent raised Its head and bathed Itself the moonlight, enveloping Xu Yangyi in darkness and generating a heaven-and-earth-shaking cry!

“Hiss!!!”

While the serpent had a gigantic body, in the next second, It seemed to be an arc of black lightning as It suddenly charged several tens of meters in front of Itself!

At the same time, the hundred plus little serpents in Xu Yangyi's surroundings were like a cage, filling the sky with the sound of hissing. Bringing with them a strong, repulsive wind, they all shot towards the same spot!

Exactly where Xu Yangyi was situated!

Boom... Boom! Booom! The sound of the ground shattering in uninterrupted succession made the scalps of everyone who heard it

turn numb!

Boom... Boom... Outside the formation, Old Zhu sat on the ground, watching the car at the side suddenly “jump” just as he wiped his sweat away. Very light, rather heavy, awfully oppressive, and quite subtle. It was like in Jurassic Park where the car jumped in the same manner as when Tyrannosaurus Rex stomped on the ground. The corners of his eyes fluttered immediately afterwards. Subsequently... the entire ground began to tremble madly! The intensity was several tens of times greater than the tremors from moments ago!

“Merciful Heavens!” Captain Gao supported himself unsteadily against the car in a state of fright: “Earthquake! Earthquake!”

“Damn!” Vice Captain Chen only had time to let loose a screech. The violent tremors made both his legs go soft, and he fell down on the ground, landing flat on his butt! “What the heck is happening!” He gritted his teeth rigidly. Should they retreat? Should he sound the call? The captain still hadn’t come out, however...

Such violent tremors could be an earthquake greater than a five on the richter scale! Furthermore... he kept on having a kind of unusual feeling. This earthquake... was right below his feet!

“Captain! What’re we doing?!”

“Instructor, what are we doing now?”

“Why is there an earthquake all of a sudden?”

“What the heck happened?”

Cries of alarm rose and fell in succession. There wasn’t any person that knew; what on earth was going on? Why was it that there were such violent tremors all of a sudden?

Moreover, there wasn’t a single person that had heard... the slamming of over a hundred snakes against the ground, nor their wretched shrieks and any of their biting. There was only the heavy impact on the ground like that of a beating drum, smashing the

floor and pounding into the earth once more, the pitter patter of shattered rain!

An ocean of serpents continued to rush forth like they were attacking a mouse, chomping down... If someone was placed in the midst of this, they would certainly be torn to pieces!

Swish! No less than ten-odd minutes later did the surging tsunami come to a halt. In the center, a blood-drenched figure was standing tall in the thick of it.

Xu Yangyi protected the vital points of his entire body with both of his hands. At this moment, he had finally been taken hold of.

He swung his shoulder, making a popping noise, and as he twisted his neck once more, the sound of cracking echoed out. He had a smile on his face as always, merely, the crook of his mouth carried a blood-thirsty coldness.

“Initial-stage Qi Condensation... It’s truly strange...” He pressed down on his leg unconsciously: “Your might is rather great, and I thought I would even be severely injured... but how could you be so weak?”

“Berserker Syndrome coupled with the transformation of your most primal demon form should’ve raised your boundary at the very least by two minor stages. Even if you’re at the initial stage, shouldn’t you at least be late-stage right now?”

“Not only are you weak, your strength fluctuations are also too great... This shouldn’t be, no?” Xu Yangyi laughed, rubbing his pallid chin: “Has the qi sea within your body fallen into shambles? Has your willpower been swept away?”

The tremendous serpent’s eyes unwaveringly locked onto Xu Yangyi. Over the course of their exchange of blows just now, the demon’s remaining consciousness informed It that the smiling human in front of It was quite strong... extremely strong!

It was correct that It shouldn’t have been so weak! It was true



that It should've torn Xu Yangyi to pieces moments ago!

“You’re afraid.” Xu Yangyi slowly walked over, smiling as always: “A problem has come up in your body. Perhaps you didn’t take the initiative to lose yourself and become a maneater... Whatever, it's not important.”

Before his voice even fell, he charged toward the serpent’s head like an arrow leavings its bow!

“Solution Ninety-Seven. Tiger Crane!”

A catty is a term of measurement often seen in Chinese novels. From what I researched a catty is roughly half a kilogram, perhaps a little bit more, making it roughly one pound~. In other novels, you may see this unit of measure unlocalized as jin.

异食癖 - maneater. Literally: “different eating habit” I figure maneater works best in this context.

# Chapter 11: Earthburst Golden Lotus (1)

---

He leapt several meters high, yet just as he neared, both of his arms neatly unfolded like the shining wings of a white crane. Following, he suddenly pressed downwards, surprisingly ascending several more meters once again!

“Skraw!” The cawing of a crane cried out, resonating over the entire expanse!

Crack! In the next second, Xu Yangyi’s hand suddenly caught on to the serpent’s jet-black, shimmering scale. Soon after he grabbed it, a rain of fishy, repulsive blood sprayed out high into the air!

The seemingly steel-like scale had surprisingly been torn apart bare handed! Accompanied by the shredded scale, there was a shower of rancid blood, scattering down from altitudes up in the sky!

“Hiiiiissssss!!” A long, heaven-shaking cry produced a formless sound wave that caused the sand on the ground to go flying! The blast was like the blowing of a small-scale sandstorm!

Already at this moment, the blue veins on both of Xu Yangyi’s hands were completely exposed, and his five fingers were like the five claws of a beast! As long as one was met with it, their flesh would be immediately torn asunder! He was like a miniature drilling machine, boring a path through the tremendous serpent’s body!

“Go up twenty meters, that’s where the [weak point](#) is.” Within his ear, Mao Ba’er’s voice continued to relay: “Its qi is changing there! That’s also where the serpent demon’s heart is!”

Xu Yangyi turned a deaf ear; at this moment, he was like a tiger running along the serpent’s back, one claw, one leg, completely ripping up wounds upon wounds that weren’t of a minor severity. He followed these wounds, using his fastest speed to charge outside

of these twenty meters!

Whoosh! Just at this time, a snow-white bone spur suddenly emerged out of the serpent's back, bringing with it blood that colored the sky, skewering his arm! His opponent was also fighting with every ounce of its being!

Obviously, the remaining consciousness it possessed told it that this human undoubtedly held the strength to break through its defenses. Currently, its gargantuan body and the tremendous power brought with it wasn't of the slightest use. The opponent was like a hornet, ruthlessly drilling great holes in its vitals!

Life or death would be decided in these twenty meters! Xu Yangyi wanted to rush forth and slay his foe; the serpent had to expel him out within these twenty meters of flesh no matter the consequence, as well!

Thump... Thump thump thump thump thump! The countless echoing of punctured flesh was accompanied by the furious roar of the tremendous serpent, resonating throughout the heavens and earth. In these twenty meters, an incalculable number of bone spurs, large and small, sprouted from the tremendous serpent's punctured flesh, causing it to turn into a gigantic hedgehog! The twenty meters had become a path of blood-dyed bramble and thorn!

These were its bones that had pierced out in reverse. Life or death would be spelled in these twenty meters!

Crack! Xu Yangyi watched as the serpent's back became covered in bony ridges and spurs in an instant. His opponent was also considerably decisive, even if it had lost its mind and granted that a major, unknown condition had occurred with its body. However... possibly because it was a demon that had lived properly to a grand old age in a complex world of human-demon coexistence, it was by no means a novice.

He forcefully twisted off the bone spur, not retreating, but

instead advancing. His speed rose to another level once again! He was like a train racing along towards the serpent's head!

The bone spurs were seemingly alive, becoming sharper and denser, cutting his body like blades as he took steps forward. With an ever-growing number of bone spurs entering his flesh, thighs, and arms, he obstructed his head with both of his hands, and murmured: "Solution Ninety..."

"Pretty boy! Are you insane!" Before Xu Yangyi's voice had fell, a surprised voice could be heard from the transceiver: "The Hundred Solutions is the only divine ability that a student of Heavens Law that hasn't graduated yet can learn! The lower the number, the greater the might! If I haven't remembered incorrectly, Solution Ninety is already the limit of what a student that hasn't graduated can learn! You're going to use too much force! The burden on your body will be too great!"

"You'll lose your life!"

Xu Yangyi turned a deaf ear towards the voice coming from the transceiver. At this moment, the veins of his entire body seemed to come alive! Twisting, they interweaved on his whole body into a strange design!

[A qilin!](#)

A qilin birthed by the sacrifice of his flesh! It was simply like a tattoo!

In the second the design was formed, his entire body suddenly erupted in a burst of scarlet radiance like a roaming fireball, shattering the bony spurs and ridges up ahead with a bang!

Crack! Crack! Crack! In the air, the blood-dyed bone spurs rained down like a floral shower. Beneath moonlight, the flaming ball of fire swiftly charged exuberantly towards the top of the tremendous serpent's head. If anyone saw this scene, it was guaranteed they wouldn't be able to shout!

“Hiss!” An incomparably sharp hiss cried out, life or death in a twinkling of an instant. The realms of both sides weren’t high and their hidden aces weren’t many. The tremendous serpent’s giant eyes flashed, the shadow of death was swiftly approaching it. Followed by a furious roar, its entire body began to roll like a wheel!

Rumble rumble rumble... The ground surface slightly trembled like an earthquake of fair strength was being experienced!

However, after a mere three seconds, it stopped. The scales of the serpent’s whole body clanked as they trembled.

It was a frightening trembling, a shuddering like the god of death was standing atop its head.

A hand, a human hand, a powerful hand, one that was smothered in blood, was already pressing down precisely on top of its Achilles heel.

Beneath moonlight, Xu Yangyi was covered in bone spurs, having truly become a hedgehog. His chest slightly heaved up and down, and he was covered in fresh blood from head to toe, towering over the tremendous serpent’s vitals.

The fishy taste of blood was strong... He licked his lips, letting a portion of the scorching liquid incense his placid arteries, letting the fishy taste flow down his throat.

Its blood... This was its flavor...This was his final resort as he lifted his hand ahead.

“Solution Ninety-One...”

“Severing Dragon Typhoon!”

Swish! Between heaven and earth, a streak of dull-blue light flashed, appearing like a flash of eminence at midnight and like that of a crack of thunder in the sky. At this moment, [be it moonlight or starlight](#), both simultaneously lost color. Everyone’s sight was completely gathered on the flashing and waning of the

scintillating rays above.

### [An instant of magnificence.](#)

Only a momentary resplendence, illusory that it made people feel it wasn't real.

Xu Yangyi half-squatted on the floor, his left hand faintly trembling. In that sudden space of time, the arteries of his left hand abruptly burst open, and an arrow of blood fiercely jetted out from his veins.

“Boom!” Behind him, a thundering sound echoed and dust scattered into the air. With a body thickness the size of the room and over a dozen meters in length, half of the tremendous serpent's bisected body fell down behind him, accompanied by the heaven-rumbling explosion of dust.

His strength from hair to toe ebbed away like a tidal wave. Every single one of his bones were clamoring in an overload of pain. However, at this time, a sharp voice suddenly could be heard from the transceiver: “Pretty boy! Watch out!”

In the place where the tremendous serpent had been bisected, a dazzlingly brilliant red light spilled forth! The ray was like a sun rising amidst the darkness!

CRASH! All around, bursts of cracking and rumbling could be heard, and Xu Yangyi roared terribly!

It was the sound of the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation breaking apart! This streak of devilish red light had directly sundered apart the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation with a bang! Moreover, it was coming straight for him!

It was quite slender... At least in comparison to the corpse of the tremendous serpent. The ray was only approximately the thickness of an arm, and it was directly zoning in on Xu Yangyi's heart! However... he was simply unable to move!

The ray of red light was such that it couldn't be said to be red

light. His gaze had only met it for a brief instant, but his entire bodily strength and qi had disappeared in a flash!

“Mao Ba’er!”

He bellowed furiously, and a sharp voice could be heard immediately from the transceiver: “Understood!”

At the moment the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation had gradually shattered, the corpse of the tremendous serpent had vanished in a blink!

“Fuck me...” Xu Yangyi fiercely grinded his teeth; the hell you understand!

He wanted Mao Ba’er to think up of a solution, yet the first thing he did was stow away the spoils of war! He hadn’t even finished speaking his words, because at that moment, an even stranger scene occurred!

Swoosh... A gently swaying golden lotus slowly sprouted from the ground. It was sparkling and translucent; pure and limpid. Cloudy mists wound around it, making it appear as if it existed in another world, another dimension.

It was like a hidden orchid in an empty valley, splendid and beautiful, in full bloom beneath moonlight. In its wake, there was a second flower... then the third flower... and then fourth... until there were countless flowers!

Xu Yangyi was instantly surrounded by an immeasurable number of golden lotuses! He was like a saint walking among golden lotuses!

“Earth... [Earthburst Golden Lotus](#)?!” Mao Ba’er yelled. If he had just screeched a moment ago, then his present yelling could be considered to have torn his heart out and cracked his lungs wide: “Pretty boy! Get out! Get out now! If these things hit you dead center, you’ll be fucking screwed!”

The red light shone upon Xu Yangyi’s bitterly smiling face.

Get out?

At this moment, it was like he was being locked in place. Even if he wanted to move, he couldn't.

Bang! In the next second, he felt as if his stomach had been met with a heavy fist! His surroundings turned dark in front of him, and he was simply unable to control himself from frantically spraying out a mouthful of blood. His whole body went flying four to five meters, struck flying like a tattered sack, landing heavily on the ground once again!

He didn't regain consciousness until he saw the moon for a few seconds, and then he immediately hopped up. His first action was to touch his heart.

He set his hand there, only feeling solid muscle. Surprisingly, there wasn't a trace of a scar!

"This is..." He lowered his head to take a look, and his gaze suddenly tensed. There was a fist-sized black lotus on his chest. It was unknown when, but it had already branded itself onto his chest.

"Are... Are you alright?" Mao Ba'er's suspicious, uncertain voice rang out in his earpiece.

Xu Yangyi shut his eyes and sensed his entire body, shaking his head in confirmation. No one said anything. A legion of lingering suspicions laid within his and Mao Ba'er's hearts.

That thing, that ray of light... was more frightening than any creature that a book had ever explained to them! A human's first reaction upon running into danger was to escape, yet that streak of light had simply "rejected" his "intention" of evasion!

Speak of light and there will be light. This was more like a kind of "inherent" law of the world, like Newton's Law of Universal Gravitation. The earth had its own intrinsic gravitational pull, and this ray of light had its own intrinsic law that made people



incapable of dodging it.

However, although he had been struck by it, Xu Yangyi was without the slightest of wounds! Not only was the black lotus on his chest not devilish, on the contrary, it revealed its own kind of mysterious charm, similar to that of an ornate tattoo.

Xu Yangyi didn't lower his guard one bit. The lotus's appearance was too strange and there wasn't any reasoning to justify it.

Crunch... All of a sudden, a soft sound entered his ears. As if he had awakened from a dream, he immediately looked over.

As far as his vision stretched, he was momentarily stunned once again. Just now, the tilestone path and lawn were devoid of any living things, but now... it had become filled with lotuses!

Wilted lotuses, it was true, not false. They absolutely couldn't have withered away moments ago, rather they were the kind that had already dried away in the wind. With a touch, they transformed into dried-up yellow catkins.

The sound was that of a person stepping on the ground covered in dried-up lotuses.

His vision flashed, and he recalled that not only had the streak of light branded a strange pattern on his chest a moment ago, but it had also... broken through the Big Dipper Heaventail Formation!

The corpse of the tremendous serpent had been swiftly collected by Mao Ba'er as a spoil of war; they didn't see it, however...

What about the current desolation that filled their eyes like the gigantic craters on the moon surface? And as for the sudden advent of the field covered in withered lotuses?

The atmosphere was silent, a stillness like that of death.

Clunk... It wasn't known whose rifle fell on the ground, since no one cared for it, but Xu Yangyi had seen it clearly. It was a second-year soldier with two yellow bars on his shoulder. Presently, the

soldier was looking at the current scene incredulously and said in a daze: “My... god...”

Afterwards, there wasn't another whisper.

It wasn't that he wanted to say something, but rather the current scene was simply so shocking that no one had words for it.

This doesn't actually say weak point. The exact wording is 七寸, meaning seven inches. I was kinda confused at first, but this word is used to describe the weak points of snakes (the position of their hearts and where to hit) and later on, a more general term for just the weak point of any creature. I thought you guys would find it interesting.

Qilin - this is a chinese unicorn pretty much. Search Qilin for better representation.

昙花. Now I'm not actually sure about this translation. As it is, this word refers to a flower known as “The Queen of the Night” and “The Dutchman's Pipe”. However, in Chinese, it is used to refer to a person who makes sudden unexpected gains in a momentary period of time, which is then often chalked up to luck.

刹那芳华 - an instant of youth more like it. Used often to refer to the fleeting beauty of women as they were young.

Earthburst Golden Lotus is actually [a real flower](#). I thought it was made up, but found out it was real...

## Chapter 12: Earthburst Golden Lotus (2)

---

As if a meteor had devastated the landscape... the soaring streak of red light a moment ago had suddenly revealed their blood-drenched captain in front of everyone... and the ground covered in wilted lotuses.

In that twinkling moment where everything was revealed, all words lost their original function. They were stunned. Besides being stunned, they were also shocked. It was unimaginable... Apart from unimaginable, it was also outrageous.

“This... The heck is this...” Vice Captain Chen observed everything before his eyes in disbelief. What on earth had happened? What had just occurred moments ago? Even a moron would be able to see that the violent earthquake had occurred from a terrible blow to the ground by an unknown object. Now that the holes of all sizes of magnitude could be seen on the ground, everything could be explained for.

What on earth had happened? What had struck the ground? Was there such an organism on earth? This... was a serial killer?

Even a blind person could see a bloody battle had just been staged here moments ago, however... where was Captain Xu’s opponent?!

Countless questions lingered on their minds, but suddenly, a voice echoed out. Captain Gao said in a trembling voice directed into his megaphone: “Everyone... b-besides people in charge, depart immediately... This is an order!”

There were several parties in charge: the army’s three lieutenant colonels, Vice Captain Chen, and Captain Gao, yet all of them took the same action without consultation by walking towards Xu Yangyi.

This was because... there was a tremendous, ten-meter-deep crater over at the side! It was simply too eye-catching to be

ignored!

Their footsteps were silent as they walked over to the side of the crater, and the several people traded looks with each other. They listlessly looked at the crater again, unable to say a single word.

“C-Captain Xu...” It wasn’t known how much time had passed until Vice Captain Chen suddenly turned his head, gazing at Xu Yangyi with fiery eyes and said trilly: “J-just now, what the heck happened?”

“What was up with that streak of red light?”

“How did these lotus leaves get here?”

“What’s up with this crater?”

“Where’s the criminal? How did sir handle the criminal?”

Too many questions. The rise of the first question was like a opening of the floodgates, frantically spilling out. The other several people no longer spoke as well, only their heated gazes made manifest were fixed onto Xu Yangyi.

The landscape was already beyond scientific explanation... They didn’t dare to think of it, didn’t dare go in the direction that was as immeasurable as gods and devils... Why hadn’t they seen a single creature in front of them a moment ago, but in a second, like an edited video, how was it that so many things had suddenly appeared?

No one could explain it besides the man in front of them... He was simply like the sole witness in a legend. Everyone’s hearts were bursting with curiosity as they waited for him to speak. However, Xu Yangyi simply didn’t plan to give an explanation and sat down to treat his injuries: “Mao Ba’er, come out and clean up.”

The muscles on everyone’s faces slightly cramped. The heck’s up with you, why don’t you say something, alright! One couldn’t use the excuse of hunting after a criminal to explain this kind of scene anymore, right?! With so many eyes fixed on you helplessly, you

got the nerve to pretend there's no one else around and treat your injuries!

“Did you cause this?” Finally, Old Zhu couldn't bear it any longer and asked.

This ought to have been the case... The only person here was him... however...

Was he still a goddamn human! Could a human cause these kinds of earthly alterations? Was a human capable of such world-shaking sorcery?

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi glanced over, clear and cut to the point. In fact, his wounds weren't serious; it was just the bone spurs that had pierced into his body were rather hard to take care of. Presently, he was like a hedgehog, pulling out that which couldn't be pulled out. He only used his muscle to clamp tightly on the bone spurs.

A single word seemed to have flipped on some switch. Everyone looked at each in dismay, each set of eyes conveying the same information: this couldn't be true! Absolutely everything was a dream tonight! However, not a single person came out and said it; the present scene was silently dreadful.

“C-Captain Xu... R-really, it was you?” Several seconds later, Vice Captain Chen's voice came floating. This was the first time he had addressed Xu Yangyi as captain in true heartfelt sincerity.

Not replying, Xu Yangyi pulled out the short bone spurs neither urgently nor slowly. The drawing of each spur brought with it dark-red blood. On his stomach there were a couple thirty to forty centimeter bone spurs exposed that he dared not to pull out. Nevertheless, the current scenery formed a strange kind of harmony.

“Captain Xu... Uhh, w-what is that on your body?” Captain Gao asked and swallowed a mouthful of saliva down his throat once another minute passed. No one felt that this was an insult to them.

“Phew...” Pulling out the final minor bone spur, Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows and said: “Mao Ba’er? Get to work.”

“Boohoo, boohoo...” The sound of weeping could be heard from inside the car. Afterwards, the expression on everyone’s faces turned odd.

A pudgy husky, no less than half the size of a man, was shifting on its fat behind and using its paws like a human to wipe its eyes. Its right hand, no... Its right paw held onto a laptop, dawdling out of the car with difficulty.

“C-Captain Xu...” Old Zhu was the first who couldn’t contain herself: “You just said a moment ago it's named...”

“Mao, Mao Ba’er.” Xu Yangyi laughed, supplementing with a word: “My assistant. My unit is rather bizarre. Combat members need to have a supervising agent. He’s... not bad.”

Where the hell was this a cat?!

Have you ever laid your eyes on a cat wearing a husky’s fur?! What were you saying it wasn’t even bad? This was bizarre!

If it weren’t for the strange scene in front of them, there was a possibility that everyone would be currently shrieking in fear. However, everyone only used a bewildered gaze to size up the talking husky—one of the internet’s Three Great [Moe](#) Mascots, along with the equally famous raccoon and Japanese Shiba Inu.

It couldn’t be helped to say... Captain Xu’s interests were somewhat peculiar... The implications of a young married woman raising a big dog was often heard, but when did young men like to raise big dogs, as well...

“Pretty boy... You actually added ‘Deliver Me’ to the playlist... It’s too touching... Too sorrowful... I-It made me cry...” Mao Ba’er, the husky that could spit out human speech, waddled over and set down his laptop, sobbing: “It deserves to be one of the Three Great Forbidden Songs that drives humans to death upon hearing

it... Not only humans, even dogs can weep upon listening to it... and [experience a similar sadness...](#)”

Everyone took a double take. Experience a similar sadness... to see a similar death, associate it with one’s own future end and feel the sorrow?

Who was similar to you!

“Mao Ba’er.” Xu Yangyi shouted out neither slowly nor hurriedly.

The husky trembled from tail to snout and used both his paws to immediately flip open the computer and began to type at it clickity-clack. After he looked at the computer for roughly three seconds, he wailed to the heavens and banged his head on the ground, beginning to weep bitterly.

“Boohoo, boohoo... Heavens... I can’t go on! Boohoo, boohoo... Woof! Woof! Woof!”

The amalgamation of tones were enough to feel that the husky’s sorrowful mood could illuminate the sun and moon.

“The serpent bones are unappraisable. You completely ruined them.” Mao Ba’er fixed Xu Yangyi with a secretly bitter look. Within everyone’s horrified gazes, Mao Ba’er was like a man standing up, using an incomparably righteous and strict tone of voice, and pressing his paw on Xu Yangyi’s stomach: “How many times have I told you! Every time before we capture a demon, you need to avoid injuring the precious parts! If not, where is the money you use to buy cultivation resources going to come from! Woof! I’ve had no income for a month straight because of your predisposition for mad destruction and because you keep ending up like this!”

It was a scene brimming full of an indescribable strangeness and sentiment. A big husky with one back paw stepping on the computer, the other back paw planted on the ground, a front paw

rested on his hips, and the other front paw forcefully pressed on Xu Yangyi's chest. With his spittle flying and tongue lashing about, it was obvious that a straight month without income really made the husky sad. As to so far that he had erupted with such a powerful fighting strength.

“The serpent's gall is estimated to be worth a pretty penny, but this is a berserker! Don't you know what a berserker is! The purest demon form! The price comparison to ordinary demon bodies is over three times in value! For example, you could hand over a portion of this glorious snake skin for a luxury brand item for at least over 200,000 big ones! But now!”

“It wrecked itself. Perhaps it liked playing the masochist.” Xu Yangyi lazily sat down in the car and lit a cigarette, taking a deep drag out of it.

The bone spur lodged into his diaphragm on his back made him grimace.

“This isn't important! This is only the details!” A fire burned within Mao Bao'ers two eyes, and he bit into Xu Yangyi's hand. The crackling fire in his eyes was made audible: “The important point is... the last technique you used to kill it was Solution Ninety-One! It's demon core has completely fragmented! I've scanned it three times already! We won't be able to sell a single cent of it!”

Xu Yangyi swept his eyes over at Mao Ba'er indifferently for a moment: “Let go of my hand... No, stop biting me.”

“Hmph!” The husky adorably flung his head back in defiance.

“Okay, I'll remember to be a bit more gentle next time.” Xu Yangyi massaged his temples: “Let's handle official business first.”

“Remember your promise!” Mao Ba'er let go of Xu Yangyi's hand and lapped at it.

Upon seeing Xu Yangyi's gaze, he immediately added on: “The saliva will heal minor wounds.”



Xu Yangyi puffed out a cloud of smoke and raised his middle finger. It was one thing to say something and another to do it. Mao Ba'er stuck his neck out and everyone saw a golden bell hanging from it.

Ting-a-ling... A faint chime rang out, and everyone present felt their eyelids suddenly become a thousand catties heavier. Less than five seconds later, all of them gently fell on the ground, the sound of snoring filling the air.

“You sure they won’t remember?” Xu Yangyi gazed at the roof of the car, his eyelids beginning to turn heavy, as well. Painful waves of throbbing pressure began to flood his bones. At the beginning, it was only a slightly dull pain, but before three seconds had even passed, it seemed like someone was using countless hammers to smash into each of his bones. True pain drilled straight into his bone marrow!

It didn’t stop there... Even the qi sea within his dantian turned in a burst of sudden sharp pain, as well. His eyelids became heavier and heavier, and before he shut them again, he saw an adorable, curious face and a slobbering tongue that made him disgusted. You got guts...

When he woke up once more, he didn’t know how long he had slept for. He discovered he was lying down in a hospital bed.

“Don’t move...” A paw pressed down precisely upon his wound, mischievously using a bit of power. Mao Ba’er’s crude smiling face hazily emerged before him: “You’ve been in a coma for twelve days. This is Sanshui City’s Primary People’s Hospital. Do you feel that anything you look at is unusually blurry right now? Doesn’t it appear like I have a kind of indistinct Mona Lisa-esque beauty?”

Xu Yangyi was unsure whether the academy branch had their heads screwed on tight when they had sent him such a reject.

“Water...” He roughly lifted his hand, and a cup was immediately placed at his side.

Just as Xu Yangyi was about to drink, he suddenly fixed his eyes on Mao Ba'er, enduring the scalding pain of his throat with great difficulty: "What did you give me?"

Mao Ba'er carried the cup in his mouth and took it to the other side in a routine fashion. Afterwards, he flashed his adorable eyes at Xu Yangyi, looking for praise.

Why was it that an indescribable killing intent had come about in his heart?

Under Xu Yangyi's icy gaze, Mao Ba'er lowered his head and stood up, using both his paws to pour a glass of water again and muttered in discontent: "I'm going to sue you for racial discrimination..."

"Hehe..." Xu Yangyi was ultimately unable to restrain his grim laugh from slipping through.

After he rested for half an hour...

Swish...

"Woof! Woof, Woof!"

Bang!

A husky was suddenly thrown out of the intensive care unit, and the door immediately closed shut. Soon after, the dog stood up like a human and began to frantically slam the door.

"Pretty boy! I'm warning you! You can't humiliate me like this! Let me in right now! We can split it up 70/30 later on! However, I absolutely won't allow you to hold your manager in such a manner!"

"60/40! 60/40 is the lowest I will go! Hey... you wouldn't change your manager, right? It's really hard to find someone like me that's self-walking and adorable!"

Moe is the best word I can use to describe the compound word for silliness/cuteness. It is an abstract concept of things that illicit

“cutesy feelings that you want to snuggle”. Moe is a word I believe to have roots in Japanese anime subculture with the next closest cultural abstract idea I can think of being the Koreans “aegyo”.

物伤其类, chinese idiom that I translated as “meeting a similar sadness”. It’s actually more like “meeting a similar death” or the explanation I found is that you feel sad to upon seeing someone that meets a similar sad/bitter situation as well.

## Chapter 13: Qi Sea (1)

---

The room door opened no less than an hour later again. With a sliding sound, Mao Ba'er immediately slipped in and gazed at Xu Yangyi rather fiercely: "Xu... I've had it up to here with you!"

"Then don't take it." Xu Yangyi sipped his sugar water unhurriedly.

"You wanna cut ties?!" Mao Ba'er's fur stood on edge.

Xu Yangyi nodded resolutely.

"In your dreams!" Mao Ba'er rolled on the ground: "If it weren't for me at your side taking care of you with my heart and soul in these past dozen days, how could you have possibly woke up so quickly? Don't you know how serious your injuries are? Your qi sea has sustained damage and many of your bones in your entire body are busted up! Your spiritual sense has withered to the smallest scope! There's no difference between you and a zombie..."

Xu Yangyi waved his hand, cutting off the other: "Help me and bring that laptop over here."

"Why!" Mao Ba'er reflexively turned his eyes upwards and looked at him: "I'm huddled up under your bed. Do it yourself!"

After several seconds of silence, Xu Yangyi laughed and petted the dog's head: "You put your heart and soul into taking care of me? Right?"

Mao Ba'er was at a sudden loss of words, whimpering for a while and then extending his front paw to dig at the floor: "I was just saying it, but you believed me... You're really naive..." The room was tranquil once more. After a good few minutes, Mao Ba'er asked: "There's... no problems with your body, right?"

"No problems."

"That's good..." Mao Ba'er seemed to sigh in relief, putting his

head on the bed: “There are still four more days until graduation grades have to be reported. You bought that old swindler Clouddcrane’s courses? Didn’t I tell you... a single one his videos is 30 grand, but not even [Ran Asakawa](#)’s are expensive as his! How about I stay here and help you handle the transaction with the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, that way, you can head back to the branch first?”

“No need.” Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette: “When I was eight, I was taken into Heavens Law. Today could be considered my first outing into the world; I want to take a look at the place known as ‘the cultivation supermarket’ and the see what the financial dealings of ‘the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion of the cultivator domain’ are like. There’s also a minor affair I want to settle.”

“A minor affair? What minor affair? Can’t you go and make the report first? Don’t forget, the time to submit the grades for the graduation exam is two months. Half a month has already passed. Do you really want to leave your future task force with a snobbish impression?”

Xu Yangyi held his cigarette in hand and paused, turning his head to look at Mao Ba’er. The other had swiftly turned his body around, only leaving his wagging tail behind.

“Do you remember when I was fifteen and doing countryside training, and the wound then seemed even more serious than the one this time? After you asked if there was nothing wrong with me, didn’t you take advantage of the situation and rob me of a low-grade spirit stone?”

An dreamy expression appeared on the dog’s face: “That was the best use of a spirit stone in my entire life... To steal an item in your hand once is enough for me to brag for a lifetime...” Three seconds later when he finished his trip down memory lane, the dog swept his eyes disdainfully over the other: “...You narrow-minded little man, it’s been so many years but you still remember it so clearly. It’s a matter between friends; how can you call it stealing?”

Xu Yangyi took a drag and smiled afterwards: “When I was eighteen doing live ammo training, my classmate facing me who studied gun arts shot my shoulder and fractured it to pieces. After you helped me by licking it twice, weren’t you busy on a date with another dog?”

“Uh huh?” A tail impatiently swatted Xu Yangyi twice. The husky was pretty angry. What was Xu Yangyi still doing holding on to these old drudged-up matters? Even if Xu Yangyi wanted to be shameless, he still wanted to save face!

“Then year before, I was...”

“Are you done?!” The husky turned over angrily, glowering at Xu Yangyi: “What? Is this a [pity party](#)? Does it bother you!”

Xu Yangyi leisurely puffed out a smoke ring, gently stroked the other’s sleek fur with his hand and laughed grimly: “What I want to say is that as long as I don’t run into a major crisis, my cultivation foundation won’t be influenced. You shouldn’t be of mind to come and ask me at all... Don’t look at me like that. We’ve cooperated and studied together for ten years now; I know just what you’re like.”

“What you care about is money, money, and also money. If there’s anything else, there’s also every other vice under the sun. How many years has it been... The first time you took advantage of my leave, you didn’t even ask about my 30,000 bucks of learning materials to...”

Swish! The husky suddenly shot off the bed, looking at Xu Yangyi in shock. He felt an ineffable murderous aura.

“So...” Xu Yangyi’s hand stroked the other’s ear, and with a sudden application of force, a mournful howl soon followed after as the lowly dog was pulled over, fixed with Xu Yangyi’s eyes: “Come, tell me, what’re you hiding from me?” His eyes narrowed dangerously: “What... happened?”

“Woof, woof, woof!” Mao Ba’er yelped hoarsely, but was only met with an even greater degree of strength. He braced himself and laughed hollowly: “Nothing’s wrong, can’t I be concerned about you? You’re the number one human I approve of... I can’t be concerned?”

Xu Yangyi didn’t respond and seemed to indifferently loosen his hand. His gaze carried a sharpness and compulsion as he said clearly and calmly: “It’s me?”

“What happened to my body? Do I have to return immediately to Heavens Law to take care of it?”

“It’s really nothing!” Mao Ba’er, who ordinarily liked going with the flow, suddenly hopped up and jitterily coiled up at the side: “Pretty boy, where are you coming from with this nonsense? Everything I do is for your good! For your good!”

“Mao Ba’er.” Xu Yangyi extinguished the butt of the cigarette with his fingers, speaking lowly: “I can put up with your lowly transgressions, tolerate your naughty behavior, but the sole thing that I am incapable of abiding by is your deceit.”

The air between the two was silent once more. After quite a while, Mao Ba’er sighed resentfully “You... Don’t you know what I dislike about you the most is your beast-like keenness! You’ll catch up to me soon!”

Xu Yangyi only laughed.

“You have to mentally prepare yourself...” Mao Ba’er licked his lips: “No matter what the result is... I’ll always stand by your side...”

“I know.”

Mao Ba’er didn’t continue to speak. After three seconds, he opened his mouth again, yet stopped once more. After another ten-odd seconds passed again, he suddenly flung the bell on his neck: “Take a look yourself, alright!”

A stack of resources flew into the room. Xu Yangyi glanced at them and was stunned in his entirety.

In the cultivation world, there was a technique known as Innersight. This was an art that any cultivator would know, so that it even couldn't be called an art and could only be called a skill. If it was said spiritual sense were feelers, then the feelers could go within one's body, and a cultivator would be able to clearly "see" every one of their pores and organs through them.

As for Mao Ba'er, he simply wasn't just a talking husky. Every partnership needed a qualified logistician. A partner that knew medical techniques, economics, and how to develop and market you. A partner that would strive to find more opportunities for you and so on... It wasn't much different than a show biz agent.

Innersight was a technique he had had to know. He and Xu Yangyi had signed a life or death pact. From the outside, he could use Innersight to examine Xu Yangyi's body. These stack of resources were Mao Ba'er's Innersight diagrams from his point of view.

Swoosh... Xu Yangyi didn't say a word as he gently set down the stack of resources and forcefully massaged his fist. There weren't any differences... but from his chest to his dantian... there was a sole discrepancy! Within his qi sea in his dantian, there was a lotus shadow gently swaying!

"Scared?" Mao Ba'er's voice could be heard: "The qi sea... is any cultivator's root, and the place where qi is stored. It's the same as a cultivator's second heart... There shouldn't be anything there except for qi!

"However, when you blacked out that day, I found this thing in your qi sea. It was only a bud then, to the extent that I didn't see anything. I only know that an oddity had appeared in your qi sea! My god! Only at Core Formation would there be a core inside! Even at the long-lost Nascent Soul the only thing there would be a



nascent soul! As for you, you possess neither core nor nascent soul, but surprisingly a lotus!”

“When all your bodily functions recovered yesterday night, I found to my surprise that it had blossomed! What type of fucking joke is this!”

Xu Yangyi coolly locked the door. For a cultivator, or any cultivator—no—even if it was a normal person, no one would be able to calm their heart when an unknown object suddenly appeared within their body. “Give it to me straight.”

“Remember that berserker?” Mao Ba’er’s head leaned against the sick bed, and he gritted his teeth: “The fluctuations of its peak and bottom power were too severe... Moreover, its realm was also abnormal, especially... the place from where the demon core began to fluctuate. In these ten-odd days, I personally operated and scanned it...”

“Take guess, what did I find?” He used his paw to rummage through the images, finding one among them: “Give it look!”

Xu Yangyi carefully glanced it over, and a layer of cold sweat graced his palm. At the position of where the serpent’s demon core was, there was an identical lotus imprint! It was like the heavens had grown above it!

“As everyone knows, any cultivator’s qi sea and meridians are formed in direct proportion.” Mao Ba’er dug at the image of the X-ray: “However, the serpent wasn’t the same... It’s qi sea was incomparably tremendous, but it’s meridians were extremely slim. It’s not science that the qi sea is like a water pump and the meridians are like pipes that are linked to the water pump. If the water pump’s power output is too high, and the pipes are too small, take a guess, what kind of situation do you think will occur?”

“The rushing strength will be too great, which will lead to the water pipe bursting?” Xu Yangyi muttered to himself for several

seconds and then said.

“We can speak frankly about one aspect... Your body will explode, and you will die!” Mao Ba’er nodded: “You think... the swollen pain in your body from inside to out... battering every single one of your muscles, arteries, and meridians... every day and night... every minute and second... will occasionally cause a great amount of blood to jet out because of the rushing force of your collapsed arteries... Isn’t this called internal bleeding in medical science? Mhm, it seems to be so—afterwards, traces of reddish-purple blood will form beneath your skin and might even spray out from your pores...”

“Not to even mention humans, even greater demons wouldn’t be able to bear such a pain. It was because it was under such pain that the serpent was driven to madness while alive. This was why it dared to attack you and was also mistakenly treated as a berserker.”

The room was suddenly silent. Xu Yangyi clasped his teacup and said not a word. A minute later, he looked at Mao Ba’er and said lowly: “And myself?”

“Since you slipped into unconsciousness, your qi sea has already expanded by 0.05%!” Mao Ba’er stared at him unwaveringly: “It’s very slow... extremely slow... however, it will absolutely cause your death before Foundation Establishment! A hundred years for Foundation Establishment, think about it, not even to speak of a hundred years, in case your qi sea expands by a third, don’t even think about using your qi without a hitch!”

He impatiently turned turned around twice in a circle: “I bet that this and that streak of red light are connected to each other a hundred percent! It’s like a hermit crab! It was cozied up at home within that serpent’s body before, and when that demon wasn’t able to bear it any longer and was destroyed, it immediately chose the closest living body! It’s pretty unfortunate it was you... What the hell is this evil thing!”

“These past days, I’ve gone through all the data, but there aren’t any records that it’s related with! To the point that its likeness has never been reported!”

武藤兰 is another stage name of Ran Asakawa, Wu Tenglan, in China I believe. If you know who Ran Asakawa is LOL, but if you don’t I do not recommend searching for her around other people or in public. You will have an... interesting surprise. (๖๖)

忆苦思甜 - pity party. Well not quite, these four characters symbolize an idea of “thinking your past sucks, but your current standings as happy.” It’s a mouthful to say this, so I changed it.

## Chapter 14: Qi Sea (2)

---

Ba-dum... Ba-dum... Xu Yangyi could even hear the beating of his heart at the side of ear. His mood was extremely complicated, like a stone, deeply sinking down. Strength... was something no one was willing to lose when obtained.

He was even more unwilling because of his own great unavenged hatred. Any agent of Heavens Law would receive the organization's help in finding their assailant, but not him! He needed more strength than any other agent!

Without an answer, his entire train of thought had already sunk rock bottom. Without delay, he entered his qi sea.

Innersight.

Head... Chest... His spiritual sense swept over his organs along the way, heading straight towards his qi sea. He was extremely aware that on the occasion his qi sea began to expand by itself, he wouldn't be able to make use of his spiritual force. Once he did begin to use it, his meridians would be confronted with danger of exploding at any time and any place!

There was a title for someone whose meridians were completely crippled: invalid.

Would the champion of Heavens Law's Yuyang City branch become an invalid?! Would he go from the graduate with the most boundless of prospects to a cripple? Would he go from being a cultivator that could soar among the clouds and sail the mists to an ordinary person?

He was absolutely unreconciled to it!

He saw... He caught sight of an boundless whiteness like soaring mists and rising red clouds... This was the location of his qi sea and also the gate of life that a cultivator would defend unconditionally to their death!

Swish! At this moment, a golden streak of prismatic light flickered before his eyes, penetrating into the expanse of mist. It should've delved even deeper into the distant white ocean, but at this instant, his spiritual sense completely froze in place.

"This is..." He clenched his fist rigidly and strongly crushed down his urge to coldly gasp.

Qi Condensation, or perhaps called the stage of condensing qi, was to draw qi into the body and construct an "ocean" of qi within the body. This was to represent Earth's standard of the organisms that had risen from the ocean. Following Foundation Establishment, other changes would occur, however, a small and exquisite case was presently whirling within his qi sea.

The chest was forged from pure gold, about the size of a palm, and crafted exceptionally and meticulously. Employing openwork engraving, an outline of a fine, slender lotus was carved into the cover of the case. On the edges of the chest, there was a ring of carved designs, or perhaps it was a script that he simply didn't recognize.

The lotus had five petals, yet only a single petal was engraved with a design. It was the image of a leopard-headed man wearing ancient robes. His clothes were made from plain hemp, and he held a jade bamboo slip, sitting cross-legged on an unusual mount with the head of a wild boar and the body of a steed.

This image occupied one of five of the petals, and as for the other four, there were only four harsh holes left behind. The entire chest could even be said to be an immaculate work of art. However, that was only the top portion. The bottom portion had already vanished without a trace.

Buzzzzzz... The instant Xu Yangyi saw the image clearly, the world of his qi sea faintly began to shake. Simultaneously, in that fleeting moment, he was forced with the urge to nearly kneel and prostrate on the ground. This sensation rose from the depths his heart

without the slightest foreshadowing!

It was the purest... most primal... worship to an even higher dimension and even more powerful vitality. The mere totem had already made his spiritual sense feel as if it was dead leaves in a squall, immediately dispersed by it! Before he could even react, the small, exquisite chest slightly trembled and charged right before him in the next second!

In the real world, Xu Yangyi bit his tongue. Fresh blood immediately dribbled from the crook of his mouth, and he suddenly opening his reddened eyes. In this fraction of a moment, he understood it all.

This thing's objective... wasn't anything like his qi sea at all! From the very beginning, it's goal was his spiritual sense! If it could be said that the qi sea was the foundation of cultivation, then spiritual sense... was the foundation of life!

In place with past interpretations, it was the soul. It encompassed a person's memories, mind, and so on. Scientific methods could be used to illustrate it as a kind of wave length. If this wavelength was lost...

Death would be the only path!

At this moment, he figured it out. Perhaps the serpent demon had discovered this early on. As a demon that could live in human society to a grand old age, it wasn't any pushover. As its qi sea quickly expanded and exploded, it didn't even dare to let its spiritual sense enter its body to play "doctor". The strange case had done its best to expand within the demon's qi sea in order to lure the demon into using its spiritual sense to "take a look", since its goal from the onset was spiritual sense!

"What the hell is this thing!" It didn't take him more than a second of reflection to immediately command his spiritual sense to begin a frantic retreat. The speed of thought was perhaps the fastest thing excluding the speed of light. In theory, a thought's

speed was... limitless!

To his surprise, the chest's goal was a person's spirit... Was this still an object? In comparison with an object, it was more like a living organism that possessed a high-level intelligence!

However, at this instant, his chest trembled abruptly, and he harshly gritted his teeth. He had been "rejected"...

From his brain, he had issued the "order" to give his spiritual sense the "thought" to "retreat". As the command infinitely approached max speed, it had been "rejected" from within his qi sea. His spiritual sense... went motionless.

No matter how his brain commanded it, his spiritual sense seemed to have taken root within his qi sea, not moving the slightest hair.

"P-Pretty boy, what's up? D-Don't scare me! What the heck happened?" Mao Ba'er leapt in fright and came straight to safeguard him. In the past several seconds, Xu Yangyi had been fine and his expression hadn't changed. But just now, Mao Ba'er's heart plunged with a thump, absent of rhyme or reason, like a dangerous omen was suddenly approaching. Soon afterwards, he watched Xu Yangyi perspire profusely and hack up blood from his mouth.

Xu Yangyi didn't respond to him and only pursed his lips rigidly. This was because his spiritual sense and the chest had completely collided together at the same time!

Swoosh! An expanse of eye-dazzling golden light illuminated his entire qi sea! Even his misting qi appeared to return to tranquility at this instant!

"Pretty boy! Pretty boy, what's happening to you?!" Mao Ba'er immediately jumped over. In front of Mao Ba'er, Xu Yangyi didn't say a word as he clutched his head and collapsed on the bed.

A stabbing pain, an abrupt stabbing pain. Like someone had used

their hand to shove a pile of things within his mind, it was a pain bursting at the seams, making him believe his head would split open!

Myriad awls stabbed into his mind. He felt a place he couldn't even speak of within the center of his brain turn into a nexus of pain. As for this wave of pain, it was like a network, covering the cortex of his entire brain, as if an electric current was coursing through it!

But at the same time, countless vestiges of golden script followed by a sharp pain, frantically rushed into his mind. It was unknown how much time had passed... a minute, ten minutes, or perhaps an hour until the wave of piercing pain subsided.

"Pant... Pant..." His stomach moved up and down like a drawn bellows. The sharp pain had long covered his hand in cold sweat. Mao Ba'er leaned against his bedside and looked at him nervously: "P-Pretty boy, you're scaring this pupper to death... There was a sign the first time around, but there weren't any indication whatsoever the second time... I thought you were going to croak just like that... You haven't even left a legacy... Are you alright?"

Xu Yangyi firmly gritted his teeth and shook his head. He shut his eyes, since the tearing pain within his brain had caused him to suddenly break out in a cold sweat from head to toe. Nevertheless, he simply couldn't shout in pain right now!

He "scanned" every nook and cranny of himself inch by inch. Hand... Chest... Stomach... His four limbs... Brain... however, he didn't find any changes!

As he scanned his qi sea once more, he couldn't restrain himself from grinding his teeth. The upper-half of the chest... had vanished! As if it had never appeared!

He opened his eyes with a swish. Once, twice, thrice, he scanned his body, yet the truth was verified. Indeed, there weren't any changes whatsoever. Just moments ago, he had clearly felt



countless things rush into his mind, but now, he wasn't even able to recall anything!

One hour, two hours... after no less than three hours did he speak again.

"It's nothing." The devastating, storm-like pain within his body had finally subsided to a degree. He took a long breath and looked deeply at Mao Ba'er: "Remember, you absolutely cannot reveal what has happened in these past several days to anyone."

"Why?" Mao Ba'er said anxiously: "With your body in such a state, don't you want to return to Heavens Law and get a comprehensive examination? Don't you want to look for the instructor to discuss a countermeasure?"

"If I do, they'll definitely try to understand what this thing is clearly later on!" Xu Yangyi said unhesitatingly, his voice sharp enough to chop through nails. He pursed his fairly dried lips and said lowly: "Human nature is never lacking of the light that makes people sing praises in admiration, but nor is it lacking the darkness that makes the hairs of men stand on edge."

"China is one of the world's four great ancient civilizations with a long river of history spanning several millennia. How many unsolved mysteries have been left behind? Mao Ba'er..." He stared into the other's eyes: "You think if someone said, 'oh, this is an ancient Core Formation cultivator's amazing magik artifact that recognizes its master automatically'... even if the constraint of the law exists and even if it is but a mere 'suspicion', what do you think those decrepit cultivators with a one-way express ticket to death that are only a kick short from opening the next realm will believe?"

Mao Ba'er was stunned.

"There's no need to guess..." He sneered and licked his lips: "In less than a week, even if I hid at the very ends of the Earth, they would shred everything to pieces to find me."

“Cultivation... is the struggle of all living things.” He leaned back, looked at the ceiling, and said somewhat ruefully: “If that time comes, even if I have to brave the danger of a life sentence, I will nevertheless begin a massacre.”

Mao Ba’er swept his eyes over Xu Yangyi: “Sometimes, I really don’t know if you’re a good guy or a villain at the end of the day... You seem pretty noble, but I’ve always thought that what lies hidden in your own heart is far more dreadful than what a demon holds in their own.”

“I am merely a pragmatist.” Xu Yangyi laughed.

“Pretty boy.” Mao Ba’er hopped up on his body with his paw and said lowly: “However... I think it’s still better to get back early to the branch for graduation. Haven’t you ever thought of what the branch represents?”

Xu Yangyi glanced at him: “Truth.”

“The truth of the world. The truth buried among history and books. A representation of the truth orally handed down word by word. Only through cultivation can the world truly be seen clearly.”

“Then, haven’t you ever thought what the branch is like?” Mao Ba’er plopped down on his pudgy butt: “There lies the actual key... leading to the genuine entrance of truth... I believe only there will you truly be able to analyze the origins behind the changes of your qi sea. I don’t want to destroy your future because of a guess.”

“My future...” Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes: “Compared with losing my life, which do you think is even worse?” Skipping over the topic, he waved his hand: “Help me get the painkillers.”

“Wouldn’t it be better to get a loan of a hundred grand from the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion and buy some Blackjade Wound Replenishing Ointment?” Mao Ba’er squinted his canine eyes, suggesting enticingly: “Colorless, odorless, and greaseless, it’ll

eliminate any pains right away...”

“If I didn’t hear incorrectly, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion manager was just at the door.” Xu Yangyi laughed coldly: “Don’t think I didn’t hear it... Bountiful Treasures Pavilion gave you five grand to get me use their medicines... It’s convenient that the Sanshui City branch has improved their workmanship... Am I only worth five fucking thousand?”

Mao Ba’er looked at Xu Yangyi like he had seen a living ghost as soon as he heard him say there was nothing wrong and [opened up like a flower at first sight](#), his paw covering his mouth in shock: “There was also a single bag of Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s dog chow... That’s not the important part! What’s important is how did you know?!”

“He was at the entrance stirring up a ruckus... Didn’t you go?” Xu Yangyi rubbed his temples as they ached more and more.

“That’s impossible!” Unexpectedly, Mao Ba’er suddenly jumped up, staring at Xu Yangyi unwaveringly: “There wasn’t a single person speaking at the door! I swear! Also, I’m a canine! My sense of hearing and smell are much keener than that of a human’s! In any case, I also just entered the initial stage of Qi Condensation! How can you be this pupper’s opponent when it comes to hearing and smell? How can you hear what I can’t even hear?”

open up like a flower at first sight is part of a longer chinese idiom. It means when a good looking guy walks by, all the girls stop to look and then the flowers open up to “look” too.

# Chapter 15: Apology

---

Mao Ba'er stood up like a human with a swish and pulled the door open: "Look! No one's even here!"

Xu Yangyi raised his brows, as well. Indeed, there wasn't even a single person. Then... the question was, what had he just heard moments ago?

He had clearly heard someone named Manager Su at the door talking aloud. Manager Su and Mao Ba'er had spoken quite clearly on a cooperative arrangement, price, and share, however... there really wasn't anyone at the entrance!

"Isn't there someone on the left side? Someone that wanted the doctor to change their medication?"

The dog scouted out and returned: "None at all."

"Was it your imagination?" Mao Ba'er looked at Xu Yangyi suspiciously: "In fact... even if you don't brag, we'll still be good friends... If you're willing to give me a clear explanation how you learned of my deal with the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion."

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and didn't answer the other, rather he released his spiritual sense. A thought sprang into his mind. Perhaps... it wasn't a trick of the ear.

Just as he unleashed his spiritual sense, he immediately felt it was different, a completely distinct difference from before! In the past, his spiritual sense had also been clear, but in comparison to now, it seemed to have been covered with film of mist!

The flower was red. Yet in his eyes, he sensed even more layers of red that were even richer, like he could clearly see the composition of its color. As to so far that he could see the honeybee on the flower vibrating its wings.

Or perhaps it could be said in such a way that the world had become even more realistic.

He was in the sickroom of the tenth floor, but the flower garden was on a lower level outside the hospital, nearly a 150 meters at the side of the national highway! Even if he was a Qi Condensation cultivator, he shouldn't have been able to see something a 150 meters away to the most minute of details! A 100 meters was the max!

But more important was sound. Every sound, the buzzing of the honeybee's wings, the discussion of the patients the floor below, and the hailing of a car 200 meters away... seemed to be at the side of his ear, so that he could even hear the middle-aged driver as he slightly coughed.

His eyes slightly narrowed. He hadn't heard incorrectly... Rather, his spiritual sense had surprisingly strengthened! Moreover, it was a sudden expansion approximately a third in size!

Xu Yangyi forcibly suppressed the throbbing of his heart. Spiritual sense could be said to be on the same level of importance to a cultivator as their qi sea. It was the eyes, ears, and tongue of how cultivators perceived the world, equivalent to a human's five senses. It also comprised...

The perceptive and absorbing strength of qi! In other words, his perception and absorption rate of qi was over a third stronger than a cultivator of the same stage!

An art or treasure that could upgrade spiritual sense wouldn't exist these days by any stretch of the imagination! This era of Cultivation Civilization was also known as Saddharmavipralopa or the End of Days. Qi had already become incomparably thin, and matters such as cultivating to Foundation Establishment in a 100 days like in novels could no longer appear. Presently, to achieve Foundation Establishment in a 100 years was considered top-notch. Spiritual sense would only advance following a cultivator's elevation in realms. Never had there been a precedent for such a sudden advancement!

“Pretty boy... you alright?” Like a dried well, his complexion was without a single ripple. Mao Ba’er asked nervously: “Is it... because you didn’t rest well enough that you’re suddenly hearing things?”

“Possibly.” Xu Yangyi shut his eyes and leaned against the sickbed: “Pack things up. In several days, we’re going to leave Sanshui City.”

Thud thud thud... At the same time, a knocking sound suddenly echoed out. Just as he said enter, he saw a large bouquet of flowers with ten-odd people following behind.

They were all the agents of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit. This time, all of them were present! They followed the lead of Vice Captain Chen!

“Captain Xu, has your health improved?” Vice Captain Chen set the large bouquet of flowers on a table respectfully and stood sincerely at Xu Yangyi’s bedside: “I heard you’ve been out for over ten days. We’re really sorry, we didn’t expect that scumbag would’ve set up explosives. If it weren’t for you, Captain Xu... We don’t even know if we would be able to see our children again.”

Vice Captain Chen’s words revealed heartfelt admiration, deference, and respect. His aggressiveness of the past several days when Xu Yangyi had just taken post had long disappeared without a trace.

“Just doing my job.” Xu Yangyi looked at the big bouquet of sword lilies that represented good health and laughed: “Thank you for the flowers, everyone.”

“T-There’s no need for thanks... No, I want to say that Captain Xu doesn’t need to give thanks!” Old Zhu took a step forward and sighed deeply: “Some people said you were a paratrooper before. They said you were sent down to fill the numbers, and moreover, I actually believed it... Captain Xu, we... we...”

“We declined the commendations of the Provincial Public

Security Department.” Vice Captain Chen revealed a shameful look: “Captain Xu... We were all waiting on you, but the Provincial Public Security Department didn’t want to hold on any longer. The case had dragged on for too long. You may not know, but Sanshui City has been so alarmed for the past month that even night classes were canceled. There was no one on the street... They wanted to immediately announce this information, I...”

“No need to apologize.” Xu Yangyi didn’t care at all. Calming the hearts of the people was the first order of business after a strange incident: “This is what you should’ve done.”

The present scene had become a bit awkward.

In the past, none of them were used to looking at Xu Yangyi. For a paratrooper to drop down all of a sudden and then take charge over a major case was akin to [a sheep leading a pride of lions](#). Above all else though, they had nearly flown into a seething rage when Xu Yangyi had stated that he was personally handling the case.

It wasn’t until they regained consciousness that they became aware that it was Xu Yangyi that had saved their lives at the key moment. According to the report, their close proximity to the explosives the criminal had set up had lead to partial loss of memory.

Thinking back to their display in the past, they drummed up enough courage to get together and come visit.

It was embarrassing... how could they set face aside? They were all people in their thirties and forties, but they had judged Xu Yangyi by his appearance. The result was that the other had saved all of their lives and single-handedly apprehended the criminal. When Chief Zheng had announced this information, the entire Disciplinary and Investigations Unit had been left without words.

After brief period of shock, their guilt had swelled forth like a tide, however... on the contrary, they were embarrassed. After

stewing around for a good while, it wasn't until these feelings had reached their boiling point that they carefully selected a large bouquet of flowers and came together to the sickroom.

“Is there anything else?” Xu Yangyi had roughly grasped their intentions: “I have to get a re-examination soon and then I'll be transferred afterwards. How about all of you wait for me to leave the hospital and then we'll chat again?”

Transferred?

Their feelings of embarrassment weakened in a flash and were replaced with a bubbling reluctance to part ways. Everyone looked at each other in surprise. They seemed to recall that Xu Yangyi had indeed said that he would be transferred after the case.

Before, they had been overwhelmingly willing for such a thing! But now...

While they had been quite willing in the past, they were just as reluctant now!

Was this a joke! Which department wouldn't be willing to have such a friggin' awesome captain? Not to mention a mortal achieving the Dao, [even chickens and dogs would ascend to the heavens](#) and reap an abundant harvest by studying under another!

“Captain Xu!” Vice Captain Chen pursed his lips, suddenly stood up, and bowed seriously: “I apologize!”

Together with him at the head, everyone behind him bowed at the waist and said in chorus: “Our apologies!”

“Never mind it.” Xu Yangyi shook his head.

Just as he was about to speak, Vice Captain Chen immediately followed up: “No! There's something else! If I don't say this, I'm afraid my dreams won't be peaceful later on!”

“At the beginning, we judged you by your cover. Captain Xu... I truly didn't expect... you would be s-so...” Old Zhu pursed his lips,



reflected over it for two seconds, and then said wholeheartedly: “Awesome, frickin’ awesome! No one dared to accept this case in Nantong Province, but you busted it in three days flat! I, Old Zhu, accepted the last-sitting captain, Captain Gong. Now, I accept you!”

“Captain Xu, please accept our apologies.” Officer Qin said as well: “We didn’t bring a present, but these are our heartfelt feelings. If it’s because of our attitudes before that has drawn your misunderstanding...”

“I guarantee it absolutely won’t happen again!” Vice Captain Chen straightened out his waist and patted his chest: “Say no more. I accept this captain. Considering qualifications, it originally should’ve been my turn. However, only those who are capable may take this seat! If you tell us to go south later on, we sure as hell won’t go north!”

Xu Yangyi understood. They didn’t want him to leave...

Concerning Vice Captain Chen’s apology, he really didn’t put it to mind. Even though things had been difficult before, he hadn’t even taken it to heart. This was because he wasn’t a person walking parallel with them. This wasn’t looking down on them, but rather that which angered him was different from the root of ordinary people’s..

Because of their superiors making things hard for them, annoying colleagues, and increases in prices, ordinary people would swear up a storm in public, but he wouldn’t. He was only anxious if his cultivation was unable to make progress, only worried he wouldn’t see the end of the Grand Dao.

“I’m sorry.” He stood up and was supported up by his colleagues of barely several days: “This is a command from the top of the chain. My coming here was only to handle this case. I’ve finished, so I have to return.” His words were clear and cut to the point. Anyone could hear that this was a matter that couldn’t disobeyed.

“Can’t... Can’t the rules be bent?” Vice Captain Chen gritted his teeth irreconcilably. With such a capable captain, he truly didn’t wish for someone else to transfer Xu Yangyi out!

Xu Yangyi shook his head and laughed: “There’s a chance we’ll meet again.” Even when all the agents of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit left the sickroom, their hearts were still unreconciled to it.

“Hey, Old Chen, do you still remember what happened that night?” Old Zhu furrowed his brows and asked: “I can’t remember anything at all... I only remember... it seemed that something extremely grave occurred... We owe Captain Xu quite an awfully large favor...”

“I don’t remember, as well...” Vice Captain Chen smiled wryly and shook his head: “However, I’m in the same boat as you. I keep getting the nudge at the back of my mind that if it weren’t for him that night, we all would’ve died there.”

“Me too!”

“It’s strange... It’s the same for me, as well.”

“I keep on thinking I owe him a great favor, but I can’t even recall anything.”

As the line of people descended down stairs, Vice Captain Chen was the last to raise his head and look back towards the sickroom on the tenth floor. He kept on having a kind of feeling. That perhaps this time would be the final time he would see Xu Yangyi.

“As expected...” He shook his head and followed after the crowd: “How could a talented person possibly be willing to stay in such a backwater place like Sanshui City...”

Swish... The blinds lowered, and Xu Yangyi gently raised a slat, his gaze wavering a tad bit.

“What? Are you a little sad you don’t have any mortal friends?” Mao Ba’er stood beside him, using his paw in the same manner to

brush the blinds aside: “Pretty boy... We haven’t been normal people for a long time... This society is harmonious on the outside, but beneath it lies a maelstrom of living fossils that have crawled along since time antiquity... Besides, existences like ours exceeds that of ordinary people. Who said it? For the paths we have chosen, we must press on to completion even if we are brought to our knees.”

Clack... The blinds softly lowered, and Xu Yangyi laughed: “It’s rare of you to speak like a human. Help me get in touch with Sanshui City’s Bountiful Treasures Pavilion. I need to get an appraisal right away.”

“What about you?”

Xu Yangyi tapped his wristwatch: “Of course, I have to submit my exam grade now.”

兵熊熊一个，将熊熊一窝. Kinda hard to translate this into english. I used the example I found to demonstrate what it means. Essentially, it illustrates that if you’re team is good, but leader sucks, you will suck. But if you’re leader is amazing and the team is amazing, then you guys will be awesome.

Chickens and dogs can rise to the heavens. I was originally going to localize this, but I love the imagery LOL. I played around with the sentence to make it fit. If it isn’t obvious, it means that anyone can do anything (given a situation in context). Also, “Achieving the Dao” is a term you’ll often find for someone ascending to immortality/becoming an immortal

自己选的路，跪着也要走完, I translated this kinda looseley and bit poetic, but the meaning from what I have ascertained is “the paths we choose in life hold all kinds of hardship. Despite this, we have to continue on bravely even in the face of danger.”

## Chapter 16: Submitting Grades

---

The wristwatch was a normal one, but after he pressed the surface several times, it suddenly opened, revealing a compact device beneath. Presently, the device was radiating flashes of blue light.

“Verifying data.” The ice-cold voice of a man could be heard from the wristwatch: “Heavens Law student No. 2452, Xu Yangyi, sex: male. Rank One, please state your reason for communication.”

“This is Rank One, it is to apply to submit assessment grades.” Xu Yangyi said straight-faced: “Mission location: Sanshui City. Mission objective: serial killer case. Degree of difficulty: no rank.”

“The time from now until the graduation ceremony is still fifteen days and eight hours. Before that, I want reconfirm a rule.” The pitch of the man’s voice didn’t waver whatsoever: “Heavens Law has never used the method of communication to examine a student’s grade. I believe I don’t have to remind you again of the importance of the graduation exam—as Yuyang City’s champion, Mr. Xu, you should be even clearer on this than myself.”

“Of course.”

“Second, the graduation examination grades will be announced on Nantong Province’s widescreen. If you misreport your grade perhaps you will gain momentary interest, however, upon returning to the academy to harvest the rewards... I believe it isn’t necessary of me to say this, as well; Mr. Xu understands it, too. In case some Core Formation cultivators’ assistants or Foundation Establishment seniors discover their person of interest has a deceitful nature, I’m afraid your path of cultivation will end here.”

Xu Yangyi grunted. Misreporting? He absolutely wouldn’t lay claim to feats he wasn’t responsible for.

“Good, then you may continue, Mr. Xu. Our conversation has

already started being recorded. My work ID examination number is penned 9310. I am also of the initial stage of Qi Condensation. Please remember my number.”

The light tapping of a keyboard could be heard, and Xu Yangyi began speaking: “Grade: accomplished. Classification: serpent. Demon age: indeterminate.”

“Mass?”

“The demon’s entire body is approximately around a 100 meters. It’s already been taken inside into the branch’s issued spatial Dao-tool.”

The flowing sound of keyboard typing halted, and after several seconds, the cold, crisp voice of a man echoed out again: “Mr. Xu, I hope you haven’t forgotten my reminder just a moment ago.”

Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows.

“According to the records, the mass of a Qi Condensation-stage demon doesn’t break over 50 meters. This is the cut-off point. Thank you.” The man’s voice seemed to sigh: “As Yuyang City’s champion, there’s no shortage of powerful eyes that have fallen upon you. Perhaps because you were too cooped up in the academy, you don’t understand the powers of the outside world all too well. However, I can remind you. The number of cultivators and rogue cultivators in China is approximately a million people, while in every ‘cultivation cradle’—the number of graduated students of Heavens Law is at most 300. You need not be worried about your future prospects, Mr. Xu.”

While he had spoken extremely tactful, his words were rather penetrating. With Xu Yangyi’s performance as a champion, granted that it wasn’t good that he didn’t complete his mission and as such would be regarded as odd, he wouldn’t necessarily have his value distorted when it came for every major power to select personnel.

At the same moment, within Nantong Province's provincial government building inside a room with several tens of computers, a tall, skinny middle-aged man around forty years of age was combing back his glossy hair. He pushed down on his gold-rimmed glasses and drank a mouthful of coffee somewhat impatiently.

"Old Ying, you run into a problem?" The colleague beside him who had worked this job together with him for many years looked at his appearance and laughed: "It's a tick of yours to drink coffee when you're impatient. It's been several tens of years, but you still haven't changed."

"It's not something I can change." Old Ying pressed the pause button for the recording and massaged his forehead: "Yuyang City is a major city administered by Nantong Province. A champion can basically be said to be a seeded player. In the past several days, Daomaster Cloudcrane's Disciple Chen had reminded us that Daomaster Cloudcrane's enterprise in Yuyang City, Golden Prosperity Pictures, needs an awesome Qi Condensation cultivator to calm the scene. Since Yuyang City is Nantong Province's second major city, the demons in kind have forcibly taken space to survive; it's not very peaceful. This champion..."

Old Ying swept his eyes over the screen and directly set down the recording, His lanky body leaned against his chair, and he laughed grimly: "I was prepared to recommend him to Daomaster Cloudcrane, and I even brought it to his attention pretty obviously, but he suddenly reported to me the demon's corpse was a 100 meters. An old Foundation Establishment monster? Isn't this the age of satellites? Can a [single mu](#) produce thousands and thousands of bushels? What a joke."

His colleague by his side listened to his spiel and laughed: "A 100-meter-long demon corpse... This is an old Foundation Establishment monster, right? In any case, you were only ranked 50 that year, Old Ying..."

"It's nothing more than a pretty excuse." Old Ying faintly pressed

down on his glasses: “Only the top twenty grades in the graduation exam are worth a damn. What’s the difference between rankings twenty-one to a hundred? With his performance, he’s bound to end up within the entire province’s top twenty. He doesn’t have any need to misreport, but for his bullshit pride, he reported a 100-meter-long demon corpse. Every year, you get to see this kind of high-strung hothead. After going through ten-odd years of Heavens Law’s hell training, they’ve taken a fall in virtues.”

“Let’s listen up first, alright.” His colleague was interested, as well. Virtue was incredibly important in cultivation and was often even more important than cultivation itself. There wasn’t any difference between Heavens Law graduation and a university graduation. It was merely on the eve of graduation, “company recruiters” would become “cultivation powers”.

No one would recruit a person of questionable moral standing. Even if a Core Formation master took a fancy to Xu Yangyi, how could they possibly entrust him with a heavy responsibility?

Old Ying remained cool and collected, switching on the recording software once more. He said coldly: “Mr. Xu, you still have one more chance. I didn’t make a recording just now. Carefully... jog your memory again of the specifications of the demon’s corpse.”

The sound of dialogue rang out from the other side. It seemed that Xu Yangyi was consulting someone called Mao Ba’er. Once Mao Ba’er gave him a detailed answer, Xu Yangyi’s voice clearly rang out again: “Mhm, I figured I was clear enough.”

“Mr. Xu, please treasure your opportunity.” Old Ying furrowed his brows. He didn’t intend to switch off the recording this time. Was this a joke? He had already given a one-time opportunity. If not for his recommendation to a Core Formation master at the top of the food chain and also for the glory of his Nantong Province branch, what was the least bit need of him to give this kind of chance to a little cultivator that hadn’t even graduated?

“Mhm, in total, it is a 142.03 meters long and four meters in width.”

“Pfft...” Old Ying’s colleague nearly spurted out in laughter, resisted the urge to smile with great difficulty, and shrugged his shoulders, looking at Old Ying’s ashen face. Making a devil-may-care gesture, he shook his head with a regretful look in his eyes soon after and mouthed: What are you still arguing with this person for?

Old Ying closed his eyes, and as he opened them, his voice carried an even icier hint: “I understand. I shall report it as is. Mr. Xu, is there anything else?”

Don’t scream, you mustn’t. This kind of person would be inevitably eliminated all accounts. Regardless of the fact that he was Yuyang City’s champion.

What qualifications did a person whose prospects were already culled off have to earn respect?

“Oh, there’s something else.” Xu Yangyi’s voice paused on the other side: “This was a berserker. The academy regulations state in the event of an unusual circumstance, bonus points may be added. I’ll have to trouble you to make note of it.”

In a blink, the party at the other end of the wristwatch went silent.

Just as the colleague was about to cover his mouth to stem his laughter, he failed to laugh in that next instant. Old Ying looked at his computer in shock, believing he had heard incorrectly.

What... did he just say?

“You seemed to have said... a berserker?” Old Ying was suddenly startled back into his wits by this answer. Once he had discovered this, he had surprisingly been so shocked that he had actually asked! By his side, his colleague looked at him with a similar incredulous expression plastered all over his face.



“Okay, I’m hanging up.”

“Hold up a second!” These words had completely pulled these two back to attention. Old Ying gripped his microphone with his voice raised: “Mr. Xu, you must remember clearly! A berserker has to be reported to a specialized ‘different management office’! A berserker’s striking capabilities are over five times that of a normal demon! Moreover, they’re capable of surmounting two minor stages! It has been said as well that if it’s at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, it’ll become late-stage Qi Condensation! Furthermore, the probability of such an unusual circumstance appearing is astronomically rare! Only Heavens Law’s academy-affiliated Beijing Hospital and Shanghai Hospital have dissected an actual subject! You...”

Before his voice had even fallen, he was thoroughly floored, while his colleague nearly jumped!

This was because an image had been sent over to the computer. When Xu Yangyi had clashed like a fireball against the serpent’s head that was covered in bony spurs and ridges, Mao Ba’er had snagged a photo!

Beneath moonlight, the tremendous serpent several tens of meters in length had thrust its bones out in reverse, and the fireball had caused the radiant moon to lose its luster! Even in the haziness, one could also see the skewed color of the demon’s pupil, and the hundred plus tiny snakes as thick as a man’s waist on the ground! As well as... the tremendous serpent’s forty-plus meters of length outside the ground!

An extraordinary situation... The reason being, a Qi Condensation demon has surpassed the body of a Foundation Establishment demon!

Boom... Boom... Old Ying had already stood up at some unknown point, his mouth slightly ajar, pushing back on his glasses incessantly. It wasn’t known when as well, but the colleague at his

side had also stood up, his eyes swiftly popping out and fixed rigidly upon the computer screen.

They recognized three things.

One, this photo didn't have any traces of being tampered with..

Two, this serpent... even if it wasn't a berserker, it was absolutely also in some other abnormal state!

Three...

"This is... Solution Ninety... Life Sacrification..." Old Ying's throat trembled violently like he had swallowed a date: "In the history of students in Heavens Law that haven't yet graduated that could learn... and employ... this move during the graduation exam, all of them... are absolute heavenly blessed heroes..."

He himself knew... it wasn't until ten years later when he had graduated did he have the capability to use this move! Only then he dared to use this move!

"You... No, sir, are you certain that all of the aforementioned is true?" Finally, he stifled the shock of his heart and spoke.

He really wanted the other to deny it, since this kind of disparity, envy, and admiration had soured into an ocean within his heart. They were all humans, all cultivators, but did the difference have to be so great!

However, he moreover wanted the other to admit it! This was because... if he could recommend such a management-level talent to a Core Formation master's assistant, Nantong Province's reputation in China's cultivation world and scope of power would drift upwards by a small stage! Especially, such an outstanding talent!

"Yeah, I'm still in the sickroom right now. I'll arrive at Nantong Province's provincial capital in time. However, this berserker's strength wasn't that strong. It was just between the pinnacle of the initial stage and middle stage."

Between Old Ying and his colleague, the two of them didn't know how to hang up the phone. In their hearts, they felt a sense of loss, excitement, and envy... all kind of feelings converged together into a boundless expanse.

What kind of good luck... did one need to actually meet such an extraordinary circumstance during their graduation examination? What kind of strength did one... actually... actually need to be able to kill the opponent?

And to speak so matter of factly... and its strength wasn't that strong? Between the pinnacle of the initial stage and middle stage... Could it be you don't know that baseless boasting is the greatest fatality? The mere body of a tremendous demon serpent would cause a majority of cultivators at the initial stage like Xu Yangyi to shrink back!

In all of China, over 80% of cultivators were at Qi Condensation! No! The world! Among them, 60% were at the initial stage! Would it kill you not to brag?!

“Report this immediately to the branch director! Old Ying stood up as if he had just awoken from a dream and suddenly stomped his foot in annoyance: “Fuck... I actually forgot to state my work number one more time!”

Mu is a chinese measurement for land. Unlike Jin, which can be translated into catty, a mu is defined as 1/15th of a hectare. Doesn't sound very smooth to put it like that.

## Chapter 17: Manager Su (1)

---

Xu Yangyi wasn't aware of branch matters at all. Perhaps it would be better to say that even if he did understand, he still wouldn't care too much. Heavens Law was a militarized administration. Besides learning the habits, geographical distribution, classification, societal structure of demons, and how to develop their own cultivation, other finer aspects wouldn't be taught.

This society was far more complex than beyond what normal people could see. It wasn't enough to even study this to begin carrying on in this society, moreover, the cultivation world didn't require it. The law of the jungle was that simple.

Thus, it could be said that Xu Yangyi basically didn't understand what a berserker symbolized for every exam candidate and so on. He also didn't know that after he slayed the berserker, the branch would become the receptacle of much attention. He only knew he was confronted with a choice now, an extremely grim choice.

"What? Handsome dislikes big sis's handiwork?" A jade-like hand followed by a sweet voice set down the cold sweet fermented rice balls in her hand and took out a snowy, gold-marked card from her bosom. She didn't pass the card into Xu Yangyi's hand but gently pursed it to her lips, leaving a red layer of delicate fragrance on it and then flicked it streaking into his sturdy chest.

It was unknown what methods she had used, but the button on his chest popped off with a clack, followed by the second one... the third one... straight to his chiseled abs until the card stopped at his hand and squirreled itself away: "Big sis knows I'm bold to trouble you with these ordinary foods, even if I did personally prepare them. The flavor can't be compared with the cultivation foods you normally eat... A stud like you won't blame me, right?"

Xu Yangyi calmly took the business card from his wide-open

clothes and blew on it: “The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s Manager Su, I have less than a month until I have to return to the branch to make my report. There’s not much time.”

“You can do many things in a month... Does handsome think that a normal person like me is unsuited to chat with you?” The woman stooped her body over, propping her perfect face to peer at him: “Big sis only wants to invite you for a bite, that’s all. Sir is connected to the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, and we can discuss the purchasing arrangements of the demon’s corpse. Can’t I appreciate a handsome customer?”

She laughed and said sweetly: “And doesn’t Mr. Xu’s ‘first time’ deserve to be commemorated?”

Her voice wasn’t melodic at all, but it betrayed a languid smokiness. If a young maiden could be said to be a silver bell, then she was the lantern’s evening candle. She was classy, respectable, and a trace of alluring appeal revealed itself in her extravagance.

Her voice made people who heard these words come from her lips couldn’t help but associate it with how rosy and seductive her lips were, and the softness of her watery gloss if a hand was used to gently caress them.

Presently, it was midsummer, and her light-blue crop top revealed the snowy flesh of her navel, closely pressed against her bewitching body. It made people unable to mentally associate her with anything that was covering her body, but rather desire to immediately peel them back, and use their tepid fingers to touch the silky flesh lying below her shirt.

Her miniskirt outlined the enticing S-shaped curve of her ample derrière, and her two snowy thighs below were like jade, tender and straight. On her feet, she was donned in a pair of wine-red Christian Dior high heels. The clacking sound they made as they rapped against the floor was sweet to the ears. A long white cotton scarf draped her smooth shoulders, adding an even more indistinct

flavor.

This was a woman in full bloom, like the penetrating maturity of a honey peach, like one could suckle water by gently biting on the skin. A look that was exquisite and fully complementing, with rosy lips and eye shadow of slight depth. All in all, it was a fact that could be testified.

This was a beauty, an extremely stirring beauty.

The beauty gently took off her cotton scarf, and beneath the haziness, a tattoo of a vermilion rose could be seen on her shoulder. Her gaze faintly swept over Xu Yangyi's pectorals and abdominals, and she used her alabaster hand to hand him the scarf to cover himself. With red lips carrying an enticing charm, she whispered gently at the side of his ear: "Handsome... Tonight, big sis will be waiting for you. Come to 28 Spring Road, and we'll discuss in detail the purchasing arrangements. Be there or be square."

She headed straight out, her bountiful ebony hair cascading behind her, and she glanced over at the dumbfounded husky, faintly smiling: "You're on your own."

Clack... Clack... The sound of high heels tapping upon the ground was music to the ears as she left the sickroom. Already, a light was radiating from the eyes of the husky by the side. As soon as the beauty had left, he began barking up a storm.

"Pretty boy... I knew your face would bring you a love affair! Let's go! We should really go! We need to go! But since you're discussing a buyout with the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, why did she snub me, the manager! It should be me and her talking things over, right! No way! I want to go, too!"

Xu Yangyi looked at the business card, bound in somewhat of a trance and fanned his face: "Be good and stay put."

The husky used his paw to cover his mouth incredulously, his

doggy eyes tearing up: “So... you want to discard your boyish body that you’ve nurtured for the past twenty-one years? Together with me?”

Xu Yangyi laughed coldly, simply not answering the other. He had never been the herbivore, and moreover, he wasn’t one to decline a rose-tinted rendezvous. However, tonight wasn’t like that at all.

Because on the back of the business card was the symbol of Heavens Law. A coiling dragon with a sword in the center. He couldn’t be more familiar with it.

“Heavens Law is an ‘academy’ and the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion is a ‘supply unit’. She’s obviously a normal person; did she come from Heavens Law?” He narrowed his eyes: “Interesting...”

As night fell, he arrived at the appointed location. His dress was extremely casual, an ordinary T-shirt, jeans, sneakers, and sun visor added on with a pair of sunglasses on top. It wasn’t until he arrived that he discovered that the arranged place was in an upper-class neighborhood.

The greening and public safety were both done relatively perfectly. This district ought to have been Sanshui City’s finest neighborhood. On the inside there weren’t any buildings, but rather a couple small villas. Even the cars parked on the side were worth at least around 600 to 700 grand.

Of course, there weren’t many villas, as well. At most, there were around ten. Someone was watching him...

Just as he entered, he discovered an extremely obscured gaze. It carried no killing intent whatsoever, but one of strange alarm, nervousness and all kinds of negative emotions. In a flash, he had seized it.

After the matter of the chest within his qi sea, while the expansion of his qi sea was temporarily without solution, the event

brought with it the benefit of an instantaneous result. His current degree of sensitivity towards the outside world vastly oustripped that of his previous level.

He drifted his eyes over in passing, and in that stitch of time, he clearly sensed the other immediately rein in their gaze like a bird on a hair trigger. Moreover, the owner of that gaze's heartbeat immediately spiked and their body temperature further soared.

They were... scared of him? Why were they afraid of him?

Manager Su wouldn't be scared of him. Was it that his style didn't mingle in with the neighborhood's common crowd in the other's eyes?

This gaze was frightened of him... or frightened of... someone like him?

"Interesting..." He licked his lips and took off his glasses, looking over.

It was a white villa. Sanshui City didn't have any mega-luxury villas that came preinstalled with a swimming pool and tennis court. Carrying a vigorous Chinese-style, this villa stood out like a sore thumb among the block of western-style villas, recognizable with a single glance.

Swish... At the same time, inside the villa, an elderly man lowered the blinds in a flurry, using a handkerchief to wipe away at his cold sweat as if his life depended on it. His voice went trill like he had suffered a stroke: "He saw me... He looked at me..."

His body faintly shivered and a cold sweat slicked his hand. At his side, Manager Su disinterestedly flipped through a fashion magazine, not lifting her head and said: "The things you have done are of your own blame. I set up a line for you in the consideration of your 2 million."

"Grandfather!" At the old man's side, a twenty-year-old youth followed, decked out in designer brands from head to toe. The deep



furrowing of his strong brows revealed his obvious dissatisfaction: “What’s going on with you? Our company went from little nobodies to riches totaling a billion! I don’t understand, isn’t he just the police captain? Even when Chief Zheng sees us, he has to take the long way around! We’re the economic pillar of Sanshui City! Nowadays, to have wealth is to be a lord; what are you scared of? Who saw you? Who do we have to be scared of in Sanshui City?”

Before his voice had even fell, or perhaps he was simply unable to continue speaking because his grandfather, who had never raised his voice at him and granted his every request, fixed him with a penetrating gaze.

“Shut your mouth.” The old man closed his eyes and deeply clenched his teeth several times, his voice light yet penetrating with a strength that couldn’t be refused: “Take a seat, nice and quiet. Don’t say anything else.”

The youth hadn’t finished speaking, and his chest heaved up and down a couple times. He curled his lips, restraining his anger and sneering. Standing in front of the window, he neither spoke nor sat down.

Swish! Manager Su shut the magazine closed all of a sudden and looked at the considerably handsome youth with a smile that wasn’t a smile: “Why did you bring him here? He’s just a dainty young master protected in his own little bubble. His character isn’t great and his temper isn’t minor. He doesn’t even know anything and cannot discern the severity of the situation. In his heart... perhaps in the immensity of heaven and earth, his grandpa is the greatest, right... Sir, are you not worried he will offend him?”

The old man’s Adam’s apple painfully stirred, and his hand holding his cup of coffee trembled somewhat faintly: “After he graduates, he shall go abroad to pursue his studies... He is the sole scion of the Cao Family, in any case, a great organization will fall upon him...”

He opened his murky eyes and sighed deeply: "I am an old man. This is a burden I cannot carry... I originally believed I would still be able to hold on for ten more years and let Mosheng live carefree for that period of time, continuing his life of merriment... I didn't expect... a matter like this would happen this time."

"Perhaps that man simply doesn't care." Manager Su poured him a cup of coffee, pushing it over: "Why should you?"

"He may not care, but how can I dare not take this matter to heart?" The old man took the cup of coffee, his hand shivering to a degree. He looked at the blinds in lingering trepidation: "And while I know that even a tiger at the zoo doesn't eat people... who dares to release one?"

"In order to let that man see our sincerity... Now, granted that Mosheng isn't sensible, but moreover domineering, as heir of the Cao Family, he must stand here."

Cao Mosheng looked at his grandfather in shock, as if he didn't recognize him. He felt his throat become fairly parched, and he walked in front of the window, raising a blind, looking at Xu Yangyi leisurely walking by. Because of his towering anger, his voice somewhat trembled: "Him?"

"It's him?!"

"Look at his clothes... Tsk, tsk... Even I'm embarrassed! I spend enough on a single meal in what he makes in a month! Grandfather! Are you confused?! It's him? How can it be him? I can drop a 100,000 and get tens of peons like that to come!"

"Cao Mosheng, hasn't Lord Yun told you that food may be eaten indiscriminately, but words cannot be spoken carelessly?" Manager Su leisurely pursed her coffee to her lips, not raising her head: "The Cao Family lost their middle-aged son, and you are the sole scion. For Lord Yun to pamper and spoil your nature to not know of the immensity of heaven and earth... Hehe, Lord Yun, do you regret it?"

Cao Mosheng bit his lip and looked towards his grandfather, yet discovered that his grandfather was surprisingly nodding deeply in pain.

“Grandfather, what’s gotten into you tonight?” Cao Mosheng fiercely swept his wide eyes over to the window: “It’s just a person like this... A person like this! ...Just you wait! I’ll give Chief Zheng a call right now! He’ll send him packing straight out of Sanshui City tomorrow!”

## Chapter 18: Manager Su (2)

---

“Hold your tongue!” Before Cao Mosheng’s voice had even fell, Cao Yun had already pulled him over fiercely and firmly pushed him down on the sofa, looking into his eyes and saying loud and clear: “I am telling you, there are men that cannot be weighed by wealth in this world. Yes... these men, there are indeed people in the world that can rival them, that can shake those mega corporations to their very core. Examples like China’s Imperial Qin Court, Britain’s DuPont family, or a few of Japan’s major financial groups... however, our Sanshui City’s Cao Family absolutely isn’t any deal!”

“Even the world’s authorities can only use wealth and their enormous connections to trade with the other party. When did you it become your turn to speak? Isn’t our Sanshui’s Cao Family as big as an ant in comparison to these apex powers?!”

“I brought you here in order to let that man know of my good faith! Not to let you anger him! How many times have I told you!”

These words seemed to exhaust his entire body of strength. He sat down disappointedly and leaned against the sofa, shutting his eyes: “Mosheng... you should be sensible... There will inevitably be a day where grandfather won’t be able to continue carrying along. I regret... I truly regret... [spoiling you so much...](#) Tonight, just stand there obediently and don’t say anything... Promise, grandfather, alright?”

Cao Mosheng was dazed, believing he had heard incorrectly.

His grandfather had told him before that they were going to see a man. His grandfather, as the present family patriarch and sitting chairman, and Cao Mosheng, the next patriarch and next chairman, had to treat this person properly. He had originally believed it was someone that had to meet, but the result turned out to surprisingly be the new captain of the Disciplinary and

## Investigations Unit!

At the present, Cao Yun had went so far as to say that even Tie Xue, the sitting chair of China's premier corporation, the Imperial Qin Court, in the prime of his years had to treat such a person equally?

A person... dressed so casually with the sum value of his clothing that he wore from head to toe equalling less than 500 bucks?

“Promise me!”

His train of thought not yet concluded, his grandfather's voice rang out once again. It wasn't until after he firmly clenching his teeth a few times did Cao Mosheng lower his head and purse his lips deeply: “Got it.”

Only then did Cao Yun genuinely release his bated breath. Soon after, he looked towards Manager Su nervously and pursed his lips: “Ms. Su... This time... their branch wouldn't know, right...”

Manager Su was evidently stunned, sighing faintly: “The branch...?”

“I don't what kind of place it is, as well... Legend has it, it's a mystical world... A genuine world of immortals... In the myths, it is said monsters can be seen and there are warriors that can split and hack mountains apart into rubble... Hehe, however, it is only a legend... Lord Yun, this isn't enough to believe in, but I dare to be sure of two matters.”

She looked at Cao Yun deeply: “One, the key to enter the ‘truth’ is there. The cornerstone. The starting point.”

“The truth...” The hoarseness of Cao Yun's voice carried an incomparably emotional stirring, and he laughed bitterly: “What truth... The so-called ‘true world’?”

“Perhaps.” Manager Su's eyes carried the same unequalled yearning: “This key... The second matter I can confirm is that the Cao Family has still not drawn the key to be viewed as important.”

Cao Yun was silent for a moment, and he unexpectedly laughed: “Is that so... I can set my worries aside.”

“Che...” Cao Mosheng sneered, his eyes carrying a cold light as he swept them over at Manager Su. At this moment, the sound of knocking echoed out. He had discovered a startling matter once again.

Manager Su stood up immediately and tidied her maquillage once more. As for Cao Yun, he deeply inhaled several times, not tarrying in the slightest to stand up, only...

Cao Mosheng didn't know whether it was an illusion or not, but he thought to himself were the muscles on his grandfather's face... trembling? Why!? On what basis!? Excitement? Fear?! Are you fucking kidding me?!

Cao Mosheng's complexion was incomparably gloomy. A mere captain... I want to see... how great your background is to make grandfather lower his head to you like this! You best pray it's great... otherwise, tomorrow will be the day you're sent scrambling out of Sanshui City!

“I hope I haven't come late.” Xu Yangyi entered through the door. As for the matter of Manager Su failing to change her shoes, the meaning was rather clear: please, at your will.

Xu Yangyi still changed into slippers accordingly. His gaze faintly stretching forwards and he laughed: “You didn't tell me there would be other guests tonight.”

“I'm extremely sorry!” In Cao Mosheng's astonished sight, Cao Yun nearly bowed to the floor: “I am your humble servant Cao Yun. This is my grandson, Cao Mosheng. We are truly ashamed to look upon the immortal master... Please, we beg your forgiveness.”

“Grandfather.”

“Shut the hell up!” Before his voice had even fell, Cao Yun's entire head was dotted with a cold sweat, and he directly

straightened his body, looking at Cao Mosheng resentfully for failing to meet his expectations: “Remember my words!”

Cao Mosheng was stunned. It was wholly beyond his expectations that his grandfather would surprisingly admonish him in front of a total stranger!

Chinese people paid particular attention to face. But now that a major affair was being spoken back on, he had actually been rebuked?

Son of a bitch... In his heart, he silently cursed, and an icy edge emerged within his eyes. Coldly sweeping his eyes towards Xu Yangyi, he feigned deference and stood over on the side.

“Hehe...” Manager Su faintly laughed and carried over a pot of coffee. She glanced deeply full of meaning at the youthful face of Cao Mosheng who was incapable of concealing his inner thoughts, taking a cup and placing it on the table: “Sir Cao, we can be considered acquaintances, but tonight, I cannot help you plead.”

“It’s not necessary.” Cao Mosheng forcefully choked back on his anger.

“You...” Cao Yun nearly spat out blood. This child was raised from childhood to be spoiled and pampered, however, in the Cao Family’s three successions of sons, his father had passed away in a car accident. The family’s grand properties and estates could only be given to him!

Even ordinarily... at this critical juncture... he had actually blurted nonsense!

“Forget about it.” Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette: “It’s no biggie. It’s problematic to demand the wealthy son of a multi-million dollar company to treat a pauper like me who gets a thousand in allowance every month courteously.”

Cao Mosheng laughed. A thousand, was this supposed to be an allowance?

You best pray you got something important deserving of my grandfather's attention... He carried a blood-thirsty smile as he lowered his head, licked at his chapped lips, and noted darkly to himself within his heart: Otherwise... I don't mind letting you know who's got the final say in Sanshui City...

He didn't continue speaking.

"Mr. Xu, a great person is of great capacity." Cao Yun released his bated breath and gritted his teeth: "He ran off..."

At this time, if Xu Yangyi still didn't know who they were, then he was truly an idiot.

Sanshui City had a few corporations that formed its backbone. They could be said to be Sanshui City's gods of wealth, great tax-paying households. Venture Pharmaceuticals run by Sanshui's Cao Family was among one of them.

It could be said he still hadn't guessed who Cao Yun and Cao Mosheng were or perhaps it could be said that he hadn't connected them with Venture Pharmaceuticals. But the words "he ran off" explained everything.

Not only did the toad know that Xu Yangyi hadn't died, but also that he had even killed the berserker that no one of Sanshui City dared to move against. How could the toad still dare to continue residing in Sanshui City?

Xu Yangyi was reminded of his first matter of business and that was to flay that toad of its skin!

He was incapable of tolerating deceit, especially since he had gambled his own life this time.

But the Cao Family... had spoken truthfully. If it wasn't for the other come knocking on his door, he would've even forgotten this name.

"How long did he escape ago?" He asked without much thought. This came to him as no surprise. He had been left slumbering for



the past ten-odd days; would the toad still not leave, waiting stiff like a corpse?

“It’s been ten-somewhat days...” Cao Yun wiped away at his sweat, wanting to sit but not daring to: “After Chief Zheng said the killer was apprehended... he specifically asked about your condition... Chief Zheng simply didn’t know of his inside information... Afterwards, he...”

“Embezzled some funds and took off.” Manager Su poured a cup of coffee for Xu Yangyi, gently laughing: “5 million was the greatest sum he could transfer within a week. You know, with his skill, even if he was lousy, he could render Sanshui’s security system without the least bit awareness or ease.”

The sofa was pretty comfortable... Compared to the stiff-and-plank-like “sofa” at Heavens Law, it was much more comfortable. Xu Yangyi was so lazy that he didn’t want to move, and with a wave of his hand, brought a cup of coffee to himself using a simple attraction technique. The cup of coffee gently floated over to his mouth, and he lightly pursed his lips. Before he even opened his mouth, the sudden sound of shattering abruptly pierced everyone’s eardrums.

“I-It’s f-f-f-flying?!” At this moment, Cao Mosheng’s eyeballs went round with his mouth hanging ajar. He looked on in horror at everything going on before him.

What in the blazes was going on!? Had he suddenly passed through into some cultivation novel?! No... This was a dream. This was definitely a dream!

He fiercely clenched his fist, but discovered his palm had been painfully pricked by his fingernails. Turning his head immediately, he looked at the taciturn Cao Yun and said trilly: D-D-Demon! G-Grandfather! Demon! He’s a demon! A demon!”

Xu Yangyi looked at the floating cup of coffee at the side of his mouth in amazement. Beside him, Manager Su couldn’t help but to

giggle.

“A demon...?” She said somewhat meaningful: “A bonafide demon... Little brother, you’ve never even seen one...”

“Shut up!” Presently, Cao Yun felt an incomparable complication within his heart.

In his encounter with the toad, he held selfish motives. He couldn’t be considered a good person, and to seize the other’s health supplement secret formula, he had sought several underground organizations to “make the other disappear”, yet the final thing he saw was a youth sitting atop a pile of corpses, smiling at him with a mouth dripping with blood.

In the past few years, he watched on helplessly as the other didn’t age, but was simply powerless to act! Moreover, even if he desired to do so, Venture Pharmaceuticals’ major scale of operations simply didn’t allow him to relinquish the other!

At that time, he knew... he had encountered a calamitous thing... when the youth in his third year hadn’t even grown taller nor grown older.

At this time, Manager Su had found him. He knew there were some things he was not allowed to touch... but now that it had already been touched, what was there to be done! The other was a poppy that would spell his doom! He was incapable of breaking free! He also didn’t want to be freed!

Hidden, that which was hidden had to be concealed beneath the cloak of darkness! It wasn’t that Heavens Law didn’t have someone come. In this kind of situation, even without, the other was disinclined to care, as well. However... things weren’t the same this time!

According to Manager Su, the champion of Yuyang City had come this time! Furthermore, the toad and the man even had a fatal skirmish! When the toad could no longer be met, he knew

that an imminent crisis was approaching Venture Pharmaceuticals.

He simply didn't wait for the other to come find him, rather he bribed the entire hospital, and as soon as Xu Yangyi had awakened, he had used 2 million to get Manager Su to bring him for a talk, if only for a word.

Cao Mosheng didn't know anything about this at all. He only looked at the leisurely and content Xu Yangyi like he had seen a ghost, his lips quivering and forehead slick with cold sweat.

Subsequently, he looked towards his silent grandfather once again and the cozied Manager Su. Several minutes later, he used his trembling finger to vacantly sweep it across the living room, his voice like grinding rust: "Y-You guys both knew... Am I right..."

"Grandfather... Ms. Su... Tell me... a-am I dreaming!"

"You aren't dreaming." Manager Su parted her lips and took a sip of coffee: "Your grandfather has already reminded you a good many times, and I have reminded you, as well. There are some things, even with the Cao Family's foundation, which bottom lines are still beyond being touched upon.

Cao Mosheng gaped several times, unable to say a word.

An immortal art... This was an immortal art! Heavens... The things found in novels and television actually existed in reality! What had he provoked? A true demon? An immortal?

It was no wonder... No wonder Manager Su had warned him again... No wonder his grandfather had warned him once more... He had envisioned an awful lot, such as the strength of the other's background and so on, yet he absolutely didn't expect...

This man was simply beyond comprehension!

"You're quite smart."

Cao Mosheng's thoughts were nervously scrambled to the nth degree, yet Xu Yangyi simply didn't plan to pay any heed to him, rather he looked at Cao Yun and said: "I was just getting ready to handle this matter and return. At most to remind you, but you delivered yourselves to my door. On the contrary, I..."

"Mr. Xu!" Against any expectation, Cao Yun simply dared not to let him speak. The other appeared not take the matter seriously, but he didn't have such a luxury! What was the intention of the other's "reminder"? To what degree? He absolutely didn't dare to spur the entire Cao Family into mobilization!

慈母多败儿 - I translated this as spoiling you so much, but meaning of this phrase is much more colorful. It means that a warm mother may ruin the upbringing of her children by being too nice, which will cause them to grow up rude/headstrong etc.

## Chapter 19: Manager Su (3)

---

Cao Yun was extremely cognizant of what his standing was like as the head of a small corporation in front of a cultivator. Xu Yangyi possibly didn't mind it, but he cared otherwise. He didn't want to pull his waistband up to his head for fun.

He bowed to the floor and shouted immediately: "This matter was clouded by my avarice. The Cao Family is willing to part with ten spirit stones and an additional 3 million to ask of Mr. Xu to pardon our Cao Family this once!"

Xu Yangyi's eyes shimmered. He didn't care much for money, however, he didn't expect at all that the other would surprisingly be in possession of spirit stones!

"From where?"

"That thing... was our shareholder... I discovered long ago that something was amiss with him... He was quite fond of gathering these stones. Afterwards... Afterwards, Manager Su told me that they were called spirit stones. I also collected them, however, it is extremely difficult for me to gather them. In seven years, I only gathered ten pieces..." He looked nervously at Xu Yangyi: "I'd like Mr. Xu to please kindly accept this offering..."

Cao Mosheng didn't dare to say a word now.

Spirit stones... shareholder... these things seemed to have opened a brand new door to him. Presently, he looked towards Xu Yangyi's gaze. Since the beginning, it was without the least bit shred of contempt, but now his eyes were blazing with fire!

This was... an item from the legends... This item truly existed in the world! Moreover... it was right before him!

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. He was searching for the toad not only for his past grievance, but more importantly...

For the toad's long-term supply. Where had the resources for a

whole seven years of Dew Congealing Grass come from?

This was what he needed, cultivation materials. No one was ever in short of resources! Especially during the End of Days!

Daring to conspire against and even kill me. How much of these driveling justifications could be explained?

His silence in Cao Yun's mind only relayed a single piece of information. That he was dissatisfied.

"5 million!" Cao Yun gritted his teeth: "Mr. Xu, the Cao Family isn't a big company. In Sanshui City it is still considered pretty good, but in the scope of all of Nantong Province, it isn't considered a thing! 5 million... is the greatest amount of capital I can transfer as the sitting chair! Anymore... and there won't be anything that I can do!"

"10 million!" At this time, a staunch voice rang out. Cao Mosheng gritted his teeth and fixed his eyes on Xu Yangyi unwaveringly: "Master! Accept me as your disciple! I will immediately sell off all of my inheritance shares! Altogether, it's 10 million!"

The present scene went quiet in a flash.

Cao Yun's initial reaction was the angry trembling of his teeth, but his second reaction was to go wild with joy!

"A 100 million!" His voice was hoarse, but his words could slice through steel: "Mr. Xu! As long as you are willing to accept my good-for-nothing grandson! I don't need my shares, as well!"

"All that I am willing to sacrifice pools up to a 100 million!"

The thoughts of the two were polar opposites, yet at this moment, they had completely charged after this opportunity together.

Cao Mosheng was a fashionable young master. Novels, movies, anime, and comic books, these were the pastimes that he loved. As a hot-blooded youth, how could he possibly not turn his gaze

towards the stars? To not be envious?

Although Cao Yun and Cao Mosheng weren't of the same era, Cao Yun understood... If the Cao Clan could produce a cultivator... there would be no place they wouldn't be able to go in the heavens and earth!

He didn't need his coffin money if he could supply Cao Mosheng an opportunity to rise! Before, he had been scared and worried, but now, his most base of instincts as a businessman to pursue benefit had immediately steeled his resolutions!

"Brother Xu!" However, his determination was less than Cao Mosheng's. The other had already taken a step forward and half-kneeled, cupping his fist in respect with exceptional sincerity: "Please accept me as your disciple!"

Xu Yangyi looked on at the scene before him fairly surprised. He waved his hand, and the cup of coffee flew back from where it came once again. He said seriously: "I still cannot accept a disciple. If by chance we meet again and I am able to take on a disciple, I shall consider it."

Cao Yun opened his mouth, but dared not to say anything else.

Sanshui's Cao Family still lacked the prestige to discuss conditions with a cultivator. Xu Yangyi had already said he would consider it. If Cao Yun wanted him to leave behind a contact method or so on...

Perhaps the matter today was something money could not resolve.

"Deliver the spirit stones and money to the hospital. Tomorrow." Xu Yangyi nodded: "I will not look into this matter. However, if we meet once again in a similar fashion, seek your own fortune."

"Yes!" The stone within Cao Yun's heart was finally released in its entirety. He took a long, relaxing breath and immediately answered.

“Alright, everything has been said.” Manager Su stood up, not particular in any etiquette and opened the door for the Cao Family grandfather-grandson duo: “You two, I won’t be leaving your villa. However, little brother, I leave with you a single word of advice. If you even slip half a word of today’s events, even if Mr. Xu isn’t of mind to look into it, I’m afraid the name of the Cao Family won’t exist any longer in China.”

Cao Mosheng trembled from head to toe and promptly nodded: “I know!” He glanced at Xu Yangyi’s customary expression with a incomparable reluctance to part ways. Gritting his teeth, he turned his head and then walked away. “Grandfather!” Upon getting into the private car, he said straightaway: “I’ve decided I will pay respects to him as my master!”

Cao Yun sighed deeply: “Mosheng... you know why I made you pipe down, right?”

Cao Mosheng nodded deeply: “I’m sorry...”

“How could it be that I don’t want you to become his disciple?” Cao Yun shook his head: “You don’t know...Right now, you’re only curious. If you’re truly interested, you can get in touch with Manager Su... however, to be taken in as a disciple... Don’t cling on to such a thing too much... Their world is completely different from ours...”

He looked outside the window at the night scenery, somewhat bound in a trance: “Sometimes... when you open a door, you discover that the world you thought you understood was but a mere superficiality...”

“Even now... I don’t even know what the hell that shareholder that ran off was...”

No one knew of their conversation. Xu Yangyi was none the wiser, as well. But at this very moment, the instant the door closed, a warm, delicate body had already pressed up against his own.



“Brother Xu...” Rosy lips gently blew at the side of his ear, and on his chest, a hand as white as a Night Queen Flower faintly stoked his fire: “You should’ve guessed... what I, Su Lianyue, wanted to do... in inviting you to to come tonight... right?”

Her hand wasn’t impulsive nor was it slow, yet trace by trace, strand by strand, she seemed to carelessly use the tip of her finger to gently scratch the pectoral muscles beneath Xu Yangyi’s clothes. As she arrived at his abdominals, she softly pressed against them, carrying a sweet smile. Her breath, fragrant like orchids, blew on his muscle tantalizingly: “The strength of your lower back must be quite good...”

A hand climbed up her neck, one that was thickly jointed, a man’s hand. Slender fingers caressed her sharp snowy jaw, softly stroking it.

They were both adults. That which was conveyed was rather clear. There was no need to speak further. There weren’t any herbivores here.

Su Lianyue laughed faintly, not shy in the slightest. Her hand danced across the hem of his T-shirt neither slowly nor swiftly, and she pressed down mischievously on a certain subtle location. Like an arc of electricity, she softly traced the outline. Several seconds later, she slightly laughed: “How large.”

“Satisfied?” Xu Yangyi laughed rottenly and propped his thumb against her lower jaw. Her head was like a white swan perking its head back, drawing a graceful curve. In the next second, he felt a hand dig into his trousers like a snake, pressing against a certain organ and fondling it closely.

Supple and smooth, soft and slender. Carrying a bit of an alluring aroma, she was nothing like him at all.

Su Lianyue stilled smiled as before and gently closed her eyes as if she was waiting on something. However, what awaited her wasn’t what she was looking forward to, since at the moment she closed

her eyes, the other's thumb was like a sword, stiffly pressed against her lower jaw with great strength, making her yelp out lowly in pain.

Simultaneously, her wildly spasming hand was pressed down by Xu Yangyi at the place it originally should've been. She pursed her ruby lips, clawing in retaliation, yet he simply remained unmoved.

“However, I am dissatisfied.”

Her body trembled, and as she opened her eyes, she saw Xu Yangyi's incomparably cool eyes that were without an absolute wisp of lust.

“Your down payment is too great. I am unable to accept it.”

“Both of us have to consent, and there's no way I'm paying the bill... If you think you can use your body to make me answer, sweetie...”

Xu Yangyi nibbled on her earlobe, and his lower body forcefully pushed against hand, feeling her satin-soft hand cup his arousal and said softly: “You wish for much.”

Su Lianyue's eyes had become lucid and bright long ago. In the same manner, she was without the slightest bit of lust. Even in this moment, there wasn't the least bit relation between her appearance and sobriety.

“Then may I take my hand out?”

“You may free yourself in a moment.” Like so, Xu Yangyi half-leaned against the sofa just like that, the crook of his mouth turning upwards: “Really, in my twenty-one years, only my hand has been there.”

“I really don't see how. You've got the shameless potential.” Su Lianyue laughed coldly and took her hand out without the least hesitation. She didn't wipe it all and rather set her hand down atop her jade thigh, gently caressing it.

The silence brought with it an ambiguous lull.

“I was a student five years before you.” It was a long time until she spoke: “Everytime Heavens Law accepts several thousand people, only several hundred graduate. Where do you think the others go?”

Xu Yangyi shook his head. Cultivation was the struggle that all beings sought to overcome. The law of the jungle couldn't be more obvious. He didn't have the comfort of caring where the rest went.

Su Lianyue lit a cigarette, looked at the faint flickering of the cigarette butt, and suddenly laughed: “The mere absorbing of qi into the body eliminates 80% of people, and I... am among that 80%.”

“And of these people... there are nearly a million cultivators in the cultivation world, places that employ these people everywhere. Mr. Xu... I truly do envy you... Really. You might've possibly still not met people like myself, eliminated cultivators, but you will meet them later on... We envy genuine cultivators like yourself quite a bit... It's obvious we're standing right in front of the door and are only a step away, but to draw qi into the body is a distant step. It is yet like the gap between the heavens and earth.”

“I digress...” Silent for another minute, Su Lianyue seemed to steel her resolve. She stood up and extinguished the butt of the cigarette with her fingers. She looked at Xu Yangyi, looked at him deeply for several seconds and appeared to harden her resolution. Her hand trembled to a slight extent and grabbed onto her shirt button. “You must know, I'm not a prostitute.”

“Mhm.” Xu Yangyi nodded. Currently, the acuity of his five senses had surpassed imagination. It outstripped those of the same stage by a far margin. Thus, although he had sensed Su Lianyue's actions were unrestrained moments ago, they were... shaky.

A shakiness that revealed she often didn't do such things. Moreover, he hadn't smelled the scent of another man on her

body. This was the only reason he let the other touch his root of life. He had never played the herbivore.

Clip... A button sprung off, a seamlessly-fastened button that revealed a great expanse of her alabaster flesh, [like that of ivory jade](#) illuminated under moonlight.

羊脂白玉 - not actually ivory jade. This is apparently a very high grade white jade known as sheep fat's jade. Sounds weird to say this in english to describe a woman. Not very sexy.

## Chapter 20: Manager Su (4)

---

Su Lian Yue's voice carried with it a trace of quivering: "I'm actually... a virgin..."

Xu Yangyi was slightly surprised to an extent, however, he nodded: "Mhm."

This was a woman armored in a hard shell, her inner heart not easily opened. Everything before had been nothing more than a mere pretense.

Clip... Clip... Clip... The clothes on her upper body had been entirely cast off. Surprisingly, she wasn't wearing anything underneath. She was beautiful, very beautiful. Perhaps it could be said that at this moment, the word beautiful had become somewhat superfluous.

With her perfect S-shape figure and willowy waist without a shred of excess fat, she didn't make people feel that she was gaunt upon continuing to press down on her with both hands. Moonlight spilled forth, making the present Su Lian Yue appear as if she was a moon-bathed goddess.

"This is my bargaining chip... Are you satisfied...?"

She closed her eyes because she wasn't willing to have the tears at the corner of her eyes be seen by Xu Yangyi.

She had her own self-respect, as well.

Xu Yangyi roughly swept his eyes over her: "You can use money."

"Is money a difficulty for the good sir?" Su Lian Yue allowed the moonlight to illuminate her and laughed gently but bleakly: "I have no spirit stones, and I'm not a cultivator. I cannot separate this share..."

"Perhaps... to you, women are also quite cheap. However, this is the most precious thing I can put forth..."

“Am I... pleasing to the eye?”

Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette: “What you seek to accomplish is certainly not simple.”

“No, it is quite simple. However, I am insufficient alone to request anyone.” Su Lianyue gazed at the ceiling, her voice quivering: “Did you know... Sanshui City is a destitute land? The demons here are all at the initial stage of Qi Condensation. At the greatest, they are at the middle stage... In kind, the demon slayers that come here are at most cultivators of the middle stage, as well... there has never been... never, a champion that has come here... even the champion of a city...”

“These demons... are quite content with their lives. They don’t wish to bring about wanton destruction and only desire to continue living well... You’ve seen that centipede at that stadium, too... That’s the auntie that buys vegetables at the supermarket... how could she possibly warrant the kill order of a high-level cultivator? As for me...” She shut her eyes and her eyelids fluttered. Her body was bared, without anything to conceal it: “You don’t know how lowly the cultivation world regards failed cultivators... and how strictly they are looked after... I’m basically unable to conduct business outside the scope of cultivators... Not to even speak of leaving Sanshui City... my term of office is...”

She paused: “50 years...”

“She opened her eyes, staring unwaveringly at Xu Yangyi: “Sir, you are the first I have run across. The first cultivator.”

“So, I’m a hot commodity?” Xu Yangyi tossed the clothes aside: “Continue.”

Su Lianyue didn’t answer. Her clothes fell off her body, continuing to slide off.

“I want to find my little sister.” Her eyes reddened: “She disappeared after I joined Heavens Law. I joined Heavens Law

because my mother was killed by a demon. My parents divorced long ago, so it was my mother that raised the two of us growing up.”

“Her name is Su Xingyao. As long as you help me find her, I am yours. Regardless of where your desires lie, I shall concede to them.”

Xu Yangyi faintly opened his mouth. This was the first time he viewed the other seriously. He was welcomed with a serious set of eyes in kind.

“Your bargaining chip is insufficient.” Xu Yangyi said after a long time: “If a woman could take her clothes off to get me to help her find someone as she pleased... Who do you think I am?”

“I know.” Su Lianyue’s gaze was empty to a degree, but was set ablaze in an instant: “I also know... in half a month, you will return to Heavens Law to participate in the graduation ceremony... Moreover, I’m aware that afterwards, you shall go to many places, places that I am incapable of setting foot in...”

Xu Yangyi nodded, but in the next second he was about to say something, all of his words became stuck in his throat. Like a tangible substance, his gaze gathered onto Su Lianyue’s hand, because in her hand, there laid a feather.

A black feather inlaid with gold edges. At the tail end, there was a golden design that interweaved to form the shape of an eye.

“Ten years ago in autumn...” Su Lianyue’s voice carried with it an indescribable grief, the emotion brought to her eyes staunch without peer: “She disappeared... At the scene, there was only this black feather.”

Before her voice had even fell, a sharp stab of pain jolted her shoulder, yet she gritted her teeth and didn’t cry out. Xu Yangyi had already seized onto her shoulder. The greatness of his strength was as if he wanted to pinch the her shoulder blade into

smithereens. However...

She simply dared not to struggle free!

Like a white rabbit had encountered an old tiger, his mere might made her dare not to flail an inch! She was too naive... At this moment, all she wished was to shut her eyes, but she simply didn't dare to.

Truly was she naive... This was a man she couldn't rely on her beauty to seduce... Wasn't it so... How could she get past a champion? There was also... How could the freaks and superhumans that came from a perverse place like Heavens Law... possibly be normal people? How could her level of beauty... truly be greater in Xu Yangyi's eyes than cultivation?

A flame burned within Xu Yangyi's eyes. It was an infernal blaze, ordinarily drowned at the back of his eyes, but when it erupted, it would leave the hearts of men in fear!

"If you're lying to me..." Xu Yangyi's voice was grim without a trace of emotion: "I'll make sure you suffer a fate worse than death."

His tone was rather serene, but it carried with it an absolute chill.

"My words ring true. There's not one lie." Su Lianyue's hoarse voice shivered: "If you're going to search my soul, then search it."

She finished speaking and shut her eyes. She didn't desire to listen to Xu Yangyi's judgement. To help or not to help?

She was quite confident in herself before, but as soon as she laid her eyes upon a genuine cultivator, a true champion, her confidence had already given way on first contact, scattering to ashes without any remains.

Her final hope was the feather in her hand, only to look forward that the gathered resources she had acquired with all of her strength in the past ten-odd years and the last million she had relinquished wouldn't be wasted in vain.



So much that she had wept silently for this coincidence.

Xu Yangyi gazed coldly at the stunning, half-nude beauty before him. His heart was serene at this moment, but a baleful tempest roared within.

This was It...

This was definitely It!

The killer he had pursued for thirteen years! The god of death he would never forget! This was most assuredly It! The feather was an exact duplicate... to the extent that he could smell the air of that blood-stained night from thirteen years ago!

It had unexpectedly still dared to reveal itself... It had made him fall into a nightmare after he pushed open that door thirteen years ago. Now, in the past five years, It had destroyed another household once again!

Kill! No mercy!

The killing intent within his heart had never been so firm. His debt, along with the burden of the countless lives that rested on Its back, would be personally be made recompense by him.

Among the endless silence, Su Lianyue finally heard a sound like that of a heavenly lyre.

“I accept.”

She suddenly opened her eyes, staring at Xu Yangyi incredulously.

“But it’s not because of you.” Xu Yangyi’s eyes had turned somewhat crimson, like he was firmly fixed on Su Lianyue, yet not looking at her: “There won’t be a next time. To humiliate yourself in exchange for sympathy is too cheap. This is a burden you cannot bear.”

“The path of a cultivator is not as simple as you think it to be. Since you have already left it, spend your 100 years as a mortal

smoothly and steadily.”

Su Lianyue couldn't help but to shed tears of joy once she heard these words. Her figure, unyielding like a bow, slowly continued to bend downwards. Subsequently, an extremely low sob, likely from her throat, escaped outwards liked a trapped beast.

“Boohoo...” After several seconds, as if wounds within her heart of the past several years had been torn open, she looked up towards the sky and wailed mournfully: “Ahhhhhhh!!!!”

How many years had it been... Finally, finally someone had accepted her request, someone had dared to accept it...

Was the little sister she had been separated for years from still living or not? Where was she? In any event... the grayness of her life was added with the first smidgen of color.

No matter how the tears rolled off her face, she simply didn't plan on wiping them away. This wound dated far, far back. So far back that she believed she had forgotten it. She didn't expect that the sudden eruption would be so violent. Her present beauty was like an exiled immortal, a hidden flower in an empty valley beneath moonlight. In this moment, her complete splendor had finally blossomed.

Xu Yangyi didn't disturb her and only looked on calmly. He rather understood this emotion. It was just like him when he had first come to Heavens Law.

How many nights had his dreams returned to that blood-drenched moment? From crying to screeching, even now, he neither wept nor laughed. He had sharpened the dense murderous will within his heart layer by layer to a shine, transforming it into a dagger and concealing it deeply.

After several minutes, Su Lianyue's sobs stopped. Xu Yangyi looked at the clothes at her feet and said: “Put on your clothes.”

Yet he hadn't expected Su Lianyue to laugh, carrying with her a

charming expression. She came over one step at a time, her eyes bearing a wisp of resolution and determination.

Perhaps... it wouldn't be bad to give herself to him like this... At the very least... right now, at this moment, this second, she wouldn't regret it. The stone within her heart had been set free. Presently, all she desired was to clear her mind and relax.

“Aren't you... going to take your down payment?” Su Lianyue grabbed onto his hand and slowly, but without hesitation, placed it on her ample breast. Her face blushed for the first time and she said softly: “My trust... is hard to come by...”

Xu Yangyi was dazed, looking at her carefully for a few seconds and then laughed: “And my down payment is quite expensive, as well.”

He scooped Su Lianyue into his arms and made off with her without the least bit hesitation towards the bedroom: “I forgot to tell you, I'm a virgin, too. Don't blame me, blame Heavens Law...”

.....

A night without dreams.

[A sweet spring night, woefully too brief. The sun had already risen high, but the pair reveled in debauchery, ignoring their matters of business.](#)

The night had passed quite quickly, but also rather slowly. By the time Su Lianyue had awakened, Xu Yangyi had already bought breakfast. Of course, what he had bought was Kentucky Fried Chicken take out.

Su Lianyue arched her lower back. It was incomparably sore. She had guessed early on that a cultivator's body would be pretty good... but too much of a good thing wasn't that great, as well.

Xu Yangyi's gaze as he looked at her was somewhat complex. He helped her up and handed her a can of cola, not saying anything.

“There’s no need to be responsible for me.” Su Lian Yue said faintly: “I don’t need you to take responsibility for me.”

“This is the price.” She took the offered cola, her expression composed: “Yesterday night, I fell into the heat of passion. You fell into the heat of passion. You took the down payment that you should’ve, and that was it. It was price I was happy to pay. I hold no love towards you, only appreciation. As for you, no love exists for me, as well. It was only a passing pity for me. So things are rather simply.”

Xu Yangyi looked at her for a couple seconds and laughed: “I thought that after a woman popped her cherry, she would fall in love.”

“We’re both adults here. The thought of falling in love is already too distant...” Su Lian Yue sighed: “You know, acquaintances or close friends don’t get into bed first and then speak of feelings like us. I dislike such things. However....” The corner of her mouth raised upwards: “It’s not like I dislike this kind of feeling, as well. Oh, I was just pointing out the feeling of the bed.”

Xu Yangyi was silent. After quite a bit of time, he said solemnly: “If something happens later on, give my cell a call. I will help you with a single matter. As long as it’s within my limits and doesn’t go against my principles.”

“A promise worth a thousand catties of gold?” Su Lian Yue wasn’t too languished and laughed: “I’ll remember it. Anyways, a single promise is so restricted. It’s really stingy of you.”

“As soon as your body gets better, I’ll leave.” Xu Yangyi flipped on the television: “No matter what things are like between us later on, at the very least, I’m not a man that takes and leaves.”

春宵苦短日高起, 从此君王不早朝。- This is one of those things if I translated it directly, it would be very out of context. This statement refers back to ancient Chinese times regarding the Emperor Xuan Zong. In pretty much means: Xuan Zong was

having such a wild time with his concubines that the night felt short. By the time he woke up, the sun was already high, but he didn't get out of bed with his concubines and elected to just hang out with them and "stuff". Thereafter, he did not go the imperial court early to settle his affairs.

# Chapter 21: Leaving for Heavens Law Branch (1)

---

However, as if she wanted him to leave faster, Su Lianyue calmly left the bed after two hours and began to work. It made Xu Yangyi begin to suspect whether or not his skill was truly feeble.

“That’s not it.” Su Lianyue was glued to the computer as she softly typed and said: “In any case, I’m also from Heavens Law, and you were rather restrained last night. [It’s not even to the degree where I can’t get up. If I wasn’t able to get up after a single night, that would be as domineering as one of those CEOs in novels](#). But there isn’t a living thing on this Earth which is that overbearing.”

Xu Yangyi laughed and suddenly regretted his restraint last night a bit.

“Your manager called me three times. The Demon-Controlling Bell has already been lost, and it’ll do no good for me to not get up, as well. In any case, I’m a person of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion now.” Su Lianyue withdrew her gaze, looked at Xu Yangyi, and said somewhat complicatedly: “The reason I was willing to pay with my most precious thing is because... you actually killed a berserker... Besides from you, I couldn’t request this of anyone else.”

On the table, she placed a bell. It was the one that Mao Ba’er wore below his neck. Su Lianyue weighed it in her hands, not even looking at it and said softly: “My Bountiful Treasures Pavilion will take your berserker for 3 million.”

Xu Yangyi raised a brow. Soon, he was going to step onto the true path of cultivation and enter the grand river of struggle of all beings to overcome their fates. Wealth, scripture, companions, and spiritually rich lands, these were the four directives of cultivation. The arrangement of wealth was the first. To cultivators, no matter

how much wealth one possessed, it was never enough. However, the 3 million added together with the 5 million from Venture Pharmaceuticals was 8 million in total, enough for him charge into the middle stage of Qi Condensation.

He was originally at the pinnacle of the initial stage and only a foot shy of making the final push. In his killing of the berserker, the 5 million that Venture Pharmaceuticals had delivered along with Su Lianyue's 3 million gave him the absolute confidence to charge into the middle stage of Qi Condensation.

"Is it truly worth 3 million?" He looked into Su Lianyue's eyes and asked.

"It isn't." Su Lianyue avoided his gaze and said softly: "An intact berserker is worth 3 million. At most, yours is 500,000. A Qi Condensation demon isn't worth that much money, but the body of a Foundation Establishment one is truly a treasure."

"You didn't have to..."

"However, it's worth my little sister's life." Su Lianyue looked at the computer without an expression on her face, yet Xu Yangyi sharply caught onto the glimmer of tears at the corners of her eyes: "I don't know how much money is needed to cultivate, and I don't know what the branch is like, as well."

"Whether you can soar atop roof tops and vault over walls, whether the qi is abundant, and whether or not you can meet immortal Foundation Establishment seniors is also unknown to me... I only know..." She turned her head and looked at Xu Yangyi: "You need money."

"I am unable to give you spirit stones, but I can give you the cash equivalent. Perhaps my body isn't worth much to you, but this 3 million is my true down payment."

Xu Yangyi looked at her for a long time and nodded his head: "I do not regret my first commission."

Su Lianyue lowered her eyes, not saying anything.

Like so, time peacefully floated by between the two, devoid of feelings. After a while, Xu Yangyi said: "I'm going to leave."

Su Lianyue looked at her computer, and after the same period of time passed, she said calmly: "Are you returning to Heavens Law?" There was no need to respond. The answer went without saying. "Help me with a little something, okay." Su Lianyue's laugh was like flowing water and she stood up: "Help me get a picture... of what the branch is really like..."

"I've been in a fantasy, wondering what the scenery is like beyond the door... Mr. Xu, I really, truly am envious of you... Of China's millions of failed students... I believe each of them wants to know what the place they yearn for even in their dreams is like."

"Whether or not it's like those things written in novels, spirit springs streaming and immortal beasts soaring in air. I've always, always really wanted to see it with my own eyes... however..." She flung her head back and laughed bitterly: "I didn't have this chance."

"Your life is on the verge of truly unfolding. You are destined for a glory that is different from that of normal men, Mr. Xu..." She laughed and hung a necklace on his neck: "I wish you good fortune."

"My sister's photo is on the inside."

Xu Yangyi felt the necklace on his chest, nodded, and spoke no further. He opened the door and left. Outside the room, the sun was shining brightly. When he returned to the sickroom, Mao Ba'er was lying down on his bed and reading. As Mao Ba'er saw Xu Yangyi enter, he cast his snout aside and sneered, flipping over.

"Have things been put in order?"

Mao Ba'er paid no attention to Xu Yangyi. Was he in a foul



mood? Xu Yangyi raised a brow and slapped Mao Ba'ers head, but didn't get a response.

"You don't love me..." After a while, Mao Ba'er let out a faint sigh: "I've fallen out of favor... [Bringing the scent of a woman to irritate my lonesome doggyself...](#) Are you still human?" In the next second, he was sent flying onto the ground and kicked.

"Pack things up and get in contact with the branch. See if there are enough number of students that have completed their mission that can be gathered to board a plane. I'm going to return to the branch in advance."

Of course he was going to do so ahead of time! Only Heavens Law or other cultivation powers could actually exchange spirit stones with the vast sum he held in his possession!

There lied the place where he would take flight. He was already impatiently prepared to tread into this magnificent world! He had left the [ivory tower](#), killing his way into a new world!

"No need." Mao Ba'er shed his hair as if the one who wasn't worried a moment ago wasn't him: "The Nantong Province's Fengyi City branch, has already sent you a message requesting you to board a plane tomorrow night. There will be a plane headed back to the branch stopping by temporarily at Yuyang City Military Airfield."

"A 'request' to board a plane?" As he tidied things up, Xu Yangyi stopped his hand, and he faintly knitted his brows: "Heavens Law always contacts the branch after a mission, and the branch assigns an airplane. Why have they taken the initiative to contact me at this time and place?"

"I don't know." Mao Ba'er shrugged his shoulders like a human: "Maybe there's some filthy [clandestine affair](#)?"

Xu Yangyi thought about it for while, but he didn't know why, as well. It was natural he didn't know. His correspondence he had

sent back to the Heavens Law branch had drawn the interest of many people.

The two days passed by quite quickly.

At night, the wind was like a blade, blowing upon Xu Yangyi's face. His gaze fixed itself on the black sky, yet an unspeakable heat roiled within his heart, charging forth and dispersing into the tranquil expanse of night.

He... was finally going to graduate...

He was on the precipice of leaving behind his past life of thirteen years at the Yuyang City branch and heading towards a true brand-new world.

What would be there? What was the life of true coexistence between humans and demons on Earth like in this diverse world? The ancient Vatican City, the City of Fog—London, and the City of Flowers—Huadu District were places the legends spoke of that were brimming full of werewolves and vampires... would they have a similar organization like that of Heavens Law? Were the invincible knights and exorcists of myth truly fake?

In this world... how many living fossils existed? These living fossils... how did they latch on to the crowd like a parasite? The government... What kind of methods did they use to suppress them while making two completely different kinds of organisms exist together at the same time on this little blue planet?

He had studied many things in school. Now, the expectations in his heart converged into a tide, incessantly eroding away at his heart.

After he graduated, he would have a lot of time to unravel the truth of this world. He would look beneath the light on the other side, the concealed rift of darkness of the past several millennia that words failed. As well as... undergoing Heavens Law's filtering process, the struggle of the entire country's million cultivators to

cross into the central forces!

“No...” His gaze flashed, and he forcefully clenched his fist: “There is also... you!”

“Wait for your death... you son of a bitch...” He narrowed his eyes and looked towards the sky: “Your greatest error was not killing me that year!”

Mao Ba’er was flying back in another airplane. His status wasn’t the same as Xu Yangyi’s, so he couldn’t ride on the same flight.

Buuuzzzzz... At this time, a thundering droning could be heard from the sky. He turned his gaze over and easily discovered there was a small tandem-motor military copter diving down towards the still airfield.

He laughed because he saw on the airplane an striking coiling dragon and sword. Heavens Law’s specialized aircraft!

“Let’s go.” Beneath the propeller, Xu Yangyi looked at the airplane that seemed to become bigger and bigger, lost in thought: “Let me... Let me dash towards the truth I’ve waited thirteen years for.”

The truth of the world!

The truth of history!

The truth of humanity!

The airplane slowly descended upon the airfield, and a tall man wearing camouflage came walking out. Watching Xu Yangyi who was walking over, he raised his hand: “Halt.”

Xu Yangyi suppressed the fervor of his heart and walked right in front of the man. Clenching his right hand into a fist and placing it above his chest, he hammered down forcefully: “Heavens Law graduation exam student, Xu Yangyi, request to board the plane!”

The man didn’t speak, but rather clenched his fist and beat it on his chest in kind. Afterwards, he faintly flicked a bean-sized sphere

of green light with his right hand that floated over in front of Xu Yangyi. After the sphere circled around Xu Yangyi's eyes and fingers, it returned back once more into the other's fingertips.

"Pupil, match. Fingerprint, match." The man's face was stony, but he finally revealed a smile: "Welcome aboard, rookie! I'll be your guide, Zuo Lun. I welcome you to the genuine truth unrecorded by history books!"

"Student No. 1, please, board the plane!"

Xu Yangyi slowly walked up and found that there were already nine people sitting above. They were nine people with extremely similar auras to him.

It wasn't the similarity of realms, but rather the reeking scent of blood... of just returning from slaying a demon. They had completed their graduation exams, and were like him, demon slayers that had their families annihilated by demons!

Garbed in monotone camouflage, one was playfully blowing bubble gum and there was one only sweeping his gaze downwards. The peaceful mood carried with it the iron of blood. Xu Yangyi...

Laughed.

He was fond of this kind of similar smell.

"Hi." He raised his hand and waved it apathetically, looking for an empty seat and planning to sit down there.

Bang! At this time, a hand suddenly pressed down on where he was going to sit down.

It was a youth around 1.9 meters tall, also about twenty-one to twenty-two years of age. He had strong brows and was extremely handsome. It wasn't far fetched to say he was a movie star. There was a long and narrow scar below his left eye, giving him an added wildness. His hair was unruly, his eyes were drooping downwards, and he was playing a game on his cell phone with his other hand. With his slender thighs lazily lying in the middle of the path, he

was blocking off Xu Yangyi's passage.

There wasn't a single person in his surrounding seats. The others preferred to sit together, but no one was sitting down with him. Zuo Lun glanced over and didn't say anything. He walked over to the dedicated lobby, as if this was a common occurrence.

Xu Yangyi swept his eyes over the hand and in kind swept over the nebulous gazes of everyone else who had boarded the plane.

"Get lost." The youth's voice was rather gruff, not revealing any shred of emotion. His eyes had never left his cell phone.

Xu Yangyi smiled and gently placed his hands on his neck, lightly massaging it as it made cracking noises. Looking at the youth for three seconds, he said nothing further. He spun his waist, tucked his stomach, and kicked outwards!

霸道总裁文 - this is a pretty cultural idiom that can't be put into english easily. From what I found, it has its origins in novels where there is a strong, domineering (often tyrannical in a sense) Chairman/CEO/president that sweeps the female lead off her feet and is mega rich. He eats at the best restaurants/hangs out with the coolest dudes/sleeps with the most beautiful women, etc

单身狗 - is slang for someone who is unmarried/not in a relationship. It's funny because Mao Ba'er is actually a dog and the character for dog is in this slang. Can be read as "a single dog", single in the sense of relationship status. It is a nice play on words.

Ivory tower - is an image to describe that a person lacks experience.

PY 交易 - Clandestine affair. This is a chinese slang. So this is the origin: "PY is a pinyin abbreviation of the word anus in chinese. So I guess you can thinking about it literally as "a butt stuff deal" But the meaning is some shady thing going on in the back.

## Chapter 22: Leaving For Heavens Law Branch (2)

---

Fast as lightning, powerful like rushing thunder, and carrying the faint sound of wind, if this kick landed on a normal person, their bones would be snapped to say the least!

Boom! In the spark of a flint, his leg had already been caught in the youth's hand.

The youth suddenly raised his head, and the eyes of the two collided together in the air like a clap of thunder. It even seemed like the ringing sound of clashing swords could be heard, as if a pair of wild beasts were firmly locked on each other.

Xu Yangyi slightly narrowed his eyes. He was quite clear on what his position as Yuyang City's champion entailed. He truly stood at the peak of all of Yuyang City's students. If his foot had kicked the airplane, the steel plating would've become sunken in by a great portion.

But now, it was as if his foot had been caught in an iron hoop, simply unable to break free. The strength and realm of his adversary wasn't below his own!

In his heart, he was slightly surprised. The handsome youth in front of him was staring back unwaveringly at him too, but it had gone completely above the youth's expectations that he would surprisingly be kicked back!

Moments ago, the youth felt as if he had been in the path of a gigantic elephant's direct attack! The air between the space of his chest and stomach choked up, and he nearly groaned heavily.

With his spiritual sense fully released, Xu Yangyi could sense it clearly. Strength was swiftly filling the youth's shoulder blade and the major and minor muscles of his arm. Xu Yangyi was without words as he moved his body to face upwards, and with force in his

leg again, suddenly kicked out towards his adversary!

Since I can't break free, I'll kick your hand into your chest!

Bang! In the next second, the youth only felt strength gush forth from Xu Yangyi's military boots like a tide. His pupils suddenly twinkled and his hand tensed once again, forcefully blocking Xu Yangyi's kick for the second time.

However... he had stood up.

It was unknown when, but his cell phone had been flung back onto his seat. Even if he couldn't see, and the first kick had drawn his ire, he knew that if he remained seated for the second kick, he would be sent knocking into his chair!

"Fuck..." On the airplane, a student exhaled in fright: "I was starting to believe that kid was the most amazing... but I didn't expect... this last guy would be as fierce as him!"

"That kid is Tianfeng City's champion..." All of the students suppressed their shock as they looked on at this scene. They all knew that the youth's temper was rather foul. When he had boarded the airplane, no one had dared sit at his side. It seemed he really didn't like having people at his side, however...

No one could get him to stand up! One, two, three, all of them had given it a go, but none of them could even make the other shift his eyes off his cell phone!

With his two legs, Xu Yangyi had made the youth stand up, forcing him to cautiously handle Xu Yangyi. The plane was deathly quiet, and the only remaining sound was the chopping of the propellers.

A cold edge flashed through Xu Yangyi's eyes, and he was silent. His thigh muscles began to swell for a third time, and he used his maximum strength to force back the youth.

"Hmph..." A heavy groan finally escaped from between the gap of the youth's teeth, and at the same time, there was a boom as his

upper back slammed into the plane!

With veins bulging, the hand that was holding onto Xu Yangyi's military boots had already been kicked into his chest!

In a flash, Xu Yangyi had clearly sensed that the qi within his adversary's body happened to be rapidly accumulating. He immediately pulled his foot back without the least bit consideration.

In the same manner, the youth didn't send out his strike. The gazes of the two of them were icy like blades. Several seconds later, the youth looked at him seriously and asked lowly: "You a champion?"

"Oh?" Xu Yangyi laughed: "How did you know?"

"Because I'm one, as well." The youth lapped at his lips like a wolf: "Besides champions, nobody can kick me back."

"I'll remember you, kid."

Xu Yangyi restrained his might and spoke no further. Picking up his bag, he tossed it at the side of the youth, making no small amount of commotion. Afterwards, he sat down in a seat.

This time, the youth didn't say anything. He was only absorbed in playing his game. It appeared nothing like that which had just transpired would happen again. Everyone else noiselessly retracted their gazes.

This was a man's game. It didn't need words and it didn't require explanation. The weak would become nourishment for the strong. It was that simple.

The airplane hummed as it ascended up into the air. Ten minutes later, the youth suddenly looked at his cell phone and asked without any prior indication: "What's your name?"

Xu Yangyi leaned his head back on his seat and closed his eyes for several seconds before lazily responding: "Xu Yangyi."



The youth nodded: “Chu Zhaonan. Tianfeng City’s champion.”

The entire journey went without words.

Through the baptism of true combat, everyone appeared rather steady. Or perhaps it could be said that the fury in their hearts of the past ten-odd years had been liberated, making their minds finally become tranquil once again.

Xu Yangyi was closing his eyes, indifferently resting. It wasn’t known how much time had passed. Perhaps it was ten minutes or perhaps it was fifteen, but either way, he calmly opened his eyes.

Two seconds later, Chu Zhaonan stowed his cell phone away. They happened just to narrow their eyes together, looking towards the closed fore hold door.

“All students.” At nearly the same moment, a voice rang out from up ahead. Simultaneously, all the students couldn’t help but to lift their heads as if they were pricked by a needle.

A formidable spiritual pressure!

Spiritual pressure could be said to be the external exercise of a cultivator’s qi. Only the Nascent Soul realm spoken of in the legends that had presently become lost to the sands of time had the ability to injure foes with spiritual pressure. Otherwise, it could only be used to form a kind of tangible pressure.

It was like walking through a swamp; the trembling of each hair couldn’t be avoided. As if one was stuck in a vacuum, it became difficult to continue breath and for the heart to beat uninterrupted.

Late-stage Qi Condensation!

The sound of leather military boots like that of notes being tapped on a piano thudded out from the door. Subsequently, the door gently opened.

“Greetings, students, my position isn’t all that important. If all of

you have had the fortune of joining Heavens Law, then you will obtain your own code names. All of you may call me C-Lilac. The preceding letter is my rank in Heavens Law, and the latter is my code name. At the same time, I can't help but to inform everyone in embarrassment that C is the lowest rank."

It was a woman. A very pretty woman.

Her eyes weren't the typical large eyes of a beauty. They were double-lidded and curved upwards like a red phoenix. As they slightly stirred, it could be said that her elegant eyes held a devilishness to them, and it could also be said they were multifarious. Beneath her pair of willowy, exquisite brows, her eyes were alluring like a new moon without a sliver of murderous aura that could be seen.

A splendid smile hung on her goose-egg-shaped face. A pair of indistinct dimples made her appear exceptionally warm.

She had a high nose and a pair of rosy lips that seemed to be dripping with water. The addition of her camouflage tank top that held a trace of carelessness served to contrast her flawless bosom—approximately between D and E-cup.

With a willowy waist that could be held in a single grasp, the swinging of her hips brought with it an unconscious enticement. The camouflage trousers covering her figure held a different kind of coquettishness and a wave of long hair draped slanted on her shoulder. Coupled with the bountifully untamed lilac tattoo on her shoulder, she drew an obvious shortness of breath in the present group of hot-blooded youths that hadn't seen a woman in the past couple years.

And now, this beautiful woman just happened arrive to introduce herself like they were old friends, even if this was their first encounter.

"First, I'd like to congratulate everyone on perfectly bringing your graduation exams to an end. As the military department's

‘China Special Investigation Bureau’, or just short for CSIB, special correspondent for Nantong Province, I’m extremely happy to meet everyone.” She suddenly turned her body around and walked up to Xu Yangyi’s side with a blooming smile, using her sweet shoulder to gently bump into him: “Mind if I sit here, handsome?”

Xu Yangyi didn’t respond, since Lilac had already sat down before he could even nod. Moreover, half of her nubile body was already leaning against his own without the least bit reservation.

“There’s approximately half an hour until we arrive at Fengyi City.” Lilac laughed: “Before that though, I want to ask everyone something. I’d like all you handsome brothers to please tell me sincerely.” She straightened out and propped her lower jaw on her hand, her eyes containing a passionate gleam: “There’s not much time, and big sis doesn’t like people who beat around the bush, as well. My question is: everyone, are you wealthy?”

In a single sentence, everyone’s faces stiffened on the spot. Heavens Law’s damned allowance was only a thousand per month! A pitiful thousand! And they had been asked by a woman in public!

“It’s not a couple hundred thousand or a million.” Lilac winked with her charming eyes, however, no one present felt her to be attractive: “Students, is it you don’t know? A single blessed bullet from the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion is worth 50,000. The black market rate between spirit stones and cash is one to 20K, but that’s for low-grade spirit stones... A 100 low-grade spirit stones can be converted to a single medium-grade spirit stone, and a 100 medium-grade spirit stones can be exchanged for a high-grade spirit stone.”

She tossed her hair, regardless that the expressions of some students had already slightly changed, and laughed calmly: “After starting cultivation, a human begins to develop towards a direction that transcends a biological form. To be a bit frank about it, there are no humans on this plane. Only... superhumans.”

“The Superman in Hollywood flicks in comparison to a Core Formation Dao Master is nothing but a wet noodle. A Core Formation master can easily level a small mountain with a flick of their fingers and soar into the heavens to seize the moon. They’re nearly omnipotent. However, does everyone know of how much it costs for a Core Formation master to cultivate to Core Formation?” She coiled a lock of her hair around her finger and smiled: “Professor Yu of Cultivation Statistics calculated it to be...”

She paused and said clearly and concisely, word for word: “33.87 trillion good ol’ greenbacks.”

“Huff...”

“Hiss...”

A tremendously astonishing, terrifying figure. It made everyone present coldly gasp. Even Xu Yangyi raised a brow; such a sensationalized amount was surprising.

“Does everyone know what China’s GDP is?” Lilac took out her cell phone, gently pressing it against her perfumed cheek. Soon after, she laughed in front of everyone: “69.92 trillion... In other words, if you want to become a Core Formation master, you’ll need to consume at least one half of China. It can also be said, that with a number approaching upwards of 700 million people supporting you alone, you’ll have a teeny-tiny hope to cultivate to Core Formation.”

“Thus, a Core Formation master is a human above humans.

No one said anything.

Lilac’s words were the most direct observation of the implicit meaning of a cultivator’s four edicts, wealth, scripture, companions, and spiritually rich lands. The contrast of her observation made the moods of all the students who were filled with confidence and preparing to head back to the branch to conduct their graduation ceremony suddenly sink heavily.

“I have no lack money.” Chu Zhaonan shut his eyes, not planning on giving face to the beautiful Lilac at all. Xu Yangyi swept his eyes over him, and the corner of his mouth curled upwards.

How interesting. It was reckoned Lilac hadn’t expected this jab, her smile obviously expressionless for all to see. However, she recovered her original bearing in the next second.

“However, as long as you join our CSIB, these things won’t be a problem!” Lilac stood up, her smile incomparably brilliant: “The CSIB is China’s time-honored department. We don’t belong to the four army departments and we’re not part of the police or military police system. Moreover, we supersede the regional government. Every month, we will provide you with an allowance of 35,000 US dollars! As for Core Formation... Hehe, if everyone has the fortune to join the only ten Core Formation masters in present day China, not to even mention 10 million, over a 100 million, or even several hundreds of millions to even billions of USD, there will be nothing that cannot be discussed.”

## Chapter 23: Leaving for Heavens Law Branch (3)

---

Lilac snapped her fingers and a stack of materials appeared in her hand. With a casual wave of her hand, they flew into everyone's hands in a manner that could not be refused, and she laughed: "This is the CSIB's specific introduction. Everyone, please be relaxed, we are China's civil servants. Remember how the civil servant exam spread about like wildfire several years? There's a solid difference between us and some field chicken organizations. The benefits and retirement guarantee are better than what others can imagine. Even if everyone is stopped in Qi Condensation—and believe me, eight out of ten cultivators stop right before Foundation Establishment like me. However, all of you have the same opportunity as myself, and that is to become a VIP."

This was multi-level marketing, right? Right?

These words turned in everyone's hearts several times, but no one said a thing.

Xu Yangyi simply didn't care whether or not the other was multi-level marketer. He only cared about a single matter—would the CSIB be able to bring him a true advantage? His first course of action upon receiving the papers was to look at the short seven-page CSIB introduction and the list of famous cultivators. It appeared that CSIB could make things sail smoothly.

The first line on the eighth page was a row of large characters: Beijing University, Huaqing University, and the tenth greatest educational institution in China had joined hands to establish the cultivation world's largest lecture hall for the latest issues: from Biological Transformation to Darwin's Theory of the Analysis of Demons' Weaknesses.

"Huff..." Xu Yangyi gently exhaled, forcefully pinching his fist.

This was something he definitely desired! And it seemed there were no strings attached? No, no way!

He understood it clearly. Every demon had a core they had carried with them since ancient times. They had their own demon forms, and these demon forms... were biological organisms!

If it was a living organism, then it had a weakness.

Biological organisms were divided into many classifications: kingdom, phylum, class, order, family, species, and beneath species there were also subspecies. Vegetation also had variants, and every category had their own suborder and subclass... This dazzling line up was the origin of a demon's root!

In the last several eons of changes in Earth's history, every demon, every ancient fossil, had an origin that they abided by among the Earth's several eons of history. Xu Yangyi had always been very understanding about his own position, never faltering.

And that was... a true demon slayer. One didn't take action until they could guarantee one shot, one kill. He continued to read.

It was obvious that the CSIB's ace was their favorable connections to university resources and famous Chinese biologists and geneticists. This publicity material was of their own sufficient effort. For example, the second article: Evolution of Demons, Territory Awareness, The Comparison of Hunting Grounds and Natural Organisms, and as well as Discerning Future Routes.

The third article: Huaqing Biology, International Sociology Professor Cao Liangwei in Regards to the Complements Between Human Society and Demon Society, Competitions, and the Definition of Mutual Expulsion.

The fourth article: How to Find Concealed Demons in Human Society with Taobao, QQ, and WeChat in the Progressively Interweaving Information Age. How to Distinguish Whether They Erased Their Tracks.

“Fairly interesting...” Xu Yangyi’s eyes faintly flashed. He was quite willing to listen to what Lilac had to say next. At the very least, the bait that had been released did indeed invoke his interest. However, while the students discussed it, Lilac’s voice didn’t echo out again. As Xu Yangyi lifted his gaze from the materials, a snow-white hand had already cupped his chin.

“How about it? Interested?” Lilac’s charming face came closer to his, and her rosy lips leaned on his earlobe, nearly a mere centimeter away from sucking on it. It could even be imagined that her nimble tongue was like that of a true lilac, tracing an arc on his ear.

Everyone’s gaze swept over nonchalantly, clearly unable to understand why Lilac seemed to have a special interest in the last person that had arrived.

Were there few champions? There were twelve cities in Nantong Province, equal to twelve champions! There was one even sitting at her side, but on the contrary, why didn’t she recognize him like Xu Yangyi?

“If it’s interesting...” Lilac’s sweet shoulder bumped into Xu Yangyi once again and coiled her hair around her hand. A languid enthrallment seeped into her husky voice: “Won’t you consider our unit? Yuyang City’s champion, Student Xu Yangyi? Big sis will be waiting for you~”

“We’ll even make an exception... Are you not intending...” Lilac pursed her lips and snapped her fingers. A sheet of paper unhurriedly drifted over... in between her bosom!

Lilac’s deep cleavage squeezed down on the sheet of paper, and she winked. She said lowly at the side of his ear: “Are you not intending on giving big sis an answer?”

“This is a specially drafted contract for the champion. Others won’t be the same; it won’t have big sis’s digits on it~~”



“Oh? I was wondering why Zuo Lun was so willing to have tea with me. He even said it was the newest tea gathered from Mount Emei...” Before Lilac’s voice had even fell, a sneer could be heard coming from the door. Just as the sound of laughter fell, it immediately turned into a fierce shout: “Scheming whore, be gone! Our ‘Featherwood Guard’ has yet to even recruit people; when did it become your turn!”

Everyone was dumbfounded. Xu Yangyi took advantage of situation to break away from Lilac’s clutches, calmly surveying everything.

No, no, no... let us straighten out our thoughts; what the heck is going on? They hadn’t even graduated, but they had been given pamphlets... Moreover, it wasn’t even a single person that had been sent, but rather two?

Wasn’t the CSIB a state agency? Was there another even more powerful unit?

“Are you trying to flush people out and trap them in by not speaking about it clearly?” The person who had come was a woman with short hair, a square face, and around thirty years of age. In the same camouflage, she appeared like a man, and her voice was comparatively coarse as well: “Hmph, Lilac, you’ve got the nerve to try and fool these young chicks?”

Looking at her appearance, the students who were just listening to a silver-bell-like voice with endless expectations suddenly jolted up in their seats with straight backs.

The transformation from silver bell to barbell was far too swift. So quick that they couldn’t accept it.

Lilac snorted coldly: “Little chicks? Students, listen up. The Featherwood Guard regards you all as such! We will hold you as colleagues, but she’ll [take advantage of you without your consent!](#)”

“I can’t be bothered with your crap.” The short-haired woman’s

gift for the gab was evidently nothing to brag home about. She turned her head and looked at everyone: “Greetings, students, I’ve come to introduce myself. I am C-Hibiscus...”

“All girls are designated based on flowers. Our Featherwood Guard isn’t like those pansy-ass government departments. Everyone, have you ever thought of the question, how long would it take to respond to a problem if you joined a government branch?

“For example, you find a spirit stone vein—hey, don’t look at me like that, it’s just a lucky bullshit example. There aren’t many spirit stone veins on the entire Earth; it’s nothing but a figure of speech.” Hibiscus glanced at a student: “At the same though, if someone saw it, what would we be done? Report it to the government branch? Haha... They would wait, right. Wait for a month and see whether or not they would get on it. But by the time that moment comes, everything would’ve already been left high and dry!”

“But our Featherwood Guard ain’t the same! We don’t got so much red tape, and we’re one big family of a guild. Our president is a Chinese Core Formation expert, an existence at the peak of the world! You feel like doing something, sure, then go do it, go snatch it! But once you take possession of it, you have to continue to report it to the guild. You guys think that if you join the CSIB, you’ll be able to take immediate action if you don’t wait on instructions from the Top Brass? Who will pardon you when the blames falls on you because there are four other Core Formation masters?”

“Hehe... Nothing but a pack of mercenaries moonlighting as private detectives. What are you doing trying to fluff it up?” Lilac was disinclined to feign the slightest courtesy as she riposted with equal harshness: “Their treatment and research techniques are wholly incapable of matching up to our unit’s! Any mission that is accepted and accomplished will have a bonus upon completion! Not completed? Hehe... sorry... even if the mission is a success,

does everyone dare to guarantee they can complete a mission every time without a scratch? Theirs is a unit without an occupational injury organization, and to be specific, their unit also doesn't even have retirement insurance! Moreover, they don't provide medical insurance! Their irregular standards is the extreme point! They can be simply classified as an impoverished, rag-tag group!"

"However, even the commissions starting from our lowest missions begin at 5 million US dollars!"

"Hahaha, it really is a huge joke. Like setting up a stall in a Japanese supermarket and boasting of riches." Lilac chuckled with her waist bent over: "Has everyone thought of where spirit stones come from? Have you thought of where those priceless treasures originate from? I'll tell everyone, the CSIB has a special operations office known as the Office for Special Geological Exploration. If any of you are sure that some place has a spirit vein or rare treasure, you can use them for surveying. Of course, all of your gains will completely belong to you. Other wildcat departments don't have this condition. Our special exploration office, hehe... these words are unpleasant to listen to, but our ancestors have been dealing with those things for a long time now."

She paused and looked at Lotus provokingly: "Do you know of the [Wealth Repossession Captains](#)? All of them hold post in the CSIB!"

"I can't be bothered with your crap!" Hibiscus snapped and yelled, looking deeply at everyone. In a similar fashion, she snapped her fingers and a stack of resources appeared, flying into everyone's hands: "The Featherwood Guard and the CSIB can both be called one of China's Big Three. Our history is as long as theirs, and our hotline number is 010-8675-2341. I welcome any student to consult us..."

Hibiscus spoke while rummaging for a twice as thick dossier that swiftly came out from the pile of resources. Lilac's eyes glimmered, and she took out the contract from her bosom with a swish. Just as

Hibiscus was brusquely going to foist it onto Xu Yangyi, it was slapped away into the air by Lilac.

CSIB's contract was placed before Xu Yangyi.

"You wanna go?" Hibiscus slammed the table, her eyes glowering.

"Why don't you come try me?" Lilac sneered and stood up, not losing in might in the least bit.

In the airplane, two similarly formidable waves of spiritual pressure seemed to grind against one another like a millstone. In kind, both we're equally matched.

"What? You wanna get the others, then take 'em, but you wanna snatch up two of the champions, as well? I'll [accompany you straight through eating, chatting, and sleeping](#). You wanna squeeze in and seal the deal? I'm going to sit at his side, too!"

Xu Yangyi silently took the materials and swept his eyes over it, yet he didn't have the time to look at it carefully.

"Hehe, who doesn't want a champion? Even if they didn't pass the graduation exam, based on the recommendation of their branches and their credits at school, they're an important training target! Speak less of your haves and have-nots, the Featherwood Guard must have these two!"

"Pssh... They're yours just because you said so? Is the CSIB the least bit worst than your Featherwood Guard? When we chase after prospects, when have we not been generous?"

"Just on the basis of your bloated government agency?"

"Psshhh... And on the basis of your ragtag circus that's better kept under the table? Let me ask, can you provide others the opportunity with a study abroad exchange? Can you provide them with a government-issued medal? Can you provide them with systemic provincial-grade treatment? [Low-class things will never do for high-class needs!](#)"

The silver bell and the barbell collided. As this suddenly came out in full swing on the airplane, the two women were soon sticking together, face to face, scowling coldly at each other. Everyone else could speak no longer.

“So in the end, it all comes back to Number 9310’s report that he killed a berserker, huh...” Finally, Hibiscus faintly laughed in bitterness, keeping her voice under control so the others couldn’t hear her: “Ten years ago... Eleven years ago, a mutant maneater appeared in Runjiang City. After the examinee died without a whole corpse, there wasn’t another examination deviation, not even to mention one where the target was killed. This is the first time after ten years, but you’ve really set your heart on this more than me.”

“What about it?” Presently, the two of them had simply torn up and thrown out the window the most fundamental of face. Already, Lilac had completely abandoned her desire to keep up pretense, jitterily kicking the handrail on the side. With a boom, the steel handrail suddenly bent.

She looked at Hibiscus coldly: “Momma is warning you, ugly. That Chu’s background is great. I don’t want to give him up to you, but the CSIB Nantong branch mentioned that Xu cannot be lost by any means! You dare try to scramble over him with me!”

“Is Mama afraid of your CSIB? You might’ve scared the rookies more or less, but you want to scare me?” Hibiscus glared and shot back hatefully: “That Chu is yours! Our Featherwood Guard’s Nantong branch also mentioned Xu’s name for acquisition!”

Take advantage of you without your consent: 想/上. I had to do some digging to understand what this means. From what I found, it is exactly what I have translated it as, but it also has the context of “rape” or “forcing oneself on another, no matter what the other does”.

摸金校尉 - literally: Steal Gold Captain. This word has its roots

way back during the Three Kingdoms period. From what I read, this rank was devised for people to take wealth from tombs to supply the army with. A tricky bit about this here is the rank of captain. Depending on what time period, be it early Han, or Tang, the rank has a higher status or medium status respectively. Can be thought of as either a rank just below general or captain respectively.

Accompany straight through eating, chatting, and sleeping. This is a Chinese idiom that I had a tough time deciding to localize or not, but I decided against it, but we will see. Refers to an idea that a woman accompanies a client through eating, chatting, and sleeping, so pretty much it refers to an idea of following straight through with everything. This is the newer version. The old version had dancing instead of sleeping. Boy, times have changed.

下里巴人永远做不了阳春白雪 this refers back to two different songs during the warring states period that represent the ideals of art between different states. From what I read, 下里巴人 refers to an everyday music/song for the common folk. 阳春白雪 - in kind, refers to art/music for the noble class. In this way it kinda separates the ideas of the nobility/common men

## Chapter 24: Multi-Level Marketing

---

It was unknown when, but Chu Zhaonan had already shut his eyes to rest, however, no one paid attention to him. Nobody also saw that the blue veins of his hand were completely revealed, and the corner of his mouth was faintly trembling.

He was also a champion, but the disparity was surprisingly this great!

Just from the kick a moments ago, he knew that Xu Yangyi absolutely couldn't be trifled with. He had acknowledged the other, but it had gone beyond his expectations that ten minutes later, he, a champion, would actually serve to become another's foil!

The women kept on repeating about the two champions, but it was self-evident who was the primary and who was the secondary. He was practically the same as a tacked-on freebie!

“Seniors.” A voice abruptly echoed out. Xu Yangyi flipped through the documents and said serenely: “I still haven't graduated.”

“It's not important that you haven't graduated. As they say in the movies: it's the twenty-first century, talent is the most important.” Lilac pulled on Xu Yangyi's and Chu Zhaonan's hands: “Won't Student Chu and Student Xu agree to give me, Big Sis Lilac, face? The CSIB absolutely won't treat you two unfairly.”

Chu Zhaonan wordlessly shook off her hand. Lilac smiled, but paid it no mind. Xu Yangyi had broken off from her, as well, but Lilac held onto him perseveringly.

“The Featherwood Guard won't mistreat you, too!” The difference between the silver bell and the barbell was that of unequal timbre and unequal volume. It was evident Hibiscus's voice was growing louder without stop: “If you sign the contract

now, we can give you an [arcane effort](#) in advance!”

“Huff...” A gasp came out from someone’s mouth. A fervent expression appeared on every person’s face. Only the muscle of Chu Zhaonan’s cheeks twitched. An arcane effort... This was the source of establishing oneself!

Everyone had heard that it was difficult to obtain an arcane effort. It wasn’t until one had amassed enough resources and been assessed could one consider it and go make the exchange. But now, with this one that didn’t even need to be tested on, some people had already pledged their futures.

Clap clap clap... At this time, the sound of applause could suddenly be heard. A man in western-style clothes wearing gold-rimmed glasses walked in slowly, his footsteps neither tensed or slow, as if they brought a calming mystic power. He bowed courteously: “Have I come late? How is it things are so lively?”

“Hello, students. Everyone may call me C-Vulture. I am Vulture of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion.”

The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion... The name suddenly caused everyone to give a complicated expression. Even Xu Yangyi couldn’t help but to spare a couple glances at the man.

This name... was truly one where the more you loved it, the more you hated it. It was the cultivation world’s greatest megamart, largest shopping platform, and of course, it also had the most expensive prices, as well!

With their limited internet access, students of Heavens Law could only dedicate a large majority of their monthly allowance to the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion.

“This student speaks well.” As if Vulture hadn’t seen it, he smiled towards Xu Yangyi and nodded: “Since you still haven’t graduated, why should the fighting over people be so severe?”

“Presently, all of the students still haven’t even left the branch



training base, however, everyone understands the information on the internet. Everyone knows that every year, right before graduation from each prestigious institution, there will be famous companies recruiting, but only to recruit the true crème de la crème... Perhaps all of you believe right now that your own cultivations are quite low. However..." He sighed leisurely: "The base number of cultivators is even lower..."

"There are approximately a million cultivators in China. Once every five years, those that graduate may number a thousand." He laughed: "It might be a bit unpleasant to listen to, but this pittance of people isn't even enough to fill the gap between teeth."

"The difficulty of the graduation exam isn't high, and it's not that tough. It's remarkable, that as long as you can get into this segment, you're a cultivator. As long as you're a cultivator, the Featherwood Guard, CSIB, and Bountiful Treasures Pavilion will not turn their backs to you by a tiny bit in any way. I'll give everyone a mathematical figure..."

He coughed lightly, and his smile vanished. A similarly formidable spiritual pressure suddenly arose within the airplane.

Late-stage Qi Condensation!

Xu Yangyi gently raised a brow. He hadn't even graduated, but three late-stage Qi Condensation cultivators had come here to recruit him...

In the cultivation world, such a person was already considered a figure capable of lording over undeveloped city. For example, if they were to go to Sanshui City, they would've undoubtedly put the region into peace without even overturning the ocean spray.

Although he held a faint understanding that qi was sparse during the End of Days, leading to a pitiful few cultivators, he absolutely hadn't expected it would be so few to such a degree!

"Among 500 people, approximately five to six have the hope of

entering Foundation Establishment. But in these five to six people, it is possible that a Core Formation master will not appear.” The man surveyed the crowd and said monotonously: “However, all organizations, not even to speak of China but the entire world, England, and Japan are all like this... composed of 80% Qi Condensation cultivators, 19% Foundation Establishment cultivators, and 1% Core Formation cultivators. Of China’s Big Three, each one has their own distant origin. They cannot possibly ignore the circumstances of cultivators in any way.”

“Each of us has something we’re good at. We’re only looking out for everyone’s desires.” He swept his eyes over Lilac and Hibiscus: “Doesn’t everyone think such marketing tactics are too slovenly?”

“I sent a letter; one every day. But the school didn’t get back to me.” Lilac twirled her hair and said regretfully.

Everyone understood and looked at Xu Yangyi at the same time, with Chu Zhaonan’s expression being even more complicated. Especially the gaze he used to look at Xu Yangyi, it was silent, already wrought with admiration and jealousy.

This was something the others were betting on.

The present condition shouldn’t have been the highest. If the women had gambled on it, then they had used a relatively cheap contract to bind two potential prospects. Especially, since the two of them were both the best of their branches! It could be gambled that the probability of the greatness of their future successes unconditionally wouldn’t be considered minor!

“Fucking hell...” A student could no longer contain his bitter laugh: “It really does make one so angry that their hairs stand on edge...”

“This is the reality.” Vulture smiled: “If you’re going to walk it, then this is the only realistic path. In cultivation, your own strength is number one. The myriad living things are all nothing but crickets and ants... Forget about it, you’ll naturally come to

understand later on.”

Vulture continued to speak: “As long as your strength is enough, you will absolutely not go unseen by high-level powers, moreover, they will not be begrudging to groom you. Power has eternally been the proportion of Core Formation masters, the invisible contrast of strength between countries. If... you reach Foundation Establishment, even so far as to Core Formation, not to speak of commanding wind at your grasps and rain at your fancy, I guarantee that 90% of your requests will go through without pause! Til this day, I’ve cultivated for 62 years, and I’ve seen many, many matters like this.”

“Strength. Strength is the reason all of you can stay standing and speak. It is the reason why others can invest in you. However it is not...” His glasses flashed with a cold edge: “The reason that brings you to your knees and obey.”

62 years? Quite a few people looked at Vulture in amazement; he appeared not a day over thirty.

“After cultivating, it’s extremely simple to return to your youth...” Just as Vulture was about to say something, he suddenly saw Lilac’s oppressive gaze and coughed dryly just as he opened his mouth.

Hibiscus said coldly: “Propaganda is propaganda. I won’t block you from spreading it, but what are you yammering for?”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak. He was unparalledly in favor of Vulture’s words.

His mortal enemy... To this day, he didn’t know what Its rank was, however, it was similarly of true strength! He was absolutely, categorically unwilling to need the assistance of an organization to be able to kill It.

“Alright, I’m done talking. This is the recruiting materials of our Bountiful Treasures Pavilion. I want to remind all of you while I’m

at it that Heavens Law enrolls new students every ten years and has a graduation once every five. Every graduation ceremony is taken as a grand provincial ceremony by the cultivation world. When the time comes, not only will we be there, but Foundation Establishment seniors will be there, as well. Furthermore, the assistants and secretaries of Core Formation masters will come to select people. Everyone, I hope when the time comes, we will be able to obtain a satisfying answer.”

Lilac sighed, a nameless rage emanating within her heart. The heck? What the hell was this?!

Of the Big Three, all of them were unable to shift their eyes away as they waited for Heavens Law graduation; there was a demand for people everywhere! There was a shortage of people everywhere! Those that hadn't graduated didn't know how scarce elite cultivators were! Which of China's organizations on the day of graduation wouldn't be waiting with wide eyes?

The result was that No. 9310 had directly revealed this game. It had been ten years, but there was a new cultivator that had slayed an anomaly during their graduation assessment! She hadn't even slept and come running here. The result?

She glanced hatefully at the representatives of the Featherwood Guard and Bountiful Treasures Pavilion. She clenched her teeth and spoke no longer.

Presently, she had wanted to take advantage of Xu Yangyi on the airplane before he made contact with the true world, but the meddling thoughts of others had already prevented that. She could only wait to recruit on site. However, by that time, her opponents wouldn't only be the heritage organizations, but the assistants, private secretaries, and personal disciples of Core Formation masters. Their own origin was their prestige!

“Goddamn it...” Without place to give vent to her belly full of anger, she didn't say a thing and walked back towards the fore

hold.

Vulture laughed and also walked back. However, just as he left and placed his hand on the cabin door, he suddenly recalled something, turning his head and chuckling: “I’d like to mention something in passing.”

“Our Bountiful Treasures Pavilion has reached a deal with Ali Baba’s entire system of the greatest capacity and highest monetary sum. It is not comparable with those disorderly small fries in any way. We specialize in all kinds of ‘side doors’, for example, alchemy, artifact refining, talismans, and so on. It can be said that every weapon in the cultivation world bears the mark of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion. Even if it is not of our assembly, the components surely are. Such as the [Beretta 92F](#) at this student’s waist.”

He glanced at Chu Zhaonan who had his eyes hung low, making it unknown what he was thinking. At the other’s waist, there was a holstered pistol. Whether the pistol was real was unknown, only a small part of the butt was revealed. On it, a few mysterious runes could be seen.

Lilac paused in step, and Lotus stopped, as well.

“If some students have a talent in respect to alchemy, artifact refining, or talismans...”

Before his voice had even fell, Lilac and Lotus had already roared out eagerly: “We’re willing to dish out five times the hiring price for those students that join our organizations!”

“Ten times.” Vulture’s smile was splendid like spring wind, but his voice was terrifyingly icy: “Ten times the price. A treatment of ten times for ordinary students. The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion recruits talents with [Elysial Bestowments](#) from all kinds of fields to join our organization.”

He looked deeply at Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan: “If... by chance

it is the two champions, we are willing to..."

"Twenty times!" Lilac's voice was fairly sharp.

"Thirty times." Vulture laughed and stuck up two fingers.

Lilac and Lotus gaped, sensibly pausing at the ridiculous financial gambling of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion. In their hearts, they were itching to trample this [sleazebag](#) to death.

"Isn't it quite lacking?" As if it weren't for other things moving, Chu Zhaonan finally spoke.

"How is it lacking..." Lilac laughed wryly: "How many people does the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion have? Don't they just have a hundred? While they don't have a single Core Formation cultivator, they are the wealthiest organization among the Big Three. They are the organization with the most superior equipment... Nobody is willing to offend an alchemist, a refiner, or a talismancer... If any of you have an Elysial Bestowment, I dare to guarantee that even if you failed your graduation exam, your treatment won't differ the least bit to that of a champion!"

"That's incorrect. Presently, while refiners and formationists still have Dao inheritances, alchemists have died out long ago." Vulture sighed: "Too many things have been lost to the grand river of history. Current alchemists are actually just glorified medicinalist... because even if they are grand medicinalist, they are incapable of creating pills. The leakage of medicinal potency is simply unavoidable. They can only put pill elixir within a syringe."

Xu Yangyi didn't understand these words and asked curiously: "What is an Elysial Bestowment?"

"It's a kind of... very profound feeling." Lotus thought it over and answered his question: "There are some things that science is incapable of validating through experimentation. If you really want to put it in scientific terms, there are approximately 10 billion neurons in the brain. People who awaken Elysial Bestowments can

attain 20 billion, as to so far as 30 billion neurons. It is a kind of exceptional sensitivity towards all stimulus in the outside world. While cultivating, one can truly grasp every crucial moment, each brush mark, and make use of the scope of qi. Such a person...”

Thump... Xu Yangyi's heart softly trembled. After he had left the hospital, he was already beginning to become accustomed to the increased acuity of his five senses. It was a life like the world had been uncovered by a layer of cotton.

Even though he was concealing a ticking-time bomb within his qi sea, his life had still had to go on.

“Is it that your five sense will become even sharper?” Pushing down on the faint palpitations of his heart, he asked calmly.

功法 - this is how I decided to translate this. Arcane Effort. Anyone who has tried to translate this term knows how vague the idea behind these two characters are. It can often be thought of as a “mystical ability achieved through continuous labor/effort” etc. Depending on what translations you've read, you might see this translated as a bunch of different things with the one that pops out at me being “merit law” Based on the story's background (modern day with some scientific elements) I decided to give it this name. I really wanted to stress the time + labor put into learning this skill as well as giving it a strong name based on the esotericism.

Beretta 92F. I just want to point out that the F designation stands for that the sidearm was part of US federal testing.

天赋 - Elysial Bestowment - learners of Chinese may realize it was just “talent”, “innate skill”, “gift”. This word is referred to in a specific way that makes it more of a “thing”/“concept”. In this novel, it's a pretty clear distinction that it's not something that's run of the mill. It is an idea that one has been blessed by the heavens to be good at everything/something.

搅屎棍 - I translated this as sleazebag. What this actually means is “shit-stirring rod”, a stick used to mix manure. Doesn't sound

quite right to use it like this.



## Chapter 25: Vermilion Snow

---

“That’s right...” Vulture glanced at him and laughed: “Why? Mr. Xu, you...”

“I just asking about it.” Xu Yangyi shut his eyes to rest. After the three left, the airplane fell into silence once again.

Forty minutes later, the airplane steadily stopped and descended. After taking a car for another hour, they finally trod into the illustrious ancient foundation of China’s history—Nantong’s Fengyi City.

Fengyi City was the capital of Nantong Province, located in the northwest, with the manpower of a major province. The city was the heart where financial resources came together. Even if the western region couldn’t compare to the development and prosperity of the eastern region, at this very instant, it was still like a lantern blazing brightly.

With towering buildings and neon lights that cut across the horizon, the capital was decorated with all kinds of flashing billboards, giving it a magnificence like Heaven’s Palace. It was midsummer, and men and women wore attractive clothing, becoming the most vibrant footnote in the night scenery. Waves of moving cars performed a symphony that caused people unable to sleep soundly through the night.

Ten students, no—soon they wouldn’t be students anymore—looked towards the bustling Fengyi City somewhat spellbound.

Heavens Law was a militarized administration. They couldn’t leave for ten-odd years, so all that they knew came from television. When they were inducted into Heavens Law, none of them exceeded ten years of age.

They knew that there was a city called Shanghai in the east, and it was the nexus of China’s trends and financials. They knew that

to the north, there was a government city called Beijing. It was China's political center and where Heavens Law central headquarters was located, as well... however, this was the first time they had seen everything.

Xu Yangyi was like this too. He was born in a small town in the north, and had long forgotten the image of a city within his memories. The only thing that remained was a vague destruction. Eight years later, he had cut straight across China to the western part of a major province, Nantong Province. To everything before his eyes, he was like a sponge, silently absorbing it and swiftly adapting to it.

A group of superhumans trained by humanity, inhumans, were already standing wordlessly in the shadow of Fengyi City. All of a sudden, his eyes suddenly flashed. His body nearly reflexively braced itself.

A gaze...

His five senses exceeded cultivators of the same realm by over a third. He had clearly felt a blade-like gaze just now coldly sweeping over his body!

A sharp blade, icy-cold and penetrating, yet without the least concern. It was a like a tiger watching its prey, permeating the air with a murderous aura, something that one absolutely couldn't lower their guard around.

Such a feeling... made his body go numb from head to toe! It was a bone-penetrating might... He pursed his lips and sucked in deeply, suddenly looking towards where the gaze was drifting over from. In the next second, as if he was confronted with a formidable foe, he froze in place.

Their location was inside a place called the Triumphant Virtue Plaza. Opposite to it was a public park where a crowd of old men and women were dancing in the square at night, draped under the spill of light. There were several pairs of men and women standing

at the side of the road, waving for a taxi, bearing expressions that were a tad bit impatient. Behind them, there was a building over fifty stories tall, the Triumphant Virtue Tower.

A building of flowing light and vibrant color. Yet the satisfied crowd were simply incapable of hiding from the gaze of the death god at the top! A gentle gaze seemed to make the air freeze!

At the summit of the Triumphant Virtue Tower, there was a white nine-tailed fox no less than a 100 meters in length. Beneath the illumination of moonlight, it was like a god overlooking the world. Its eyes were brilliant like rubies, carrying a hazy teasing and killing aura, like a monarch swiftly roaming through a crowd of officials, sweeping its eyes through the crowd below!

Swish... The night wind gently blew, and its body of snow-white fur formed a white billow surging up turbulently, making it indistinguishable from the moonlight or a fur coat. The nine silvery fox tails were gracefully poised at the top of the Triumphant Virtue Tower, and its sharp claws lazily propped its chin, like a divine throne of pure silver!

Thump... Thump... In that split second where Xu Yangyi's gaze met the gigantic fox for the first time, he nearly felt the blood of his entire body roil madly! He simply couldn't control his body and shake out of it!

Power... A power that was incapable of being imagined! It was a kind of situation like leisurely strolling through a tempest on the ocean surface. Already, it made his heart unable to restrain itself from frantically speeding up! It was like a drum beating at the side of his ear! His intuition informed him that if he moved, he wouldn't last longer than three seconds!

"Huh?" The fox's vision had originally shifted away, but it seemed to have sensed something. It turned back again to a place no one could see, and the luxurious silver hair of its throat gently moved: "A bit interesting..."

“There.” In Xu Yangyi’s eyes, the fox moved and one of its tails lazily stuck up. Bored senseless, it faced towards the place where Xu Yangyi was standing and waved its tails, spitting out a vague syllable.

In the next second, a wind edge no less than ten meters in length wildly raced towards Xu Yangyi like gushing mercury to decapitate him! It carried a silver light brilliant to the eye that made even the surrounding air tremble!

In this wink of time, Xu Yangyi’s scalp numbed! He couldn’t dodge...

This was his first physiological response, an attainment in combat he had gained from his long training at Heavens Law that made him initially feel that the wind edge was extremely light, yet extremely dangerous, revealing a mortal danger!

It wasn’t a level he could contest. A demon with a body of a 100 meters... It was an old Foundation Establishment monster!

“Stay your hand!” At the same time, Zuo Lun roared, but he simply didn’t dare to charge forth!

Xu Yangyi’s pupils suddenly needled. In a breath, the wind edge was pressed to his throat! He seemed to have already saw the wretched scene of his head soaring into the sky!

But in the blink of an eye, the edge dispersed. The wind scattered like it had never come to decapitate him. In the space roughly a centimeter apart from Xu Yangyi’s throat, it suddenly dissipated.

Drip drip... The sweat on his forehead quietly pitter-pattered onto the floor, and Xu Yangyi pursed his lips. He felt his entire body grow ice-cold, and even now, he could sense the hot blood within his body slowly make its way back into his arteries.

The violent beating of his heart was a kind of life or death sensation. This was truly the first time he had experienced it. In that split second, he had deeply felt the disparity between

Foundation Establishment and Qi Condensation. It could be said it was the insurmountable difference between the heavens and earth!

A casual pinch of the fingers, willfully sent out, that the fox didn't even use a secret pinching art. Such control over strength and precision was representative that its degree of perception regarding qi wasn't only completely above a single level!

If the demon wanted to, it wouldn't need three seconds to grant him a certain death!

Swish... His jacket was originally fine, but it split open in two parts from the center. He lowered his head. Not because of fear, but to conceal the eruption of killing intent within his eyes.

He had never been a well-mannered person, even in this kind of face-to-face provocation... He sneered, and his murderous will grew madly in his heart like a wild, spreading vine.

Whoosh! At nearly the same time, the sound of a wrist-mounted crossbow suddenly broke the air. Five seconds later, someone had caught clear sight of the monster atop the Triumphant Virtue Tower that caused the entire body to tremble. The immense pressure had simply rendered him thoughtless, so he had immediately fired his weapon.

Bang! Just as the wrist-mounted crossbow was about to fire, it was wrest away into a hand. Zuo Lun stared rigidly at the student whose forehead was covered with a cold sweat and fiercely spat on the floor, suppressing the roar in his throat: "Rookie! Take a good look for me! Where is this!"

"This is Fengyi City! A major provincial capital in the west that has appeared in the news in the last day a few times! Where do you think you are? Your home? You say you want to do something, so you'll do it?"

It was then that the student seemed to regain his wits. A moment ago, it wasn't that he wanted to act, but this atmosphere... It was

the kind that if one didn't make a move, they would die. A physiological instinct that was fundamentally incapable of being controlled!

Only two people hadn't moved. Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan.

"Look clearly! This is an old Foundation Establishment monster! A hundred of you aren't enough to get stuck in between its teeth!" Zuo Lun brandished his right hand, and with a thud, there wasn't a single crossbow bolt that hadn't fell onto the street. Afterwards, he brought everyone over to the front of the public park and then bowed deeply towards the Triumphant Virtue Tower: "Senior... hasn't this joke gone too far?"

No one answered him. Or perhaps it could be said they disdained to.

Zuo Lun's expression didn't have a shred of embarrassment, and he nodded, straightening his body. He looked at everyone and said loudly and clearly: "Remember it clearly, newcomers. This is the capital of the province, the heart of the northwest. Any demon living here and any demon that dares to take form openly in public has a life expectancy of over 200 years! If you don't want to die, then don't fucking go picking fights with them!"

He laughed coldly and walked in front of the student from a moment ago and raised his chin: "You know it, don't you?"

"Heavens Law wanted list, A-rank, code name: Vermilion Snow, bounty: 7.235 billion. Great Circle of Foundation Establishment. It's been alive since the reign of Emperor Daoguang of the Qing dynasty. It's over 200 years old, and during the final years of the Qing, it caused a great upheaval by murdering enough people to fill a field in Hegu Province. Rivers of blood flowed, and it even massacred three prefecture-level cities. You won't find things like this in the history books at all! Several hundred thousand people were used as its Foundation Establishment blood sacrifice for its dried-up bones! It was only a foot shy from becoming China's

eleventh Core Formation Greater Demon... Don't fucking tell me none of you don't understand what the significance of Core Formation is. You wanna die... How about sending another arrow to that beast?"

He neared the student and dangerously narrowed his eyes: "You really believe... they're called living fossils in vain?"

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. He only deeply memorized this name. Today's event was the demon's "joke". There would be a time where he would come back to find it. The student's face was already ashen. His entire body was coldly trembling.

Xu Yangyi swept his gaze over without word or movement and discovered that within a radius of a 50 kilometers of the demon's surroundings, there wasn't a single other demon.

Already, the fox had turned back to its own hunting ground... His eyes narrowed, and he carefully gazed into the distance to discover that there was another tremendous shadow at the end of the city. However, the distance was too far, and beneath the darkness of night, he wasn't able to see a thing clearly, but... its aura seemed far, far weaker than Vermilion Snow's, yet it made him tremble within his heart in kind.

It was still an old Foundation Establishment monster.

Was this the present situation within the provincial capital? He stuffed his hand inside his pants pockets and leaned against the side of a tree in the park. His eyes gradually turned from red to black, and the form of the silver nine-tailed fox slowly dissipated in a ripple. It was still more vulgar than in his imagination...

Sure enough... only strength could serve as a protective amulet to move freely without obstruction!

"Let's go." Zuo Lun nodded and brought the crowd away from the park.

"Instructor." A student took a look at the surroundings and

furrowed his brows: “Aren’t we... going to the branch?”

“Of course.” Zuo Lun glanced puzzledly at him: “If not, what do you think?”

Could it be it wasn’t this skyscraper? Or perhaps it was established in a deserted lot?

“What do you think?” Zuo Lun looked at the student's expression and sneered: “Follow closely, rookies. Today, your eyes will open to the world!”

At night, the park was lonesome. Following Zuo Lun, all of them walked below a pavilion that had a sign hung up on the outside that said “no trespassing” and ceased their steps.

With half-lidded eyes, a sixty-plus-year-old man had a radio by his side that was in the middle of playing the Beijing opera piece, The Battle of Changban. His face was covered in wrinkles, and he wore a white singlet that already has a good couple of holes on it and was slack on his body. Clad in shorts and flip flops, and with a thermos by his side, the old man rocked a palm-leaf fan in his hand, idly swatting at mosquitoes. The pavilion behind could accommodate fifteen people at the most...

This was the branch of Heavens Law?



## Chapter 26: Branch

---

Xu Yangyi didn't speak, and the gazes of a few other people flickered. They wanted to say something, but they restrained themselves.

No one was an idiot. If the key leading to the true world was so simple, then they were afraid they would immediately go become vagabonds, carefree like idling clouds and field cranes. How couldn't Heavens Law not know this?

"Elder Liu." Zuo Lun bowed: "The newcomers have arrived." Elder Liu seemed not to have heard Zuo Lun and continued to sway his head along with the beat of the opera. "Elder Liu." Zuo Lun raised his voice: "The newcomers are here!"

"Ah? Here? Oh, good, good, good... Youngsters..." Elder Liu seemed to skip in fright, and the rocking frequency of his palm-leaf fan increased by a good few times. He drowsily opened his bleary yellow eyes and curled his mouth that didn't have many teeth in it. "You want to open the door, right? Okay, okay, I'll go straight away..."

Initial-stage Qi Condensation...

As the old man awakened, Xu Yangyi slightly raised his brows. The old man was the same as him, the initial stage of Qi Condensation. However, he was only here to look after the door!

This little pavilion... What profundities did it have on the inside?

"A bit interesting..." He rolled his fingers that were in his pant's pocket. At the very least, the branch had currently aroused his interest.

Elder Liu's age seemed truly to be great. As he falteringly opened the door, Xu Yangyi looked on attentively...

The inside was vacant.

“Go on, go on.” After Elder Liu waited for everyone to get in, he closed the door and then hung the no trespassers sign board on the outside again.

Everyone entered inside, and Xu Yangyi probed the interior with his senses. It was extremely orderly... Moreover, there wasn't the sensation of a smidgen of a talisman formation.

“Is the technique too great?” He looked around at his surroundings suspiciously. His doubts couldn't be blamed; superior talisman formations had to have a foundation. Just like when he slayed the demon, Mao Ba'er had deployed a talisman formation in advance. Even if it was a piece of yellow paper, it could be used as a focus to spread a formation. However, in this already crowded room, there was nothing.

He thought of answers but still couldn't reach a conclusion. In the next second, everyone felt their center of gravity suddenly drop!

“Fuck...” He speechlessly looked above where moonlight was faintly passing through a hole. How could he forget about something like an elevator...

The elevator descended extremely fast. He had already understood. This pavilion was an elevator, and this was the true branch of Heavens Law...

It was below the public park!

Beneath the city and in the midst of the twisting tunnels and winding intersections of the metro, there was an immense shadow. All of the subways and water pipes were constructed during the city's beginning, and all of them began to coil around here. Here was the true location of Heavens Law branch!

Swoosh... The elevator descended with all its might. It seemed like the bottom simply couldn't be seen. In his heart, Xu Yangyi silently calculated it. Presently, they had already descended a

minimum of more than thirty meters below.

Drip... Drip... The first color appeared in their lines of sight, and subsequently, so did the second, the third... countless colors.

Like color wheels in the square-shaped elevator, it gave people a feeling like that of science fiction. Not even waiting for him to appreciate it, the elevator finally stopped in the next second.

“Welcome to Heavens Law’s Nantong Province branch.” A mechanized female voice rang out: “Welcome... to the truth.”

Swish! Before the voice had even fell, the elevator suddenly opened. Followingly, everyone seemed to be struck dumb on the spot.

Xu Yangyi slightly gaped and his gaze twinkled. It was completely beyond his expectations that a branch of Heavens Law would surprisingly be like this!

It was an incomparably spacious room that occupied area nearly as great as the public park above! On top, there wasn’t a ceiling. Instead, there was something like an electric circuit! Cables on cables passed through grooves and converged into a roof like a tremendous circuit board!

Now and then, beams of red and green light migrated within the transparent circuit, like a myriad streams returning to one, coming together in the center. As for the center... there was a mechanical human face no less than several tens of meters in size!

It was a human face that was mechanized in its entirety. Its forehead, tightly shut eyes, and slightly ajar mouth seemed to be joined together like a puppet. Numerous specks of light representing information sources completely gathered together on the face. Soon after, transformed messages of blue light were distributed from other circuits.

The floor was made from reinforced glass. There wasn’t anything below but a black expanse. Walking atop of it was like walking

through the void of space. Above the floor, there were over a hundred computers and a couple hundred filing cabinets.

In this 1.5 hectare-wide room, there were no less than 300 people bustling about. The room was covered in bonsais, and the wall was broken up into five large regions like Pan's Labyrinth. Even if they were standing at the entrance, they could hear racket of the people inside.

“Yuyang City's recent ten-year demon movements.” A woman around twenty-seven to twenty-eight years old wearing a white coat ran over before them like the wind. Not even glancing at them, her charming face revealed an extreme impatience, and she pushed back on her wine-red glasses, walking and talking simultaneously: “The professor at headquarters wants it. Also, tell that little demon from Pingan County that the branch isn't Nantong Province's highest cultivation court! Make it scram!”

She was a middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivator.

“Yes, understood!” There were several youths behind her whose cultivations couldn't be completely discerned. They took notes while asking: “How do we get it to leave? It's requested a meeting several times.”

“You want me to teach you?!” Although the woman's voice was raised, she urgently proceeded to the entrance of the elevator: “It said that a student of Heavens Law took the magik treasure passed down in his family? What bullshit! It was taken, so its been taken! A little demon that just achieved Form Transformation wants to run over here and yammer; it wants to come over and discuss this point?”

“Tell it that if it wants to sue, then go the cultivation courts to do so! If it comes here again, then it better not think of leaving!”

“Section Chief Liu, can you give our research department a loan?” On the other side, several middle-aged men wearing white coats surrounding an old man berated with tongue and pen: “It's

been three months! Our task pertaining to ‘The Transformation of Arthropodic Demons Under Modern Environments’ still hasn’t begun to this day! You have to give us a response!”

The five of them were the initial stage of Qi Condensation!

“Yes, you haven’t shown up at the branch for many months. Now that you’ve come today, you have to say something in any case!”

“If we don’t get a response today, then we won’t leave.”

“Thanks, thanks so much, the CSIB has scooped out that old man four times now, but he just won’t go! If you’re really an old man, why don’t you find your own dwellings?”

On the other side, where there were the most people, a man suddenly struck his keyboard and stood up and yelled: “Who took on the Water Spirit case from Gaochuan City three months ago? You leave? Top Brass wrapped up the case today; who was responsible for the case? Hurry up and send it over!”

The Fox Immortal case from last year at a border town close to Fengyi City? Wasn’t that Vermilion Snow’s doing? If it is, don’t hand it to this team; they can’t handle it!”

“That old timer in the southern part of Fengyi City applied to cut the ribbon for Long Road Pictures? I’ll go check it out later with three teams... Why? I want them to collect my corpse.”

“The spider in the northern part isn’t eating again?! How isn’t it dead?! It’s lost its appetite four to five times in a single month! It’s over a hundred years old, why is it being like this! Does it want to devolve into a caterpillar!”

A summoned paper crane flew back and forth over the 1.5 hectare-long stretch like a butterfly. From time to time, a stream of light could be seen flying. It was a suspended sword hilt, or possibly a folder of materials, or perhaps some other flying sword. Occasionally, domesticated demons that had yet to undergo Form Transformation could be seen. For example, there was a two-tailed

black cat with golden spots, and above, single-horned, three-eyed monkeys were serving tea and pouring water for each group.

The cultivators that were rarely seen in the outside world could all be seen here! At the minimum, a hundred of them were cultivators. The ordinary people were all their retainers.

The room they were in was divided into five areas. It appeared a chaotic mess, but after Xu Yangyi looked at it carefully for a minute, he discovered that in reality it was systematically arranged. The others looked on at the bustling branch in amazement. Unexpectedly... the branch was like this?

It wasn't an immortal scene of pagodas and pavilions, lofty mountains and flowing streams, the auspicious presentations of immortal beast, or the soaring of white cranes?

This... the lively portrait of the everyday government... surprisingly made the others incapable of even beginning to ridicule it, since everything around them could be jabbed at. It was practically the feeling of *déjà vu* like in the *Men in Black*!

Xu Yangyi didn't care for these things. His thoughts weren't very different. To the extent that he felt... this was what the branch truly ought to have looked like.

The present wasn't the ancient age of cultivation. He had recognized this as the reality countless of times. This was the year 2016, the human era! The age of civilization! Already, the ancient things were unsuitable. The world had evolved, and the things that had been intrinsically maintained could only perish. It was the same as a dinosaur.

This... was a genuine city of cultivation! This should've been the appearance that cultivation had developed up until now! He looked up ahead at the five pieces of machinery that formed together the mechanized human face.

"Curious?" Suddenly, a voice rang out at the side of his ear. Chu

Zhaonan stood at his side with an expressionless face and raised his chin towards the roof: “That’s Heavens Law.”

Xu Yangyi looked towards the gigantic face on the ceiling. It was quite hard to say whether or not it was “alive”. This was because although its facial features were softly trembling, it was indeed a work of high-tech machinery.

“A megamind.” Chu Zhaonan saw Xu Yangyi wasn’t saying anything so he continued speaking: “Does not surpasses the human brain... Every major country had a few apex-level supercomputers, for example like Japan’s [Tsubame Gaeshi](#) and China’s Milky Way. However, the true peak supercomputers have eternally been installed in the cultivation world.”

“So, China’s strongest supercomputer is called Heavens Law?” Xu Yangyi looked pensively at the tremendous face: “And it’s also a megamind? It was placed here?”

“This is only a portion of it.” Chu Zhaonan glanced at face in passing and said indifferently: “It isn’t only a machine. It’s also an ultimate weapon capable of suppressing an entire province. You best hope you don’t make it issue a kill order against you, because by that time, you’ll already be dead without a doubt.”

“I feel your attention isn’t here.” He licked his lips and stood before Xu Yangyi like a bull that had seen red, stamping his military boots and said lowly: “There’s an arena below. It’s the location of the graduation ceremony.”

Xu Yangyi retracted his gaze and looked at Chu Zhaonan with a smile that wasn’t a smile: “So?”

“I’m going to challenge you!” Chu Zhaonan stared into his eyes: “With the title as Tianfeng City’s champion!”

Xu Yangyi glanced at him for a while and laughed: “Your reason?”

“No reason.” Chu Zhaonan said coldly: “If you must know,

during every graduation of Heavens Law, there is a comprehensive ranking competition in the entire country. It's called the Qualifier, however..."

He grinded his white teeth: "Besides myself, no one knows that in every graduation, there will be a Core Formation master that puts out 'a prize'. A prize from a Core Formation cultivator, a peak cultivator in this world!"

You guys have no idea how hard it was for me to figure out Tsubame Gaeshi LOL. Good thing I am a closet weeb. For people who don't know. This is the signature sword art of the Japanese swordsman Sasaki Kojiro.



# Chapter 27: Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens

## (1)

---

“The last one was Fortuity Profound Elixir. The one before it was an high-grade magik artifact.”

Xu Yangyi’s expression finally became serious.

Fortuity Profound Elixir didn’t have any other efficacies. It was dark green like water, hazy like smoke and fog, and could be injected into the vein via syringe... Perhaps great Foundation Establishment and Core Formation cultivators would remain unmoved, but to initial-stage and middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivators, it was enough to go wild for!

It also had another name... known as Spirit Cleansing Elixir.

There wasn’t any other effect. There was only one and that was to thoroughly wash away a cultivator’s flesh of impurities. It was a genuine “shedding of the mortal body and exchange of the bones”! It could transform one’s constitution into one most suitable for cultivating!

The development of cultivation to the present had proved long ago that qi was like the root of power and the body was a machine. If a comparison had to be made, was it not like the movement of MMORPGs brought to computers during the year 2000?

Impossible!

He was tempted, however the root of his temptation wasn’t because he could shed his body and make new his bones, cleansing meridians and cut his marrow. Rather... it was because of his qi sea!

His qi sea was in the middle of slowly expanding at a rate that couldn’t be seen by the naked eye. This was a matter related to the mysterious, small chest that he couldn’t talk about to anyone under any circumstance. If the Fortuity Profound Elixir was

capable of resolving this problem, then things couldn't be better!

In nearly a flash, he had made his decision. If he had heard about the Qualifier before, then he would've still been indifferent to it, but at this moment, he resolved to put the entirety of his strength into it!

The lion had at long last decided to tear away its disguise of sheepskin. Even if it wasn't the Fortuity Profound Elixir, but some other prize, it would unquestionably be another prize on the same level!

"There's no one that isn't looking forward to a true arcane effort... right? Yuyang City's champion?" Chu Zhaonan looked at Xu Yangyi's expression and said.

"Contestants are divided into 369 ranks, but only the most truly powerful person is capable of seizing a Core Formation master's prize!" Chu Zhaonan straightened his figure and the might of his entire body erupted outwards like a volcano. He said heavily, word for word: "I, Chu Zhaonan, with the status as Tianfeng City's champion, challenge you!"

Xu Yangyi looked at him calmly and nodded after a long time: "I hope you can stay standing at the end."

"Good..." Chu Zhaonan narrowed his eyes and used his thumb to forcefully slash over his throat, licking his lips: "Really, that brings me an endless excitement..."

Their voices were quite low, so that none of the others could hear them. Xu Yangyi didn't ask Chu Zhaonan why he knew of things that the school wouldn't teach; this was a question that wouldn't have an answer.

Zuo Lun didn't let them wait for too long, and after their initial astonishment, he fished out a black paper crane from his jacket pocket and flicked it away with his finger. The paper crane swaggeringly flew away.

Less than two minutes later, the paper crane flew back. As Zuo Lun received it, his brows suddenly jumped. Immediately, he suddenly took a step back and couldn't help but to bow at the waist, watching the paper crane incredulously.

The paper crane wasn't black.

Rather... it was red!

"This... This is..." His distraction lasted for less than a second, and he immediately turned his head back excitedly, his throat moving in glee as he said hoarsely: "Rookies, listen well, you're in luck! There's a Foundation Establishment senior showing up! This is your goddamn, heaven-sent golden opportunity to rise to the top!"

In this instant, he was unable to stop the heaving of his chest, and his eyes somewhat reddened. After he finished speaking, he couldn't restrain himself from cursing lowly: "Fuck... This luck... How come I didn't hear of a Foundation Establishment senior observing the ceremony when I was graduating!"

A Foundation Establishment senior!

In a split second, it wasn't only them, but nearly everyone's eyes held a fanaticism to them as they looked at the red paper crane that could even be said to be cute.

Xu Yangyi cautiously waited with rapt attention and Chu Zhaonan was heavy like water. However, the rough sound of breathing that could be heard was an absolute irregularity coming from a cultivator's body! These three words caused extreme admiration in the hearts of men!

A century for Foundation Establishment. To these newcomers that had just graduated, Foundation Establishment represented countless riches! A legend that light firearms were nearly completely ineffective against! A whole 200 years of life!

In other words, a Foundation Establishment cultivator... was a

human-shaped monster!

Superman! Ironman!

These beings had always been things that could only be found in books. The headmaster of the branch was at most only the late-stage of Qi Condensation. To them, Foundation Establishment was a familiar yet strange word. They didn't expect that their graduation ceremony would surprisingly have a Foundation Establishment cultivator in attendance!

If they were picked by one...

If they were received by one as a disciple...

For a moment, no one spoke. There was only the sound of fairly rushed breathing, betraying the state of everyone's minds.

Xu Yangyi quietly clenched his fist. A Foundation Establishment cultivator would be observing the Qualifier... The graduation ceremony procession hadn't been relayed, and this stroke of good fortune had surprisingly been concealed!

"If you're accepted into a Foundation Establishment senior's faction, it can be said that your path of cultivation has already opened by a half. Seize this chance properly, recruits." Zuo Lun sucked in deeply and waved his hand. The red paper crane flew over to his finger, and following, a sentence was clearly transmitted into his mind.

"A person per room. Let the assignment be to themselves."

At the same time, inside a gigantic room, a slender hand with a platinum ring on the forefinger gently set down a coffee cup that had been held at the side of a mouth. A pair of long and narrow eyes calmly swept over the tremendous widescreen.

Altogether, there were ten lattices. On the lower right side were the students' numbers, and on the left side, there was a person on each frame. In front of the display screen, there were five to six people sitting down. Behind them were ten-odd people standing.

At the very most center, there was a middle-aged man wearing a tunic suit. He had tiny eyes, long and narrow, and his hair was styled in a short buzz. His stature wasn't tall nor was he short, and he wore a platinum ring on his right hand. His skin was frighteningly white, as if he was a vampire in broad daylight.

His lanky fingers laid criss-crossed over his chest, and he sunk himself entirely in the cozy, wide chair. In the entire room, apart from his soft chair that was no less than half a meter in space, the other chairs were all the size of a small toilet seat.

At his left there was a youth, twenty-three to twenty-four years of age, sitting down in a western suit with his back ramrod straight. On his right, there was an old man with a full head and beard of white hair, carrying a smile on his face.

The entire room was silent without fanfare or chatter. The only thing that remained was the faint inaudible sound of breathing. The youth closed his eyes, and from time to time, the light sound of stroking from the ring on his finger could be heard.

The old man on the right side smiled faintly: "Shadowslay, you still have many years of your life, do you have a seedling you fancy this time? Wouldn't it be better to let this old one pick first?"

Shadowslay didn't respond, slowly caressing his ring. After a while, he glanced at Xu Yangyi's window and said indifferently: "I do."

"The kid that killed that berserker?" Firecloud followed his glance and slightly smiled: "Nothin' but pecking between two spring chickens... however, to be able to move the heart of the southern four provinces' chief, Shadowslay, is also his predestined fortune."

"It's just..." He paused unhurriedly and took a sip of the cup of coffee he was holding: "I am interested in him, as well."

The youth at the side raised his lips.

Shadowslay seemed to be a block of wood, his face without the shred of an expression. He didn't speak, and the youth behind him dressed in a full western suit and wearing gold-rimmed spectacles immediately stepped forward. He bowed respectfully at nearly a right angle and laughed: "Your Excellency Firecloud, His Excellency Shadowslay is without a single disciple..."

Firecloud smiled and nodded, carrying a splendid smile on his plump face. His hand holding his cup of coffee stopped, and he laughed willfully: "So it's like that... I understand. Five years a graduation... Our first graduation wait was pretty painful. Our faction is lacking people... Hehe, so it's finally time for blockhead to take on a disciple, huh..."

He seemed to sigh somewhat ruefully: "However..."

"Who allowed you to speak?" His laughter swept over the widescreen display. He didn't even glance at the youth, and he pounded his armrest rhythmically with his finger, his smile even worse: "Who gave you the right? A mortal?"

Bang!

A heavy sound echoed in midair. Like two invisible, gigantic hands collided together in the air, the surrounding air congealed in an instant!

Kaboom... Kaboom... The echoing of heavy sounds ceased, and all the objects in their environment were all surprisingly trembling slightly!

It wasn't known when but Shadowslay was already looking towards the old man. In kind, the old man smiled and looked at him.

Besides the youth on the left, the surrounding people's complexions were drained to a ghastly pallor. The formless atmosphere between the two men caused their heart beats to stop. The present scene held a death-like silence.

“P-P-Please forgive my offence...” After a momentary quiet, the youth that had spoken was trembling from head to toe with his forehead slick with cold sweat. Without the least bit hesitation, he kneeled, his body trembling like the sifting of chaff. With his hoarse voice, he yelled: “Your Excellency! I beg your forgiveness! I’m sorry! Ten thousand apologies!”

“Scram, you will receive ten lashes. If you don’t die, you shall come again to serve this throne again.” Shadowslay’s voice was somewhat raspy. He looked at the old man and said with a complicated tinge in his voice: “You actually broke through to the middle stage of Foundation Establishment?”

“I am no heaven-blessed hero like you. It is merely nothing more than my hard work to make up for my inadequacies.” Firecloud restrained his smile and leaned his body forward. His gaze swept over the number one at the lower left of Xu Yangyi’s and Chu Zhaonan’s portraits: “I scheduled these two in advance. Besides the paragon of the Qualifier, can you not let them come to me?”

Shadowslay raised a brow.

“Outside of any unexpected mishaps, that young Xu from Nantong Province has a 70% possibility of ascending to the top.” Firecloud said softly: “I said three people, but I actually only want two. How about it?”

Shadowslay didn’t open his mouth and said insipidly several seconds later: “It’s not that there are no geniuses in these graduations, but it’s hard to meet a fiend like Sunnihilator even once in a century.”

“Nevertheless, it must be tried.” Firecloud laughed: “I’ll allow a small branch of your minerals company in Zhaoxue City. What do you say?”

After three minutes of silence, Shadowslay said faintly: “You may.”

“Che...” At this time, the youth at his side who had always been silent surprisingly smiled. Yet Shadowslay and Firecloud didn’t have the least bit intention of interrupting.

“I’m much obliged.” Firecloud laughed and cupped his hands towards Shadowslay. He looked at the smiling youth at the side: “Mr. Fang, send my regards to the provincial governor on my behalf. What matter has caused you to laugh?”

Fang Tansheng sipped at his coffee leisurely: “How can I dare laugh at the two seniors? It is merely what Lord Firecloud said about this Xu... Xu Yangyi having a 70% chance of becoming the paragon. In my humble opinion, he doesn’t even have one percent of a chance.”

“Oh?” Firecloud’s gaze flickered: “It seems there is some inside scoop I am unaware of?”

“It can’t be considered an inside scoop. It’s been nothing more than a mere decade. You two immortal masters are enthralled with cultivation; it is natural you aren’t as versed as such to the world of ordinary mortals.” Fang Tansheng laughed and supported his hand on his chin. He looked complicatedly at the computer screen displaying Chu Zhaonan and smiled: “You two immortal masters, do you remember the strange tale of fifteen years ago in Mingshui Province’s capital, Panshan City, the ‘The Sunlit 5,000 Kilometer Journey’ of the provincial governor's madam?”

## Notes:

---

These Foundation Establishment guys refer to themselves as 本座 literally “this seat”. I translated this as “this throne” depending on the situation. Refers to 本 - oneself and 座 - one’s own high ranking. Used in antiquity to denote nobility.

I want to include here the title of the chapter in Chinese because it will become relevant later:

天下独步



## Chapter 28: Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens

### (2)

---

“I’ve heard the gist of it.” Shadowslay said indifferently.

“Indeed, that time was somewhat far off ago.” Fang Tansheng lit a cigarette. Shadowslay furrowed his brows, but didn’t speak: “The number of cases where demons have acted against a provincial high official does not exceed ten. That year was quite a buzz... The wife of the provincial governor died a tragic death in the spring of beauty. The provincial governor was incensed, and within three days, he caught the offending demon and personally delivered to it a death of a thousand cuts by his own hand. However, while everyone only watched this developing affair, that iron-blooded provincial governor, oh, no, right now he’s the deputy minister, forgot about a single matter...”

He laughed and raised a finger: “They have families, as well.”

Patting his dapper western suit, he continued on: “This provincial governor has a grandson. And then on the second day, this grandson was delivered to Heavens Law. I remember it quite clearly... it was Tianfeng City.”

Firecloud raised a brow and Shadowslay’s gaze faintly fluctuated.

“Transfer to surveillance number four.” Fang Tansheng snapped his finger, not speaking to anyone in particular. In the next second, the screen switched over from Chu Zhaonan’s portrait to his side profile. From this momentary angle, his position couldn’t be seen, but as the camera immediately magnified, the top of his hand appeared straight away and so did the object that hung at the side of his waist.

“This is...” In a blink of an eye, Shadowslay was unable to restrain himself from making a quiet remark. His body straightened up for the first time. In kind, Firecloud straightened

out his body. A radiance flashed in his eyes, and he mumbled to himself.

“Although I am a mere mortal and cannot absorb qi, with my father’s status as the regional chancellor, I am still familiar with these things.” Fang Tansheng smiled: “The Beretta 92-F... I must bluster before the two seniors, but besides my friend Chu Zhaonan, no one can be the paragon of the Qualifier. He doesn’t even have to make three moves.”

“As for him...” He glanced at Xu Yangyi’s portrait: “Ten moves will guarantee him a certain defeat. Moreover, he will lose extremely miserably. It’s because of the two of them, he’s simply not a cultivator on the same level.”

“And myself...” He laughed: “Naturally I’ve rushed over here for my childhood friend. Otherwise, as the young lord of Beiyuan Province, how could I could I make this journey here from distant parts?”

“The deputy minister happens to be surnamed Chu.” He answered the riddle and laughed faintly, saying no more. The present atmosphere had become somewhat silent.

“So it is. This bluster isn’t unwarranted.” Shadowsly said indifferently three seconds later: “Sir Chu’s right hand is much more callused than his left and the underside of his forefinger is covered in even more scars. If my observations are not incorrect...”

“It was a slip of the eye...” Firecloud sipped his coffee and his eyes flashed in expectation as quickly as it disappeared: “Only some of the fluctuations of his spiritual force can be sensed through the television. No matter that young Xu’s cultivation or constitution, he has an edge over Mr. Chu’s in both. I had originally believed he would become the paragon, but I hadn’t expected...” He turned his gaze over Chu Zhaonan’s body and said assuredly: “He cultivates an arcane effort. A Gun Kata.”

“The Beretta 92-F at his waist has at least three spirit-rupturing

bullets worth over 50,000 each. In the case a target is struck by one, any spiritual force will be incapable of use within the period of half an hour. Hehe, Deputy Minister Chu is truly a man of power and affluence... to hand over an arcane effort worth over a billion for his grandson in school to use. It's no grievance for young Xu to lose."

### Judgement was not be rendered until the coffin lid was in place!

It hadn't even started, but they had already passed their verdicts. To them, the battle of Qi Condensation cultivators didn't even need to be viewed to determine the outcome. Even if they watched the television, their deviations absolutely wouldn't exceed 1%!

Heavens Law's Hundred Solutions were nothing more than elementary mathematics. Although it was unknown which school of Gun Katas Chu Zhaonan cultivated, be it the Tan School, Zhu School, or perhaps Qi School, they were at least equal to that of a junior high schooler's mathematics.

An advanced arcane effort wasn't only so simple at face value. An elementary arcane effort was wholly incapable of being compared on the balance between qi mobilization and bodily harmonization to higher ranked arcane efforts. Relatively, the higher the rank of an arcane effort, the harder it was to exchange channels, and the price likewise became exceedingly higher. This was the reason why the other students on the airplane had been stirred to fright when they had heard that the Featherwood Guard was willing to to bestow an arcane effort in advance.

The disparity of realms between cultivators that had only studied elementary arcane efforts wasn't great. Their constitutions largely didn't differ, and under the circumstances of their gap in experience being miniscule, how could they possibly be the opponent of one who had learned the beginning of an intermediate arcane effort?

The outcome was doomed to be a complete steamroll. An

overwhelming advantage.

“I shall hold my judgement over these children until later. I shall treat him as a personal disciple should he enter my faction. If nothing unexpected happens, none are worthy except him to be this year’s paragon of Nantong Province.” Firecloud swept his eyes over the screen: “Young Xu isn’t shabby, too. It is regrettable... if it were not for Mr. Chu, he would be the favored candidate to be the most powerful. The prize of a Core Formation master is enough for a Qi Condensation cultivator to struggle for thirty to forty years.”

“It’s reported that he killed a berserker alone.” Shadowslay neither hurriedly or slowly: “That Qi kid from Chaoyang City, Anlu City’s Wang Zhuo, Pingfeng City’s Zhao Yiming... These champions’ degree of accomplishments are merely ordinary.”

“Indeed, their arrogance is deserved for Qi Condensation. However... it is this and nothing more.” Fire Cloud sighed: “Hehe... [to be born brilliant, why must there be others that shine brightly](#), as well.”

Shadowslay was silent for several seconds and finally nodded slightly: “A minor spirit vein is insufficient.”

“I will add a bottle of Spirit Accumulating Elixir.” At this moment, Firecloud was without the slightest hesitation. Looking at Chu Zhaonan’s portrait with a light in his eyes, he said with his voice firm and decisive: “A single bottle takes three years of bitter cultivation to obtain. It is not easy to come by for myself, as well.”

It was silent once again. After another minute passed, Shadowslay nodded: “You may.”

No one glanced at Xu Yangyi again. Since Fang Tansheng spoke of Chu Zhaonan’s status, and moreover after he stated his own standing, Xu Yangyi’s rank wasn’t important anymore in their minds.

The value of the runner-up... Was there any difference to it than

that of the tenth rank to Foundation Establishment cultivators?

Only the champion, the paragon of a major province, was worthy of stirring their emotions, their fancy, and deserving of being accepted as their disciple! Only when one was at the very top were they worthy of nurture that mobilized their resources and all of their heart! Only then was one deserving of them passing down their Dao legacies!

Before Zhuge Liang, what brilliance did Zhou Yu possess to be favored?

Xu Yangyi didn't know of all that was occurring here. He was presently following Zuo Lun's lead, walking through a brightly lit, spacious passage.

The passage inclined downwards, and several doors and several people could begin to be seen. After a couple minutes, all they were able to see was the lonely passage that seemed to have no end and as hear the thumping echo of ten-odd people in military boots within.

Finally, the road came to a head. However, just as they exited, they were completely stunned. What had emerged before their eyes... was an immense arena!

It was an arena of pure stone. If a person who had watched the old Dragon Ball anime were here, they would have the exact same feeling. This was because the venue was nearly the same in appearance as the World Martial Arts Tournament!

The sole difference was that there were azure talismans carved on every stone on the initial row of walls in between the arena and the viewing stands. The entire composition was a tremendous array closely encircling the gigantic arena! On the ceiling, there were four large characters that were several hundred meters in length. They were extremely striking!

[Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens!](#)

The scenery was completely different from the clamor and order of the branch region above. Each stone was steeped in a heavy ancient air, so that even quite a few stones had moss climbing up on their sides. It seemed like two extremes. An ordinary passage without anything extraordinary in particular had connected the past and the present. Above was the domain of science and technology, and below was the world of cultivation!

There weren't any other flashy ornamentals. Only slabs of uniformly aligned stones like they had been measured with a ruler. There existed only a single major irregularity and that was the end of the subterranean arena couldn't be seen. It could be imagined that if a competition was held here, and the stands were packed with people, a strike would cause mountains to collapse and seas to bellow; how blood boiling would the roar of the crowd be!

Spacious, tremendous, and large, it in itself was enough to make the hearts of men tremble.

"Shocking, isn't it?" Although Zuo Lun had come here on many occasions, he still immersed himself at this moment in the extraordinarily gigantic arena. His voice held a trace of hoarse fanaticism: "At the beginning of the nation's founding, the modern-day Heavens Law was formally established. There was a mountain in Nantong, one without name, and there was a Core Formation master named Floatingcloud. With his hand as the tip of a spear and his wrist like a halberd, in the space of a night, he transformed this nameless mountain with a snap of his fingers into a cascade of several millions of stones that were a meter in length and half a meter in width. Against the upstream river current, the millions of stones slinked through the bottom of the river bed without the influence of men by their own accord. They traveled nonstop to Fengyi as if there was a person conducting them and constructed this 'Unrivalled Beneath the Heavens' martial stage."

He spoke as if he was reciting scripture or chanting psalms. Coupled with the enormous arena, it made a person unable to help

but to let themselves be taken in by this fantastical scene.

He seemed to have become drunk on Daomaster Floatingcloud's magnificent accomplishment, and after a long time, sighed deeply: "China's twenty-four martial stages have all come from the hands of a Core Formation master. Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens isn't in the top ten, but it's certainly in the top fifteen."

His mood seemed to have infected everyone. As everyone looked at the four massive characters of 'Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens', their eyes faintly flickered to a degree.

Xu Yangyi pursed his lips and seemed to have seen an elderly man of outstanding bearing set apart from the masses wearing what might've been a tunic, Tang suit, or possibly a changpao. With a passing move, the colossal mountain blew apart into rubble like a blade had hacked into it. Afterwards, the several million stones traversed across the sky and submerged themselves at the bottom of the river, crossing the Yangtze for a few thousand miles. Against the upward current, from north to west, they constructed the extremely tyrannical characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens!

How domineering was this? How imposing was this? How leisurely was this?

[Accompanied by clouds and water, made neighbor to the void and sky. A spirit different from that of the masses.](#)

"A life like this... Are there still any other pursuits?" He tightly clenched his fist, thirsting for Floatingcloud's strength. At this instant, he had never been more impassioned!

A few minutes later, Zuo Lun returned from his reverie and gently made a move with his left hand. A red paper crane split from one into ten, and following his leisured motion, slowly moved away ten stones on the martial stage that were so seamlessly fit together that nearly any artificial vestiges couldn't be seen, revealing ten pitch-black doors.

Immediately afterwards, the paper crane flew into the pockets of the ten students, and Zuo Lun laughed: “These are your room cards. Don’t lose them.”

“In these five days, you may make your arrangements by yourselves. However, the graduation ceremony will officially begin five days later. Nantong Province has 60 people graduating this year. It is necessary all of them be on this stage.”

He finished speaking and walked away, not even turning his head back. Xu Yangyi’s gaze faintly flickered. He glanced silently at Chu Zhaonan. Zuo Lun hadn’t mentioned the matter of the Qualifier. The man hadn’t spoken of such an important affair, but Xu Yangyi didn’t find it to be odd and even felt that all was as should be.

Which cultivator wasn’t struggling against the heavens? A journey of heavenly defiance? A cultivator that relaxed as they pleased would perhaps find it difficult to come by a great accomplishment some day. Although he hadn’t seen a true Foundation Establishment senior, he could imagine that regardless of which one, not to speak of reigning supreme be it past or present, was at least of great willpower and a mighty lifetime of perseverance. As for a Core Formation master, such a realm couldn’t be reached with determination. Neither in fate nor fortune could one be lacking.

These ten people held the splendid reputation as “The Illustrious of the Modern Era”!

Thus, he came by this rather inevitable inference: it wasn’t said in order to observe them.

“Is someone watching...?” He narrowed his eyes and quietly swept his gaze over the gigantic martial stage that had no end in sight.

“Who is it? CSIB? Featherwood Guard? Bountiful Treasures Pavilion?” He stuffed his hand in his pants pocket and walked towards the direction that the paper crane guided: “It can be



considered a painstaking process in order to select the true elite.”

“The Qualifier is the graduation ceremony’s true climax!”

盖棺定论 aka don’t pass judgement on people until it was over. I reeeaaally wanted to translate this as “It wasn’t over until the fat lady sang”

既生瑜，何生亮啊 - I translated this as “to be born brilliant, why are there others who shine as bright. This is a chinese idiom made famous by Zhou Yu during the three kingdoms period. It is in reference to Zhou Yu lamenting that while his talents and skills are excellent, his rival Zhuge Liang rivaled and surpassed him. He is conflicted because he thinks himself to be all the heavens require, but boom Zhuge Liang comes and ruins his party. Kinda hard to put this in context in the story because it is almost like waxing poetry

天下独步 - Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens/Outstanding in the whole world, etc. Many ways to translate this.

相伴云和水，为邻虚与空。一灵真性在，不与众心同 Is a line used by Wang Chongyang, one of the seven immortals from Chinese history. He says these four lines as he leaves behind the mortal world. If what I translated it as is unclear, I will tell it straight up here. He is pretty much saying that he has surpassed this world i.e accompanied by clouds and water and neighbor to the void/sky. The latter part of the verse clears things up by distinctly separating him from other people.

## Chapter 29: Assailing the Middle Stage (1)

---

Xu Yangyi entered the room. The style inside was in contradiction to that of the outside world. There was a stone bed done in an ancient fashion, an ancient table, and a stone stool. At the side, there was a washroom made of stone.

If he put on a changpao of the olden days, he would be matching with the gigantic arena outside the door. He would truly believe himself to have been sent back thousands of years ago in a dream.

Setting his things down, he stretched his body, cracking his bones. Without the slightest remiss, he immediately sat down on the stone bed.

Just as he sat down, qi threads slowly caressed his thighs like a myriad ripples of spring water. It was a warm and cozy kind of feeling on his skin like sweet nectar pervading into a long drought, making him unable to restrain his groan.

He shut his eyes, and nearly in accordance to his instinct of the past ten-odd years, revolved the Hundred Solutions, entering a profound world of cultivation. However, this thought merely flashed by, and he was able to forcibly restrain it.

“A Spirit Focusing Formation...” His gaze carried a smidgen of excitement. In a branch of Heavens Law, such a thing could only be had and not obtained. In kind, it was a thing that could only be yearned for by initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators. The rate of cultivation inside the Spirit Focusing Formation was a single fold greater than the outside of the formation!

What did it symbolize during the End of Days?

Qi was something that was quite hard to speak of. It could be explained as the atmosphere, at least it was explained like this by modern Cultivation Civilization scholars. It in itself grew without end, however, following humanity’s continual progress in science

and technology, the growing spread of occupied space and the climbing severity of industrialization rendered the rapid decrease of qi unable to be controlled.

Countless seniors had thought up of many solutions. During the Qing dynasty, the qi had already begun to weaken by a degree. As China entered a new age, the remaining qi was but a mere thin layer, so that a cultivator's cultivation had to be severely controlled!

Thus, Bountiful Treasures Pavilion lofty position had come about in this way. As "one's body" was already incapable of dedicatedly forging ahead, "external objects" had become cultivators only option without a better choice.

The Spirit Focusing Formation was one of these things. Its circulation was the most widespread, and it was the most universal of the Dao of Talismans. However, while it was universal, it was not something that a city-level branch could be equipped with.

He felt that it was as the books had said; a low-grade Spirit Focusing Formation could gather spiritual energy like spring water, a middle-grade one was like a creek, and a high-grade one was like that of the Yangtze and Yellow rivers. A supreme Spirit Focusing Formation... he had never heard of one.

The qi at the side of his body was as joyous as a fish in water. It was as if he was soaked in a qi spring. He knew that this was the result of the low-grade Spirit Focusing Formation.

He stood up and tried to leave the bed, but there wasn't a result. It appeared that this low-grade Spirit Focusing Formation had only been carved into the stone bed.

He sat down on the bed in a lotus position and meditated with both of his hands placed before his dantian. He didn't cultivate, but rather enjoyed the cleansing of the qi. Within his mind, he was gradually immersed in a kind of profound state.

In Nantong Province, there were thirteen champions, lion kings contesting for supremacy altogether to seize the gold that was a Core Formation cultivator's prize. He didn't know what the others were like, but from his observations of Chu Zhaonan, this was a man that was extremely strong at the bar minimum! If... the others were as strong as Chu Zhaonan, then this would absolutely be an extremely arduous and violent battle!

Thirteen champion, and there could only be one left proudly laughing on the path of martial hegemony! He, beneath the eyes of Foundation Establishment cultivators, had to become Nantong Province's paragon! He needed to be absolute without a single failure.

His eyes opened, a calm expanse. With Foundation Establishment cultivators in attendance and the prize of Core Formation cultivator, his future would set sail here. For the retribution of his mother and father, he couldn't allow a shred of a mishap!

His aura settled, and he released the pores of his entire body, feeling qi seep in little by little from the outside. This was the first time he cultivated after he had slayed a demon. However, just as he began to cultivate, he immediately felt something was different!

The strange chest had raised his five senses by a third. Before, it had only been his sense of hearing, touch, and sight, but it wasn't until he truly began to cultivate did he sense the obvious difference!

Looking on from the outside world, in an instant, fluctuations began to emerge in the air around his body like ripples of water. It appeared as if space was faintly trembling! Of course, this was merely in the sight of ordinary people. If a cultivator used a discerning eye to look, they would see that milky-white qi currents were revolving around his body. In the next second that he entered a state of cultivation, the speed of qi revolutions suddenly accelerated by a third! It was similar to suddenly changing the engine of a car!

This was an act he was absolutely incapable of accomplishing in the past. Swish... The initial white qi current dug into his first pore and was immediately drawn in by his spiritual sense. Revolving a full cycle within his body, it swiftly entered his qi sea.

Swooooooosshhh... The second... the third... countless qi currents vied against each other to surge into his body. The velocity was far much faster than other cultivators.

Xu Yangyi hung his head low, watching his nose with his eyes, and his heart with his nose, still like water. The present him was without self and nature. His body had transformed into a cycle with himself as the universe. He seemed to become immersed between a tranquil field of black and white.

His spiritual sense was confronted with this boundless darkness, yet it wasn't stifled, rather it was serene and quiet. It didn't make the heart agitated in distress. It was only calm like peaceful waters. Within the darkness constructed by his spiritual sense, streams of milky-white qi came floating in from the edges of the darkness, drifting into the qi sea below. At the same time, each one of his entire body's senses left him and were replaced with a kind of invigorating comfort, like his whole body was submerged in a hot spring.

He didn't need to breath. Every pore on his entire body was breathing. Such a feeling was even more intense than drugs, yet it didn't have the after effects of the come down. It was more comfortable and refreshing than making love, yet there wasn't a momentary release, rather a long-term climax that revolved around the entire body.

Xu Yangyi was like a stone statue, a stone statue swallowing and expelling the heavens and earth. If it was said one was just beginning to preoccupy themselves with a side matter, their whole being would already be completely intoxicated after the entry of qi into the body.

Thus, it was said that cultivation was a practice void of time. With the opening and closing of eyes, it was possibly that a couple years would pass.

This was a delight ordinary people were incapable of experiencing, penetrating to the heart of the extremes of the heavens and earth, the sun and moon. After a cultivator cultivated, it would be quite difficult for them to be enamored by external matters again. Not to mention that such a comfortable sensation like a fish in the water also brought with it an immense upgrade in power.

At this instant, he truly felt the immense advantage that came with the advancement of his spiritual sense. Under the support of the Spirit Focusing Formation's two-fold increase, he only felt his qi sea surprisingly give off a fully swelled sensation.

In the outside world, his brows faintly twitched, yet he didn't cease cultivating. On the contrary, he completely unleashed his fire power and absorbed the qi with every fiber of his being!

He understood it very well. The initial stage of Qi Condensation was actually around ten times stronger than a mortal, and one couldn't fast. Flying through the heavens was a matter of Foundation Establishment, and artifacts couldn't be put to use. This was because the pitiful amount of qi wasn't enough to supply for the absorption of the artifact, not even to speak of a Core Formation artifact.

From what he could see from his qi sea with his spiritual sense, the most direct observation was that it was like a very small pool. Not even to speak of a sea, to say it was a small lake was extremely lenient. Qi sea was nothing but a general term.

However, as Yuyang City's champion, his boundary was undoubtedly the highest of the Heavens Law Yuyang City branch. This small pool had been drawn into his body since he was thirteen to the present eight whole years. He had looked on as it had started

as a mere tiny qi sliver to the current pool that had reached full capacity! Once it had reached maximum capacity... was when one advanced to the middle stage of Qi Condensation!

The further one cultivated, the more difficult it was to advance. Eight years for a single level, he didn't have a comparison for how fast this speed was. Right now, he simply wasn't in the state of mind to make comparisons. He was only completely concentrating on the billowing qi of his qi sea. Strands of spiritual force poured in with great effort. It appeared to be overflowing yet he knew...

There was still a bit to go!

The only difference was the final strand... Originally, it still would've required him at least three months of accumulations, but at this moment, with the substantial increase of his five senses and the added on effect of the two-fold Spirit Focusing Formation, qi wildly entered his qi sea. He had a premonition... The day that his initial-stage Qi Condensation qi sea would reach its limit would be in the next few days.

The sands of time trickled by bit by bit. In his state of cultivation, he simply hadn't calculated how much time it had been, but on the outside world, at this moment, it was surprisingly already late at night!

On a wide, empty street, ten police cars suddenly emerged. Like they were protectors, they pressed in on both sides of four high-quality cars in the center, silently traveling on the provincial road.

The four high-quality cars had evidently underwent expert retrofitting. Because of the 1.5 centimeter-thick bulletproof glass, one could only see their inverted reflection. Even the windshield was the same. The tires adopted the use of special rubber that ordinary small firearms couldn't penetrate via any method. The base had undergone even more special processing. A light explosion couldn't possibly overturn it.

"Seven reporting the situation. There are no special situations."

“Twelve reporting the situation. The surroundings have already been completely cleared.”

“Three reporting, everything is normal.”

Within the police car, the uninterrupted discourse could nearly be said to take five seconds for a single exchange. If there was anyone present on this late-night street right now, they would certainly discover through the police car glass that every police officer on the inside were all first-class inspectors! Even if one walked in front of the car, a third-class superintendent was seated in the front passenger seat!

The four high-quality vehicles were identical in exterior and distanced a bit over ten meters apart, forming an array. In the front and back, there were two cars each. If someone wanted to attack at this instant, they certainly wouldn't know which car held the target they needed to strike.

Such a powerful formation already demonstrated the status of the person in the car.

“Deputy Minister.” Within the first car in the front, the driver said softly: “You still have a meeting tomorrow morning at the Capital Office.”

Seated behind, there was an old man with a full head of white hair and a nose that was a bit like an eagle's hook, sitting in the center and wearing a western suit. On his slim face, he had a pair of eyes that seemed like a bottomless abyss, looking outside the window at the rapidly withdrawing nightscape. He spoke indifferently without any inflection of emotion that could be heard: “Put it off. In these five days, I will not accept any business. No matter where any person comes from.”

At both of his sides, there were two youths with eyes shut in rest. It was strange though that they weren't wearing western suits, but rather double-piece ancient changpaos.



Although it was already late at night, from time to time within the darkness, a red or perhaps gold gaze swept over the car, carrying suspicions. However, in the next second, it immediately retreated like it had been pricked.

The auras of the two cultivators were at the Great Circle of Qi Condensation! It was simply as striking like a sharpened sword in the black night!

## Chapter 30: Assailing the Middle Stage (2)

---

The car drove all the way to a public park. As it passed by the Triumphant Virtue Plaza, the bodies of the two youths evidently tensed. However, the tremendous fox that normal people were incapable of seeing merely opened a sliver of its golden pupils and followingly sneered disdainfully from its dark nose, continuing to bury its head in its shaggy tail.

“Deputy Minister Chu.” When Xu Yangyi and the others had come to the entrance of the public park during the afternoon, there had been no one. But at this moment, a man wearing a white coat was standing at the entrance with smile stretching across his face, cupping his hands: “Welcome, it’s been some time. Are you well?”

He was an unimpressive sight. His speech was slovenly and his beard was unkempt. He was approximately around twenty-seven to twenty-eight years old, however, on this night, he stood there like a mountain. Perhaps it could be said that if a passer-by saw this, they wouldn’t know why they would be completely incapable of paying attention to the things surrounding the youth. Their sight would only concentrate on his body, like they were under the obey of rules.

A trace of a smile finally drifted onto Deputy Minister Chu’s face. Just as the car stopped, the driver immediately opened the rear door and lent an arm to help him get out of the car. His footsteps quickened, and he carried an extremely splendid smile as he advanced forward and grasped Deputy Branchmaster Qi’s hand: “I’m well. Deputy Branchmaster Qi still hasn’t changed since fifty years ago; I’m unable to restrain my envy.”

Deputy Branchmaster Qi!

This was Nantong Province’s Heavens Law branch, yet the arrival of this old man brought the deputy branchmaster to

personally come welcome him!

As Deputy Branchmaster Qi heard these words, he sighed ruefully: “Like a dream or fantasy, to speak of these observations... only brings about a needless sorrow.”

“And you.” He pulled on Deputy Minister Chu who couldn’t be considered tall in stature and walked towards the pavilion: “We submitted an application to the government this year to develop in the Huanglong travel region, but you surprisingly had me turn back. We still have this matter in mind, you know.”

“Old Qi.” Deputy Minister Chu sighed deeply: “It’s not that I wanted to make you turn back, but the Huanglong travel region is China’s tourism destination that exceeds the A-level. It’s famous domestically and internationally. Your proposal is too radical. Whether it’s regional or the Central Committee, and not to mention the provincial level, you can’t even get this to pass through the prefectural level.”

“But there’s a massive spirit stone mine beneath! The accumulated amount measures as high as 200 million tons! We’ve already even ascertained there are four kinds of uncommon metals! The people of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s refining department are nearly stationed full time there!”

“I know.” It was said Deputy Minister Chu’s reputation was brilliant, yet his face was without the slightest begrudging expression so that there wasn’t even a change in his voice: “Thus, it must be slowly planned. Otherwise, the billions of people of this entire nation will have no choice but to speak of it. Although China’s million cultivators is its primary military strength, the fact is, the cornerstone of this nation is its billions of citizens. This is a matter that I, Minister Wang, and Minister Qi have personally taken charge over. In three months, Heavens Law will have an answer.”

After he finished his words, he extended his hand behind towards

a warmed thermos and unscrewed the cover. At nearly the same time, he set it down in his old, wizened hand.

“How is Zhaonan?” He sipped lightly and changed the topic. This was genuine Big Red Robe tea that only China was in possession of. He was rather fond of this flavor.

“Deputy Minister Chu’s grandson is naturally a dragon among men.” Deputy Branchmaster Qi narrowed his eyes: “However, you’ve never cared for the wellbeing of your grandson. Only the status of his cultivation. Have you not necessarily come here today to engage in such pleasantries?”

Deputy Minister Chu slightly narrowed his eyes. Immediately, of the men he brought, regardless if they were police, the two youths, or his driver, all of them silently left like an orderly squadron of troops.

There wasn’t a single man left behind. It seemed like the ebbing of a crowd. It was as if the fanfare on stage had ended as the main character took to the scene.

Deputy Branchmaster Qi was faintly stunned. Not even waiting for him to speak, Deputy Minister Chu who was a head shorter than him walked in front of him and dragged out his hand, writing several characters on it with his right hand.

“Do you speak the truth!?” Deputy Branchmaster Qi’s expression transformed in an instant, and his voice immediately sunk. He turned his hand over and gripped on to Deputy Minister Chu’s hand, his lips somewhat pale and asked hoarsely: “The prize this time... is actually that item?!”

“It has been verified a thousand times over.” Deputy Minister Chu extracted his hand wordlessly and laughed coldly: “Otherwise, why would I rush over here through the middle of the night to Fengyi City? It’s a distance of thousands of kilometers away from the Capital to Fengyi. I’m not so idle with my time.”

Deputy Branchmaster Qi tightly pursed his lips. He didn't dare to believe. Fortuity Profound Elixir was an absolutely match made in heaven if bestowed to a Qi Condensation cultivator. However, the grade of the elixir this time unexpectedly far exceeded that of Fortuity Profound Elixir... that it was even an item that stirred the hearts of Foundation Establishment cultivators!

“Which Dao Master was it that took it out?” His state of mind finally stabilized itself with great difficulty. Within ten seconds, he immediately sought an answer.

“Daomaster Floatingcloud.” Deputy Minister Chu leisurely threw a card out: “500 million. An additional high-grade spirit stone. I need Zhaonan to take first place.”

Hearing the two words for spirit stone, a trace of fanaticism flashed through Deputy Branchmaster Qi's gaze in an instant.

Deputy Minister Chu leaned in closer, grinding his white teeth: “Will you take to the task or will the men that I have brought with me have to?”

Deputy Branchmaster Qi didn't say anything, and Deputy Minister Chu smiled: “Relax. It's not worth of it to me to exchange my good future prospects for a group of Qi Condensation worms. It's merely that within a year, they'll have no way to use qi. For myself, a mortal, to achieve this much to such a degree at the pinnacle of my standing as a majestic deputy minister... is already a true irony.”

Deputy Branchmaster Qi still didn't say anything. He only looked deeply at Deputy Minister Chu.

“Immortal Intoxication.” Deputy Minister Chu said indifferently: “I've searched for ten years, but all I've found is this tea... Don't use that kind gaze like I pierced through the heavens to look at me, I've had no dealings with the cultivation world for even half a year. A Qi Condensation cultivator... besides the first place, have you ever cared for one? As long as nothing major occurs, with my

position as deputy minister, even if he's late-stage Foundation Establishment, is it me he will give face to or will it be given to the worms in your eyes?"\*

It was silent for a long period of time. Deputy Branchmaster Qi retracted his hand, yet the card could be seen no longer: "This matter... will come to pass."

Daomaster Floatingcloud... is revered by the Qin Imperial Court's Qin Clan. He collaborates with world-class authorities. I am of the initial stage of Foundation Establishment. Even if he kills me in passing, no one will dare raise half a word."

The corner of Deputy Minister Chu's mouth curled into a smirk. He looked at Deputy Branchmaster Qi indifferently and said faintly after a long period of time: "When did you begin to speak so dramatically?"

"A mortal without background, one without the qualifications to possess this kind of treasure. Since you're a mortal... you should stop in your own position."

Deputy Minister Chu narrowed his eyes: "You think there's someone else even more suited to obtain that item than my, Chu Tianyi's, grandson, the successor of the Chu Clan?"

These words seemed to make the air grow cold. Even though he wasn't a cultivator, Deputy Branchmaster Qi couldn't burst out in laughter at him in the least bit. Not waiting for Deputy Branchmaster Qi to speak, he laughed eerily: "They do not dare to be unfitting."

"History has always been written by the victor... however, one who is strong is not necessarily the winner. But certainly, the winner must be one who is strong." He used his cane to push aside the floor and laughed grimly. His voice was cold like a blade: "As long as we continue to be the victor, it will forever be the history that we write that will be true in regards to those Qi Condensation 'losers and winners'. As for what they think..."

He raised a brow: “Is it as important as my 500 million?”

Deputy Branchmaster Qi muttered to himself for a moment and spoke: “If it is so... I shall risk my life and accompany the gentleman this time.”

.....

Time flowed past by minutes and seconds. Xu Yangyi didn't know how much time had passed anymore. A day? Two days? Three days? Or perhaps a single hour?

He had held the thought in advance to end his seclusion after five days, however, he was presently not of mind to simply even care how many days had passed.

His gaze didn't leave his qi sea. He didn't know how long it had been. The sudden strengthening of his spiritual sense in addition with his first use of the Spirit Focusing Formation had sent qi pouring into his body in a frenzy. The surrounding air faintly trembled. Originally, it had been a soon to be “brimming” pool, but now, as far as the eye could see, the soaring qi had already become more intense as if it was a pot of water that had just boiled!

But it still hadn't “boiled over”...

Xu Yangyi's senses transformed bit by bit that even his state of mind was drawn by all kinds of profound, minute transformations. He could distinctly capture it was but a mere strand of a difference... A strand was sufficient to push his initial-stage qi sea over the edge!

That would be the time he would charge into the middle stage! Whether or not he would succeed was temporarily not up for discussion. However, assailing a stage of Qi Condensation wasn't like that of Foundation Establishment, where a single failure would create a blowback to the body. For Qi Condensation, as long as you reached the threshold, you could choose to break through at any moment. This was the compensation of the heavens to

cultivators who had newly advanced towards the endless path of cultivation.

Merely, if one wasn't successful in breaking through, one would be confronted with qi degradation. Approximately around a tenth of one's qi would be lost in a single bout. However, in comparison to a single failure of charging towards a boundary of Foundation Establishment, where one would be in a situation where they would have to nurse themselves for several years, it was by far much better.

He had long decided that in case he fully swelled his qi sea, he would assail the middle stage at the first opportunity! Qi slowly flowed into his entire body. The length of time that passed was unknown. In the midst of his meditation, Xu Yangyi's eyelids faintly trembled and slowly opened afterwards.

Innersight!

At this instant, his qi sea was peaceful no more, but rather vaporous strands of white qi were charging towards the firmament! The entire qi sea had truly come to a boil!

This was the true Great Circle of the initial stage of Qi Condensation!

"Huff..." He breathed in deeply without any hesitation, revolving the Hundred Solutions with a bang! His qi sea loudly exploded forth! An untold number of fog-like qi strands frantically surged toward every major meridian and acupuncture point in his entire body!

Gall bladder meridian, liver meridian, large intestine meridian, stomach meridian, spleen meridian, heart meridian, small intestine meridian, bladder meridian, pericardium meridian, and the three truncanl meridians, his short hair moved itself free of the wind, and his face gradually turned flushed.

Like a spirit snake, qi followed along his twelve meridians to



form a complete cycle. If someone was to examine him at this moment, they would discover the five viscera and six bowels and bones and flesh of Xu Yangyi's entire body were emitting a layer of lustrous white light. An outer appearance of being encased in qi. This advance was actually the transformation of the body, a process of evolution. It was making his body even more suited to assimilating and storing qi. If an analogy had to be made it was like a computer upgrade.

His heart was the CPU, his skeleton was the motherboard, and his flesh was the circuits... At this very instance, all of the qi in his body was in the middle of undergoing a transformation! Once this transformation reached a critical point, his qi sea would ferociously expand! The middle-stage of Qi Condensation would be achieved!

At this moment, in one of the arena's stone rooms, Chu Zhaonan was meditating. However, he suddenly opened his eyes in the next second!

The qi of heaven and earth was stirring abnormally... It was not a common incidental skipping fluctuation... rather, it was an entirely delighted abnormality! Furthermore, it was swiftly centralizing!

A stupefied gaze flashed through his eyes. Beneath the massive characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens, at the lowest level of the Heavens Law branch, it was a pure impossibility that an outside enemy had invaded or a treasure had appeared in the world. This could only represent a single matter!

"Someone is breaking through!" He suddenly leapt off the bed without a second word and sent the paper crane towards the door. In a short time, he rushed onto the arena stage. "This is..." Just as he arrived outside, he was stunned, thoroughly dumbfounded.

# Chapter 31: Assailing the Middle Stage

---

In Heavens Law, everyone who was of the initial stage of Qi Condensation, be they a teacher or leader, were completely without hope to break through, so they had come to teach others and become educators. Although 99% of students had never witnessed what a cultivation breakthrough looked like, at this present moment, he knew.

It was legion. A myriad rays of qi that were milky-white in color faintly radiated a splendid brilliance that formed a maelstrom of spiritual light that was approximately twenty meters wide. It slowly spun in the sky above the arena. Like a moon deity sprinkling starlight filling the Milky Way, beneath the four mighty and simple characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens, it was like a dream or fantasy!

“Who is it... Who could it be!” He fiercely clenched his fist, looking before him incredulously.

He, Chu Zhaonan, could be considered a successor of his ancestors’ knowledge. Moreover, his name was considered one that could shake China. At the mention of China’s Chu Clan, a great majority of people in China would have to give face. As for him, he was the third-generation scion of the Chu Clan, a person of great background. In the past eight to nine years, to this day, there was still somewhat of a gap in distance from his qi sea flooding over. He hadn’t expected that one of his peers would surprisingly make a breakthrough on the day before the Qualifier in this contest for supremacy between lion kings!

Yes, Xu Yangyi had already been in seclusion for four days. He hadn’t sensed it, but in the real world, four days had hurriedly passed on by. At the center of the maelstrom of spiritual light like that of the stars, he appeared to be insignificant, so much that he felt powerless. This was because everything was not of his control.

Simultaneously, the consecutive bangs of eight stone doors opening rang out, and eight grim-faced youths appeared on the arena at nearly the same time. No one spoke. This scene was so beautiful that it made no one dare to breathe loudly. A camouflaged youth gritted his teeth: “Amazing... Truly amazing... Which city’s champion is this? They actually charged into the middle stage the day before the Qualifier!”

“Perhaps it isn’t a champion?” A girl looked at the ceaselessly revolving qi vortex in the sky with an impassioned gaze, clenching her teeth.

“Impossible!” This time, everyone spoke in unison.

They were all champions, and they all had their own pride! They didn’t fully understand their fellow students, but it was impossible that someone else was making a breakthrough here! It had to be a champion, it could only be a champion!

“It’s him...” Chu Zhaonan’s gaze past over everyone, and his heart ached terribly.

He had long ago anticipated it could possibly be Xu Yangyi. In kind, there wasn’t another reason, only a kind of premonition. But after he saw with his own two eyes that of the people that had come out that Xu Yangyi wasn’t one of them, and that the other’s stone door was still shut, a kind of feeling that could be called envy swiftly filled his entire heart.

Why? Why is it that I, Chu Zhaonan, cannot compare with him? Why was he able to bring his qi sea to the brink? Every month, I eat heavenly treasures and study arcane efforts that all who are present cannot learn. By what reasoning has he walked ahead of me?! I do not accept this!

“Who is it?” A champion asked.

“Scram...” Chu Zhaonan shut his eyes, feeling the waves of sharp pain in his heart and issued a lone word from throat.

“Hehe...” The other student let out two hollow chuckles, and just as his laughter fell, his entire being suddenly charged forth like an arrow let loose from its bow!

In the blink of an eye, he halted in place. This was because of the rune-covered silver pistol that had been drawn exactly level to his forehead. Not one second more, not one second less.

“Too weak...” Chu Zhaonan’s eyes went slightly red and he gritted his teeth, laughing: “Too weak... Too weak, too weak!”

“And you dare to call yourself a champion?!”

Bang! The butt of the gun immediately sent the champion spraying blood and flying back. “You’re nothing but trash in comparison to him.”

He used his crimson eyes to stare rigidly at the stone door. Suddenly, the maelstrom of qi in the sky moved. Like summertime fireflies hazy in their visibility, the entire maelstrom of qi charged towards the stone door neither urgently or slowly. As if the stone door didn’t exist, the qi rays weren’t halted in the slightest and charged inwards!

Swoosh... On the level above, in the Heavens Law branch office, the sound of a machine echoed through the air. Upon hearing this noise, everyone set down their work and astonishingly stared at the tremendous human face in the air as it slowly opened its eyes.

Countless zeroes and ones streamed through its green eyes. In the next second, a mechanical voice indecipherable between man or woman echoed out with the 1.5 hectare room.

“Abnormal qi fluctuations detected. A student has assailed a realm. Repeat, abnormal qi fluctuations have been detected. A student has assailed a realm...”

At this instance, everyone was stunned. A Qi Condensation student breaking through a minor boundary wasn’t a big fuss. However... Foundation Establishment in a century! Since it was

dared to be claimed as Foundation Establishment in a century, this was a average figure that the cultivation world had investigated! To be precise, it was 72.34 years!

In a great realm, there were three minor boundaries. Initial stage, middle stage, late stage, and the Great Circle was in fact only a title. It was the apex of the late stage. In other words... a single boundary was on average around 23 years!

“This... This came from below?!” A woman wearing glasses took her hand out from the pocket of her white coat and looked down beneath her feet in amazement: “A decade... Does that mean someone charged into the middle stage of Qi Condensation in a decade?!”

No one responded because how could this question that circled in all of their hearts be given voice to?! In the branch, there were two Foundation Establishment cultivators, the branch master and the deputy branch master. How could the other Qi Condensation cultivators not be aware of how long it took for them to break through to a minor boundary?

Ten years? Hehehe... Those that had broken through in twenty years could be grasped at here and there. Those that took thirty years constituted a dime a dozen!

If it wasn't on the account that cultivators could change the appearance of their age, the branch would've become a camp of grannies and grandpas long ago. But now, on the second level beneath their eyelids and feet, in one of the stone rooms of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, someone had surprisingly broken through a minor boundary in a decade!

“A genius...” the eyes of several old men that were arguing hotly flashed. They looked beneath their feet in excitement as if they could see through it: “A genius... second only to that genius Sunnihilator!”

“Sunnihilator broke through a boundary in five years!

Foundation Establishment in thirty! Now... there's actually a genius that broke through a boundary in a decade beneath our feet?!"

"Damn... Nantong Province has picked up a treasure this time!"

"It's not known which city's champion it is!"

"Why can't it be someone else?"

"Someone else? Hehe, can others accomplish what champions cannot?"

Within a lobby, Firecloud who was originally in the middle of holding a pair of small silver scissors and leisurely cutting a cuban cigar, suddenly stopped his hand. He shut his eyes somewhat suspicious, doubting whether or not his senses had made an error.

In the next second. Swish! Swish!

In a different room, the same sound of the two great Foundation Establishment cultivators, Sunnihilator and Shadowslay, stood up simultaneously without consultation, looking at the ground beneath their feet in pleasant surprise!

In the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, someone had broken through a boundary! Ten years... They had at most been treading the path of cultivation for ten years! And at this kind of moment, one had surprisingly broken through a boundary!

"This is truly... an unexpected joy!" Sunnihilator kneaded his cigar into smithereens. The smile on his face was so clear, as if he wanted his gaze to penetrate through the floorboard, staring unwaveringly beneath his feet.

On a building in the Triumphant Virtue Plaza, a silver nine-tailed fox that had shut its eyes to recuperate opened them up by a sliver and sniffed suspiciously: "It's somewhat familiar... Truly an aptitude that incites the envy of men..." For the first time, it stood up. Its haughty gaze of unparalleled arrogance carried a trace of extreme jealousy as it looked across at the public park. "Come on..."

those human dregs... will soon undergo their ceremony and enter the true world... So what if it's a genius... Hehe... Of the fallen geniuses, there are far, far too many..."

"The entrance passage to the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena has presently been closed off. I repeat, the entrance channel to the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena has presently been closed off..." Heavens Law's neutral voice was without sorrow or joy as it echoed through the entire room. There wasn't anyone that was in opposition.

However, at this moment, inside a large surveillance room, there were three people without the faintest of smiles on their faces.

"Number 1, Xu Yangyi." Deputy Branchmaster Qi's voice carried a hoarseness to it and his voice was extremely complex: "The probability of his success in breaking through to the middle stage of Qi Condensation..." He personally moved his hand to press down on the button without pause. After a long time, he turned his head back to gaze at the two people behind him: "80%"

Chu Tianyi and Fang Tansheng were sitting behind him. There wasn't anyone else. It appeared that it wasn't a matter of concern to them, their faces without consternation like an old, dried-up well.

"How long has it been?" Chu Tianyi questioned serenely, looking at the scene of the several hundred qi ray revolution rush through a stone door of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena on the monitor. The lighting concealed the wisp of madness hidden beneath his eyes.

"Ten minutes. After all, it is only the breakthrough of the initial stage of Qi Condensation." Deputy Branchmaster Qi sat down with an ashen face. He was somewhat regretting that even if this grade of aptitude was not equal to Sunnihilator, it was absolutely levels above the standard! One that if was set free, the Big Three wouldn't allow the other to have!

An army of a thousand was easy to raise, but it was difficult to find a good general! However... he was even more understanding from the start of several nights ago that he couldn't let this person seize the top ranking.

Such a cultivator would be better off dead later on. If he didn't die, and in case became a big shot, the matter this time would be a thoroughly planted seed. A trace of regret emerged within his heart for the first time.

Thud... As he was lost in thought, a cloth-wrapped bag was set down in front of him. Chu Tianyi pulled his hand back, his expression like always as he made an inviting gesture. Deputy Branchmaster Qi forced down the complicated thoughts in his mind, and just as he opened the bag to take a look, he coldly gasped!

On the inside, there was a stone, round as a sphere. The size of a fist and entirely transparent, it was a bit worn. However, it wasn't the same as an ordinary stone... Inside the stone, white qi had already condensed into a liquid, taking the form of a vortex revolving inside the stone! By merely holding it could the boundless qi accumulated within be felt!

"This supreme item..." In his heart, another wave came forth again before the first wave had yet to settle. He undeniably knew why this item had been taken out this time.

"Stop the connection of qi in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena." Chu Tianyi's face was covered in wrinkles and a wisp of iron-blooded ruthlessness flashed through his sagging eyes: "Although I don't know... how this insect's battle strength compares to Zhaonan after attaining the middle stage, this disparity ought to continue to exist for all eternity."

"Ordinary people cannot climb to the heavens, nor should they hold such an extravagant hope." His words were quite brief, but they contained a staunchness and killing intent that even made



Fang Tansheng secretly shift his body away. This murderous aura was too sharp, making him somewhat uneasy.

“If it is completely stymied, the Heavens Law’s avatar will sense it.” Deputy Branchmaster Qi practically hadn’t give it much thought and immediately put the spirit stone into his pocket.

“Then find a way that it won’t sense it!” Chu Tianyi stood up. As a person whose position had stood at the apex of China for the past several decades, his might erupted in a flash: “Old Qi, I demand it to be absolute! The item this time can only return to my Chu Clan!”

## Chapter 32: Assailing the Middle Stage (4)

---

Deputy Branchmaster Qi shut his eyes. In an instant, his heart had simply rose to the heavens and then sunk to the depths of hell.

To do? Or not to do?

Time was like a millstone, grinding down upon his conscience and heart. As one that had just recently become a Foundation Establishment cultivator, he didn't have many bargaining chips to refuse a genuine high official at the pinnacle of China's government. Especially with the supreme-grade spirit stone... In his pocket, it burned like a flame as one of the few things on his conscience.

A minute... two minutes... three minutes passed on by.

Four minutes... On the sixth minute, he suddenly opened his eyes and quickly stepped before the monitor. His face was heavy like water as he pressed down on a button.

Chu Tianyi sat down. He held a porcelain teacup in his right hand and slowly sipped it: "Good tea."

Inside his stone room, Xu Yangyi's entire state of mind was completely set above on his qi sea! He could clearly feel... the sharpness of qi and the gradual expansion of his qi sea as well as the subsequent strengthening of his body. Even if he couldn't feel it right now, it seemed like he could sense it. After his breakthrough, everything would be different!

The critical juncture had already arrived. The qi of heaven and earth had given rise to a kind of phenomenon known as "Qi pours into the body". He clearly understood that his "Qi Pours into the Body" would soon come to an end. As the power of his body became greater and greater, he suddenly sensed that he had touched upon a membrane.

An incorporeal membrane established in the surroundings of his

qi sea like a turned-over bowl. It seemed as if it had been permanently erected here in the past to this day, but he had just only recently discovered it. He knew that this was his “bodily limiter”. It was an obstacle that was hindering him from entering the next boundary! He would cleave through it in an explosion!

Presently, he held absolute faith! The entire world seemed to take shape and conform to him. He only needed to mobilize the endless origin of spiritual force to burst through this unseen barrier! That would be the moment he stepped into the next minor boundary! Only then would he dare to say that in this battle royale of the thirteen champions was he in the clear!

His spiritual sense condensed into the image of his person, and without the slightest hesitation, he roared with all of his strength, carrying a matchless excitement to pierce the heavens with a single blow! It was a move without name. It was only an instinctual strike, yet all of the essences of his vitality, spirit, and mind converged! At this moment, these three aspects were one!

Boom! A heavy sound echoed. A great ripple emerged in the sky, and the entire heavens and earth of his qi sea seemed to tremble. The tiny man that Xu Yangyi had condensed with his spiritual sense had a sudden change in complexion. At this stitch of time, he felt... that the spiritual force, the convergence of spiritual force from the outside world appeared to have suddenly weakened?

A hundred percent of his force had been expensed, yet as he struck the membrane, there was only sixty percent! He simply didn't possess the skill to discern whether or not it was an error of perception. Within his mind, there was only a single word.

Charge! Charge past this heavenly trench!

He clenched his fist, tucked his stomach, and twisted his waist. From head to toe, every single drop of spiritual sense had congealed in his fist. With the maximum execution of all of his strength, he brandished his fist once again! But at this split second,

in the twinkling moment just as he waved his fist... the world seemed to slow.

He pursed his lips firmly, and as if he was in slow motion, looked at his spiritual sense that had enclosed his qi. On his fist that rumbled forth, a white ray of light slowly drifted in, coming from whence it came, and returning to where it had come, carrying a smoky tail. With a whistling, it rushed back into the mirror that was his qi sea.

Subsequently, a second light, a third light... the flocking rays of light that had arrived before were now like a tide, frantically evacuating from his entire body like a torrent of mercury! Above his qi sea, the qi that he had condensed into a tiny person with his spiritual sense left him with every fiber of its being as if it had evaporated!

The pouring of qi into the body was the assistance of qi from the heavens and earth for new cultivators to break through the bodily limiter. This was because at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, one was utterly incapable of relying on themselves to shatter the bodily limiter. In a similar vein, he could not, as well.

In the outside world, Xu Yangyi's closed eyelids twitched, yet didn't open. He was unreconciled in his last-ditch attempt. Within his qi sea, his spirit avatar was like a sharp arrow. There simply wasn't more to say. It was a race against the second hand of the clock, and his fists rained down upon the membrane with a rumbling crash.

He pursed his lips rigidly, and he felt the abundant strength within his body swiftly dissipate. A tremendous feeling of hollowness appeared within his qi sea, and in order to force down this unsightly response, he bit down on his tongue without the least bit hesitation.

A trace of blood spilled over. Within his qi sea, his spirit avatar generated a heaven-shaking snarl. Drumming up a final breath, he

used the limit of his entire strength to attack the barrier! There was no shouting, only a stifled breath carrying a peerless hope and determination!

Boom... A heavy noise thundered. This time, very minor ripples slowly wafted in the “sky”.

A trace of supremely enduring pain flitted across the face of his spirit avatar. Someone had severed the connection between the heavens and earth in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena... Someone didn't want him to break through.

At this instance, his qi sea was without wind, yet it was pervaded by a torrential surge of tangible killing intent! Right before the door... He was right before it... only a step away! He would've entered the middle stage of Qi Condensation! However, while his [spirit was strong, his flesh was unwilling](#).

It was quiet, a calm of deathly stillness, as if the whistling of qi billowing from the misty qi sea beneath his feet could be heard. He shut his eyes, and his chest heaved up and down somewhat violently. Clenching his fist to the side of his mouth, his gaze was icy like glacial ice. Suddenly, he used a 120% of his strength to fiercely pound his qi sea!

There were no rolling tides nor were there jade currents given birth to. There was only the powerless qi that suddenly frenzied like an infinitely long serpent. He stood up in his billowing qi sea like a god of murder striding out from the tide.

In the outside world, there were no words, and he calmly opened his eyes. However, if an acquaintance of his at this moment, no, even if it was an acquaintance or not, they wouldn't dare to approach now.

His killing intent spilled out. A kind of serene depression came forth, but as it rushed forth for the first time, it was broken off as it was born. It was obvious his body telling him it was fine, yet the sense of being forcibly severed from the connection of the heavens

and earth made his eyes droop half-lidded, causing it to be unknown what he was thinking.

He calmly disengaged from his Innersight.

Half an hour passed, one hour went by, and he said nothing. Neither did he shout nor did he moreover destroy objects in a rage. Rather, he took out a cigarette, and after he lit it, inhaled. He dragged it puff by puff quite slowly as if he was enjoying it, yet he didn't blow the smoke out.

“Still too much, huh...” At the same time, Deputy Branchmaster Qi retracted his hand and softly sighed in relief: “The first assault on a minor boundary is the establishment of confidence. It can be said to be especially important to the psychological establishment of cultivators. Without a staunch heart, one is simply incapable of enduring the endless period of cultivation...”

“Ruined is ruined.” Chu Tianyi caressed his teacup lid and said insipidly: “China doesn't need that many, it's nothing more than a single man. However...” He swept his eyes over at Deputy Branchmaster Qi with a smile that wasn't a smile, carrying a somewhat mocking tinge: “Deputy Branchmaster Qi refused while taking action without further ado. It really does make me sigh in amazement...”

Deputy Branchmaster Qi reclined back in his chair, looking at the ceiling. It wasn't until after a long time did he laugh: “[To accept another's wealth is to aid them in vanquishing their misfortunes.](#)”

In the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, the endless disarray of qi had already come to a complete halt. It was like nothing had just occurred. Everyone outside the room looked at each other in dismay. They were entirely unsure how to explain the present situation.

They could feel qi as well; it was no different than breathing to cultivators. All of a sudden in the sky, it had become no more. Anyone could sense this. The qi was thin, or perhaps it wasn't as

robust as before when it was frequently seen. However, on the contrary, it had suddenly went scarce at such a critical moment... No, it had ceased to be. In their hearts, everyone clearly understood.

“Tsk...” A student shook his head: “Isn’t this person strange? Who graduated from the same branch as him? Who did he offend to bring this about?”

No one responded.

“He’s gone mad, right? He’s not even opening the door.” A short youth sneered, looking at the door. “Why? He scared? Embarrassed? We’re not going to poke fun at him, hehe... Isn’t this a failed breakthrough?”

Humans were odd like this. If the same matter happened to themselves, they would howl at the heavens and pound the earth in sorrow. If it happened to someone else, especially if it was a person that they deemed to be more outstanding than themselves in the past, they would hold mocking attitudes, far from placing themselves in the other’s shoes. In particular if the victim was not before them. Such was called following the herd.

Even if they were unaware of the Qualifier, they knew there would definitely be some other method of ranking. When had modern society ever went without rankings? Even in the award of achievements there were rankings. Let alone to say nothing of the cultivation world? They just truly didn’t expect that by way of true blades and real spears would they have to use their fist to dispute who was at the top.

The time before the ranking could be done made everyone scared of the consequences of a breakthrough failure because it would bring with it a loss of a tenth of qi. In the hearts of a great majority of people, this pleasure had come too late. How could they still have the time to care to understand Xu Yangyi’s thoughts? Who did he think he was?

The stone door didn't open again. It seemed Xu Yangyi was planning on locking himself on the inside.

"What a bother... Forget about it, I'm out. There's nothing good to see." A youth yawned and lazily left to go back to his room.

"I still want to see if he'll come out fuming in rage and kill his way to branch to get to the bottom of this. Afterwards, he'll be killed in a slap. How could he be so cowardly?" The short youth spat and shrugged his shoulders: "I'm done. Maybe it's Heavens Law's preinstalled mechanism? The Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena doesn't permit breaking through? Hehe!"

The crowd scattered one after another. Ten minutes later, only Chu Zhaonan was left. He crossed his arms across his chest, looking at the stone door coldly. Perhaps others believed Xu Yangyi would continue to be dispirited, but he didn't believe so by any means.

On the airplane, he had wanted Xu Yangyi to scam, but the other only laughed, setting his bag down and sending a kick coming without a second word. This was a man with extreme self-confidence against him. A person the same as him...

If he had run across such a matter, what would he have done? He would kill... but he absolutely wouldn't be dejected! These were the first three words that popped up in his mind. His gaze flickered, as if he had suddenly understood the other's intentions.

The other... It wasn't he dared not come out, but rather he was afraid he would release the feral beast within his heart. The arena... Perhaps it would be dyed red in blood!

"Is he placating the beast within his heart...?" Chu Zhaonan wasn't frightened. On the contrary, he licked his lips in excitement, his gaze like fire: "Yes... we're the same. It is obvious someone is targeting you. Are you waiting... until the time of the Qualifier?"



“That will be the time to fully unleash a true slaughter...” He grinded his teeth ferociously as if he had touched upon Xu Yangyi’s line of thought!

The other didn’t know who was targeting him. Since he was unaware, then he might as well kill each and every person! It couldn’t be a covert struggle... So, the other would wait... like a stalking lion, waiting after the next ten-odd hours. Then, he could legitimately and openly engage in an opportunity of wanton slaughter!

Targeted from the darkness? It was of no consequence.

No matter who it was, the person who was targeting him would definitely be on this arena! As long as both his fists endured to strike, he would beat his opponents to a bloody pulp, break them so that they would never dare to take such action for eternity! Pummel them that they would flee upon seeing him later! Shatter them into pieces that even if they one day attained Core Formation, they would remember the Qi Condensation Xu Yangyi.

That was an idea he clearly understood.

“Self-confidence must be unyielding like the strength of the Great Wall...” Chu Zhaonan clenched his fist mercilessly, making cracking noises: “So, I will be waiting for you to display your might!”

有心杀贼, 无力回天 - I translated this as his spirit was strong, but his flesh was unwilling. Literal meaning: He had the heart to kill the thief, but was powerless to overturn the situation. I think it works.

拿人钱财, 与人消灾罢了. This is the second time I have ever read this line in my translating stint. I think I did a better job translating it this time though. Meaning is to take another person’s money to do something, most often a shady affair.

# Chapter 33: Graduation Ceremony

---

Xu Yangyi was sleeping. During Qi Condensation, one still couldn't disregard food and sleep like in Foundation Establishment. He had to rest, as well. In his slumber, he fell into a deep sleep. On the morning of the next day, his cell phone summoned him to get up. It was the cell phone's preloaded alarm. He hadn't chosen any ringtone since it was rather troublesome.

He whistled as he finished washing up. He wouldn't whistle any other songs, even though during his execution of Sanshui City's graduation exam assignment, he had unconsciously saw an auntie dancing in a plaza and had learned Little Apple. Currently, this was what he was whistling.

He used his comb to brush his hair and took out a cigarette. He didn't leave to eat as well, taking several buns and milk from inside of a bag as his breakfast. Observing his actions, his mood seemed extremely well. However, if someone was in front of him, they would discover that his smile wasn't a cheery morning spiritedness, a brimming enthusiasm to tackle the dawn of the new day. Rather, it was a kind of indifferent, serene, blood-thirsty smile. It was the kind of smile that would leave others trembling in fear.

Yes, he was very understanding of his own standards. Chu Zhaonan hadn't guessed incorrectly yesterday. He was planning on fighting it out the entire journey!

Targeting me? You enjoy fevered affairs? A baseless rumor, words like the passing wind? It doesn't matter. I will make you forever remember this instance!

Since others were being unreasonable to him, then he didn't want to be sensible. He wouldn't stop searching until he found that person. Since they were scared of the lion, then they would clearly have to remember what a lion looked like!

Creak... The stone door slowly pulled open. A clamoring raucous suddenly burst in.

“Grandpa, it’s so spectacular here!” At the same time, a young girl wearing a T-shirt and jeans pulled on an old man with liver spots covering his face. He was wearing a pair of glasses, and his voice and expression were extremely hearty even though he was an old man. Carrying an excitement as he looked at the already roaring crowd of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, his eyes were nearly set aflame.

The characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens at the top made the people below appear just like ants and crickets. However, these ants and crickets on the contrary had a majesty that lined the arena. It was the kind grandeur like the flourishing of the sky and the boundless borders of open fields, making the crowds of people below even more insignificant.

It wasn’t the same as the past several days. Today, in the seating behind this gigantic arena, there were 121 immense stone steles erected!

They were covered in moss and there were some stone steles that even had cracks on them. However, each stone stele had a name written on it, like [hooking silver and streaking iron](#)! Among them, half had already turned black, yet the other half was bright red like blood.

The stone steles were five meters wide and fifteen meters tall. They were set off by the three-meter-tall names on them. Unexpectedly, they exhibited a kind of brilliant prestige. The stone steles were like [swords without edge, yet despite their clumsiness, they held an immaculate might](#).

“2348th graduation, paragon: “Yuyang City’s Song Ziwen.”

“2393rd graduation, paragon: Tianfeng City’s Zhao Chun.”

“2387th graduation, paragon: “Zhaoping City’s Wu Chunlai.”

“2412th graduation, paragon: Fengyi City’s Yu Ling’er.”

These words seemed to be sections of history, each stele to remind everyone where they were! The gigantic stone stele were like raised pillars supporting the heavens, silently standing tall beneath the four characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens. At this moment, there were already over ten thousand people seated in the arena stands before the stone steles!

A great majority were dressed in western-style clothing. Eighty percent of people had a computer placed on top of their knees, carrying an extremely expectant expression as they looked at the arena. It appeared to be a chaotic mess, but they were autonomously divided into small groups of several tens to over a hundred people. Everyone held a stack of resources in hand and were in the middle of softly talking with each other.

Although it was quite soft, the sound of over ten thousand people converged together. Already, it shaped a stream of people that immediately had their blood set ablaze as they entered the venue! Standing on the center of the stage, beneath the immense characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens, was what the crowd of ten thousand were truly focused on!

“What is this? A gravestone?” Sitting on the corner of a flight of steps, in a place where ten-odd people were assembled, it was evident that this was the first time a youth had come. His excited face was flushed red, and he excitedly pointed at the hundred-plus, ten-odd-meter-tall gigantic steles and said.

Before his voice had even fell, an old woman at his side immediately covered his mouth, so scared that her forehead was dotted with a cold sweat: “Grandson... What the heck are you saying?! These are all the previous paragons! In those graduation days, who wasn’t a heavenly-endowed hero? Only the names that are black are fallen seniors. Of those that are alive, half of them are at the very least Foundation Establishment seniors!”

Hearing the several words of Foundation Establishment senior, the youth jumped in fright and immediately shut his trap. It wasn't until a good while passed did he pull on the old woman's sleeve: "Grandma... Is that blank stele for the name of this year's paragon? So why are there are two? Can't there only be one paragon?"

The old woman looked at the two steles, her expression strikingly grave. She nodded and said softly: "Grandson... remember this well... One of the steles will certainly be carved with the name of this year's paragon. However, the other stele needs not to be engraved."

"Why?"

"Because that is Sunnihiliator's stele!"

These words were said with dignified honor and a decisiveness that could cleave through iron. At the same time, a heat radiated in her eyes like fire.

"Sunnihilator?! That Foundation-Establishment-in-thirty-years Sunnihilator? Is he from Nantong Province?" The youth gasped coldly upon hearing this name. A wisp of unrestrained zealotry climbed his face. Foundation Establishment, how difficult was it? Didn't China have 20,000 Foundation Establishment cultivators?

It was claimed Foundation Establishment in a century, but the average was seventy-somewhat years. Yet among this unbroken tranquility, there was a man from Nantong Province that had soared into the heavens! He had seized the paragonship and cut down the most talented, dashing through the entire journey. He left others to simply wait in his dust! Ultimately...

He attained Foundation Establishment at thirty years of age! His Foundation Establishment title was called Sunnihilator!

This stele, where Sunnihilator was to be engraved, didn't require a name. That was because it was thirty meters tall and eight meters

wide! It towered over all the other inscribed steles! It was as if it was a god disdaining the struggle of heroes.

The province's cultivators had flocked together to sit here. The inscribed steles were like a forest, as if they were a geniuses looking around. Behind everyone's backs, they was the heroes of the current era! However, Sunnihilator's inscribed stele was like a gigantic hand piercing the heavens! It completely eclipsed the splendor of the other inscribed steles!

With great effort, the youth pulled his line of sight away from nameless stele. His complexion was flushed and he asked: "Grandma, then who have we come to see?"

"What have we come to see?!" The old woman glared at him: "One one hand, it's to broaden your horizons and let you see what true cultivators are like. On the other hand, besides the Featherwood Guard, Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, CSIB, and Heavens Law in each province, outside of these four major powers, there are also the hundreds of cultivator clans. Our Yao Clan is one of them. Heavens Law graduation is the time when the seedlings converge to finally come out this year to be picked. Which clan team hasn't come? If this isn't the time to recruit people, when is?"

"But... how do you know who's awesome? The paragon, no, our Yao Clan can't even recruit the top thirty."

The old woman laughed and pointed at the inscribed steles: "Take a good look... There isn't only names on the front... What else is there?"

"There isn't only names on the front... What else is there?" On the other side, an old man wearing glasses was talking in kind with his granddaughter.

They were dressed in monotone western-style attire. On their chests, there was a simple, unadorned dragon claw crest. On top of it was the character Ding (丁), representing the cultivation clan

they belonged to. He was accompanied by approximately thirty men. All of their gazes looked forward. Not waiting for them respond, the old man said faintly: “Cracks”

“Although we have brought our own testing tools and computers, we need specific numbers. In general, these inscribed steles that have been maintained with the addition of Core Formation spiritual force must be relied on!”

“In case, whoever’s potential is above these inscribed steles, then, as the entirety of their strength erupts, they will completely crack all the steles of paragons they surpass! If they surpass it by too much, that stone stele...” He sucked in deeply: “Will collapse into ruin.”

“Will they be setup again later?” A young girl asked in shock.

“How could that be possible.” The old man laughed: “This is a place established by Core Formation masters! A year later after the graduation, without need of anyone to repair it, new steles will automatically be produced. It’s merely the cracks will remain. Isn’t that why they’re worthy of being Core Formation masters...? The Featherwood Guard and the others of the Big Three will have the data on these heroes. However, how could our little family have them? Right now, we’re here to find out at the very least who has more potential.”

“If...” The young girl looked at the tallest stele, Sunnihilator’s: “Someone can crack this stele, then...”

The stone stele was bright and clean without blemish. Like ivory jade, its entire body didn’t have a single trace of a crack. It wasn’t like some stone steles that were covered in spider-web fractures.

The old man laughed and stroked the young girl’s head: “Do you know... what boundary Sunnihilator is at now?”

The young girl shook her head.

“The Great Circle of Foundation Establishment.” A wisp of

burning envy surfaced on the old man's face, yet he carried an extreme agony in his voice: "He is only a step away from the door... to becoming a Core Formation master... The same as that old fox you saw at the Triumphant Virtue Plaza..."

"However, Vermilion Snow is over 270 years old... Sunnihilator... is only a 120 in age." He didn't continue to speak. The implication was already strikingly evident. How could there be a person who could surpass such a man?

The young girl gasped coldly. She pursed her lips and spoke no longer.

"Oh? Old Ding? You're not closed up in death seclusion? Didn't you say you wouldn't come out until you assailed Foundation Establishment, so why have you come out now?" At this time, a youth appearing to be twenty years old cupped his hands and laughed. He was simply without the impulses of a young twenty-year-old youth, but was rather serene like a lake.

On his chest, there was the crest of a petal. On top of it was the character Bai (白), awe-inspiring to the eye. Behind him, there was a squadron of fifty-odd people. It couldn't be called large, but in the same vein, it couldn't be said to be small.

"Foundation Establishment is without hope, hehe." Old Ding laughed and cupped his hands: "Little old decrepit me is already 92 years old this year. In approximately another five to six years, I'll probably be buried. Heavens Law graduation is a grand affair that happens once every five years and also a time for the Ding Family to seek some chances. We don't dare to think of the top twenty, but if someone in the thirties fancies the setting sun of our Ding Family, our journey would not have been in vain."

"Wouldn't it be better for us to sit down together?"

"Of course, please."

"Please."



As Xu Yangyi walked out, there was already a sum of over ten thousand people that were present. The sudden eruption of sound that followed as the stone door opened made his eyes slightly narrow.

“Door number ten, assemble his information.” In the wake of his emergence, quite a few people issued these words from the origin of the cacophony of the Unrivalled Beneath the Heavens Arena. It brought a surge of minor tides once again.

Here... Every student were potential prospects! It was here that prosperity gathered beneath the heavens. All had come for them. It was here that chaos grew beneath the heavens. All had stayed for them!

“Physical strength: A, Spiritual force: A, Speed: A, Reactions: A, Endurance...” A woman with a crest of a maggot on her chest with the character Li (李) on it immediately aimed the side of her computer webcam towards Xu Yangyi. In less than a second, his file appeared on the computer. She merely glanced at it and her eyes suddenly glimmered. Her voice hitched up by a degree: “Also A!”

“An A5 student!”

She instantly stood up in shock, facing behind her and forced down her excitement and said: “Ancestor... An A5 student! This person is an A5 student! Yuyang City’s branch gave a five division assessment of all As!”

There were twenty-odd people in her surroundings. All of them were dressed in western-style attire. Upon hearing these words, they felt their hearts palpitate and all of them looked behind.

“Shadow and investigate him!” Behind, there was an approximately ten-year-old boy. Originally, he was licking a lollipop, but once he heard these words, he promptly chewed down on the sweet with a crack. He said heavily with excitement: “The fluctuations within the A-level are extremely great! A fist strength

of a peak heavyweight boxer can achieve around 200 kilograms of force! 1600 kilograms of force is A. 2000 kilograms of force is also A! I want his data in detail!”

银钩铁划 - hooking silver and streaking iron. Apparently, these words were first used in a Jin Yong novel? It is meant to describe very flourishing, energetic calligraphy.

石碑无锋, 大巧不工 another Jin Yong reference I believe. I had a little trouble understanding this. From what I think it means, it refers to an idea of a sword that doesn't need a tip. Even if it looks like bad, it in itself contains a powerful essence in the hands of a master.

## Chapter 34: Jade Chest (1)

---

“Ancestor, an A5 student!” It wasn’t only limited to his discovery. Other people had found out, as well. After all, today’s main event wasn’t them. They were only extras. The true core of it was the students this year! Especially, the outstanding students!

“Investigate this data!” Behind, there was a woman that was seemingly only forty-somewhat years old. Her phoenix eyes startled: “The degree of sharpness of the reactive force of his qi and adaptive capability! In addition, immediately investigate the courses Heavens Law’s system should’ve had him study so far!”

Click clack click clack... The sound of keyboards converged into a single stream of noise. Everyone’s gazes was lively.

“In the past, Luo Sanfeng from Zhaoping City had three As and two Bs. Who is this person? Five As?”

“How high was his branch evaluation?”

“My god... This person is a candidate with the strength to vie over the paragonship!”

“Hehe, don’t forget the one from Tianfeng City. No one else has four As. Besides a slight gap in reactions, he’s got the qualifications to contest the championship, too!”

“Isn’t Fengyi City’s Xu Shushu also four As and a C? His branch evaluation is frighteningly high, as well!”

“The quality of this graduation is high... All of them are good seeds. I don’t know who will look favorably upon our Fengyi’s Zhang Clan.”

High above the stage, the cauldron of voices were different. Following Xu Yangyi’s emergence, three pairs of eyes were completely fixed on to him.

“So its you!” Lilac sucked in deeply. A gaze of desirous ambition

was exhibited in her eyes: “I especially applied for special privileges... Little brother, will you still run off this time?”

“An A5 student...” At her side, Hibiscus pursed her lips. Her gaze also revealed a wisp of burning ardor: “Even if we Qi Condensation cultivators are worth jack in the eyes of a single Foundation Establishment senior, as far as students as seedlings go, you’re already sufficiently outstanding to the organizations...”

“Excellent... to a degree that the Featherwood Guard branch mentioned you by name...” The two of them retracted their gaze, seamlessly clashing together and withdrew again like mild clouds and gentle winds.

In front of everything reflected in his eyes, Xu Yangyi was without the slightest waver. His body was garbed in camouflage as before, and he still wore his pair of military boots. He seemed to have restrained all of his aura as a killing god, peaceful like an ordinary person, slowly walking towards the arena stage. There were already a couple tens of silhouettes there. They were students of the same realm.

Everyone’s gazes converged onto his body. They were today’s sun. The focus of all cultivators.

He gently skipped, jumping atop the arena. He was the last. However, he didn’t fall into rank. Rather, he swept his vision past the first row of thirteen faces. It was them...

He had walked right in front of that door, yet he was forcibly pulled back... His initial charge, his first attempt, was all thanks to them. He simply disregarded everyone’s looks and swept his gaze at every single person, his eyes passing over like a knife.

At the corner of the viewing platform, there was a young woman with long hair fluttering in the breeze. She looked somewhat spellbound at Xu Yangyi. She couldn’t be considered an exceptional beauty. Her eyes were not large enough and her skin was not white enough. Her lips were not red enough and her figure

was insufficiently ample. However, there was a kind of temperament on her body that made it hard for people to ignore her. It was as if the sight of her could put people to peace.

Donned in a simple T-shirt and a short cowgirl skirt, there wasn't any difference between her and a trendy young girl on the street. Merely, what she wore wasn't to reveal herself. It was nothing but a thought of comfort. She dressed comfortably, and others could also see it was comfortable.

“Don't think it... Little Bell” At her side, a forty-odd-year-old man patted her shoulder and sighed: “Although we are alchemists, the Zhou Clan is an old alchemy family of two centuries of inheritances. However... ever since China was connected to the internet, our business has been wasting away day by day. The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion comprises 90% of alchemists, but right now, there aren't even ten people in our entire family. Even major mortal corporations are unwilling to partner with us. Such an A5 student...”

He took a long sigh and shook his head: “Isn't something our Zhou Clan can hold wild expectations towards. I bet the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, Featherwood Guard, CSIB, and China's cultivation big fish have scooped this person up way before hand...”

“I know.” Little Bell's voice was like her namesake, pacifying and leisurely. She said softly: “I... It's just that I'm fairly sharp when it comes to people's temperaments. I keep on feeling... this person is terrifying...”

“Of course, he's terrifying.” The man exclaimed: “He's an A5 student. Our Zhou Clan's greatest talent is the initial stage of Qi Condensation. I'm afraid your uncle isn't even his opponent...”

“That's not what I'm saying.” Little Bell shook her head, unable to restrain her trembling: “He is truly... terrifying... He's just like an oppressive demon...”

Xu Yangyi stood in front of all the champions and circled his gaze around, not saying anything. Silently, he walked towards his own position. A good few pitying looks were sent his way. Yesterday, all of them had come out, yet they hadn't seen him. Everyone knew who it was that had failed to break through. It was merely that this pity carried a schadenfreude to it.

Becoming strong wasn't limited to only oneself becoming strong. It was in others' weaknesses could one also project their own strength.

"Retard." A pockmarked youth blowing bubble gum popped his bubble and rolled his tongue up to swallow it back into his mouth: "Who you makin' that fuckin' face for?"

"Are you still not giving him a fuckin' break when he failed to break through?" The youth at his side laughed, delighting in the misfortune.

At this moment, the entire arena stage suddenly went quiet. It wasn't that none of them were speaking, but rather as they all talked, their voices faded away. It was like god had "taken away" sound in a twinkling moment.

Just as everyone was chatting, they immediately realized something was amiss, yet they weren't alarmed. On the contrary, all of them shut their mouths, seemingly awaiting something. At this instant, there wasn't a sound that could be heard. It was like calm before the storm, a frightening stillness.

Swish... In the next second, a palm-sized little firebird flew out from an unknown place. It wobbled back and forth. In comparison to the massive arena stage, it was nearly small enough to be ignored. However, to the cultivators exceptionally sensitive to qi, over ten thousand fervent gazes cast themselves on the body of the little bird.

"Big sis, this is..." At a corner, a young boy looked towards a woman at his side and asked.

The woman glared fiercely at him, making an expression to shut up. Afterwards, she rigidly fixed her eyes on the little bird. None had discovered that both her hands were clenched tightly. An abnormal flush graced her face, as if she was eagerly awaiting her favorite superstar.

In a split second, the little bird divided from one into two, from two into three, and from three it split into a countless number of birds! In a flash, they spread over the heavens and covered the earth! They formed a maelstrom of firebirds no less than thirty-plus meters in length! It attracted the eyes of the entire audience!

Boom! The temperature of the scene suddenly raised. Thousands upon thousands... an endless flight of firebirds dyed everyone's eyes red and ignited their passions. Suddenly, a screech abruptly broke out!

"Foundation Establishment... This is a Foundation Establishment senior! This is a Foundation Establishment senior!"

It was unknown when the silence was broken. Altogether it was because of the hysterical, excited, increasingly ear-piercing, and wildly joyous shrieks that suddenly exploded in the entire arena!

"Foundation Establishment! This can only be the might and skill of Foundation Establishment"

"A Foundation Establishment senior has actually come this year to attend the ceremony?!"

"Heavens... This is the first time these old bones have seen a Foundation Establishment cultivator! Which Foundation Establishment senior is it!"

The rampant chorus of discussion and the excited cries of alarm seemed like a high-rising tide of human voices! However, everything suddenly went calm in the next second. It was an orderly peace.

Ordinarily, a Foundation Establishment cultivator was hard to

catch a glimpse of. Far too many cultivators had died without ever seeing what a Foundation Establishment cultivator looked like. The current feeling in the air was one that a great majority of people didn't even dare to breathe in. The only looked forward with great expectation and admiration, locking their eyes on the madly revolving vortex of firebirds.

Xu Yangyi looked forward, as well. Was this the might of Foundation Establishment?

This wasn't the first time he had felt this. In that fleeting moment, Vermilion Snow had made him and the others feel like they were on the edge of death. He was simply powerless to resist, yet as he felt this for the second time, it was crisp without disorder. The spiritual force of the firebird vortex was enough for him to suffocate on and make his heart skip a beat.

Strong... Too strong! This was a cultivator! One that had arrived at such a stage was a true superhuman! Strength... He tightly clenched his fist. The recognition of strength had once again took hold of his heart.

Swooshh... The vortex of firebirds spun with all of their might and transformed into a blazing current three seconds later. Suddenly, they charged towards the grandstand! A scorching wave of heat made everyone outside the channel feel like their hair had singed. Screaming and screeching, the current charged into the centermost seating.

In that area, there were two special seats. The viewing platform was different from the stone bleachers that everyone else sat on, rather it was home to two specialized and beautiful thrones that were approximately two meters high!

The base was crafted from pure gold and the cushioning was made from a demon skin that Xu Yangyi had simply never seen. It seemed similar to a crown made for a king. At the side of the throne, there were ten-odd men dressed in black and wearing



sunglasses, standing with their hands lowered.

Swoosh... The vortex of firebirds descended over one of the thrones. Afterwards, a sound like thunder rang out, a tremendous echoing without boundary, a vast, intangible reverberation. It was distant yet nearly in touching distance, close but like it had stretched all the way to the heaven's horizon.

“Lord Firecloud.”

As the firebirds gradually faded away, a rather plump middle-aged man dressed in an expensive western suit had already pulled himself over to the two thrones. At this very instant, Lilac, Hibiscus, and Vulture who were at the front row rose in unison and bowed to the floor without the slightest hesitation!

Firecloud's gaze contained the tides of great vicissitudes as if he could see through human emotion. It was obvious he appeared to be at most fifty to sixty years of age, yet he gave off a feeling like he was wise beyond his years. At the same time, the surrounding qi faintly trembled. The fiery wave moments ago had sent the erupting air into unrest.

Stirring the nine heavens above, silence descended, even though it was only an elderly man dressed in a suit. Not one person spoke. There were only the burning gazes of over ten thousand men, women, and children that had reached a feverish pitch.

“Sit.” He gently waved his hands and sat down without regard for everyone else. Everyone present glanced at each other, one by one, looking at the worshipping, admiring, and stunned gazes that filled their counterparts' eyes. Nearly everyone pursed their lips as they sat down. Even the faces of some mortals from the clans had become nearly gorged in blood, shivering as they could only continue to kneel.

How was this miraculous power any different from that of an immortal?

However, even if their shivering was fierce, they firmly gritted their teeth. Hearing the excited chattering of their teeth, they didn't dare speak a word. They calmly sat down as if a teacher was yelling at them in class.

“Old Fellow Shadowsly.” At the same time, a voice could be heard from the other throne. Everyone had discovered that there was also a middle-aged man. As for when he had already sat down, it was a mystery to all. The introductions of both men had been abnormally brief. They spoke loftily like snow and sat as if all matters were nothing but whims.

“That's a fucking cultivator! Behind Xu Yangyi, a student's excited voice whose breathing had went ragged experienced a fair change in tone: “A single word decreed as law beneath the heavens! THIS is a cultivator. This is a motherfuckin' cultivator.

“If I can be like that, it would be worth dying!” The sound of another student cracking their fist was so loud that even Xu Yangyi heard it.

“Over ten thousand people... Several tens of clan representatives... and their mortal entourages. A single word to make them all stand. A single word to make them all sit. The so-called wielding of heaven's authority and the [intoxication of beauties at their knees](#) cannot be more than this!”

In kind, Xu Yangyi was stirred to his core. Similarly, he was excited, and in the same vein, he was expectant. However, he had already buried these feelings within his heart. From the corner of his mouth, he only revealed a shred of his blood-thirsty smile.

Soon, it would begin...

The beast in his heart couldn't wait to roar any longer...

醒掌天下权, 醉卧美人膝 - Chinese idiom. I think I did an okay job doing this translation. This is apparently an idea behind how one should live. Think, a monster in business and a monster in bed.

Supposed to be a dichotomy of one's prowess in professional capacity and romance.

## Chapter 35: Jade Chest (2)

---

“Today is a joyous day for the cultivation world.” Firecloud was presiding over the ceremony. His gaze concealed a trace of supreme arrogance, one with a shred of haughtiness and detachment. He spoke softly even though his voice seemed to echo at the side of everyone’s ears: “In the cultivation world, time is exceptionally precious. I wish not to delay the time in everyone’s lives, thus, all proceedings shall be carried out without complication.”

“According to regulation, the ceremony is divided into three stages. The Qualifier, the Test of Potential, and the Signing Ceremony.” His voice not yet fallen, Shadowslay’s voice rang out like a well-practiced rehearsal: “After a quarter of an hour, the Qualifier will officially begin. If you are knocked off the stage, take the initiative to concede defeat and bear the lost in every case. Do any of our guests have objections to this?”

No one said anything. No one dared to say anything.

The over ten thousand people in the venue were dead silent. However, a ray of brilliance flashed in harmony at the back of the eyes of the sixty students of Nantong Province’s graduation who were the focus of the multitudes of crowds.

They hadn’t heard about the Qualifier before, but it was a name that couldn’t be even more straight forward. As long as they put on their thinking caps, they could imagine why it was called that. Likewise, they were without a trace of dissent.

Thirteen champions, any one of them would be unwilling to submit beneath another! At their branches, they were already first in their class. Here, they were looking forward to ascending to the apex under the focus of ten thousand people even more!

No one answered him. Approximately ten seconds later, Shadowslay nodded in satisfaction: “That’s good... All of the

students have been boarding at the branch for a long period of time, so they are probably unaware of the Qualifier's origin. It's a practice that Heavens Law holds once every five years."

"Cultivators don't only struggle against the heavens and the world in their fight for their destinies, but more so against their fellow man." Firecloud said calmly like a monarch overlooking the myriad masses: "Of all who have tread out of Heavens Law and entered the cultivation world afterwards, everyone is both a comrade-in-arms, but also a rival. In the struggle of ten thousand, only a single man alone can cut across. This is the true nature of cultivation."

"If demons are in your path, behead them. If humans impede your way, subdue them. If the heavens obstruct you, destroy it. One can only press on forwards until they reach the other shore of Core Formation."

"Tell me." He laughed, looking towards the youths whose blood had been stirred to a boil by his words and chuckled: "Do all of you have this self-confidence?"

"Yes!"

Regardless of whether they were a student or not, all the young people in the venue nearly roared altogether, their voices shaking the entire arena!

"Very good." Firecloud waved his hand, and in the next second, an ornate jade chest approximately fifty centimeters in length and ten centimeters in width suddenly appeared before him and Shadowsly.

The chest was crafted from a faint azure jade, and its whole body was without the slightest of flaws. If such a beautiful jade was placed in the world, there was no doubt it would fetch a high price at auction by some jade enthusiast. But presently, it was nothing more than a magnificent stage piece.

Absent of flaws, it was like an entire piece of naturally formed jade. In spite of this, there wasn't a person who could ignore that in the second this chest was revealed, it left an impression that nearly stopped the beating of their hearts!

Core Formation spiritual pressure!

It was like an ocean tide or drifting clouds. Though it was silent in its coming, it spread over every nook and cranny of the entire Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena!

It was different from Foundation Establishment... If it was said Foundation Establishment was the external exercise of spiritual force with attacks like a fire god burning the heavens and a peace like autumn wind in a bamboo forest, then Core Formation was a kind of true terror and awesome might. Nothing needed to be said and nothing needed to be done. It was a type of reticence like the might of the sea, enough to make not a single person present dare to look directly at the chest.

“Every Qualifier, there is a grand gift from a Core Formation master. This is this graduation's prize...” Among the over ten thousand people, an aged, wizened hand was trembling in excitement: “Old me has attended the graduation countless of times, and every prize from a Core Formation master that is taken out has always made me shake incessantly...”

“Grandma... Y-you said this pressure is the might of a Core Formation cultivator?” On the other side, a young boy excitedly lowered his voice and said: “What's inside the chest is really a...”

“Of course, it's an excellent item granted by a Core Formation cultivator!” The grandma was even more excited than her grandson, both her eyes fairly reddened: “I don't know what it is this time... but each one on every occasion has been a genuine treasure that people simply find hard to imagine!”

“Are you sure?” On the other side of the venue, Deputy Branchmaster Qi looked greedily at the chest, tightly pursing his

lips: “Are you sure it is that item?”

“A hundred percent.” Chu Tianyi’s voice carried a sliver of stifling hoarseness, and he sucked in deeply, locking his eyes onto the chest: “Besides myself, no one here knows. They were actually willing to part with that item...”

Firecloud sat in front of the chest, his expression seemingly placid, yet he and Shadowslay were already revolving their spiritual force to their utmost limit! This was the only method they could use to endure without recoiling backwards by several tens of feet.

This wasn’t their first time doing so...

This chest had passed through Heavens Law headquarters to be placed before him. The initial exposure had long passed. However, every time he looked at it, he felt that the prize this time... was a treasure of extremely terrifying proportions! This was a treasure that even the Fortuity Profound Elixir couldn’t compare to!

They had previously studied it. The box was covered in carvings of invisible seals. It was unknown which Core Formation master has left them, but as long as one wanted to forcibly open it, the resulting spiritual attack would be an injury grievous enough to force them to recuperate for several decades!

Thus, even they didn’t desire that which was contained inside! They could only sense... a boundless aura like mist within. So, while they did not know what the object was, it gave people the most primal hungering for it!

“What on earth is inside?” Firecloud forced down the shock of his heart, his Adam’s apple faintly bobbing. He wiped his right hand over the jade chest, and it vanished without a trace.

“Ahhh...” In the arena, countless soft voices converged together into a stream of sound. Even Foundation Establishment cultivators had to repress their desire to stay far away from the tiny box.

Whether they were separated by a distance of several hundred meters or not, they still felt the uneasiness of their breathing.

“This is this year’s prize.” Firecloud secretly sighed in relief. If he could, he would be unwilling to so much as face this kind of unknown oppressive might: “It’s a bit different from the prizes of the previous years. I wasn’t told which Core Formation master bestowed it and what this object is, as well.”

“There is only a single aspect that is the same as usual.” He stood up and cast his gaze over the sixty people on the arena and said loudly with each word enunciated: “The paragon of the Qualifier shall obtain this treasure.”

His voice couldn’t be considered loud, yet in the eyes of the sixty students it was like pouring oil on a fire! The Qualifier didn’t need to be explained. They were clear on what its meaning was. No one opposed it. Especially, the thirteen champions. None of them would admit another was stronger than themselves. However... this was only their thoughts from moments ago.

If said before, then they still only had an unconscious intuition regarding the Qualifier, but after Firecloud had informed them of the prize the champion would come to possess, the look in everyone’s eyes changed.

It was a reverence from the quiet silence of moments ago brought by the treasure of a Core Formation master that seemed to immerse every single pore and each individual cell in the midst of a sea of oppressive might. In a flicker, this emotion caused their competitive spirits to reach their peaks! They would drag themselves up to the summit!

What was inside? A mystic medicine? A treasure weapon? Or perhaps... a supreme-grade spirit stone?

No one knew, but because of this anonymity, it gave the astonishing mysterious chest an even more mysterious aura! No matter what it was, it could be nothing else than a chance that was



hard to come by even once in a century! A cultivator's opportunity to arrive at the world's pinnacle! The initial step that would allow them to shake their wings and ascend the skies!

“Senior, is the Qualifier the ranking method for us graduating students? To determine the number one?” Because he had been overcome by stimulation and anticipation, a student's voice was evidently somewhat hoarse as he cupped his fists and asked: “Could junior understand it as ranking based on battle, and the last one standing will be one who is qualified to obtain this treasure?”

“Correct.” Shadowslay answered serenely. None had seen that up until he had stowed the chest away did his tightened fists at last slowly loosen up.

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. All that Chu Zhaonan had spoke of was true. Even if his spiritual force had experienced a fall, and even if his breakthrough was unsuccessful, in spite of all of this... he wouldn't relinquish this unknown treasure to any other!

Gently sighing in relaxation, he began to revolve his entire body's spiritual force, and a kind of feeling akin to a fierce tiger leaving confinement spread through his heart, while a blood-thirsty urge madly overtook his entire being.

“A lion must be imperious...” His gaze silently flitted across the faces of all of the rank ones, and he lowered his eyes once more: “Whoever plotted against me... It is of no consequence. I will question them each one by one...”

“Champions will place against champions, and the others will rank against each other.” Firecloud laughed: “Time waits for no man; we shall begin posthaste.”

These words finally liberated the soundless fanaticism everyone had held. Each cultivation clans' mortals fixed their eyes on their computers unwaveringly. Their fingers placed atop familiar keys, they were prepared to carry out investigations at a moment's notice. As for the clan heads, their eyes were already twinkling as

they looked towards the center of the arena stage!

In the front row, Lilac, Hibiscus, and Vulture took a long sigh in relief. Lilac sipped at her tea, and the three of them stared steadfastly at the stage. On the other side, Chu Tianyi's expression was calm and his eyes half-lidded, but the mere snowy pallor of his face was like that of a napkin. On his chest, a ray of indistinct yellow light flickered luminously, but his face was without the most minute of changes.

“Are things fine?” Deputy Branchmaster Qi furrowed his brows and questioned: “I’m afraid even if it’s a mere sliver of the oppressing might of Core Formation... it’s not something a mortal can endure.”

“Those are ordinary mortals.” Chu Tianyi was silent for a couple seconds. After a long while, he closed his eyes and instructed the two Qi Condensation cultivators he had brought with him: “Ding Guang, Ding Yuan, you know what to do.”

The two Qi Condensation cultivators slightly bowed at the waist, their gazes involuntarily hovering over their rings.

“This item... If it is not the Chu’s, then it cannot belong to any other clan.”

Calm descended on the venue like the eve of tempest winds gracing the ocean surface. Shadowslay lightly snapped his fingers, and with the echo of a crisp swish, thirteen white misty orbs of qi suddenly appeared before him. He casually grasped two of them and gently pinched them apart.

In seconds, the misty qi within wound about like the frenzy of myriad white serpents! Left and right, they formed two names on each side in the middle of the air!

On the left-hand side, Zhaoping City’s champion, Luo Sanfeng!

On the right-hand side, Yuyang City’s champion, Xu Yangyi!

“The two of you step out.”

Shh... Simultaneously, a wisp of blood-thirsty radiance flashed through Xu Yangyi's eyes. His fist cracked as he clenched it, and as he exerted pressure on his legs, the feeling of his ligaments were wonderfully superb. With the support of his hand, he leapt onto the arena stage that was no less than two meters tall.

Beneath his feet, tiles of limestone began to stretch onwards. On the other side, a youth approximately 1.78 meters in height jumped on top of the arena stage at nearly the same moment.

There wasn't a need for too much of an explanation. None questioned why the Qualifier had to be conducted, as well. The chest was the best explanation. In the absence of a full moon night or the high walls of the forbidden city, there was only a solitary immortal soaring beyond the boundaries of the heavens!

The clan masters of several tens of cultivation families were already up on their feet, their gazes inflamed. Some were young and some were old. Some were ugly men and some were beautiful women. Some gripped the handrails tightly and some tilted their bodies forward with rapt attention. The entire arena was so silent that not even the buzzing of insects could be heard as they looked at these two.

The first lineup... was an A5 student versus an A3 student!

# Chapter 36: Battle Royale (1)

---

Ding... The melodious chime of a bell could be heard from some unknown place. Firecloud and Shadowslay slightly nodded.

“It’s happening, it’s starting!” A youth excitedly leaned his body forwards as far as physically possible, his breathing rushed: “The first lineup is a clash between two A4 students! This is gonna be frickin’ awesome!”

“Heh, I bet the outcome will be decided in half an hour!”

“I bet a low-grade spirit stone! It’s going to be finished in forty!”

“Hehe, I bet Luo Sanfeng is going to be the victor!”

“It’s obvious the A5 has the upper hand! What’re you thinking!”

“Brother, are you still unaware? Xu Yangyi failed to break through yesterday; you still cheering for him?”

Animated discussion flowed between all the spectators. With their attention focused on the gigantic arena, the two human bodies were the size of ants.

“Aren’t you that wise guy that tried to break through?” Luo Sanfeng laughed coldly: “You’re luck really blows, huh... Who knew there would be something like the Qualifier. However... you ain’t got a ghost of a chance at that treasure.”

Xu Yangyi cracked his knuckles and glanced at him expressionlessly. In the next second, his figure could be seen no longer!

Just as Luo Sanfeng was in the middle of completing his sentence, he had no chance to wrap up his closing remarks as his words transformed into a cold gasp! Originally, the two of them would’ve spent some time exchanging stirring banter leading to a precipitous build up! The entire stadium had heard him say the last bit of his final declaration!

His opponent was fast! His opponent was very fast!

Xu Yangyi had no intention of sparing time for superfluous drivel! Following the nods of Firecloud and Shadowsday, his entire being had left with a swoosh, the only thing remaining where he had originally stood was a cloud of dust. His silhouette was akin to a tiger leaving its cage, and he darted towards Luo Sanfeng like arcing electricity!

“What speed!” A cry of alarm rang out from the myriad masses in the audience stands. An old man with white hair and a rosy complexion suddenly stood up at his seat, his hands clasped around his teacup and mouth hanging widely as he looked at the scene on the arena stage in shock!

“This speed...” A boy around ten years old wearing children’s clothing gripped the handrail firmly, yet as he sat back down gripping his seat rigidly, his protruding veins betrayed his agitation.

Chu Zhaonan’s eyes suddenly flashed, and he subconsciously stroked the gun at his waist. Ultimately though, he ceased to continue touching it. He sucked in deeply and licked his lips in excitement: “I know... I fucking know... you’re quite fearsome... A fearsomeness that surpasses my imagination...”

“But you’re still not my opponent!”

No one had expected the first match-up would be an A5 student versus a A3 student. They had guessed it would possibly be a conflict on the proportions of heavenly thunder and earthly flames, but by no means had they expected the heavenly thunder would be so fast!

Everyone present had believed at the onset that after the two Foundation Establishment seniors gave an indication to begin, the two would still want to probe each other out. They hadn’t expected that the first thing to come would be the light of sabers and the shadow of swords! Although they still hadn’t changed their

mentalities, the situation on stage had already transformed!

No one spoke, everyone was watching the scene on stage in shock! Perhaps there were some that were still of mind to gamble moments ago, but after observing this speed, they acted as if they were pricked and suddenly drawn up! If it was said that Luo Sanfeng was still a bit taunting before, his entire face at the present had already become smeared in the color of caution!

What speed... What terrifying swiftness! This couldn't be the goddamn speed of Qi Condensation! Where was he?

All he could truly capture with his eyes was an indistinct silhouette! Was this the Light Speed Fist of the Golden Saints? Was Xu Yangyi going to attack him from the left? The right? His chest? His stomach?

In his sudden shock, a vast assortment of ideas frantically coursed through his brain. In a flash, his eyes saucered to the extreme! A half a second, it had only been a half second, but the sweat on his forehead cascaded down like rain! Half a second later, he was certain!

His opponent... was coming in hot like a bull! A full-frontal, head-on collision! It was a direct contest of spiritual force!

"Fuck you!" He suddenly snarled and crossed both his arms, his body in a half-squatted position and he bellowed: "Solution Ninety-Eight... Tortoise Burdens!"

Rays of milky-white qi instantly flooded in from his surroundings to his arms. In the next second, a hazy tortoise shell appeared in front of him like an illusion.

Of Heavens Law's Hundred Solutions, there weren't many that a student could learn. However, with their paltry amount of qi before they graduated, they were able to make use of the final ten solutions at best. Tortoise Burdens happened to be among one of the sole moves that could be used in a defensive style. Nonetheless,

it could only be used to guard against frontal assaults.

Xu Yangyi charged forward at top speed, murderous will filling the expanse of his heart! He had arrived in front of that door. A painstaking process of ten-odd years and he had been ruthlessly pulled away by someone on his first breakthrough.

He didn't say a word, but this didn't represent he wasn't going to take action!

Fear? What was there to be afraid of? The strong had never cared to make others fearful! The strong had always forced reverence from others!

Since you're scared... then display your sincerity before me! Or... just be even more frightened!

At this instant, his speed had already exploded to his utmost limit! At the side of his ears, he could even hear the roaring of the wind! Luo Sanfeng hadn't chosen to attack because he had felt Xu Yangyi's speed surpassed his wildest imagination, so he had withdrawn his entire body in defense!

A shred of a cold sneer played at the crook of Xu Yangyi's mouth, and he ruthlessly grinded his teeth. With a tremendous charging force at a mach-like speed, he condensed a majority of the force into his right foot, which was followed by an ear-piercing swish that resulted in a thundering echo that reverberated through the entire arena! His foot was followed by a gale as he kicked forward!

Shattered rock bloomed outwards in flight! As he streaked across the ground... his qi caused his combat boots to carve a half-a-foot trench in his rampage!

At this moment, Chu Tianyi's opened eyes looked at the two people on stage frigidly.

At this moment, no cultivator said a word, watching Xu Yangyi charge forth with tremendous momentum and looking at Luo Sanfeng who was on a complete defense.

At this moment, Firecloud's and Shadowslay's eyes narrowed.

At this moment, Lilac, Vulture, and Hibiscus tightly wrapped their hands around the handrails. Not many knew people knew of Xu Yangyi's graduation grade... but they knew! It was because they knew that they summoned their attention to him!

It was a kick without the least bit sophistication, a clash of power absent of the slightest style. Would the spear pierce through the shield, or would the shield resist the spear?

Boom! A sound that seemed like it could make the heart tremble echoed through the entire arena. The wind came to a halt and the people froze.

The whistling of the wind moments ago that soon made the hearts of the people take flight ceased to scream. Xu Yangyi's right leg had already made complete impact against Luo Sanfeng's tortoise shell! Time seemed to stop at this instance!

What would be the conclusion?

Before this thought had even turned over within everyone's hearts, a blood-curdling wail like that of the muffled sound of striking leather followed in the next second. Luo Sanfeng's body was sent flying back in a straight line!

"Aaarrghhhh!!!" A mournful shriek was issued from his mouth as he was sent flying back! It was a result of being kicked and soaring away at a head-spinning speed, which lead to his discontinuous shouting in the wind! His entire person was as if he had been forged into a shooting star! With a tremendous bang, he suddenly slammed into the front-facing stone wall of the rear audience seats!

Crash! No less than ten meters in diameter of limestone appeared to have been struck by an artillery shell. At the heart of the impact, it had completely caved inwards! In a flash, spider web-like cracks covered the full ten-meter expanse.

"Puh!" Luo Sanfeng's face was covered in shock, but before he



could even finish cooling his nerves, he couldn't restrain the mouthful of blood that sprayed out between his lips! It wasn't only the limestone that had cracked... but also everyone's bloodshot eyes that seemed to be covered in spider webs! The entire venue had become deathly silent!

In that space of time, Firecloud's and Shadowslay's gazes suddenly flashed. Firecloud immediately raised his hand: "Yuyang City, Xu Yangyi wins."

The scenery was grimly muted, still dreadfully quiet.

Lilac's gaze had just been lit aflame moments ago, but had taken a sudden turn for extreme solemnness. Lotus and Vulture were also like this. Moreover... the three of them, late-stage Qi Condensation cultivators... had already stood up!

It wasn't only them. Wordlessly, there were quite a few people that had stood up with their mouths hanging ajar. There was an old man entering his golden years and there was a woman in the prime of her youth. There was a middle-aged man who was turning over two walnuts in his hand, yet had already forgotten about them. There was a boy with a lollipop hanging suspended out from the corner of his mouth...

Each one of them looked at the gigantic limestone depression like they had seen a ghost, and Luo Sanfeng who was dribbling blood in the middle of it and powerless to even budge.

What... had just happened? A kick? A mere kick?! The opponent was also a 3A student! In a similar vein, his branch evaluations were high! But the result had been delivered with only a single kick?

The long-awaited clash between the flaming star and the earth had resulted in the flaming star battering the earth. However, the earth had been disposed of with only a single kick? A defensive art had been utilised, but it had still been done in with a kick?

“Good heavens...” A middle-aged man of the middle stage of Qi Condensation, tremblingly grabbed onto his pulse in hand: “T-t-this was ten seconds, right... N-n-no... Five seconds? Three seconds? H-how is this possible? The opponent is a 3A student!”

“The power of this kick... is actually this strong!” On the other side, an initial-stage Qi Condensation woman with sweat pouring profusely from her head looked flabbergasted at the stone tiles. In her mind, she pondered it countless of times, yet she discovered... she wouldn’t even be able to accept 50% of the kick’s force! “Is the disparity between initial stages... really this great?”

This was a question she dared not to ask, but moreover one that she dared not answer.

In that stitch of time, Chu Tianyi who had originally been sitting calmly, had drawn himself straight, locking his eyes dead-on at Xu Yangyi! A 3A student... wasted with a single kick! Such a direct exchange of styles, such a impossible transformation of methods, had actually unfolded beneath his eyelids!

Fang Tansheng who was at his side had soundlessly stood up like many other people at this moment. Heavens Law was unlike that of the cultivation clans, possessing many training methods and resources aplenty, as to so far that even many clan cultivators were carried off to Heavens Law for training. Of every city’s rank one, which one wasn’t an elite among elites?

But... could the worth of an elite actually be so simple? Coarse and barbaric, a lone force to shatter through myriad methods!

Chu Zhaonan sucked in deeply. His right hand stroked his gun for the first time. “You are truly... truly... deserving of me using it. Right now, I’m really aching to find out. Between my bullets and your body, which one is faster? Which one is stronger?”

However, the most astonished wasn’t them. The expressions of the remaining twelve champions at this moment besides Chu Zhaonan were incomparably complex!

They all had a rough understanding of everyone's data. All of them were champions. Although Xu Yangyi had a branch evaluation of 5A... wasn't the branch evaluation criteria not allowed to differ? That was to say, even if it was same, what were they scared of? Each one of them were at very minimum 2A students; the branch evaluation wasn't a comprehensive representation!

None of them had expected that a 3A student like Luo Sanfeng would be disposed of on initial contact! It was practically a fight between an adult and a baby!

"This..." The pock-marked youth that had made fun of Xu Yangyi yesterday opened and closed his mouth several times. He wanted to say something, but in the end, it transformed into gibberish: "This... This..."

"Is this a fucking joke?" At his side, there was a bald youth whose Adam's apple was trembling fiercely. They could guess that Luo Sanfeng's strength was unquestionably in the mid-upper levels of the champions, but it had completely gone beyond their expectations he would be sent back flying with a single kick!

The dogfight of their anticipations hadn't appeared. The foundation of either side hadn't been touch upon because one side... had crumpled with a single blow!

"Is he a tyrannosaurus rex in human form?" A woman gritted her teeth and said with her lips pursed and fists rigidly tightened. Extreme shock had pervaded the bottom of their hearts; they were simply unwilling to believe the scene they were witnessing! If Luo Sanfeng met such an end... What about them?

"Investigate the degree of force he just erupted with!" At this time, a hoarse voice suddenly rang out. It was one of an old man with flush over his entire face, shouting like he was having a stroke: "Now! Right now!"

These words seemed to wake everyone from their reverie.

Firecloud raised a brow as he regained his wits and looked at Shadowslay somewhat surprised, noticing his counterpart's similarly surprised gaze.

“This child...” Shadowslay seemed to be deliberating over his words: “Is exceptionally strong.”

Not waiting for them to finish speaking, the clicking sound of keyboard typing echoed through the arena. Xu Yangyi cared for nothing else, only striding towards the ten-meter-long scar and extending his hand out.

“What does he want to do!” This question wasn't limited to only the audience but also all of the students.

Xu Yangyi grabbed onto Luo Sanfeng's throat, pulling him out, and Luo Sanfeng's eyes were filled with bloody murder as he glared at him. He himself didn't believe the strength of Xu Yangyi's kick would be so great! He was simply incapable of resisting such might!

The sensation he had felt moments ago... was practically equivalent to a full-frontal collision of a tyrannosaurus rex! To be defeated in a single move... Beneath the focus of over ten thousand people, he wasn't the last one standing but rather the stepping stone of the last one standing!

## Chapter 37: Battle Royale (2)

---

“Son of a bitch... You fuckin’ cheat...” All he could do was weakly speak these words, seemingly finding a reasonable explanation. His voice crowing, he pulled on Xu Yangyi’s hand that was gripping his throat: “That’s right! You’re cheating! You’re definitely cheating! There’s no way you can have such freakish strength!”

Xu Yangyi coldly looked at him, but didn’t say anything. Waiting for Luo Sanfeng to finish his diatribe, he asked insipidly: “Was it you.”

Luo Sanfeng was dazed. Afterwards, although he couldn’t speak because his throat was being gripped, he glared unwaveringly at Xu Yangyi like he wanted to devour him! Several seconds later, his entire face turned crimson as he choked. He gritted his teeth rigidly and shook his head, restraining his considerable grievances.

“Rejoice.” Xu Yangyi looked at him for ten seconds and laughed. Without further hassle, he tossed Luo Sanfeng aside: “Otherwise, things wouldn’t be so simply as you lying down on the ground right now. My debt is quite expensive.”

This action had caused all the students to gasp coldly. Simultaneously, a numbing coldness began to creep upwards from the bottom of their hearts! They understood! They knew why Xu Yangyi was doing this! They finally became aware of why he had failed to open the door while he was making a breakthrough! This man... had a demon in his heart! A bloodthirsty fiend!

Chu Zhaonan’s eyes turned red in excitement, yet the expressions of the two champions beside him that had mocked and ridiculed Xu Yangyi after he failed to break through had become fairly unsightly in a matter of moments!

Hadn’t they originally thought the other was embarrassed? Didn’t he lack the face to meet people? Wasn’t his character strange? No, not at all, not whatsoever! On all accounts, absolutely

not! Xu Yangyi... was only looking for a fair opportunity void of schemes to take action! He didn't even want to privately talk things out with whoever it was. Moreover, he was a man that couldn't be reasoned with!

He seemed to be an emperor from ancient times. Whoever had committed offense, he would draw a ring and then strike indiscriminately towards whoever was inside the circle!

He was undertaking the most practical action to tell everyone that he would personally find out who had severed his breakthrough! Whoever had done it wasn't important anymore. He was giving vent to his anger! He knew that the one who had plotted against him was among these thirteen people, yet he had no plan to strike down with precision! It was an attack absent of distinction! Each and every one of them would be sequentially beat up!

The several people that had slandered Xu Yangyi outside his stone door at that time all pursed their lips at the same time by chance, sitting down on the arena stage crossed legged. Such a heart-palpitating feeling was too uncomfortable... Uncomfortable to the degree that their hearts grew chilly!

“His data has already been computed, minister!” At this moment, the assistant at Chu Tianyi's side halted his hand above his computer and raised his head that was drenched in cold sweat: “Strength measures in at 1872 kilograms! Speed was recorded at 40 meters per second!”

Chu Tianyi shut his eyes and raised his hand. As a high-level government official that understood cultivators, he knew full well what these two figures entailed...

This was an absolutely fantastic seedling! To say that it was a would-be Foundation Establishment seed wouldn't be an exaggeration! Not even to speak of the cornerstone clans of the cultivation world, a couple great powers would be stirred to their

fullest, as well!

However! He opened his eyes, revealing neither trace of warmth or coldness and stealthily glanced at Firecloud. No one knew what was inside that jade chest... except him! This treasure... Even if you are good seedling! Even if you are a heavenly-blessed talent! You would still be unsuited to obtain it!

“Strength approaches 1900 kilograms! Speed is 40 meters per second!” As these figures appeared on many people’s computers, it was unknown how many complexions changed. There was excitement, exhilaration, and also a sighing helplessness, a complexity of many feelings blended and combined together.

“This fist strength... This speed... This kid is only a step away from the middle stage of Qi Condensation! Heavens Law branch numbers sure can be fucking depended on!” A middle-aged woman slammed the handrail with burning anxiety. She gritted her teeth: “Which clan doesn’t desire such a talent? If he goes to a cultivation clan, maybe he’ll obtain major assistance! The support of overwhelming resources!”

“But...” Not so far away, an old man faintly sighed: “How can such a talent fancy the cultivation clans... With the people of a couple major powers here, the more he displays his brilliance... the more unlikely he is to come to us...”

“Yes... Perhaps they’ve long made prior contact. Such a talent has probably been selected already.”

Shadowslay and Firecloud didn’t speak, but they carried a trace of happiness in their eyes. At this moment, a extremely soft sound, but one that was crystal clear, entered everyone’s ears.

Crack... Crack... It was similar to a biscuit crumbling, yet as this sound echoed, everyone was of one heart as they looked at the surrounding stone steles with an incomparably fiery gaze!

This was a sound... that they could not be considered familiar

with because it had been far, far too long since it had appeared. But yet, they were exceptionally familiar with it! It was because when this sound emerged, it was the sure representation of a hero's birth!

The arrival of a saint child!

Firecloud, Shadowslay, Lilac, Hibiscus, and Vulture, the gazes of those of the Big Three and the Foundation Establishment cultivators, unquestionably gathered on the stone steles above. However, in the next second, the recruiters of the Big Three that had originally been standing in shock were unable to restrain the simultaneous dropping of their jaws!

Stone steles had cracked! Among the 120-plus stone steles, cracks appeared on twenty of them! On five of them, cracks began to frantically climb upwards and immediately covered their entire faces in only a few seconds!

“Paragon of the 2009th graduation... Songdongyue City's Zhang Yiheng...” An old ancestor stood up, his voice hoarse as he looked at the crack-covered stone stele.

“Paragon of the 2013rd graduation... Beijianguan City's Mu Gaoping... Right now, he's at the initial stage of Foundation Establishment, working at CSIB. Ten years ago, he slew the old middle-stage Foundation Establishment monster, B-rank listed Brilliant Moon... The bounty was... 2.72 billion...” On the other side, a man that appeared over fifty years of age said incredulously, trill of voice.

“Paragon of the 2071st graduation... Fengyi City's Teng Xue... The initial stage of Foundation Establishment... Currently the Featherwood Guard's deputy commander of the Vermilion Bird Division... Nantong Province's second bounty hunter unit... This... This...” Not too distant from the middle-aged man was an old woman propped on crutches. Because of the trembling of her wrinkle-covered face, the muscles on her face had balled into a



tangle.

“Paragon of the 1999th graduation, Yangming City’s Gu Feng of the Gu Clan... Presently, he’s the commander of the Capital Government’s Imperial City protectors, [‘the Yan-Huang Sentinels’](#), part of the CSIB cultivator organization. As a middle-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator, he is ranked seventh in martial contest...” Lilac looked at the five stone steles as the cracks on them became more numerous, and her heart leapt up to her throat: “Last month... he shut me out from making an official visit...”

Crumble... As the cracks multiplied, a tremendous boom rang out ten seconds later! The five stone steles had completely shattered apart! They transformed into specks of white light and faded away from the arena!

No one spoke. Not a person opened their mouth. Even Shadowslay and Firecloud didn’t know what to say at this moment. These weren’t just city champions... these were provincial paragons of their respective graduations!

There were many that they recognized! But below their eyelids now, five stone steles of figures they knew of had exploded into bits! In addition, twenty other stone steles had been covered in cracks, shaking incessantly!

Rumble... The deep and low sound of the stone steles’ swaying seemed to echo in each person’s heart. No one had expected that in the first matchup, Xu Yangyi’s talent would surpass that of five past champions! The arts of Core Formation masters had judged the talent that Xu Yangyi had displayed as being above these twenty-five people. This was above twenty-five provincial paragons of past generations!

The venue had become silent. The Qi Condensation cultivators had shaken themselves into speechlessness. The two Foundation Establishment cultivators also didn’t know what to say.

“Xu Yangyi.” Xu Yangyi cared nothing about this. Presently, he only cared about getting to the bottom of who it was that had dared to seal away the worldly qi as he failed to break through. It wasn’t until a voice echoed out did he gather his bearings.

This was because it was Firecloud’s voice. From shock, every person retrieved their attention. This was the first time a Foundation Establishment cultivator had spoken.

“Do you understand Foundation Establishment cultivators?” Firecloud’s smile carried a trace of gentleness: “Do you have one you admire...”

“No.” Firecloud’s voice not yet fallen, Shadowslay’s voice calmly rang out. Firecloud suddenly looked over, and the gazes of the two people interlocked with each other, to the degree that specks of fire could be felt in Firecloud’s eyes.

“Is Fellow Daoist Shadowslay backing out of his promise?” Firecloud laughed grimly.

Shadowslay didn’t speak. It wasn’t until after a long while did he say coldly: “Your price is insufficient for his aptitude.”

“Oh?” Firecloud smiled: “Old me doesn’t want that small-scale spirit stone mine.”

Extreme decisiveness!

Shadowslay was silent for a few seconds and looked at Firecloud seriously: “Fellow Daoist Firecloud, it’s not that I am going back on my words, but I won’t let you have this seedling. I cannot let you have him.”

“You!” Firecloud’s thoughts spewed upwards like a backfire, but at the same time, they were also extremely complicated. Who would’ve thought that although Xu Yangyi’s talents were less than Sunnihilator’s, he wasn’t lacking by any means! It could even be said he was a talent towering far above the standard level! It had to be known that moments ago, it was just a life or death battle not

worth mentioning! Their strengths had been of equal grades!

But it was a steamroll!

If... this graduation had someone comparable to him in strength, both sides would truly explode with potential, and then perhaps...

Firecloud was extremely understanding that maybe... it wouldn't only be a matter of twenty swaying stone steles and five shattered ones!

He turned his eyes towards the taciturn Chu Zhaonan. Finally, his eyes fell upon the holstered pistol at Chu Zhaonan's waist. It was probable that perhaps a true clash of titans would occur between these two. A showdown between a tyrannosaurus rex in human form and Gun Kata, who would be the hunter? Who would be the hunted?

Retracting his gaze, he mumbled to himself, yet didn't give up on his plans at all. As long as such a person stepped out of these doors, which power wouldn't want to have him? Didn't he notice the eyes of the juniors from the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, Featherwood Guard, and the CSIB turn green in desire? He sighed silently. Previously, he had believed Xu Yangyi wouldn't be any match for Chu Zhaonan. His vision hadn't even faltered over the other's body. As a result...

"Fellow Daoist Firecloud." Shadowslay understood this reasoning in kind and cupped his hands: "Let's postpone this matter and wait until after the Qualifier. Then, everyone can rely on their own methods. How about it?"

Not waiting for Firecloud to speak, he waved his hand, his voice containing a rare softness to it: "Rest. In five minutes, the next lineup will be prepared."

Firecloud kneaded the flesh of his cheek several times, but ultimately didn't open his mouth again. The arena was clamorous, yet Shadowslay didn't give it much thought, rather he waved his

hand and eleven iron plates appeared. He casually grabbed two and his gaze slightly flashed. Softly rolling them in his hands, the snowy-white rays of qi condensed two names on the right and left sides in mid air once more.

Tianfeng City, Chu Zhaonan.

Beijiangyuan City, Gao Ye.

Chu Tianyi set down his teacup and used his walking stick to stand up. As long as Chu Zhaonan raised his head, he would see Chu Tianyi's figure.

However, Chu Zhaonan didn't even raise his head. The arena had swiftly fallen into a calm, as if it was a sea where a storm had passed just moments ago. Everyone was making conjectures and discussing the battle that had just passed in a wink of time. No one would remember Luo Sanfeng's name, but Xu Yangyi's name had already been drawn in striking red by several major powers and some powerful cultivation clans. Such a feeling made Chu Zhaonan extremely unsettled.

炎黄 - Yan-Huang Sentinels is the name I chose for this group. The thing is, it's only supposed to be called "Yan-Huang". Literally translated, it's "Flame Yellow", however, the true meaning, especially since they are supposed to be the protectors of the forbidden city, refers to two famous emperors in Chinese history/myth Yan Di and Huang Di (Flame Emperor and Yellow Emperor).

## Chapter 38: Battle Royale (3)

---

Gao Ye was a tall youth and moreover extremely robust. He was nearly as tall as Chu Zhaonan, approximately around 1.9 meters tall, as well. His head was bald, and his muscles were bulging like that of a sturdy ox. With eyes as large as copper bells, he looked at Chu Zhaonan like he wanted to eat him.

Chu Zhaonan couldn't even be bothered to spare Gao Ye a glance. From his leg wrappings, he coolly took out a gun. It was a small handgun, exceptionally small, one the size of a palm. So small that the brand couldn't be seen clearly, and it was without any runes.

"Hehe..." Gao Ye's laugh was raspy, and his voice was like a rusty blade. Atop the arena stage, he didn't make a first move, but rather crossed his arms across his chest and looked at Chu Zhaonan with full interest as the latter leisurely loaded his pistol. Chu Zhaonan had only filled it with a single bullet, one that was dark green in color.

"Are you retarded?" After waiting no less than a minute, Chu Zhaonan callously blew on the muzzle of the pistol, and Gao Ye sneered.

"Firearms basically can't hit cultivators, nor can they kill them. Didn't you learn that at the Tianfeng City branch?"

Chu Zhaonan's gaze flit across him, looking down at Xu Yangyi below the stage and suddenly laughed. "Your show wasn't bad. However, I've got a part here, as well. Although the time it takes is a bit long, it'll be a triumph in style."

Xu Yangyi laughed. He crossed his arms and leaned back against the stone wall, not speaking. Gao Ye had lost... He knew that Chu Zhaonan didn't need a gun. However, he was still a newcomer that didn't understand much regarding the cultivation world, so he fundamentally didn't understand what having a gun represented. But while he didn't know, he could perceive that the pistol on Chu

Zhaonan's waist was very dangerous... extremely dangerous.

His five senses had already strengthened by third in comparison to ordinary cultivators. Every time his spiritual sense congealed over that gun, he kept on feeling a stabbing pain between his eyebrows. This was the manifestation of a danger signal. When he had originally kicked Chu Zhaonan on the airplane, he had understood that Chu Zhaonan's body was unlikely to be much weaker than his by any margin. Their realms were similar, and as Chu Zhaonan took out the small pistol, while he hadn't felt a prick between his brows, he had still felt extremely uncomfortable.

"Since you have such self-confidence..." He whistled a tune: "Lemme see what you're worth."

Chu Zhaonan could see these words were lip service, and the corner of his mouth faintly turned upwards. In the next second... he had vanished! Gao Ye's vision suddenly intensified, and Xu Yangyi's eyes flashed. The gazes of everyone in the arena were trembling! Moments ago, Xu Yangyi had also been a shadow, but this time, Chu Zhaonan had truly disappeared!

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply, and his spiritual sense rushed forth like a tide. Short of 0.3 seconds later, he raised his head with a jolt! All the middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivators, late-stage ones, and Foundation Establishment cultivators raised their heads without exception. Twenty meters high in the air, Chu Zhaonan's figure astonishingly appeared!

"Gun Kata..." Chu Zhaonan had at some unknown point taken out two guns in his hand, a pair of identical silver pistols. He breathed in deeply, and his gaze sharpened explosively without warning: "Heartseeker!"

Swoooooosshhh! In an instant, he spun into a spinning top from head to toe! However... as he revolved, all that could be seen at the center of this camouflaged grassy-green tornado were the tongues of flames! From ten, they counted to a hundred, a hundred turned

into a thousand, and a thousand transformed into over ten thousand! At nearly the same moment, they furiously churned outwards!

Bang bang bang! In midair, the roar of the hand guns formed a symphony of slaughter! Simultaneously, Shadowslay surprisingly stood up and slightly flicked out with a forefinger. Buzz! A gigantic curtain of green light surrounded the arena stage to the innermost sides on all four directions!

“This is...” An old man said slightly surprised: “Senior Shadowslay used spiritual force to construct a defensive cover? He...” He glanced at Chu Zhaonan in shock: “Does Senior Shadowslay believe this student can injure the same graduating juniors?! Is the distance between them so far?”

“Gun Kata!” But at the same time, there were many people that had already recognized Chu Zhaonan’s moves and gasped coldly. They immediately defended the juniors of their own family within their qi!

“Great-grandfather... What’s going on?” A young boy looked bewilderedly at the cautious face of his great-grandfather in front of him who was also an ancestor of their Song Clan and asked incredulously.

“This is a gun kata.” The old man’s expression was focused: “This is an arcane effort, a secret technique he brought himself. The demand for it on the market is at least a few billion! Furthermore, perhaps the price of it is one without market! It looks stylish and has a reputation of being a sure-killer within the same boundary... I took a look at this competition in advance, and that student’s surname is Chu. I’m afraid he has a backer within China’s government whose greatness cannot be imagined...”

Gao Ye was already stunned. What Chu Zhaonan had said wasn’t of the Hundred Solutions? What was this? He couldn’t see it clearly, but he could distinctly sense it. A countless number of

bullets were racing towards his entire body in assault! They seemed to flutter about like honey bees and butterflies, but the fact of the matter was that every single bullet's final destination was his heart!

“ARRRGHHHH!” He suddenly roared, and the muscles of his entire body sharply swelled. The camouflage clothing on his body burst apart without warning, and all the veins on his upper body were like rushing dragons and serpents, converging together into the image of a qilin on his chest!

Life Sacrificiation!

Xu Yangyi's gaze turned a shade grave upon seeing this. A student capable of using Life Sacrificiation was absolutely deserving of his reputation as a champion.

“Tortoise Burdens!” With his second roar, Gao Ye crossed his arms in front of himself and leaned his body forward. Adding Life Sacrificiation and Tortoise Burdens together, he didn't believe he wouldn't be able to block this confrontation of mere firearms!

Even if he couldn't block it... he didn't have any other move afterwards to use!

Bang bang bang! Endless tongues of fire spewed out resplendent fireworks up in the sky like a fountain of flames. As all the bullets were on the verge of making contact with Gao Ye, countless tiny ripples suddenly appeared before him at the same time.

If someone looked carefully within these ripples, they were all incomparably compact bullets. Meanwhile, the four qi walls were the same as the front of Gao Ye, simultaneously suffused with several millions of ripples! The several millions of bullets bombarded at the same time, concurrently arriving at a magnificent spectacle!

“Huff...” Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply and took his hand out. Powerful... As expected, Chu Zhaonan was very powerful! Arcane



efforts weren't something they could access, but treasure blades would be put into the hands of brave warriors. Evidently, Chu Zhaonan was that man of bravery. This was his true strength! A split second ago, killing intent had filled the wide expanse! Every ripple was a true streak of murderous will. If it weren't for Shadowslay taking action to obstruct it, then perhaps Gao Ye would've already died by now!

Buzz... Shadowslay waved his hand and the four qi walls dissipated into white qi. However, the bullets that had been "stopped" in midair by the qi walls finally fell down with jingling noises at this instant. The sound was clear and crisp like small and big pearls crashing down on a jade platter. A floral shower of countless bullets rained down upon Chu Zhaonan's surroundings! It was merely this floral shower was a fatal one, even bringing with it hissing white smoke caused by the radiation of severe friction. It was a perfect curtain call.

A drop of cold sweat on the tip of Gao Ye's nose fell onto the ground. Heaven knows that at the final instant, he had nearly believed himself to have died. Bullets without limit... A genuine forest of guns and raining bullets! It was as if several million reapers had brandished their sickles and come charging at him while screeching! How was Life Sacrificaton coupled with Tortoise Burdens supposed to resist this?

"Tianfeng City, Chu Zhaonan wins." Firecloud's voice echoed out, shaking everyone present from this stylish feast of slaughter out of their stupor. Yet in the next second, a familiar sound like that of a crumbling biscuit swiftly pervaded everyone's ears.

"It's not..." An old man raised his head in astonishment.

"Real or fake..." A middle-aged woman uneasily shifted her Chanel bag and looked at the suddenly shaking stone steles in stupefaction.

"Nantong Province's luck... is too good this time? First there was

that fiend Xu, and now a second fiend has appeared?”

“Another person has broken apart the stone steles of past graduations?”

“Heavens... This does the Nantong Province branch proud. Two fiends in a row!”

The sound of cracking rang out progressively, and subsequently, four stone steles shattered apart with a rumble! Eighteen stone steles were violently swaying back and forth!

No one spoke. Among the light pillars of the disintegrated stone steles, Chu Zhaonan looked proudly at Xu Yangyi from the stage above. Xu Yangyi raised his head, looking at his counterpart, bereft of the slightest concession with a warring gaze. This was a declaration of war. This was an honest-to-god battle challenge! He, Xu Yangyi, had roused a hundred percent of Chu Zhaonan’s fighting will!

Xu Yangyi had settled his battle in three seconds before. His style was crude, barbaric, and unreasonable.

Chu Zhaonan had settled his battle in thirty seconds after. His style was polished, graceful, and untainted by even an iota of dust. Within the gathering of ten thousand flowers, not a single petal had touched his body. Among the pitter patter of infinite bullets, the will to fight had ascended to the pinnacle in the eyes of these two.

Cultivation was originally a contest of all living things. To lack diligence and caution would lead to a dead end! Only the most suitable opponent was capable of sharpening one’s own skill, willpower, and strength to an even higher level!

They both understood this principle. At this instant, they seemed to have caught sight of each other as predestined rivals. Their styles were different and their timings was different, but their strength and fierceness flowed together in a similar vein. Chu

Zhaonan raised his hand and sliced it across his throat, licking his lips. He hadn't even looked at Gao Ye's face, which was deathly ashen.

The students watching this scene turned their gazes to Xu Yangyi. It was because they understood it very clearly... These two people were cut from the same cloth, the strong and the monstrous. Their opponents wouldn't be them by any means! It was without question that Chu Zhaonan was not looking at them. A monster... should compete against monsters! And combat other monsters!

"I'll be waiting for you." Xu Yangyi's brows didn't move. It appeared the present scene of the pitter patter of raining bullets wasn't the same as Chu Zhaonan's background. Chu Zhaonan could've concealed it, could've relied on the Hundred Solutions, but he hadn't. Rather, he had taken out his own impressive hidden ace, demanding for battle!

If you want a fight, then I shall satisfy you! You desire a battle where you can fight to your heart's content and dye your fist with blood. I, Xu Yangyi, look forward to an expert I can stand shoulder to shoulder with, as well!

"You're not worried?" A voice abruptly emerged from Xu Yangyi's surroundings, that of a woman's. Her stature wasn't tall, and she couldn't be considered very beautiful.

"Why should I be worried?" Xu Yangyi raised a brow and replied.

"That's an arcane effort none of us have ever seen! This kid is cheating!" The woman said hatefully: "We're going to go together and make an appeal to the Foundation Establishment seniors! This is illegal! He's cheating! He secretly learned other arcane efforts!"

Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze away from Chu Zhaonan's body, glancing pitifully at her: "So, all of you can only be the hare. Your heart is without sword, yet your external sword is hale, shining, and sharp..." He fished out a lighter and leisurely lit a cigarette,

satisfiedly taking a drag: “But you can only be the hare.”

He answered the woman no longer, placing his sight on the present cultivation clans, their faces excited as if they went mad. With another glance, he saw the excitedly standing personnel of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, Featherwood Guard, and CSIB. He ought to have accepted such courtesy. The strong had never wanted for false modesty. He laughed as he flicked his cigarette ash, an incomparably resolute thought within his heart now.

This is a man that only I am capable of breaking! Besides myself, there are none that can muster a shred of threat to him!

He was quite sure that Chu Zhaonan also had this same thought within his heart.

## Chapter 39: Battle Royale (4)

---

These two competition matches had sent all of the cultivation clans into a surging mood. The follow up of the first match had caused everyone to be even more endlessly excited. After two hours, seven powerhouses came to a decision. Because the number of people in Nantong Province was odd, they would draw a lot from one of the other cities' runner-ups. It was merely that these seven powerhouses were as bright and clear as mirrors in everyone's hearts.

Tianfeng City, Yuyang City, Zhaoxue City, Zhaoping City, Tongjiang City, Qianzhou City, and Shuilao City.

Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan, a power struggle between the pair from their respective cities of Yuyang and Tianfeng. Victory or defeat would be difficult to distinguish as they stood side by side as the first of the echelon! The others... were all of the second echelon!

These two were too outstanding... Outstanding to a degree that others simply found hard to ignore! Although the champions of Zhaoxue City and Tongjiang City had shattered two stone steles and rocked seven stone steles as well, in comparison to Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan, they weren't on that upper level. In years past, they had still been able to draw the shock of others, but this year... with the pearls ahead, they were nothing but cheap ornaments.

In the afternoon, seven turned to four. Xu Yangyi had drawn a bye, and Chu Zhaonan had used a similar move to fell his opponent in thirty seconds.

"This kid..." Xu Yangyi took a drag at the side of the arena and mused to himself pensively: "It seems that he's not prepared to put more methods into action before the finals."

He had a clear understanding that from the start to finish, Chu Zhaonan hadn't used the pistol at his waist. That was his

counterpart's true killer weapon. It was a genuine killing move that had to be reserved for a true, deserving opponent.

Four turned into two, and Xu Yangyi disposed of his opponent in ten seconds. In comparison with the single kick he used against Luo Sanfeng, he used three kicks this time. As before, Chu Zhaonan took thirty seconds, still using a stylish rain of bullets, difficult to meet directly with a gaze.

Two people of different styles, two people of similar strength would come together in the finals!

"The finals will be carried out in an hour from now." Firecloud finally stood up after the match where four had turned to two. He softly flicked his finger, and two syringes suddenly appeared in Xu Yangyi's and Chu Zhaonan's hands. "The name of this object is Golden Spirit Elixir. After it's injected, deficits to the qi sea will be sure to restore themselves within an hour. To Qi Condensation cultivators, it's already sufficient."

Xu Yangyi took the syringe and injected it into his wrist in a practiced motion. Instantly, a warm sensation flowed through the meridians that covered his entire body. In his qi sea, qi threads began to spread out from his meridians. He looked ponderously at the syringe, and an odd feeling emerged within his heart.

To date, alchemists had completely vanished. Or perhaps it should be said that following the effluence of time, the ancient techniques had already been lost to the long river of time. If it weren't for modern-day cultivators being equally as brilliant and electing to use syringes and capsules containing concentrated, purified pill elixir, the ancient occupation of pill refining would have ceased to exist long ago.

However, alchemy was not western medicine. Even better capsules and syringes could not stop medicinal leakage; only so much could be stopped. He and Chu Zhaonan had nearly finished injecting the medicine at the same time. By chance, both of them

looked at the other. Their wills to fight were evenly matched without the slightest concealment, like stars on a winter night or a broiling flame on a summer day.

Nothing was said. The two of them turned their heads and returned to their stone rooms. Right now, nothing more needed to be exchanged. This was a struggle for supremacy. They had defeated all of their opponents to stand in front of each other.

“Minister.” At the same time high above the stage, The special assistant at Chu Tianyi’s side said lowly: “I’ve thoroughly investigated it. Everytime Xu Yangyi finished his matches, he grabbed his opponent and questioned this: was it you.”

Chu Tian slowly opened his eyes that were closed in rest and swept his extremely complicated gaze over Xu Yangyi. His voice didn’t waver as he asked: “Are you sure?”

“I am ten thousand times certain!” The assistant promptly bowed.

Chu Tianyi shut his eyes again, and his assistant tactfully departed at once. No one had discovered it, but his eyes beneath his eyelids were gently trembling without end. It had been completely out of his expectations... that the aptitude of this Xu would actually be so high! To make a Qi Condensation cultivator lose the paragonship wasn’t anything. With his status as deputy minister, no man would split hairs over it. However, it was completely different matter if the Qi Condensation cultivator was a Foundation Establishment seedling!

From what he could see in his eyes of Firecloud’s and Shadowsly’s attitudes, he was quite understanding that these two had been moved... absolutely stirred! This Foundation Establishment seedling would even be sheltered by these two Foundation Establishment cultivators! Even if those of the Foundation Establishment realm didn’t discover the oddity of the Immortal Intoxication, on all occasions, he was better safe than

sorry!

If by chance... what if he was discovered? If by chance... this boy advanced onwards to Foundation Establishment later? A trace of remorse slowly began to creep up from the bottom of his heart.

An hour passed by extremely quickly. As Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan walked on top of the arena stage, time seemed to freeze in frame. Up above, the four massive characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens were impressive to the eye.

They were so tightly surrounded by thousands of cultivators and the clans that not even a drop of water could penetrate through. On the enormous arena platform over ten thousand meters in length, there were only the two of them.

As if a soundless wind blew across the arena stage, all gazes converged upon their bodies. The battle of champions had taken four to five hours, however, two monsters had appeared this graduation. Surprisingly, within these many hours, all of it would come to a conclusion! This was even with the added time for rest!

Yet the passion of all those present hadn't waned because of this shortness of time at all! The struggle of sheep was nice to look at, but it was no more than kick to the head. What they desired to see was a genuine struggle of lions! The exchange of moves by true experts!

"Old Third." At this moment on the grandstand above, an old man wearing the gown of a scholar faintly shook his folding fan, yet what he said was decisive enough to chop nails: "Could you see how many high-grade spirit stones you could convert our Scorchtail Mulberry Yang Wood to?"

On his chest, there was an emblem of a tree leaf with the character of Zhao (赵) brightly dazzling on it. This wood was a major financial resource of Fengbao's Zhao Clan, but at this moment, he didn't hesitate in the least to take it out!



“Fifty pieces won’t be a question!” Of the seventy-strong Zhao Clan team, this inquiry was met without a single retort. The one called Old Third was a middle-aged man with a common appearance who slightly bowed in caution at this moment: “If it doesn’t compare to the gifts of the Big Three, I still have a high-grade artifact I am willing to use to bet with the clan master.”

“Others may be worried about the Big Three, but our Meng Clan of Fengbao is not.” On the other side, a forty-plus-year-old woman said lowly: “Liquidate the fixed assets and prepare to discount. Cultivation is like a boat going against the current. If the clan doesn’t develop, it can only be sealed in step!” Her gaze trembled: “There are somethings that can be allowed, but there are others... that cannot be permitted for!”

Thud... Among the countless low discussions taking place, Xu Yangyi’s combat boots walked atop the even limestone tiles, looking at a figure a hundred meters away. Right now, it was as if they were walking through a desert, climbing the precipice. A roiling wave of fire in his heart caused him to tightly clench the bandages on his fist.

Click... Clack... The neither slow nor hurried sound of footsteps could be heard as the two walked towards facing each other, like swordsmen on a rainy night taking a leisurely stroll, knights with braided tassels with [scimitars](#) bright as snow. The two of them not yet arriving, a soundless battle intent had already silently ignited, like oil added to an inferno.

“You’ve finally come.” Chu Zhaonan’s voice was somewhat raspy. He had prepared far, far too long for this moment. To be unrivaled beneath the heavens, there could only be a single person walking alone! He had to be that person!

“So, I have come.” Xu Yangyi nodded, looking seriously at his counterpart: “You’re an opponent that deserves the display of my full might.”

Presently, Firecloud and Shadowslay were sitting upright, their gazes had never shifted away from the bodies of these two.

“The time has come...” Shadowslay’s voice carried a slight hoarseness to it. Echoing through the entire arena, it was gentle, peaceful, and brimming with an oppressive might. He raised his hand high and looked at everyone. In this instant, the hordes of crowds all went silent.

There was no wind, yet it was as if the sound of breathing could be heard. There was no rain, but sensation of cold sweat seemed to be felt in hand.

The gazes of middle-stage and late-stage Qi Condensation cultivators were scorching hot. The expectations in the hearts of initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators were like that of the swift fire of a curved bow

“For the Nantong Province paragonship battle...” Firecloud’s boundless voice echoed within the arena, faintly reverberating.

“Shh....” On the grandstand, Lilac sucked in deeply, her lips pursed slightly tight. It had been too long... Too long since there hadn’t been such a long-awaited battle of initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators. These two of the initial stage... were freaks in a class of their own! Monsters that had transcended ranks and on the contrary had exterminated all challenges!

An exchange of fists between freaks, a game of superhumans. She didn’t know who would be the last one unrivaled beneath the heavens, and she didn’t want to guess. However... she had already urgently contacted the CSIB Nantong Province branch moments ago to obtain an answer...

They had to be won over!

“It is Yuyang City’s Xu Yangyi versus Tianfeng City’s Chu Zhaonan.”

At her side, Hibiscus’s complexion was similarly cautious. At the

very beginning, she had only knew that Xu Yangyi had slain a berserker and of the affair on the airplane to poach him. She was the same as Lilac; it was beyond her expectations that the person she wanted to snatch was an absolute supreme talent! Even if he was no Sunnihilator, he wasn't to be out done!

The Featherwood Guard... truly needed such a talent... No! Where was such a talent not wanted? Not even to look at the cultivator clans, regardless of size, it was clearly understood that the Big Three were determined to win these two. Weren't their eyes also green with desire?

“Begin!”

Following these words, the heavens... opened. The four characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens released a drizzle of white light at this moment, appearing like a canopy of myriad qi as they leisurely extended downwards from the sky. Mist like fog and fog like dust, rays of misty white light bore through the half-concealed, half-covered white mists, reflecting a magnificence that enchanted the heart.

[Cold fields condensed with morning mists, a frosty sky scatters the evening glow of dusk.](#)

Threads and strands formed four white barriers established all around on the outside that completely isolated sound.

“This is a method left behind by a Core Formation master capable of blocking three blows of a cultivator at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment.” At the same moment these words rang out, the two people suddenly raced towards each other nearly in sync, bringing with them a screaming gale, like two trains moving at top speed!

In the VIP section of the grandstand, Chu Tianyi narrowed his eyes. At the side, Fang Tansheng tightly grabbed onto the handrail. No one made a clamor, none cried out in alarm, and not a single person shouted words of encouragement. They were only watching

the two silhouettes that had no intention in the slightest of pulling back! They shot towards each other like arcs of electricity!

Absent of avoidance and without evasion, this was a truly forceful contest of strength!

Bang! In the past, the fists of the two were different. This time, their fists were completely wrapped in white spiritual force, suddenly making an impact together!

吴钩 - Scimitar. Not actually a scimitar but close enough. Ancient Chinese hook sword. Copy and paste these characters into google to get a better idea of what it looks like.

寒野凝朝雾, 霜天散夕霞 is a flowery phrase part of a poem by a Tang Emperor, Li Shimin. I hope I didn't butcher it.

## Chapter 40: Battle Royale (5)

---

Xu Yangyi didn't say a word. The flesh of his entire body had completely twisted alive in this fleeting moment! Blood circulated warmly in his veins, and in his chest, his heart throbbed fiercely. Twisting his waist and tucking his abdomen, he used the greatest strength his fist could muster and struck out with a rumbling explosion!

Boom! As the two neared, their fists unwaveringly clashed together. They could see pulsating flame within each other's eyes. At this instant, external objects had already ceased to exist. At this moment, there was only each other, and the sole throbbing figure in their eyes. Strength like an ocean tide passed on into Xu Yangyi's fist; it was Chu Zhaonan's fist strength. He immediately recognized he was much stronger than his opponent!

Lightly gritting his teeth, the muscles of his entire body adjusted to their peak state, and his left fist suddenly struck out without a second word. There was no elegance or skill. This was only a pure contest of strength! Likewise, Chu Zhaonan's speed wasn't slow. Just as Xu Yangyi struck with his left fist, his left fist punched out at the same time!

Before the fists had even made contact in the air, Xu Yangyi's fist transformed into fingers, a five-finger claw that turned towards his opponent's throat. Chu Zhaonan had nearly the exact same reaction, and the knuckle of his forefinger protruded outwards to strike at Xu Yangyi's temple. In the same second that they felt that they were on the verge of touching the other, the mutual sensitivity in the two's hearts caused them to retract their hands concurrently, completely blocking their vitals above.

It was a nearly instinctual action of the body. Xu Yangyi's left leg was one that had sent ten-odd champions flying. His leg carried a gale to it along in the wake of the crashing sound of shattered stone, and he suddenly kicked towards his opponent! The speed of

the kick surprisingly beared with it the whistling of broken air! Simultaneously, Chu Zhaonan pulled his arm back to defend, and his right leg bent back like a bow, his kneecap slamming towards Xu Yangyi's waist.

Bang! Bang pow bang! Two figures, isolated within qi walls, moved as quickly as if they were chasing the wind and pursuing the moon. Only those of the middle stage of Qi Condensation and above were capable of clearly seeing their actions. As for the initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators and ordinary clan team members, theirs eyes were all saucered. They could only see the intense interaction of the two silhouettes and the unbroken heavy echoes.

A whistling noise rang out in the surroundings of the two. Every fist and every leg between the two appeared to be arranged, without the use of an inkling of spiritual force. It was pure physical combat of the most primitive of natures. The sound of fists meeting flesh fell uninterrupted on the ear, yet neither fell back half a step!

“Gulp...” An initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivator couldn't restrain himself from swallowing his saliva. Fast... They were too fast! So fast that as a cultivator of the same initial stage, he simply couldn't see them clearly!

This was a monster reared by Heavens Law? This was the strength that a provincial paragon ought to have possessed?

Not too far away, there was a young boy that had just began to tread the long path of cultivation. His mouth was widely ajar and both his eyes were open round. He had long since ceased to see things clearly and was only able to see countless remnant shadows that appeared to be hands or legs going back and forth between the two people.

“I-is this still the initial stage of Qi Condensation?”

Following a ringing boom, the figures finally split apart from

each other. Xu Yangyi stuck his thumb up and wiped the trace of blood at the side of his mouth. Moments ago, he had altogether been struck by three kicks and ten punches, but his opponent positively wasn't doing even better!

Chu Zhaonan gasped for breath and licked the bloodstain at the corner of his mouth. He knew how many times he had struck his opponent, and he moreover knew how many times his opponent had hit him.

Seven kicks and twenty-five fists! Right now his entire abdomen was aching dully!

"You're very strong..." Xu Yangyi spat out, his spittle carrying blood to it. He extended his hand out and beckoned: "Use your gun. Otherwise, you still won't be enough for me to beat."

A monster!

Chu Zhaonan gritted his teeth fiercely. He was already plenty proud of his body, but he hadn't expected that he would run into a monster in human form here! Calling back to that tyrannosaurus-rex-like degree of strength a moment ago, he was dead sure the information that had been spread around by someone before that Xu Yangyi had killed a berserker was categorically not a falsehood!

Xu Yangyi himself was a living berserker!

Tightly closing his eyes, Chu Zhaonan didn't move and neither did Xu Yangyi. After no less than ten-odd seconds had passed did he open them. The tranquility brought with it an icy-cold and roiling-hot will to battle. For the first time, his hand stroked the pistol at his waist.

Clip... The crisp sound of a button unclasping was extremely light, yet it seemed to resonate at the side of every person's ears. Following this sound, the gentle noise of applause, similarly extremely light, yet remarkably distinct echoed through the arena stage.

It had come from Shadowslay. This noise seemed to awake everyone. Subsequently, there was a second noise, a third noise... all the way to a incalculable number of noises!

Clap clap clap! The applause reverberated within the whole arena!

“Amazing! Too Amazing! I couldn’t see anything with absolute clarity just now!” An initial-stage youth’s excited face had nearly become gorged flush with blood, and he shouted himself hoarse: “They’re too awesome!”

Before he had even finished yelling, his mouth was immediately covered by a senior at his side. The senior’s incomparably praising voice rang out at the side of his ear: “This is what a cultivator should truly strive to be...”

“Since ancient times, heroes have come from the young...” A middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivator cheerfully applauded. Even if he could defeat these two of the initial stage, he didn’t dare to say it would be a complete victory.

“The younger generation will surpass the older generation in time...” A late-stage Qi Condensation cultivator wasn’t the slightest bit ungenerous with his applause and repeatedly shook his head in deep emotion.

Clap clap clap... The continuous applause went uninterrupted, converging into a flooding wave of sound that extended in the entire Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena. However, the two people on stage weren’t sidetracked a bit because of this.

Chu Zhaonan leaned his whole body forward like a hunting beast and locked his gaze rigidly on Xu Yangyi. His extended hand at the side of his waist slowly took out pistol, one that had never been revealed. The gun was approximately a foot in length, and no different whatsoever than an ordinary gun. Only the blue runes on it gave people a fluctuation of death.



Xu Yangyi didn't open his mouth, but every single hair on his body and each of his muscles were in a state of high alert. It had come... The menacing sensation that caused the space between his brows to ache painfully had arrived. It appeared to draw a cross between his brows, becoming a death marker. His two fists tightened, and he placed them before him. With his gaze like an eagle, he perceived his opponent's each and every move.

"I have three bullets." Chu Zhaonan's voice clearly rang out among the tide of boundless applause: "If you dodge these three shots, then you win."

On the grandstand above, Chu Tianyi was already stroking the ring on his right hand with his left hand. Inside was a concentrated dose of Immortal Intoxication. As long as he pressed the button in his ring, this concentrated dose would be sufficient to make Xu Yangyi fall on the ground and unable to stand up.

However, he didn't wish for such a thing. If Chu Zhaonan was capable triumphing, he wouldn't have to use this measure. Yet if Chu Zhaonan couldn't...

His expression was as rippleless as a dried-up well.

In the arena, the applause had already quieted down. A few clan masters extended their hands to stop the clapping of the people of their clan. They didn't wish for any human influence on this clash between titans on stage. Everyone had seen that what had occurred moments ago was only the appetizer. Following up would be the true main course.

Chu Zhaonan looked deeply at the man before him and cut his hand without the slightest hesitation on the butt of his pistol. A trace of blood suddenly appeared on his hand, and the devilish pistol seemed to gain energy in a flash. A spiritual pressure that caused the hearts of initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators to palpitate swept up the whole arena in a flash!

In this wink of time, Xu Yangyi's expression was incomparably

solemn.

“First shot.” Chu Zhaonan softly uttered these words from his mouth, and his entire person completely vanished with a whoosh! At where he originally stood, there was only a cloud of dust left over. The senses of Xu Yangyi’s whole body had magnified to the pinnacle. After his five senses had been strengthened by the small chest, he had immediately seized his opponent’s location!

In midair! At the absolute highest point!

Initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators weren’t capable of jumping that high, but right now, Chu Zhaonan was at the very least fifty meters away from the ground! This was a bodily skill that came along with Gun Kata! At the same time, a strange noise echoed through the entire arena!

Rustle... Rustle...

There was no wind, yet a rustling sound like wind brushing through boundless grassy prairies rang out!

“Is this... a divine ability?!” A student cried out in surprise, looking up in the sky incredulously!

A so-called divine ability was also the Hundred Solutions, yet this divine ability was publically known as the one of the simplest among divine abilities. Those before the first twenty solutions were simply without any destructive force. Well, at the minimum in regards to late-stage Qi Condensation cultivators. A true divine ability was hardly the same as a street-side good like the Hundred Solutions, capable of bringing about a strange transformation in people and moreover able to bring the heavens and earth to motion!

For example... Chu Zhaonan was doing just that right now!

“But isn’t it until after the middle stage one can learn divine abilities?” Gao Ye who was wrapped head to toe in bandages looked on in astonishment at the present Chu Zhaonan who was like a

monarch overlooking the stage, his lips trembling: “He’s nothing but the initial stage! The one that failed to break through days ago isn’t him!”

“You think those two freaks are any different from the middle stage?” Luo Sanfeng firmly pursed his lips and turned his head back in extreme irreconciliation and said: “Just because you’re able to learn it in the middle stage doesn’t mean that you can only learn it once you attain the middle stage! Although I don’t want to accept it...” He carried a burning envy in his eyes, looking towards the arena stage and gritting his teeth: “These two... Besides normal middle-stage cultivators, there are no others that are their opponents!”

In ancient times, divine abilities were known as... magic.

Rustle... Rustle... The grassland sound gradually resonated through the entire venue, but Xu Yangyi didn’t move a bit. He only looked at the silhouette in midair like a hawk. From moments ago, the odd, boundlessly interweaving qi was like a heel maggot attached to his body. It was as if he was walking in a limitless grassy expanse, and below his waist, everything was long grass.

In the face of myriad transformations, he would remain unchanged; he had to know what Chu Zhaonan’s trump card was.

In midair, Chu Zhaonan used both his hands to hold his pistol with an unparalleled solemnness and sucked in deeply: “[In the darkness of the forest, the wind rustles the grass...](#)”

Bang! On the floor of the arena stage, a fierce gale suddenly sprung up around Xu Yangyi’s surroundings! A great wind had arrived on the grasslands... Closely pressed against his body, it caused his camouflage clothing to make a whistling noise. He had saw it... In his pupils, he clearly seen the situation in the sky.

Both of Chu Zhaonan’s arms were trembling, and the sleeves of his camouflage attire had completely burst apart, exposing his arms packed with muscle. At this instant, his veins had swelled

and his complexion was extremely pale, as if he was enduring some tremendous suffering. Yet the miniature black hole gave him an extreme pressure!

Thump... Thump... Xu Yangyi's heart sped up in pulse, a natural bodily reaction to the tremendous pressure he was confronted with. The blood in his arteries boiled.

“Are you calling on me to escape?” A cold edge streaked across his eyes. After the five senses had strengthened, a cultivator would be even sharper in regards to unknown threats, but at this instant, he forcibly suppressed the wild palpitations of his heart and his inflamed thoughts. Beneath his foot, he stood as if he was rooted in place!

He was resolute in matching this move!

“The general draws his bow at night...” Chu Zhaonan's raspy voice could be heard from midair. Xu Yangyi understood it to be a classical Chinese poem from the past, but he didn't know why in the thick of extreme danger, he was still able to squeeze out a sliver of strange serenity under the circumstance of forced calm.

林暗草惊风 - this is a phrase by a general during ancient chinese times known as “The Flying General” named Li Guang. This refers to a phrase/poem by him where he goes out patrolling and hears something rustling in the grass, so he takes out his bow and fires at it, thinking it to be a beast.

## Chapter 41: Battle Royale (6)

---

In the darkness of the forest, the wind rustles the grass. The general draws his bow at night. As the sky brightens, his arrow, with a fletching of white plumage, sinks into stone.

Swish! At this instant, qi that could bring fear to an initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivator suddenly erupted from the barrel of Chu Zhaonan's gun! Over the course of two seconds, myriad interweavings of qi flew out from the front of the gun barrel to condense into a tremendous arrow!

Afterwards, not waiting on anyone to react, the arrow brought with it a sharp whistling that could lacerate all things, frantically rushing towards Xu Yangyi! At this twinkling second, of the remaining ninety stone steles, twenty of them suddenly shattered!

They had crumbled apart in a fleeting moment! There were simply no traces of cracks that covered them! This was a representative that the spiritual force Chu Zhaonan had erupted with at this instant exceeded that of over twenty previous paragons!

“HAH!” A snarl shook Xu Yangyi's chest as it thundered its way out. The rubble surrounding him was suddenly sent rushing away as if it had been smashed away by the blast of a formless spirit wave!

“Solution Ninety... Life Sacrificatio!”

“He... wants to forcibly match this move?” A vigorous edge erupted in the eyes of a Qi Condensation cultivator: “Does he think he can take on this burden?”

“Not necessarily so.” A fellow Daoist at his side fixed his gaze rigidly on the arena stage: “Life Sacrificatio can rouse the innate potential within one's body and temporarily make one forget about the pain. However, the consumption is equivalently

tremendous, nearly capable of drawing dry a normal cultivator's qi sea in a single breath. But it has another function, which for the time being is considered a hidden effect."

"Life Sacrificing can strengthen the quality of other solutions from the Hundred Solutions. This is probably the sole move in the last ten solutions that can continued to be used long term..." Firecloud looked at the arena stage, and qi walls clearly emerged on the four sides of the scene taking place. He said thoughtfully: "You aren't an impulsive person. Let me take a look... what you want to do in the end..."

The empty shadow of an arrow no less than three meters in size carried a mournful wail, bringing with it a fierce wind that could skewer all things! Facing towards the ground, it sped along forward!

Swooooosh! The sleeves of Xu Yangyi's camouflage clothing fluttered back, yet not a sliver of alarm was seen on his face, only an unmatched calm!

"Solution Ninety-Seven... Tortoise Burdens!"

Bang! The camouflage clothing on his upper body shredded apart with a rumble, transforming into tatters of fragmented cloth and exposing his well-trained, powerful flesh. On his chest, his veins twisted to converge into the image of a qilin.

Boom! In the next second, the tremendous arrow firmly nailed into the ground! A shock wave visible to the naked eye suddenly surged up from the ground! Dust flew upwards and a circular spirit wave earthy yellow in color soared on the ground. The faces over a thousand initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators changed in unison! This was the power of a divine ability! This was the might of a true cultivator!

Scars that extended several meters deep spread out like a spider web on the ground! The force of a single blow was surprisingly this great!

Buzz... At this time, the stone steles that were enduring disintegrated into rubble. On the arena floor, dust rose into the air, and in the sky above, countless white rays scattered. This was a scene that many, many cultivators who had started cultivation firmly engraved at the bottom of their hearts.

“What’s going on?” Luo Sanfeng was tensely looking at the present scene. It was beyond his expectations that Chu Zhaonan’s strike would be this terrifying! If he had been swapped in, he would’ve absolutely been unable to receive it.

However, what about the man that had defeated himself? Would he be able to accept it?

Countless eyes were on the center of the arena stage. As the smoke cleared, they looked on in astonishment at Xu Yangyi who actually had his arms crossed out in front of him and was protecting his vitals, still standing there as before!

From hair to toe, there was nearly no place left intact. Bloody scars covered his bare upper body, somewhat so deep that bone could already be seen! He was drenched in blood, and the life fluid followed down his body and trickled. His chest was rapidly heaving up and down, however...

He was still standing! He hadn’t fallen!

“This is it?” Faintly gasping for breath, Xu Yangyi set down both of his arms and spat out a mouthful of blood. He used his hand to wipe away at his mouth, his eyes looking at Chu Zhaonan who had already landed: “There’s nothing else?”

“Fuck me!” Gao Ye shouted loudly and lowered his arms. He had seen it clearly—no—everyone had seen it clearly. The wounds on Xu Yangyi’s body appeared frightening, but none of them were on his vitals! Not a single location on his vitals had been injured! He had forcibly resisted this blow!

Gao Ye firmly clenched both of his hands and his eyeballs

sauced. He didn't dare to believe that with the same combination of Life Sacrification and Tortoise Burdens that the other had managed to resist, devoid of heavy injuries. Yet he... had not been able to fight against Chu Zhaonan who hadn't even used a divine ability!"

"This is impossible!" Chu Zhaonan's complexion changed for the first time, and he looked at Xu Yangyi in shock. The other had sustained wounds. They weren't heavy, but by no means were they light! However... this strike he used was capable of killing off the other's eruption of spiritual force!

"If that's all you got, then you still cannot defeat me." Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply. Each of his bones ached terribly, but every one of his blood vessels and cells were boiling! It was the exercise of his full power that he had been separated from for a long time now. One that was capable of making every man, body and mind, flare up upon meeting their match!

It was the long separation of the display of his full might. In his chest, his heart raged and the blood in his veins billowed over and over. Each of his cells craved for an equal battle!

"Puh..." Xu Yangyi spat on the ground and raised his fist towards the sky. His face covered in blood, he revealed his first smile: "Chu, you've reached me."

Zhaonan's pupils suddenly needled. At this moment, he and the Xu Yangyi of moments ago were the same; he sensed a bone-piercing menace like that of countless needles! Without nearly thinking, he flipped backwards and suddenly snarled: "Rising Cloud!"

Both of his hands had originally been holding onto only a single gun, but they abruptly transformed into two, facing towards the ground and unleashing a raid of fire with maximum power.

Boom! Rubble scattered into the air, and this volley of fire seemed to give rise to a tremendous recoiling force, bringing him



to the rear in urgent retreat! However, not even waiting for him to settle, an incomparably frenzied aura like that of a tyrannosaurus rex had already charged right before him!

What speed!

Before he could even complete this thought, his shoulder blade was subsequently struck by what seemed to be a hammer. A mouthful of blood he was simply unable to restrain came spurting out! Not delaying for him to react, a fist met his stomach. This fist sent him directly flying back a couple meters, leaving a path of blood in the air!

In the next second, his right shoulder, left shoulder, right leg... The human-shaped hammer didn't give him time to consider as it bombarded his body without pause!

"This is..." At this instant, Lilac, Lotus, and Vulture stood up in unison. It wasn't limited to only them; all of the people familiar with the Hundred Solutions looked on in astonishment at the scene on stage.

The shadow of man, hard to capture with the naked eye, shuttled back and forth at the side of Chu Zhaonan's body. Chu Zhaonan seemed to be nailed to the spot, essentially unable to move a single step!

"H-how is this possible!" Gao Ye, Luo Sanfeng, and the other rank ones all cried out in alarm. It couldn't be anything else because they were very familiar with this move. Familiar to the degree that they had seen their instructors demonstrate it many times, but it was a technique they were fundamentally incapable of producing!

Rapid Shadows, Solution Eighty-Nine!

"Yes... That's right..." It wasn't until several seconds later did Luo Sanfeng take a long dejected sigh: "We can learn any of the solutions, but to be capable of utilizing Solution Ninety: Life

Sacrifications are already remarkable. How could a person like him possibly be incapable of using a solution in the eighties?"

Swish... Xu Yangyi's figure finally revealed itself. At the same time, Chu Zhaonan spat out a great mouthful of blood, yet the instant he was about to fall to the ground, he fired towards the ground and staggered firmly onto his feet.

The scene was a stretch of silence.

"Huff... Huff..." Chu Zhaonan's chest heaved up and down like a bellows. The present him was even more wretched than Xu Yangyi. With bloodied eyes, he clearly looked at everything, and a mad will to fight erupted out of his heart without the least restraint!

Behind Xu Yangyi, there was a gorge. It was a half-meter deep trench, like a human-shaped tyrannosaurus rex had violently charged forward with a momentum that couldn't be denied. Even Chu Zhaonan could imagine the horrific impact strength Xu Yangyi had charged with at that moment..

"Superb strength... I was still underestimating you..." He gritted his teeth rigidly and the blood flowing from his hand pervaded his gun. The blue light of the gun became even more dazzling, and the complexion of his face became even paler.

Crack... Crack... At this time, a distinct shattering noise entered everyone's ears. Each and every face was shocked. It wasn't that the sound of crumbling stone steles had gone unheard, but the one this time... was especially great!

"That's Ji Feng's!" Shadowslay's gaze suddenly sharpened, looking incredulously at the stone stele. With a bang, the armrest of his magnificent throne transformed into rubble in an instant.

"Ji Feng?!" Firecloud heard what was said and nearly stood up, yet he restrained himself, not daring to believe what he was witnessing.

A stone stele written with the characters “Ji Feng” was covered in cracks. Amidst the pair’s stunned expression, it transformed into motes of white light and died away with the wind. It wasn’t bound to only this stone stele... This time, a whole thirty-two stone steles were shaking! It was as if thirty-two mountain peaks were crying synchronously! The shattering sound was heard all throughout the arena!

Crack... Crack... Crack! Shadowslay’s dry and rough Adam’s apple bobbed up and down and he stood up for the first time. He extended his hand and grabbed a mote of floating light to himself, his expression extremely complicated as he looked through the motes of light that filled the sky at the blood-soaked Xu Yangyi.

“Ji Feng was the last paragon of your four southern provinces...” Firecloud couldn’t help but to gasp coldly: “A disciple under Daomaster Ancientpine... Heavens Law branch master of Jiangzhu Province... This...”

The flesh of Shadowslay’s face twitched somewhat faintly, his voice like sawing timber: “Zhang Lanchun... The paragon of Beisan Province... Late-stage Foundation Establishment... Deputy commander of CSIB’s Demonslayer Guard...”

Each and every one of these names were ones they knew, ones that were familiar to the ear. Before their eyes, these names vanished into light. They had never expected that here, in Nantong Province, so many stone steles would surprisingly be shatter in a single go!

Hum... Now, the noise of all the crumbling came to a halt. However, there was a soft sound that seemed resonate within the entire air, abruptly spreading out. At the juncture this sound was heard, an elderly fellow suddenly raised his head, looking towards the tallest stone stele: “T-t-this, don’t tell me...”

“Impossible!” A woman fanning her sweet self immediately put a close to the swaying of her hand. Her eyes were filled disbelief as

she looked over.

“Haa...” Firecloud and Shadowslay felt the air around their bodies turn cold at the same time. In the next second, it transformed into unparalleled roiling heat, and they looked towards a place straightaway.

Lilac’s, Hibiscus’s, Vulture’s, even Chu Tianyi’s, and as well as everyone else’s gazes were completely situated on a single location!

A blank stele!

It was tallest stone stele without any name. The stone stele specifically constructed for Sunnihilator... had moved! It was without any cracks whatsoever and was still smooth like a mirror. However...

It had swayed three times! A clear shaking of three times!

## Chapter 42: Battle Royale (7)

---

“My god...” A middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivator was unable to restrain his emotions as he stood up. Subsequently, there was a second. The crowd seemed to receive some sort of directive. One after another, all of them silently stood up, their eyes completely condensed on the wordless stele!

How many years had it been?

This stone stele had towered loftily here without a single person able to shake it. As to so far that none could even make it shimmer! But now, someone had finally caused it to sway! At this instant, after Xu Yangyi had utilised solution eighty-nine, the stone stele of Sunnihilator, a cultivation talent that could only be chanced upon only once every century, had moved!

“Shadowslay...” Firecloud’s gaze carried a sliver of obsession as he looked at Sunnihilator’s stone stele, and he turned his head soon after, looking at his counterpart with a sharpness like that of a sword: “What price do you want? For you to consent to allow me to have him?”

“None at all.” Concealed within Shadowslay’s eyes was a deep wisp of burning heat: “I shall take this seedling in as my own disciple. Firecloud... From now on, how about you don’t put forward your ridiculous mine?”

Firecloud didn’t say anything. None would’ve expected that Chu Zhaonan who they were optimistically gungho about before would surprisingly reach such a bitter stage in his struggle with Xu Yangyi. None had anticipated that Xu Yangyi was actually capable of shaking Sunnihilator’s stone stele! Granted that this matter reached the ears of a Core Formation master, they would have someone come to accept him as a disciple!

However, the two people involved didn’t pay attention to the stone steles, but rather they cautiously looked at each other.

“That move just now... How many times can you still put it to use?” Chu Zhaonan grinned and licked his lips with a thirst for blood: “You’re a tough one... Truly strong... You give me a straight feeling like those geniuses you can only read about in the books...”

“You’re very strong. Solution Eighty-Nine with Life Sacrificiation added on top... However...” His gaze flashed, and he raised his gun once again: “I will be the one to win this time!”

Xu Yangyi cracked his knuckles: “I can’t use it many times, but it’s enough to beat you.” Before his voice had even fallen, he suddenly brandished his right hand, and a meter-long white qi blade attached onto his hand. Even Chu Zhaonan who was ten meters away could hear the whimpering sound of the air tearing apart!

“Severing Dragon Typhoon!” In Xu Yangyi’s pupils, only a resplendent light blade was reflected within! Following the strike of the light blade, a meter-plus deep, semi-circular trench was cut into the ground by crashing spiritual force!

Bang! Bang! Two loud sounds rang out and the ground became covered in spider web-like fractures. Chu Zhaonan leapt back again, the proceeding burst of charging force sent him recoiling in retreat by twenty-odd meters.

Xu Yangyi couldn’t allow Chu Zhaonan to fire his gun once more! A cold edge flit across his eyes. He had forcibly resisted his opponents first bullet because he had no other method. The striking range had been too great; he simply couldn’t dodge.

The integration of the body arts and gun arts of Gun Kata perfectly embodied the advantage of firearms. To take a man’s severed head at a thousand paces away was a liberating transformation in accuracy control and striking range. He absolutely didn’t desire to test the flavor of a second shot.

“Open!” With a roar, Xu Yangyi’s right hand congealed a tremendous tiger claw, the sound of his snarl shook the entire

arena: “Ninety-Two... Subduing Tiger!”

Wielding scarlet tiger claw no less than two meters in size, he exerted his maximum strength as he struck towards the ground. A web of cracks appeared beneath his fist, and subsequently, countless limestone shards were unexpectedly torn asunder in full! All of them were flying towards Chu Zhaonan’s direction! Swift in chaining and numerous, claw after claw carved out a hole five meters in perimeter in front of him! Simultaneously, his body bent like a supple serpent and flew straight up!

“Ninety-Three... Flying Star!”

Flying Star was the sole acceleration style after the ninetieth solution. In a flash, his charging speed suddenly increased by one fold! He instantaneously surpassed the speed of the stones he had flung out, his feet trampling atop the stone tiles. With every step, he drew support from this stomping force to raise his speed by another level once again!

It wasn’t a possibility to allow his opponent an opportunity to fire his gun again! Even if it happened, it wouldn’t be like the first time where he was completely prepared! At that time, Chu Zhaonan had transformed into a terrifying and cold-blooded marksman, firing his deadliest bullet from the most beautiful vantage.

“Fuck!” Chu Zhaonan’s eyes reddened. The recoiling force of his gun had just weakened, yet his opponent’s increase in speed had went unbroken! “Heartseeker!” Without retreat, his body surged into a terrifying grass-green whirlwind once again in midair, and a legion of flame tongues jetted out at nearly the same time! The deathly flower of fire enveloped the entire venue!

“It’s this move...” Below the arena stage, Gao Ye perked up like a wrapped sticky rice dumpling, his reddened eyes fixed on the stage above. It was with this move that Chu Zhaonan had surmounted all difficulties throughout his conquest! How many people had

fallen beneath his hands? Now, upon running across a man of similar ruthlessness, would his opponent be able to resist?

Pew! Pew! Pew! The sound of bullets boring into flesh could be heard, and a myriad bullets crashed down without distinction! On the four qi walls, countless ripples appeared in a twinkling. It was the rain of countless bullets.

A scarlet tiger claw appeared once again. This time, it didn't shatter the ground, but rather directly tore apart several stones, raising them up and turning them into a stone shield! Rubble flew about as the shield in Xu Yangyi's hand became smaller and smaller, and the distance between him and his opponent became closer and closer! However, the path behind him had already become dyed in blood!

From top to bottom, his entire body was aching with a burning pain, yet Xu Yangyi didn't put a halt to his plan by any means. If he stopped, then perhaps he wouldn't have another opportunity to draw close again! In regards to a long-distance sniper, if you allowed the opportunity slip past, then it was a possibility that another one wouldn't appear.

"Fuck..." He gritted his teeth. A single bullet wouldn't be able to break through his defense, but now there were thousands upon thousands of bullets. In a twist of great misfortune, his left thigh continued to be struck by five bullets on the same wound, blood already gushing like a spring.

On the grandstand, Chu Tianyi's hand, which was originally over his ring, presently lowered once more. The item he possessed couldn't be used so easily. From where he was, he could already clearly see Xu Yangyi's current situation.

His right pectoral, left thigh, and right arm—the results of the first strike of spirit bullets—had finally been torn completely asunder by Heartseeker! There wasn't a place left on his body left unscathed, merely, Chu Tianyi extremely disliked his eyes.



Amidst coolness, there was a resoluteness like that of the most seasoned hunter, not abandoning his desires in the least even under the grimmest circumstances.

He ultimately discovered a matter. He couldn't find an opportunity to put to use the Immortal Intoxication that he had obtained with great difficulty! He wasn't a warrior, he was a commanding officer. He had completely grasped the macroscope of war on the battlefield, but in the microscope of the confrontation of lone individuals... With the attention Xu Yangyi had presently drawn, even if he disposed of the latter, the matter would definitely be rendered ineffective. But if he didn't take action...

His vision landed on the qi walls in deep worry. Victory or defeat... He dared not make claim to! As long as Xu Yangyi's eyes didn't lose their coolness and didn't abandon their resolve, Xu Yangyi would still have the opportunity to triumph...

Even he could see that this person was very strong, extremely strong! Even in his heart, he held a sliver of unwilling acceptance that perhaps in comparison to the true genius he believed his grandson to be, Xu Yangyi was still stronger! A concentrated dose of Immortal Intoxication was capable of enshrouding a range of thirty meters. If he took action now, Chu Zhaonan would be enveloped, as well.

It would be for the best for this forbidden good not to be used. He wouldn't make a move until the final juncture. Presently... the final moment was before his eyes, yet he couldn't find an opportunity to use it.

Boom! At this time, a heavy sound could be heard from the qi walls. Consequently, a heavy echo continued to ring out seven more times!

“Rapid Shadows... He can actually even use Rapid Shadows! How much frickin' qi does he have stored in his qi sea!” Luo Sanfeng slammed his fist on the side of the viewing platform, crushing the

stone and looking at the present scene with eyes wide open.

“No... No way!” Not even waiting for Luo Sanfeng to finish shouting, a champion at his side nearly yelled: “This can’t be used to attack! It’s for increasing speed! There’s only less than five meters of distance remaining between them!”

Xu Yangyi wouldn’t give Chu Zhaonan a ghost of an opportunity. Following Flying Star’s increase in speed, he used Innersight without the slightest hesitation. In his qi sea... he still had enough for three moves! Within three moves, there would be a decisive winner!

Chu Zhaonan was twenty-odd meters apart from him. As long as he gave his opponent an opportunity, the loser would be him! Three moves and twenty meters. The time of life or death was swiftly approaching.

Speed. What he needed now was speed. Of the martial arts in the world, there were none that couldn’t be broken through with sheer speed. He held absolute faith that as long as he stuck close, his counterpart couldn’t be his match.

First move, Rapid Shadows.

The Rapid Shadows this time wasn’t directed towards himself. The stone tiles he had flung out before weren’t only so simple as to obstruct his opponent’s line of sight, but also to speed up through Flying Star. The batch of stones he had already tossed behind at this moment formed a large stone that he stamped on seven times in succession! Drawing on this connecting force, his speed soared once more!

Chu Zhaonan’s complexion changed. He was completely aware of his opponents thought process. He also understood that now was the time of mortal combat. His opponent couldn’t allow him an opportunity to take off once again!

In a flash, all that remained was five meters. The killing intent in

Xu Yangyi's eyes were palpable, and Chu Zhaonan seemed to have looked upon a beast king charging towards him. As long as hesitation existed, the stage below would be torn apart into rubble!

The final four meters!

The second move... In his heart, Xu Yangyi mouthed it silently to himself and the muscles of his entire body swelled sharply. His chest veins warped again and the surface flushed red.

Life Sacrificion!

"He can still use Life Sacrificion?!" Luo Sanfeng's eyeballs almost popped out. He could only use the move once. He hadn't expected that now that both sides had thrown caution to the wind, Xu Yangyi would actually use Life Sacrificion a second time!

The next move would determine the victor...

Many people wordlessly stood up. They hadn't anticipated the decisive battle between two initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators would surprisingly be so bitter. They could've compared pointers and taken care not to over do things, but these two desired victory. Easing up was simply an impossibility! This battle had already surpassed the scope of the initial stage of Qi Condensation!

Three meters!

Both of Chu Zhaonan's arms violently trembled, and a decisive look was revealed in his eyes. Tightly gritting his teeth, his originally handsome appearance had unexpectedly become somewhat savage in this moment. The two guns in his hands roared, and his whole body's spiritual force freely rushed forth from both guns!

Chu Tianyi stood up, his heart like a burning fire. He wanted to make a move, but couldn't find an opportunity! He wasn't a warrior, so he was unable to catch sight of a golden opportunity within these fleeting moments!

Two meters!

“Severing Dragon Typhoon!” Xu Yangyi raised his head towards the heavens and roared. White qi encased both of his hands and shot out like the lightedges of a mecha samurai, forming dual qi blades that were two meters in length! Carrying a courageously advancing might, he hacked towards Chu Zhaonan with all of his spiritual force!

Under the circumstances of Life Sacrificaton, the spiritual force within his body was frantically dissipating. If this strike was unsuccessful, then he would die righteously!

Swish! At the sides of his a pair of meter-deep scars were carved out by his spirit blades! It was like the knell of a death god and a charging martyr. Mingled together, it was a terrifying death. Xu Yangyi chopped through the wind and broke past waves, clearing all that was before him!

One meter!

Already, the two terrifying qi blades were reflected in Chu Zhaonan’s pupils. Under the additional support of Life Sacrificaton they weren’t simple lightedges, but were like a pair of unvarnished sharp swords.

His hair fluttered back in the breeze by the tsunami-like might of the desire of victory being directed at him by Xu Yangyi who was emitting spiritual force from his entire body. His tattered-to-rags camouflage clothing on his body made a whipping noise.

Firecloud tightened his grip on his arm rest. Shadowsly straightened out his body.

Over ten thousand gazes converged on stage. The exchange of masters was as fleeting and ephemeral as the blink of an eye. Life or death spelled the spark of a flint. This decisive battle which had lasted for half an hour was on the verge of welcoming the final curtain call!

Who would be the last one standing?

Zero meters!

# Chapter 43: Paragon!

---

Xu Yangyi's gaze and Chu Zhaonan's collided together in midair like the screech of gold and iron. At the same time, the same intent could be seen within both of their eyes. An appreciation for the other's talent.

Xu Yangyi's lips moved, and Chu Zhaonan believed himself not to have seen it clearly, yet he discovered that he now saw it clearer than anyone else. He had seen the three words his counterpart had said without a doubt.

Leave no regret!

"Fuck!" He laughed heartily and swiftly raised his hands up. At this instant, sound became void. All that remained were the two figures atop of the arena stage, two silhouettes dripping with blood. A soundless yet seemingly sonorous fluctuation stirred the emotions of every cultivator that had just entered the path of cultivation and even their seniors.

Swish! In the next second, two qi blades had arrived in front of Chu Zhaonan. The last shred of spiritual force within his body drifted away, and Xu Yangyi exerted the entirety of his strength to slash downwards without the slightest hesitation! Simultaneously, the two black holes that were the muzzles of pistols were already leveled right before him.

["Beneath the still moon, the jade glimmers with a flash of gold."](#)

Boom! Boom! Two blazes like that of cannon fire suddenly erupted between the two people! It appeared as if a small bomb detonated on stage, and a crimson shockwave visible to the naked eye violently exploded!

Smoke and dust filled the sky and rubble flew into the air. No one could clearly see what was going on inside. Firecloud didn't use his spiritual sense to survey and neither did Shadowsly.

This battle could be said to be a bitter one. The loser wouldn't be disgraced in this duel, and the blood-covered winner would have seized the top ranking. For his spiritual sense to enter the battlefield would be a blasphemy to the dignity of cultivators. It was tantamount to provocation. They didn't desire to provoke these two youths with boundless prospects.

"In several decades... I will be waiting for them in Foundation Establishment." Firecloud said heavily.

"So it is." Shadowslay said complicatedly and his gaze flickered.

"What happened?!"

"Who won?!"

"Who's going to take the paragonship?!"

"Have these two exerted their full strength already?"

The champions had nearly rushed into the qi walls to see the result, however, they weren't capable of entering. These were qi walls that not even cultivators at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment could enter, crafted by the hands of a Core Formation master. Even if they were hurried, they could only wait in vain.

At the center of the qi walls, spirit waves roiled and sand covered the sky. It was at this time... an earth-shaking droning could be heard with a rumble.

Huuuuuum... Everyone's gaze was immediately drawn in amidst the wait.

"My... god..." A woman at the initial stage of Qi Condensation covered her mouth, looking at the forty-plus stone steles erected in the surroundings like she had seen a ghost.

"It's not..." A mortal from a cultivation clan raised his head incredulously, his Adam's apple rolling in fright. He simply dared not to believe in his eyes.

An old woman stood up in shock, the veins of her hand propped on her walking stick were completely exposed. Her lips trembled as she looked at all before her.

A youth seemed to be a puppet on strings, wordlessly rising. He rigidly pursed his lips, not saying a single word.

Smoke and dust, all that could be seen again was smoke and dust. Before even the first cloud dissipated, a second would take its place.

Only this time... it wasn't the smoke and dust of stone, but rather that of qi! A heavy downpour of qi! An ocean of qi! At this moment, the remaining forty-plus stone steles unexpectedly shattered in their entirety! Amidst this year's Nantong Province grand paragonship competition, all the stone steles of paragons years past had completely crumbled into pieces!

There were no tremors or rocking. Not even the breaking of crawling cracks. In five seconds, merely five seconds, forty heavy sounds rang out in unison! All of the stone steles transformed into motes of qi!

At this moment, there were great changes beneath the four simple characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens. Motes of qi like the ocean revolved and faded away. As if it was a dream or illusion, it was reflected in everyone's incredulous expression, appearing to be an immortal realm in the human world.

No one spoke, there wasn't a single person that said a thing. Their gazes had come together on the final stone stele! A nameless stele! The sole stone stele that hadn't shattered into pieces! After the nation was founded, he was China's number one cultivation talent!

It didn't sway, and it didn't so much as tremble. However... within everyone's gaze, there was a cracking noise.

A crack! This was the first time a crack had appeared on



Sunnihilator's nameless stele!

Crack crack crack. It was no minor crack by any means. From the bottom of the center, it rushed straight up to the peak! It seemed it wanted to split this nameless stele above the masses of stone steles in half!

"Huff..." Firecloud's absent-minded voice charged into his own ears. He had discovered that at some unknown point, he had already advanced forward a few paces and both of his hands were supported on the grandstand. An ocean of complications welled up within his heart.

This level of talent... was ranked completely above his own! It made a Foundation Establishment cultivator like him unable NOT to be envious! Talent wasn't able to determine future accomplishments, but it could decide one's starting point!

His gaze swept over the present scene, a stretch of serene silence... and each person watching the stone stele in shock. Of every major power and great clan, no one spoke, merely the burning passions in their eyes had already betrayed them.

They couldn't wait much longer! As they continued to wait... everyone present was waiting on the true fire to come!

Firecloud's gaze suddenly fluctuated, and after passionately looking towards the arena stage, he pursed his lips several times and finally gritted his teeth. With a gentle wave of his hand, a command tablet appeared, and a green-colored light beam immediately hit the walls of qi walls. Through the gap, figures appearing to be men slowly emerged. He promptly split the air apart with a palm, and all the smoke and dust instantly vanished as if it had run into a squall.

As the dust settled, two silhouettes were revealed on stage.

Two people sat down on the floor with hardly any form. An outcome simply couldn't be seen. From Chu Zhaonan's right

shoulder to his stomach, there was a wound so terrifying that nearly his internal organs were visible. As for Xu Yangyi, his right pectoral had been mutilated, and he sat down facing the other like [a piece of coke](#).

“Why are you so strong?” After a while, Chu Zhaonan faintly asked.

“It doesn’t matter.” Xu Yangyi laughed: “Because you have already found your enemies. Only I, to this day, still shoulder the things you have already set down.”

Silent, it wasn’t until a long period of time did Chu Zhaonan say heavily: “Is it because I have no goal...?”

“Maybe?” Xu Yangyi covered his chest and laughed: “Did you know, everytime I wanted to laze about, I thought about my mother and father watching me in Heaven...? I dare not fall to inaction. I remember in my childhood when I was going to school that they took me to a stationery store in a little town and picked out school bags for me one by one...”

None heard what they were saying. This was the very least respect that they could offer.

Chu Zhaonan didn’t open his mouth and silently listened.

“Afterwards... they put a ruler in my pencil case and then the sharpened pencils...”

“I didn’t like eating vegetable, but they would always force me to eat them... So, I invested infinitely more effort than others. I guarantee that even in comparison to the greatest exertion in your imagination, it is still more painstaking.”

“Over the past ten-odd years, I haven’t even spent a lot of time on the internet. I don’t have many friends, and moreover, I don’t have time to rest...” Xu Yangyi proudly clenched his fist: “If I am not strong, then who is?”

Not a person opened their mouths. At this moment, atop the

crack-covered arena stage and under the four massive characters overhead of unrivaled beneath the heavens, they were like [Ye Gucheng and Ximen Chuixue](#) at the summit of the Forbidden City after they had discussed the sword, slowly having a heart-to-heart conversation.

“So it turned out to be like this...” It was unknown how much time had passed until a wisp of a pained smile revealed itself on Chu Zhaonan’s face: “I accept my defeat wholeheartedly.” Before his voice had even fallen, Chu Zhaonan’s back suddenly ruptured, and a horrific wound in the shape of a cross extended over his entire back!

Blood spurted out like a fountain! His complexion was deathly white, and the heavens spun and the earth revolved with his head at the center, as he had already fallen on top of the arena stage with a boom and immediately lost consciousness.

In the next second, Xu Yangyi’s entire body seemed to become a sieve, and tiny blood arrows wildly jetted out in a similar fashion. They had become blood humans in less than five seconds, however, Xu Yangyi stood up. Chu Zhaonan was already lying down. A soundless conclusion held the words to explain everything.

Within a scope of a hundred meters of the arena stage, not a single stone in good condition could be seen. These chaotic spider web cracks were everywhere along with some couple-meter-deep black pits. Of the exposed flesh of the two people on stage, there was nearly no place left unscathed, and there were bloodstains all over their bodies, yet their expressions weren’t very caring.

All around, there were originally more than a 120 stone steles, but now there was only one nameless stele left. This nameless stele was still extremely striking to the eye, a giant scar cracking it down the middle.

“Chu Zhaonan lost...” The flesh of Shadowslay’s face faintly

trembled: “A 4A student who possesses Gun Kata... has actually lost to a student that only knows the Hundred Solutions...”

Chu Tianyi’s face turned white as paper, his finger still pressed on top of his ring. He painfully shut his eyes, trembling fiercely. He finally understood... Even if it was him, he still had his naive moments.

This wasn’t his first time witnessing a battle of cultivators. In the past, he had watched them in videos, so he was incapable of experiencing the direct sensation like that of a landslide or tsunami. Thus, he believed he could use the Immortal Intoxication he had brought with him, yet was in fact given a resounding slap to the face.

It couldn’t be used...

Or perhaps it should be said, it couldn’t be used in his hands.

However, by no means could he possibly hand the prize over to anyone else! The ring he had touched countless of times and let go of countless of times and the twinkling opportunity had passed away like so. Ultimately, he couldn’t find an opportunity.

Firecloud sucked in deeply, but just as he was going to speak, a fiery voice echoed from the audience.

“Senior Firecloud, since the outcome has already been decided... wouldn’t it be better to hurry up and release the seal and let those two fellow Daoists come out first?”

Firecloud’s words choked to death in his throat and his gaze cut past like a knife.

Who?! Who was this?! He still hadn’t expressed his good will; who was it that was so pressed?! Didn’t they see Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan were still spitting up blood?! Didn’t they see the chaos of the present scene?! He was still considering how to rope these two in. Who was in such a rush? How would he scare the others off?

He glanced at an old man at the Great Circle of Qi Condensation, only a step short of entering Foundation Establishment. The disparity between Qi Condensation and Foundation Establishment was like that of heaven and earth. He wouldn't put such a cultivation in his eyes, but the flame crest on the other's chest and the character Li (李) at the center of it made his eyelids jump.

A million cultivators, thirty thousand in Foundation Establishment, and a branch in each province. It wasn't only the several major powers that had Foundation Establishment cultivators.

If he hadn't remembered incorrectly... although he really did want to remember erroneously, Fengyi's Li Clan was Nantong Province's number one cultivation clan. Since they had three Foundation Establishment cultivators beneath their house, he didn't desire some misunderstanding to occur between him and them at all.

He swept his eyes in passing, taking a look at several thousand pairs of black eyes like that of wolves. That was right... The Qualifier had come to an end and the proceeding stage... would perhaps be even more cruel than the Qualifier!

He silently tightened his hand at his back, a delicate capsule clenched in his palm. This was the Gold Spirit Pill he was originally prepared to give to Chu Zhaonan and Xu Yangyi, but now...

“Paragon, Yuyang City's Xu Yangyi.”

Suppressing the unwillingness in his heart, his gaze swept past the VIP seats. Several shadows had already stood up without the slightest hesitation.

浮光跃金, 静影沉璧 - Beneath the still moon, the jade glimmers a flash of gold. A difficult aspect of translating is trying to convey poetic phrases used by actual figures from the past. This line originates from a Chinese official/philosopher Fan Zhongyan who

used this phrase to describe the beauty of a lake.

焦炭 - I feel the need to make a specific note for this one. This means coke in Chinese. Not soda coke though, but a form of processed fuel. Quite frankly, this adjective modifier kinda flies over my head.

These characters are from Gu Long's Lu Xiaofeng series.

# Chapter 44: Faction Showdown (1)

---

Clap clap clap... Just as an ordinary middle-aged man wearing a well-trimmed western suit stood up, he began to clap vigorously without the slightest hesitation. At the same time, his entire body suddenly erupted with an unparalleled, valiant spiritual pressure like the ocean tide or the mountain breeze! The expressions of everyone present faintly changed.

Foundation Establishment! Another Foundation Establishment cultivator!

Chu Tianyi's eyes narrowed with an icy coldness. Of the several tens of thousands of Foundation Establishment cultivators, he had heard of most of them, yet he had truly only seen about a greater half of them. It was wildly out of his expectations that a Foundation Establishment cultivator would actually be so close to him!

Calmly and coolly, his hand completely shifted away from his ring. It was too late to say anything or do anything now. Since the matter was like this, it would be better to do nothing and act as if he had only come to cheer on his grandson.

"Fame follows merit... Yes, fame follows merit!" A middle-aged man with a square face, no eyebrows, and a harsh scar on his bare forehead, and a seemingly vicious face had a remarkably friendly smile globbed onto his face at this moment: "With my status as Daomaster's Floatingcloud's personal secretary, I represent Daomaster Floatingcloud in congratulating the brave paragon Mr. Xu. Young friend may call me Moonchaser."

"Fuck!" Just as he finished speaking, Lilac, Hibiscus, and Vulture nearly clenched their pearly teeth so hard that their teeth broke apart. What they were most worried about had finally occurred!

Who in the cultivation world could stand shoulder to shoulder with the fame of the Big Three? Besides the independent factions

of Core Formation masters, who else could it be?!

What was the meaning of hearing “I represent Daomaster Floatingcloud in his congratulations”? Wasn’t this an obvious suggestion at Xu Yangyi: I’m very interested in you, how about you hurry up and come into my bowl?

Wouldn’t a wet-behind-the-ears Qi Condensation cultivator run over in jiffy upon hearing a Core Formation master’s name?

“Fellow Daoist’s words are just and proper.” Shadowslay seemed to look apathetically at the billowing qi walls and smiled: “So Fellow Daoist turned out to be one of Daomaster Floatingcloud’s ten great disciples, Moonchaser. Daomaster Floatingcloud’s selection of disciples is strict, and as everyone knows, is to raise a cultivator from Qi Condensation to Foundation Establishment. It is only then at Foundation Establishment can one be counted as a pillar of their faction. Fellow Daoist is a hero of a generation to be capable of rising up and revealing his talents among the myriad masses.”

As these words were said, the people in the VIP seating suddenly looked oddly at the composed Shadowslay. This man... Whatever he said gave them a feeling of reticence, his speech succinct. But as these words came out, they knew that [this was a man that had a bloody bite to him](#).

Listening to this... They in themselves were ten great disciples; how could their resources not be generous? The Qin Imperial Court paid worship to Floatingcloud, so wouldn’t they also revere his disciples?! Moreover, they were raised from Qi Condensation to Foundation Establishment. Why on earth would other initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators go to you? Third, weren’t there thousands of Qi Condensation cultivators that wished to pay respects to Daomaster Floatingcloud? No... This was still possibly a conservative estimate...

They really could be said to be birds of a feather, closely related



to each other. Even if Xu Yangyi's thoughts were set with burning passion, upon hearing these words, he would immediately douse himself with a basin of cold water. Especially, these words that were openly praising, but secretly derisive...

The technique of handing a knife in darkness was not to be too profound.

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi sat down, meditating to restore his spiritual force. He only knew that in his battle moments ago, his wounds were rather heavy. Right now, it seemed that every single one of his bones had been broken. Moreover, that wasn't to mention that he could even smell the barbecued scent of his body... He really wanted to pick up Chu Zhaonan and beat the crap out of him, but for the sake of his counterpart passing out, he would just remember it for next time.

He couldn't be less aware of the situation in the outside world. Presently, he felt as if his five senses had left him far away, and his primary required nutrient was only the qi in the air.

He couldn't hear anything carefully... He still hadn't left, and the qi walls had still not opened. The outside appeared to be calm already, but the fact of the matter was that the hidden edge was beginning to tear things apart.

Right now, Lilac and her two fellow recruiters had no share to speak, yet their hearts burned with anxiety! If Xu Yangyi had been a bit worse, things would still be fine, but in his battle, the only remaining stone stele was Sunnihilator's, and moreover, he had made a crack appear on it! The event could hardly continue to be subdued!

Each these Foundation Establishment seniors were already making their own sanctimonious moves. Their words appeared ordinary but were actually a florid battle of tongues. If they didn't make a move, would there still be a share for them to eat?

"Senior." Vulture hardened his heart and immediately stepped

out, cupping his hands in greetings: “Right now, the injuries of the paragon and the runner-up aren’t light. Wouldn’t it be better to let them come out first? The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion has long prepared a precious pill elixir for this kind of situation. How about it...”

“That’s reasonable.” It was within his forecast that the four menacing gazes wouldn’t retract, but it was far beyond his expectations that Firecloud would be the first to clap his hands: “However... there’s no way around it.”

“These qi walls aren’t seals that disappear upon telling them to disperse. After all, Daomaster Floatingcloud who established the seal isn’t here. Thus, the seal is activated for a fixed time. I set up the time to be an hour...” He sighed regretfully, seemingly wanting to say something but he shook his head.

Lilac was stunned. Vulture was rendered dumb. Hibiscus’s lips were angrily trembling.

Shameless!

These words didn’t come out, but all of their eyes carried a gaze of “can you not be shameless?” as they looked at him. Firecloud leisurely held his hand at his back and looked at the qi walls, his expression exceptionally calm.

This was just great... There were many ways to express goodwill, but some people would directly close off the party in question from coming out!

“Of course, because of the severity of the wounds the students have sustained to their bodies, I will take it into consideration. In one of the years I was traveling, I once studied a restorative arcane effort. The name is quite simple, merely the two words ‘Good Fortune’. Afterwards, I investigated it...” He used his qi to revolve his voice through the entire arena, laughing as he looked at the crowd: “In Heavens Law’s Hidden Scripture Pavilion, it ranks as an A-rank arcane effort. Moreover, it is a supplementary arcane

effort. I shall personally heal the two young friends.”

This emotion. This shameless index. The detailed degree of this explanation.

All the cultivators below and as well as everyone in the VIP seating sighed with incomparable sorrow. Sure enough, the longer one lived, the more one would know when to be shameless and when to completely toss away one’s bottom line.

“Hehe...” Shadowslay laughed hollowly, not knowing whether or not this was a hallucination. Firecloud thought he heard the sound of the other grinding his teeth: “Fellow Daoist Firecloud, it’s been many years since we’ve last seen each other, but your essence is already as deep as the pennings of Mr. Li Bojia’s.”\*

It was from [Li Baojia’s Bureaucracy Unmasked](#) that the despicable word “shameless” originated from.

“Well said, well said.” Firecloud said with the least bit of concern. What did he want to save face for now? Didn’t he see that the eyes of everyone present had turned green in desire? This was no novel where the one with the greatest fist was king. The modern age was Cultivation Civilization. Any benefit, resources, and means had to be involve the mobilization of the entire body. A Foundation Establishment cultivator could suppress a great deal of the cultivators present, but they couldn’t disregard the opinions of over 10,000 Qi Condensation cultivators. President Li of the Nantong Cultivation Court was waiting everyday to give them, the wealthy Foundation Establishment cultivators, bullshit fines!

He still wanted to save face at this time?

He gently brandished his hand. In the sky, the four large characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens suddenly radiated a grand light. Subsequently, motes of qi sprinkled down, softly falling on Chu Zhaonan’s and Xu Yangyi’s bodies.

“Young friend Xu, Young friend Chu, how are you?” He laughed

and asked, not waiting for the crowd to react, he immediately took advantage of the opportunity to [hit the head of the snake](#).

There was no answer, but Firecloud, a Foundation Establishment cultivator, didn't get angry the least bit. Or perhaps it could be said that at this moment, such a thing as anger didn't exist in his dictionary. He laughed and took a step forward. With both of his hands at his back, he chuckled brightly: "Young friend Xu, this is my Good Fortune secret art. It appears simple, but it is in fact boundlessly profound. I have specifically increased the efficacy for the two young friends; do you still feel your body is in poor shape?"

Yes... in a civilized age, courtesy and manners were the development of society's system. There was nothing to say. However... why did they want to kick him so badly?

Several Foundation Establishment cultivators appeared disgusted like they had eaten a fly; looking at Firecloud's expression made them somewhat ill.

After several more minutes passed, Xu Yangyi's voice was heard: "Thank you, senior. My wounds have already healed. All that's left is my body's lack of qi."

"I might as well. The two of you just used up the utmost of your qi; you won't be able to bring it back in a short time. I know a grand formationist and have already invited him to come engrave a high-grade Spirit Focusing Formation. If young friend..."

"Cough..." Moonchaser was no longer able to abide by this. Was there still no law of the land?! Forcefully coughing, he cut off Firecloud's continued inducement, glaring fiercely at him and said clearly: "Young friend, do you know what the reward this time is?"

Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to respond, he revealed a smidgen of a smile: "It's Cultivator Floatingcloud's Burning Heavens Revelation!"

“Hiss...” As these words emerged, all the present cultivators collectively gasped coldly, and even Firecloud, Shadowsly, and the cultivators that weren’t well-known turned their heads to look at him incredulously.

An arcane effort was a cultivator’s foundation. In Heavens Law, the only one that could be learned was the Hundred Solutions. From Xu Yangyi’s and Chu Zhaonan’s struggle to become the paragon, the importance of arcane efforts could be seen in their entirety.

A complete arcane effort ought to have been comprised of five great systems: cultivation, attack, defense, evasion, and supplementary methods. Only such a fully developed system was capable of being called a true arcane effort!

An intact arcane effort was seldom seen. An entire high-level arcane effort was even more rare! As for the Burning Heavens Revelation, this was one of China’s name-shaking 50 grand arcane efforts! Only the arcane efforts specialized in by Core Formation masters and Great Circle of Foundation Establishment cultivators had the clout to be listed among China’s 50 grand arcane efforts. This was because these arcane efforts were verified to be capable of leading one at the least to the baseline of the pinnacle of Foundation Establishment!

However... the Burning Heavens Revelation was vastly different, since the one who cultivated it was Daomaster Floatingcloud, a great late-stage Core Formation cultivator!

In other words... this was a complete arcane effort that would lead straight to the late stage of Core Formation, one without a single flaw or the slightest hindrance!

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi suddenly opened his eyes. Even if it was him, he was endlessly amazed by Daomaster Floatingcloud’s grand style. He had originally believed the prize would be a spirit pill’s pill elixir or perhaps an awesome magik artifact—although he

had never seen what a magik artifact looked like, the gun in Chu Zhaonan's hand was probably one, but the latter was currently incapable of answering.

“In the ranking of secret arts... the Burning Heavens Revelation ranks in the twenty-seventh position...” At this moment, the thousands of people in the arena were silent. The white beard beneath an old ancestor's chin was trembling, his voice wavering: “T-The prize this time is a-actually this treasure... Such a secret art will go to this person...”

His eyes reddened in a flash, the significance of this didn't be said! This was equivalent to saying that as long as Xu Yangyi didn't die during the cruel passage of the cultivation, he had the hope of becoming a Core Formation cultivator!

Among the million cultivators, there were only ten that were great Core Formation Dao Masters! This fame, barely a seemingly rational desire, was worth them discarding everything aside to gamble for!

As long as a Core Formation cultivator appeared in any clan, even if they were in a muddy quagmire in the past, they would be able to soar straight to clear blue skies in the next second! Yet he didn't expect by any means that it would actually be the origin of cultivation that the cultivation world fought over for—an arcane effort!

“This a man that had a bloody bite to him” Actual Chinese is more along the lines of “A dog that bites people should not be called on and leaves bloody bite”. Literally. Meant to describe someone who is somewhat concealed/ordinary, but is actually powerful.

This is kinda hard to relate to for western audience in my opinion. Bureaucracy Unmasked = Officialdom Unmasked (official title) is the translated title of Li Baojia's work that focuses on themes of opposing government/corruption/bureaucracy. Li Baojia

was a writer/essayist during the Qin Dynasty period.

Hit the head of the snake is an idea to “take advantage of the situation” but in a sneaky way. Used in a derogatory sense.

## Chapter 45: Faction Showdown (2)

---

At the same time these words were said on stage, there was no fight at the scene. To hastily join in on the war of Foundation Establishment seniors and Core Formation masters to fight over people was by no means an easy matter! How could the same objects of the others be better than their own? If they didn't search according to their own positions, and they found that they in themselves were enough to attract other's strong points, they could forget about participating on the eve of this tempest-like struggle.

Click clack click clack... the sound of keyboard typing resonated in each of the great clans. It was like passing clouds and flowing water, not pausing the least bit for rest.

"I'm glad I'm living in the age of Cultivation Civilization right now..." An old woman inhaled deeply with her face flushed. Her chest rising up and down severely, she said shrilly: "If it was the past, how could we dare to compete with those leviathans. But now that the society's culture is developing, a fusion of several thousand years of cultivation and civilization, we have a sliver of an opportunity..."

She finished speaking and suddenly opened her eyes, her voice carrying an excited hoarseness: "Xu Yangyi's numerical statistics haven't come out! We of Yuyang's Song Clan cannot let this opportunity slip by!"

Yes, times had changed. A thing such as law was not only something normal people knew of, but also little Qi Condensation cultivators and Foundation Establishment seniors knew of. Even Core Formation masters had to abide by it, as well.

The law was something that only those at the top of the world could trifle with. If one didn't comply with rules, then it was simply no rule. The world's system would shatter apart, and the



result was absolutely something that the entire Earth's several tens of Core Formation masters couldn't bear!

What about their easy cultivating and supplies? And the people? Would they still want their Core Formation masters themselves to go out searching?

"The stats are out!" On the other side, a couple tens of men and women in suits beat their keyboards as if their lives depended on it: "Ancestor, through the statistics of the final second of qi captured, Mr. Xu's final fist strength reached 3800 kilograms and his speed was at 80 meters per second!"

A white-haired man called ancestor didn't speak. Only his ten fingers that were intersected together turned white! This... was the data of the middle-stage of Qi Condensation! It even surpassed that of ordinary middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivators by a shred!

"Get ready..." The man said tremblingly, his voice crowing as he stood up: "No matter what, we must fight this time!"

Among everyone, only Chu Tianyi bore a sneer on his face.

Cultivators didn't have much time to handle interpersonal relationships. He himself was a man of sophistication that had come from true "humanity"... What Moonchaser had said moments ago was not wrong; Xu Yangyi would surely be tempted, however, he had forgotten of humanity's instinct!

Perhaps he was planning on letting Xu Yangyi set his heart in following him. After all, didn't Xu Yangyi want to become enlightened in an arcane effort? What if he ran into a bottleneck? How would it be regarded if you took my arcane effort and didn't join my sect? But...

But! From how he spoke, everyone knew that Xu Yangyi was bound with a Core Formation arcane effort! Even if it was a sect they had to move aside for and didn't want to struggle with, at this moment, everyone had to exhaust their maximum strength to

stake it all!

“Young friend, your cultivation is on its way. You will definitely encounter all kinds of bottlenecks. Floatingcloud’s sect won’t force you to become a sect disciple by any means, however, is there anyone greater than Daomaster Floatingcloud that can point out these obstacles? Yes, Daomaster Floatingcloud has a policy of nurturing talents. However, there is a grand class once every year! His Grace will personally appear to dispel your doubts!” Moonchaser struck while the iron was hot.

Chu Tianyi chuckled coldly and closed his eyes.

The crashing waves would continue to keep pushing and swelling... The struggle would truly explode...

Moonchaser didn’t pay heed to the gazes of other cultivators. His thoughts were rather proper by all rights. Who would dare fight now that Daomaster Floatingcloud’s name had arose? It was nothing but a few major powers, but the prize this time was surprisingly to hook a big fish. He truly did have an endless admiration for Daomaster Floatingcloud’s foresight.

“Core Formation arcane effort... A Core Formation Great Dao...” Below, a man with a marigold on his chest breathed disorderly, clenching his fist to a deathly pallor: “Zhaoping City’s Li Clan hears and obeys!”

“It’s here!”

“Please instruct the second clan master!”

“We must use our maximum strength... to win over Fellow Daoist Xu! Immediately satisfy any of his request!”

“Yes!”

“Tianfeng City’s Su Clan hears and obeys!” Not too far away, a man with reddened eyes said with a hoarse voice: “Don’t hesitate at all costs... Even if the Su Clan’s ancestral legacies are emptied! This man must be won!”

“To wrest him over is equivalent to stealing a Core Formation master seedling! Our Su Clan will have the hope to emerge into power!”

“Beijiangyuan City’s Fang Clan hears and obeys!” On the other side, a man in his early twenties waved both of his hands, rigidly locking his eyes on the billowing qi wall: “No matter what... we must risk it all this time! Immediately contact the Fang Clan if we can transfer all financial businesses! Gold! Spirit stones! Resources! Real estate!”

“But, young master...”

“No buts!” The youth turned his head and glared at everyone, breathing heavily like an ox: “After we return, I will speak to the ancestor!”

The present was already an ocean of silent undercurrents. In the blink of an eye... a tsunami had arrived! Even the breathing of the crowd had joined together to become a great river of passion. Originally... Xu Yangyi alone almost reddened their eyes. Now... this person was even tied to a Core Formation arcane effort?!

Was this a joke?! If this person wasn’t snatched up, when would they wait to do so?!

Perhaps Daomaster Floatingcloud himself hadn't expected that his prize of an arcane effort could be called an exquisite chess piece by itself. As long as any champion wanted to master it, they would have to go to him to learn it. It was the same as him beginning to set the title of master and disciple, but he hadn’t expected...

Moonchaser’s good intentions had ruined the matter and thoroughly ignited this fire!

Firecloud’s lips angrily trembled to a pasty color. He had believed himself to be shameless enough, but he hadn’t anticipated the shamelessness of a Core Formation master; it was truly worthy of praise and admiration!

Standing in an invincible position, cool and composed... He clenched his teeth hatefully and turned his head, still wanting to say something, but suddenly, a high noise like that of an arrow piercing through clouds in the sky completely tore open the seemingly tranquil cover!

“This is the CSIB special envoy C-Lilac! I just contacted the branch chief moments ago! The CSIB is willing to offer a 5 billion USD signing bonus! Five supreme-grade spirit stones! An attack-type supreme-grade magik artifact of any choice! A defensive-type supreme-grade magik artifact of any style! An evasion-type supreme-grade magik artifact of whatever you desire! A supplementary-type supreme-grade magik artifact of any fancy! Moreover, we will establish a medium-scale spirit stone mine for you alone! It is accompanied by three types of B-grade rare metals: Mooncrescent Gold, Fireblaze Ruby, and Myriadlight Stone! It’s not just this! Mr. Xu will get to enjoy the lone privilege of an estate with a high-grade Spirit Focusing Formation! You’ll be specially appointed a Wealth Repossession Captain! The special privilege of the Nine National Offices! In addition, the CSIB won’t take a single percentage share!”

Crash! The crowd finally exploded!

The CSIB’s massive expenditure astonished everyone present! Even the four Foundation Establishment cultivators had turned their heads back in shock at this instant.

“You... You’re truly willing to part with such capital?!” Moonchaser finally understood the folly of what he had done! The CSIB hadn’t made a move, but when they did, they spent a frighteningly extravagant cost!

“A mine with three B-grade metals... They’re planning on arming him to the teeth! They’re going to raise him to the pinnacle of Foundation Establishment?! Four supreme-grade magik artifacts... Fuck... Has Foundation Establishment become four supreme-grade magik treasures?! A high-grade Spirit Focusing Formation...”

Firecloud couldn't help but to curse fiercely. This spending style was too great, so great that he didn't dare to welcome it! His entire worth wasn't valued that much!

The worth of a Foundation Establishment cultivator to buy a single person!

Originally, Xu Yangyi wouldn't have been worth so much. It was like he had studied abroad and returned, only his starting point was much higher than where everyone else stood. However, the final result wouldn't be him simply becoming the CEO upon returning from studying abroad after ten-odd years, the position that everyone had struggled for.

But now... Xu Yangyi had secured a Core Formation arcane effort! His fiendish aptitude came in addition with a Great Dao arcane effort that would lead straight to Core Formation!

But what if Floatingcloud didn't teach him later on?

Not a problem! The CSIB still had Core Formation masters stationed in command! Even if their understanding of the Burning Heavens Revelation was inferior to Daomaster Floatingcloud's, couldn't it be understood via analogy?

What? You don't understand? Say it loud, brother, do you not believe I won't slap you to death and send you flying outside the heavens?!

With Xu Yangyi's aptitude that was capable of shaking Sunnihilator's stone stele and making it crack, an explosive strength that surpassed ordinary middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivators, and the addition of this Core Formation arcane effort...

Not even to mention the savory smell of a steamed bun, he was gold! He was the whole hog!

"We are Fengyi's Wang Clan! As long as young friend Xu says the word, you will be a candidate for the next clan master! The entire

Wang Clan, all of the initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators will be yours to command!” Before Lilac’s voice had even fallen, an old man with reddened eyes stood up not to be outdone. His voice even shook the sand on the floor: “Young friend, consider it clearly. Admittedly, joining a big organization is good, however, there are countless clauses and rules awaiting you! Don’t you want to be as free as the idle clouds and the field cranes?”

“Hehehe... Old Ghost Wang, you sure speak full of yourself. Not to even mention the rank twenty-seventh Burning Heavens Revelation, how could a golden dragon like young friend Xu himself take residence in a shallow cave? A phoenix doesn’t perch on a parasol tree.” Before he finished speaking, a seemingly swiftly moving but motionless old woman with a young girl supporting her stood up. Her wizened and thin hand was like that of a chicken claw, shivering: “There are more than a hundred clans present in Nantong Province, and every clan has brought at least 50 to 60 members and at the most 200 elites. In this endless human tide, you’ve come to gamble your clan legacies, but you’ve completely avoided placing my Zhaoping’s Chen Clan in your eyes.”

“Young friend Xu, our Chen Clan is no different, but we are Nantong Province’s largest alchemy clan! Perhaps all the pill elixirs of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion are only model numbers and spread through various channels, but were you aware that true high-grade pill elixirs are never put online for auction?!”

“In Nantong Province, the Chen Clan stands on top in the way of alchemy. As I just said, if the Chen Clan says we are second, none will dare to say they are first! As long as you sign a contract with my Chen Clan, our agreement won’t be one to life and death; only a hundred years! My Chen Clan’s pill elixirs will be totally opened to you without restriction!”

As her voice came to the end, she nearly yelled: “No matter any pill elixir! As long as it’s on the market, my Chen Clan will refine it! You can even ask everyone here, in which of Nantong Province’s

auctions does the highest grade of pill elixirs not originate from my Chen Clan?”

“If old madam Chen is speaking like so, then our Fengyi’s Wang Clan wants to throw in our two cents, as well.” Before the first wave had even subsided, a second one had come crashing. A youth in a refined western suit stood up and pushed back on his gold-rimmed glasses. He was seemingly calm, yet his palms were already overflowing with cold sweat: “Fellow Daoist Xu, my Fengyi’s Wang Clan governs three of the western provinces! Nantong, Yunki, and Guifang. Which clan’s high-grade Spirit Focusing Formations has not come by my Wang Clan’s hand? The Chen Clan is wealthy, but the Wang Clan stands on similar footing!”

“Fellow Daoist Xu, if you join a big organization, we will cup our hands and express our good wishes. However, layers upon layers of rules and etiquette is unquestionably inferior to the joyous liberations of an unfettered lord of a major city! I, Wang Chaofeng, the young master of the Wang Clan, guarantee here that if Fellow Daoist Xu joins the Wang Clan, we will also only sign you on for a hundred years! After a hundred years, Fellow Daoist Xu may do as he will! Not only will my Wang Clan open a Spirit Focusing Formation for Fellow Daoist Xu, the Wang Clan’s three most precious treasures: [Six Yin Fairies](#), Six Yang Gods; Immortal Erudition; and Dragon Swallows Setting Sun, will be open to Fellow Daoist with unlimited access!”

Six Yin Fairies, Six Yang Gods - 六丁六甲, If you are familiar with the concept of “Ding” and “Jia” Both these things represent a duality of Yin and Yang. You might know these are part of the ten heavenly stems, part of China’s ancient sexagenary cycle. These stems are based on elements/animals, part of a sixty day cycle. (twelve animals, five elements) (5\*12) I’m not very good at explaining this.

## Chapter 46: Faction Showdown (3)

---

“This is the Wang Clan’s hidden ace...” The clan master of a small clan without the resources to participate in this struggle enviously gave vent to his anger: “The Chen Clan... is Nantong Province’s premier alchemy clan with an inheritance of over 400 years. I’ve heard that when their ancestor still came out, he was a cultivator at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment... The Wang Clan’s three talismans. One to save one’s life, one to evade assault, and one to attack... Others could take out a high-grade spirit stone, but not get a talisman. I’ve heard that only close acquaintances can get one... and now he has actually said they’re all open...”

“It’s because they only have this one opportunity to make a move.” At his side, a leader from a small clan sighed: “In comparison to the CSIB, Featherwood Guard, and Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, they only have this chance to make a bid. They hope to inflame Fellow Daoist Xu’s heart so that he signs right on the spot, or perhaps he won’t sign with anyone here. Until they have an opportunity, they’ll make secret contact. Ugh, this sure is a mess...”

“But... how could the Big Three possibly let Fellow Daoist Xu sign right here?” The clan master that had spoke before shook his head and sighed: “The scene looks intense. The true buyers are those three clans, huh...”

“You heard the conditions that CSIB came out with first... A Wealth Repossession Captain, the Nine National Offices... If Fellow Daoist Xu finds any ancient remnants, he can mobilize forces straight away. Mooncrescent Gold, Fireblaze Ruby, and Myriadlight Stone, which one of these isn’t a famous refining material worth a thousand catties of gold? A medium-scale mine... All Fellow Daoist Xu has to do is nod and it could even be said he’ll be able to call wind and rain later on. This wading water is those



three clans' [stabilizing force](#).”

Xu Yangyi continued to absorb qi. His qi sea was as empty as the void. Not a speck of qi existed within his entire body. Against Chu Zhaonan's final strike of two bullets, the glimmer of gold and the still moon submerged in jade, he had defended against one shot with his maximum strength, but the other had drilled into his chest like a viper.

Although it was not life threatening, it caused him to be incapable of utilizing his entire body's spiritual force! Even if he absorbed more again, the qi he had just tried to assimilate would simply not be stored within his qi sea!

He closed his eyes, and everything seemed to remain still. All the activity on the outside entered his ear, yet he carried a wisp of a ridiculing smile at the crook of his mouth.

The Burning Heavens Revelation... He had never heard of it, but from the hardly undisguised reactions of the people on the outside and Moonchaser's meticulous introduction, he knew as well that this was a supreme arcane effort that lead directly to the Grand Dao of Core Formation. Something that was yearned for in dreams!

However... am I, Xu Yangyi, worth just this trifling arcane effort?

True, this arcane effort could allow him to become the carp that had leapt over the dragon gate. In the same vein, he held an extreme thirst for it. But...

The blood in his heart was boiling, and he licked his cracked, bloodstained lips, laughing coldly: “It's a pity that you've all forgotten my initial aspiration.”

“It's fine if I don't join such an immortal sect.”

If these words were set free in the outside world, it was unknown how many people would beat their chests and stamp their feet or how many people would curse him foolish. Cultivation was the struggle of all living things. Among the ten Core Formation Great

Daos, even Foundation Establishment cultivators would topple over for one that could open wide a crack in the door, but Xu Yangyi actually said to never mind joining one?”

Xu Yangyi still didn't have any experience walking through the true cultivation world. He was basically clueless... of how heavy the position of this Core Formation arcane effort was when placed in the outside world! It was unpleasant to hear, but it wasn't an exaggeration that this art would attract a killing that would overflow the heavens in blood!

He only knew he was looking forward to and fantasizing about the graduation—and this because—only that way he would be capable of tracking down the murderer that Heavens Law couldn't find in broad seas and boundless skies!

He had waited to execute his plan of thirteen years for the shadow that had streaked through countless of times in his nightmares! He could laugh and recount of his mother and father's great enmity, but by no means could he laugh and relinquish it! He could laugh and speak of it to Chief Zheng because it was the brand at the bottom of his heart.

Why had he entered Heavens Law? Why had he said those words to Chu Zhaonan under sorrow? His heart faintly ached, and he seemed to return that time in the past when he was eight years old, clearly looking at two faces that already appeared fuzzy, yet were incomparably distinct.

“Arcane efforts are secondary.” He shut his eyes and sensed qi scouring his flesh, devoid of joy or sorrow, yet it was unwavering in not filling in his qi sea. Qi seemed to choke in his chest where the bullet was located, dissipating with a rumble.

“Spirit stones are secondary. Resources, magik artifacts... these things are all secondary!” His two fists on his knees slightly clenched, yet his voice was flat without disturbance, like a cicada wing in the air: “If a cultivator cannot hold staunch in their own

heart, why cultivate? Why oppose the heavens?” His unresolved revenge on his mortal foe had twisted him as a child. “Could it be that none of you can see what I truly desire?”

“Do you believe I’ll come rushing over like a rabid dog for an arcane effort? And grovel beneath Daomaster Floatingcloud?” The sliver of a sneer perked up at the crook of his mouth. “Naive.”

“I, Xu Yangyi, am a man of true grit and untamed spirit. I am not so cheap.” He didn’t open his mouth any longer and said no more. He continued to listen to the conversations on the outside. Of the various falling flowers, there would inevitably be one that suited him.

[The Ruo River was 3000 miles long, but only a single ladle could be drank from it.](#) Even if the ladle wasn’t the Big Three, but merely a cultivation clan.

Outside the qi walls, Firecloud was currently in a dour mood. As a lone cultivator that had made his way into the world, his legacies couldn’t compare to the generousness of the clans. Right here, right now, the show had already reached a burning-white climax. The clans stood up one by one and took out their hidden aces. Even their conditions made the eyes of several Foundation Establishment cultivators turn green in envy. He had secretly sealed off the qi walls, leaving the two people inside to their actions, but it seemed to have become a joke.

What did it matter whether or not they came out?

In any case, it wasn’t his turn. Not even to compare his bargaining piece to the CSIB’s marvelous conditions, his Good Fortune arcane effort didn’t hold any advantage even lined up with the famous cultivation clans.

But in comparison to his expression, Moonchaser’s was even more unsightly. It was far beyond his calculations that he, who was enthralled by cultivation, had screwed up in his good intentions. The chess piece that Daomaster Floatingcloud had

arranged in passing had actually been messed up by his own disciple!

“An A-rank demon core.” At this time, a voice suddenly echoed out: “And an additional A-rank Foundation Establishment magik treasure.” At long last, Shadowslay was no longer able to control himself from speaking. How deep did a Foundation Establishment cultivator’s qi have to be to suppress the voices of everyone present just by speaking?

“It’s only the demon core of a demon that hasn’t even reached Core Formation. What is it? A-rank? Late-stage Foundation Establishment?” Firecloud gritted his teeth: “You’re truly willing to part with it! The foundation between you and I has already been set; what use is there in wanting the Burning Heavens Revelation! Don’t tell me you’ve hardened your heart to wash your meridians and rake your marrow?”

“You’re completely capable of asking the branch upstairs to take a look if he has some other interests! It’s not necessary to come down with such an exorbitant sum!”

“This is his down payment.” Shadowslay looked motionlessly at the billowing qi walls: “It’s not for the arcane effort. It’s only for he himself.”

“I’m aware my down payment doesn’t even compare to many Foundation Establishment cultivator clans. However, this is my approach.” His gaze twinkled: “Fellow Daoist Firecloud, you and I haven’t known each other for no short time. How many people here do you believe are making moves just for that Core Formation arcane effort?”

Firecloud was stunned, and Shadowslay said indifferently: “No... Not many. For a famous scholar to be bequeathed with a treasure sword, for a person with not enough comprehension or talent to obtain this arcane effort, it is only a reckless waste.” He looked quietly at the boiling crowd and said lowly: “Are they setting down

such capital earned with their blood and sweat just in order to waste it fruitlessly?”

After several seconds of silence, Firecloud waved his hand disappointedly: “Indeed... They dare not to haphazardly cultivate a Core Formation cultivator's arcane effort. Otherwise, it would be nought but a path to ruin... You wish to sow good karma? Even if we're already incapable of accepting him as a disciple this time?”

Shadowslay faintly nodded, his voice could chop through nails and slice apart iron: “In a couple decades, as long as this child doesn't die on the bramble-covered path of cultivation, he'll surely be included on the list of Foundation Establishment cultivators.”

“Furthermore...” Shadowslay sighed: “The branch's communication equipment has sparked out. You believe I haven't asked young friend Xu because I have some other interest? The communication upstairs was cut off.”

Firecloud sucked in deeply. Very soon, the situation would become increasingly chaotic, and under the circumstances of his own possibility ever shrinking, he said clearly: “The Good Fortune art can enhance a bottle of ten-year-refined Spirit Accumulating Elixir.”

This was an item of two variants that when ordinarily taken out would undoubtedly cause Foundation Establishment and Qi Condensation cultivators to scramble over it. But now, as each family came out with conditions so generous that the eyes of others went red, it wasn't much to look at. The sole eye-catching aspect about it was probably that it had come from a Foundation Establishment cultivator.

His gaze carried an obvious twitch to it as he looked at everyone. Finally, it settled on top of the special envoys of several major powers.

As long as they didn't speak... he still had an opportunity!

Vulture saw the clear threat carried in Firecloud's gaze. The man simply hadn't bothered to even conceal it, yet Vulture was only stunned and immediately gritted his teeth, taking a step forward.

"Young friend..." Firecloud laughed grimly without inflection: "The path of cultivation is long and distant. Whether or not it should be said, it's good to consider it clearly."

This was a naked, undisguised threat!

Vulture was not resigned to this! How could he be reconciled with this!

Such two great seeds had appeared in this graduation. According to the present conditions, the bids of the several Foundation Establishment cultivators were on the contrary the lowest! He would have to look on helplessly as these two great seedlings cupped hands to others, with one of them even attached with an arcane effort that lead straight to a Core Formation Great Dao! How could he wish for such pain in his heart?!

"Senior..." Vulture agonizingly cupped his hands in greeting: "Everyone is just acting for their masters... I'm incapable of moving back, as well..." It appeared that in order to steady his confidence, just as he finished speaking these words, he used his entire body's spiritual force to shout: "I'm the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion's special envoy C-Vulture! Through the instructions of the regional president of three western provinces, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion is willing to sign Fellow Daoist Xu for a hundred years with a signing bonus of 10 billion USD! A 4 Billion USD bonus for Fellow Daoist Chu to sign for eighty years!"

"At the same time, there will be three supreme-grade spirit stones! A supreme-grade magik artifact for Fellow Daoist Chu! Fellow Daoist Xu, your magik artifact will be worked together on by the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion's three grandmasters at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment! A refiner, an alchemist, and a talismancer!"

“A medium-scale spirit stone mine with Scarletspirit Silver, Spiritswallowing Agate, Waxingluna Stone, and Infantmarked Steel, four kinds of A-rank rare metals!”

“A large palace located above two spirit caves! These two spirit caves have been dug out and left with two small spirit veins by the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s pavilion master, His Excellency Crimsonmoon! It’s naturally sustaining! Moreover, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion will bear the two Fellow Daoists’ cultivation times with full responsibility!”

“Hiss...”

“My heavens...”

“This is madness...”

“Three supreme-grade spirit stones... A mine with four kinds of rare metals... Two spirit caves... My god... T-this is forcing the other organizations into immediate submission.”

Chu Tianyi’s eyes narrowed for a long time. At this instant, his heart was cold, but the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s bid had made it grow colder! The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion... didn’t lack in anything. It’s lone deficiency was a Core Formation master! In the Big Three, it was the sole power without a Core Formation cultivator in command!

“There is...” Vulture’s throat somewhat ached: “There is also...”

“We will gather our entire pavilion’s strength to make you a Core Formation master!”

Before Vulture’s voice had even fallen, cold gasps subsequently rose and fell in succession.

Rich and domineering!

At this moment, even Lilac’s teeth were itching in anger. This truly was rich and domineering!

The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s expenditure left everyone

dumbfounded. It was unknown how many people here at this moment had thought of snatching Xu Yangyi. But so long as he nodded, his worth would surpass a majority of the clans here in a flash!

“Who are you flaunting your wealth for...” Lilac said lowly and gnashed her teeth. A nameless fire arched upwards within her heart. She was helpless without the slightest method to her disposal.

To the CSIB, this high price had already exceeded the value brought by the luxurious “Xu Yangyi and the Arcane Effort Combo” package.

In the end, he was still only at Qi Condensation right now. As for what his future would be like, it was only because there was a “possibility” of reaching Core Formation that they were willing to pay this exorbitant price. However, by no means was he “bound” to reach Core Formation.

If Xu Yangyi was “bound”, then there would be several Core Formation masters personally visiting today.

“I’m with the Featherwood Guard! If Fellow Daoist Xu joins our organization, we shall assist Fellow Daoist Xu in finding his parents’ murderer with our utmost effort! Moreover, we shall assign Fellow Daoist Xu with cultivators he can choose from our department as a personal guard! At the same time, this personal guard will henceforth be Fellow Daoist Xu’s to control! Fellow Daoist Xu will immediately be registered in the Featherwood Guard highest division!” Not waiting for the surprised gasps to come to an end, Lotus was already bellowing: “And that’s in a word, Fellow Daoist Xu!”

定海神针 - “Stabilizing force” It’s interesting to note that this an alternative name for Sun Wukong’s weapon (the monkey king), which is a golden staff/cudgel. Literally translates to “Fixing-Ocean God Needle”



This is a phrase that finds its roots in the Chinese Classic Dream of the Red Chamber. Original meaning was an idea that “There are tons of girls, but you can only pick one”. In this context, it refers to Xu Yangyi having lots of choices

## Chapter 47: Faction Showdown (4)

---

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi's gaze finally sparked, and he cautiously lifted his head. He had finally found a flower petal belonging to him. Of the endless flowers that passed, not a single one had touched him.

Since that day his ten-odd years of training concluded, he had never cared for status and wealth. Finally, his footsteps had stopped before a not-too-appealing autumn chrysanthemum.

"Is the Featherwood Guard's promise something that Fellow Daoist Hibiscus can under take?" As everyone boiled over, the serene voice of a man emerged from the arena stage. It was only a strand of spiritual force, so it was difficult for people to see it. To hear it clearly cost a bit strength.

But as this voice arose, everyone's mouths froze. Not only was it the clans, even a few great Foundation Establishment cultivators were the same. This was Xu Yangyi's voice! Presently, his spiritual force had been scattered apart by that strange bullet. This was the spiritual force he had barely managed stored.

After Hibiscus had bellowed, her heart had long since hit rock bottom. The Featherwood Guard was a special organization. To be frank, it was a tremendous guild. Any cultivator's time was comparable to gold, and while a hundred years seemed very long, it was in fact not as endless as in the imaginations of madly cultivating cultivators. But what if he needed some item, but it wasn't in the hands of others, or perhaps he didn't have the item to be exchanged and only had spirit stones; what would he do?

At that time, he could go the Featherwood Guard to post a mission, and the Featherwood Guard would take a fifth of the commission from the issued mission. In comparison to the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion that dominated most supplementary ventures and the government agency CSIB that held an intimate

relationship with the Chinese government, they were the poorest!

She could do nothing more than shout, but it was out of her expectations that Xu Yangyi would respond! Their conditions couldn't be considered generous at all, yet she hadn't expected to hear the sound of a heavenly lyre in the next second!

"T-this..." The clan master of a great clan was flabbergasted. He didn't dare to be convinced of all he had just heard. "Have I misheard things?" He looked at his assistant by his side in shock and asked.

"No..." The assistant pursed his lips. He felt it was unimaginable, as well. What was happening? The Featherwood Guard was a major power, but their conditions couldn't be considered the best in any way! For what reason had Xu Yangyi not asked Moonchaser, the CSIB, and the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, but on the contrary questioned the Featherwood Guard?

"Is this person a madman or is there something wrong with his brain?!" A clan master obtained a definite answer and suddenly slapped the stone beneath him, nearly spitting out a mouthful of blood in rage: "Is it that our Lu Clan's stated conditions are worse than the Featherwood Guard's?! Their organization is limited to their structured methods; to come out with such conditions is already their limit! Not even to speak of ourselves, but how are the goods put forth by either the alchemy-based Chen Clan and talisman-based Wang Clan just now lacking in comparison with the Featherwood Guard?! Is he mentally ill?!"

"At this kind of time, he didn't pick the best conditions when he's a hot commodity, but instead chose the middling Featherwood Guard?!" An old man with a full head of white hair rapped the cane in his hand on the ground with a thud, his eyes flared with anger.

If they lost out to the CSIBS's and Bountiful Treasure Pavilion's exaggeratedly fictitious conditions, they could only sigh deeply that their target couldn't be had. However, the Featherwood

Guard was far from being compared to these two organizations. Their conditions weren't much different from a great clan's, yet Xu Yangyi had called out to them first. How the hell did that happen?!

"The seed appointed to him from within the Featherwood Guard for his selection will be extremely generous! But what about the signing bonus?! The favor of resources?! His future pledge?!" A middle-aged woman direly fanned herself and said hotly: "They don't hold an advantage in a single one! Not a single one!"

"He actually answered the Featherwood Guard!"

Hibiscus was dazed for but a second.

She nearly used all of her spiritual force in the next second and yelled: "I can guarantee it! I guarantee I can do it! The Featherwood Guard's Deputy Hallmaster Tang is hurrying over here to the Heavens Law branch! He's a middle-stage Foundation Establishment senior! Deputy Hallmaster Tang can also promise to put forth your sign-on bonus without delay at the same time! The Featherwood Guard doesn't have many precious treasures, but our number of readily available spirit stones is by no means few! The Featherwood Guard will imburse all of the spirit stones and resources that Fellow Daoist Xu will need later on, even a high-grade Spirit Focusing Formation! Of the few grand refiners that exist, one of them is in the Featherwood Guard!"

"Fellow Daoist Xu!" Her voice had been stirred to hoarseness, and she excitedly took a step forward: "As long as Fellow Daoist joins our organization, all conditions may be discussed!" She had wholly not expected that the first time Xu Yangyi would raise his voice, it would actually be directed towards the Featherwood Guard!

Brilliant fireworks suddenly exploded all around her, and she took out the next condition without hardly any consideration! This was the Featherwood Guard's bottom line!

The surroundings were quiet as the Featherwood Guard declared

its conditions. The other clans could denounce it, but when this major player in the cultivation world spoke, it could absolutely not be interrupted. Everyone's gazes were nailed to the billowing qi walls, waiting on Xu Yangyi's response on the edge of their seats.

Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself. In his silence, Vulture nearly smashed his cell phone!

How could the Fenyi City Heavens Law branch be so poor?! Why was it they couldn't change their communication equipment?! At such an important juncture where he had been planning to ask if Xu Yangyi had other pastimes or interests, he was unexpectedly incapable of making a call?!

He couldn't wait any longer... He sucked in deeply and said clearly: "Fellow Daoist Xu! Are you not planning on considering it? The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion isn't wanting in any aspect, be it rare treasures, precious items, or spirit stones, we have it all! Whatever the Featherwood Guard can give to you, our Bountiful Treasures Pavilion can bestow, as well! Moreover, we'll give double!"

While it was a major power, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion's lack of a Core Formation cultivator had forever been its pain! On the two accounts of a genius second only to Sunnihilator and a Core Formation-grade arcane effort, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion had neither! With these two points added together, there was a sliver of a possibility "equal" to a Core Formation master!

Give up? He was not resigned to do so in any way!

There was no time to ask the branch again... Now was the time put forth a heavy fist!

"If you promise..." He gritted his teeth and opened his wrist watch: "I'll immediately open dispatch to the branch. You can discuss it here with the branch chief! No matter any condition you desire!"

“Fellow Daoist Xu... Do you know why Heavens Law is unable to find the murderer you want to search for?” Within the qi walls, there was no answer, so Vulture cut straight to the heart of the matter and questioned lowly.

It was silent once more, and after the passage of a few seconds, Xu Yangyi’s voice finally echoed out: “I’d like to hear the details.”

Hook, line, and sinker!

Vulture’s eyes twinkled. This was it... The crux of the matter laid here!

While perhaps the cultivations of the special envoys from the Big Three weren’t the highest, they were undeniably the ones who knew the most about the ways of the world! The instant he had heard that the Featherwood Guard who didn’t occupy a superior position in a single aspect was able to obtain Xu Yangyi’s favor, he understood it was only because they had added on one more condition!

To assist Xu Yangyi in finding the murderer of his parents!

“It’s because of the scope of authority!” He immediately said without the least hesitation: “Fellow Daoist Xu, you couldn’t possibly be aware unless you were one of Heavens Law’s half-step Core Formation cultivators or genuine Core Formation authorities... but on China’s wanted list, besides the A-rank listing... there is also the S-rank listing above! Even SS-rank! And it goes so far as SSS-rank listing!”

“There’s such a thing!”

“The S-rank listing... The A-rank Vermilion Snow is at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment; could it be that S-rank is Core Formation?!”

“SS-rank is the middle stage of Core Formation?! SSS-rank is the late stage of Core Formation?!”

“My god... How could this be possible!” “

A-rank is actually not the highest?!”

The present scene immediately became a storm of uproars. The entirety of China was crystal clear on this list. The name of the list was “Heavenly Demons”, and all of China’s most crazed, powerful, and homicidal demons were on it!

Fengyi’s Vermilion Snow was ranked ninth. Kill count: started at 500,000 and included four cities. To this day, Hegu Province still had a Fox King Temple. Its viciousness had not changed. It gained its name from leaving 50 kilometers of snowy lands dyed in blood. Birth date: Era of Emperor Daoguang, exact specifics unclear. Present lair: across from Fengyi City’s Heavens Law branch in the Triumphant Virtue Plaza. Realm: Great Circle of Foundation Establishment.

Shanghai’s [Sootharkener](#) was ranked tenth. Kill count: started at 300,000. Birth date: Era of Emperor Qianlong, exact specifics unclear. Present lair: Underwater Sootharkener Palace in Shanghai’s Huangpu River. Realm: Great Circle of Foundation Establishment.

Beijing’s “[Mr. One-Eye Five](#)”, the One-eyed Pentageist. Kill count: started at 300,000. Birth date: unknown. Present lair: unknown. It acted as an adviser for a famous demon family, the Ming Clan.

All kinds of frequently heard names that were enough to send the spirits of Qi Condensation cultivators scattering in fear streaked through the ears of every person. There wasn’t anyone, even Firecloud, that was able to restrain the trembling of their entire body.

These... were the true Greater Demons concealed within human society! The lingering evils of the past that were but a mere step away from treading into Core Formation! And there was an S-rank bounty list above these demons?!

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi shut his eyes and sat down in meditation, yet was in the end unable to restrain the trembling of

his eyes. It had been many years... but he finally had a trace of a clue to follow! But this was the S-rank bounty list... Even if he did find his nemesis, then what?

Although he was presently a marvelous commodity worthy of raising, he was too weak. He stifled the frenzied palpitations of his heart. The feeling within his arteries was fiercely scalding.

“Could Fellow Daoist take a look at the S-rank bounty list?” He pursed his lips firmly and asked lowly.

“He can’t!” At this instant, Lilac’s voice pushed itself to the head once more: “All of these things are under the administration of the CSIB! I’ll make an immediate report to HQ! Fellow Daoist Xu, believe in me, the CSIB is your best choice! We can discuss conditions again! The CSIB is the highest authority to compose every ranking list!”

“Fellow Daoist Xu, you’re at the cusp of truly treading into society! You’ll know right away that the CSIB has great authority in the cultivation world! I, Lilac, guarantee this here! If you join the CSIB, I can let you look at the S-rank bounty list in ten minutes!”

“But!” Her anger already thoroughly ignited, Hibiscus yelled before Lilac had even finished speaking: “Fellow Daoist Xu, do you know from where the CSIB gets their materials?! It’s entirely the credit of the Featherwood Guard!”

“We and the CSIB hold a cooperative relationship; we’re bounty hunters! We are the moving sword of demon slaying! Every month, we hand over information on discovered demon varieties! Everyone, you only know that the CSIB’s and Heavens Law’s teaching materials are formidable, but what about the demon corpses?! The experimental specimens?! Those awfully perilous videos?! All of it was exchanged blade and spear with the lives of everyone in the Featherwood Guard!”

“Hibiscus!” It was a cat fight, a cat fight had begun, and never did



Lilac expect in her wildest dreams that Hibiscus would spill the beans about this secret collaboration. Although it wasn't important, a devilish fury ensnared her heart in madness!

She turned to glower at her counterpart: "So what?! Our CSIB didn't give your Featherwood Guard a massive commission for a one-time new variety! Wasn't it just under 10 million?!"

"I'm only stating a fact! In the Big Three, who isn't communicating with each other? Since Fellow Daoist Vulture has torn off the cover, I'm just clearing the air! Only the Featherwood Guard can find the thing that Fellow Daoist Xu wants to search for in a snap of the fingers! Or were you going to say the CSIB can move the entire globe's satellites to focus and lock down on his prey? Gimme a break! Your CSIB only has a single cultivation satellite, 'Big Flag-7'! Are you willing to sacrifice an uninterrupted decade of time in order to use this satellite to monitor for Fellow Daoist Xu?!"

"The other satellites can't survey demons." Vulture leisurely added. At this moment, electricity sparked in his and Lotus's gazes. In a flash, a course of action was settled upon: since the authoritative ranking order list is in the hands of the CSIB, let us first join hands and dispose of the most threatening opponent!

谛听 - is an actual monster/demon in Chinese mythology. It is famously known as Ksitigarbha's mount. Other names it is known by is "Hell's Ear". Said to be very sensitive to the truth, especially regarding humans being truthful or lying. Known for distinguishing the veracity of the Monkey King's story. It has the head of tiger, a single horn, dog's ears, a dragon body, a qilin's feet, and a lion's tail.

一目五 - Mr. Yimu Wu. This is a pretty interesting Chinese folk monster. It is actually a group of ghost considered one entity. There are five ghosts and only one of them has an eye. The other four are blind. The blind ghosts depend on the ghost with the eye to find food. It is said his arrival brings plague, which has to do with

how he selects his victims. He comes at night while people are sleeping and smells their breath. From what I read, each successive victim's breath he smells will fall sicker and sicker until the last one dies, and then everyone is done for.

## Chapter 48: Faction Showdown (5)

---

The cat fight had already arrived at its most fiery stage. Fortunately, there weren't any cultivation reporters present, since Heavens Law graduation ceremony's talent selection couldn't have such a thing. However, the people below had already seen the wheezing outcry.

At this instant, they had clearly recognized what the Big Three was. They didn't require money to pick a person out. Their resources, informations, methods, and connections, these were all their conditions! These conditions... were something that the other cultivation clans didn't possess by any stretch of the imagination!

However, they had finally understood something! It wasn't because the Featherwood Guard was special did Xu Yangyi make an inquiry of them at all, but rather they put forth they would assist him in finding his assailant!

Everyone had forgotten... what was the death of Xu Yangyi's parents in concerns to their own trifling matters? At this instant, the expression in a few people's eyes finally cooled down from a mad heat and changed into a kind of distant... perseverance!

With a Core Formation arcane effort in his grasp, his own fiendish aptitude, and tempting conditions, it surprisingly wasn't his future status or resources, but the blood hatred of his mother and father?

“However, our Bountiful Treasures Pavilion's demon locator is capable of sweeping through every direction as long as it's still in China! Hehe... Lilac, you should know that the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion has the ‘Clairvoyance-1’ microsatellite outside of China's atmosphere. It can't monitor all of China, but as long as Fellow Daoist Xu's enemy shows sign of either hide or hair, headquarters will be able to lock down on it for Fellow Daoist Xu within a

day!” Vulture sneered.

“Even if the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion doesn’t put out, our Featherwood Guard only needs the guild leader’s command, and all 40,000 of the Featherwood Guard’s registered cultivators will keep an eye out for Fellow Daoist Xu! An honest-to-god massive-scale manhunt! Fellow Daoist Xu, all you have to do is agree, and once our signing is completed, the guild master’s command will be immediately issued!” Lotus continued to speak.

Lilac’s body angrily trembled! How could this venomous pair gang up together?! They wanted to kill her off with a glance?!

Their eye contact just now was unexpectedly to collude together! This was the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion and the Featherwood Guard’s plan to throw off her rhythm?

However, her thoughts weren’t even close to finished! This was because she wouldn’t bear with their control any longer!

From the start when Moonchaser vapidly said that the prize this time was the Burning Heavens Revelation, the current atmosphere was like a detonator primed for any moment, ready to blow up a gunpowder warehouse!

“This one is untalented.” Before the voices of two had fell, an ordinary-looking middle-aged man stood up within the crowd. Just as he stood up, a fierce spiritual pressure like that of a tsunami suddenly swept overhead in the sky!

The Great Circle of Foundation Establishment!

The eyes of Firecloud, Shadowslay, Moonchaser, and a few Foundation Establishment cultivators that hadn’t spoke suddenly flashed.

“I am the isle master of the Riverheart Isle, Wang Buzhi...”

Before his voice had even subsided, Firecloud and Shadowslay roared furiously in unison: “Old fool, you still dare reveal yourself?!”

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi's eyes stirred. The fluctuations of his mood were already under control, but this person's name was somewhat familiar. He seemed to have heard it from somewhere before.

“Why would I dare not to?” Wang Buzhi laughed grimly: “105 years ago, old me chanced upon the world-shaking Hinayana Pill formula. If it weren't for all the Foundation Establishment cultivators coming to rob me, I wouldn't have had to live in secrecy for the past century.”

Xu Yangyi recalled who he was!

These days, medicinal pills ought to have been called pill elixirs. This art declined terribly, and any ancient pill formula was a priceless treasure. The branch had vaguely explained that within the past century, there was an extremely famous pill formula known as the Core Formation Pill, a world-shaking Hinayana Pill alchemy formula. An initial-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator named Wang Buzhi, the Featherwood Guard, and a few other registered agents had searched together and discovered an ancient remnant, however, they had attracted all kinds of pursuers from the light and dark afterwards. From this ancient remnant to civilized regions, no less than 300 Foundation Establishment cultivators had died along this path.

It wasn't until the very end was the law enforcement of Nantong Province's Cultivation Court stirred to action to settle this matter. However, the item in question that could increase the success rate of a cultivator producing pills by an additional 10% had disappeared without trace with Wang Buzhi nowhere to be found, as well. The only result that had come out of this was the registration of the “world-shaking Hiyana Pill” in the cultivation property rights protection court.

Looking at Firecloud's and Shadowslay's expressions, the ones that had searched together for the ancient remnants from that time were them.

“Originally, I wasn’t planning on accepting a disciple. In the past century, I have seen that human nature is cold and indifferent...” Wang Buzhi glanced at Firecloud and Shadowslay with an incomparably derisive expression: “But even under the circumstances of this child’s bright future, he has surprisingly put the vengeance of his mother and father first. I feel it would be better to accept him as a disciple than some of the gathered wild dogs.”

“Junior, join my sect, and I, Wang Buzhi, will assist you in crafting pills so long as you can take this step! In the entire world, only I possess this pill formula!”

“Hehe, what pretty words. I don’t know who it was that year that said to split things evenly, but in the end, robbed us and ran off. Fellow Daoist Xu, this old fox’s words cannot be believed in. Besides...” Firecloud glanced scornfully at the old man: “Can’t you not produce pills at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment?”

“If Fellow Daoist Xu enters my Cloudwind Valley, I swear to use my full strength to search for the Fellow Daoist Xu’s parents’ enemy!”

“Although my Zhao Clan cannot be considered a top clan, and our clansmen number several hundred, all Fellow Daoist Xu has to do is say the word and his nemesis will be our Zhao Clan’s!”

“Fellow Daoist Xu, my Wu Clan has a secret treasure that can locate traces within a thousand miles...”

The scene had boiled up once again. They knew their opportunity wasn’t great, but didn’t they have one even though their chances weren’t substantial?

As long as Xu Yangyi didn’t sign a contract here, they would try to find him tonight! At that time, everyone would be face-to-face, holding a candle and conversing at night. The only things they were investing were their good faith and time. Their gains might

be a future “possible” Core Formation master!

Sometimes, the entrance would still be tightly sealed off, but perhaps there would be a sliver of a crack revealed where a person could charge through with their utmost effort!

No one knew how arduous the path of cultivation was, but in comparison to a Heavens Law branch, at least there were no life-threatening concerns. The path of cultivation was such that the price of a single misstep could possibly be one’s own life!

This was regardless of whether or not you were a genius, normal person, or if you had some kind of treasure in your hand.

In the several millenniums of China’s developments, structural transformations, and terrifying demons, one could only step carefully as if they were walking on top of thin ice and strengthen their patience. This was the only existing path.

But now, they still continued to charge out, replacing each other one after another for a heavy promise that hadn’t even been made in a century, and it was all for only this “possibility”.

“I have two conditions that I wish everyone to consider.”

Suddenly, Xu Yangyi’s voice rang out again and Firecloud skewed his lips. In fact, the boy could come out whenever, but wouldn’t it be a slap to himself if he let Xu Yangyi out ahead of time when he had said an hour?

Everyone quieted down. In everyone’s minds, these words were clearly directed towards the Big Three, but several hundred voices echoed out on the spot: “Fellow Daoist, please speak!”

“First, within ten years, it must be investigated who my assailant is.”

“Not a problem!” The special envoys of the Big Three didn’t even consider it for a moment before agreeing. This request would undeniably not be simple... Not a single bit!

Heavens Law comprised all of China's richest and broadest network. To be unable to find the killer of Xu Yangyi's parents would be no easy task for anyone who wanted to find it!

"Second..." Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi paused and his mouth faintly twitched, yet he ultimately didn't say anything.

His second request was this—he wanted to know who it was that had caused him to fail in breaking through. He wanted revenge for this slight. However, this goal couldn't be given voice to. At the very least, he couldn't say it so frankly right now.

Besides, the current him still wasn't strong enough. He still didn't have the strength of a Foundation Establishment cultivator, and as for the people in the VIP section...

His gaze slightly swept through them. To make clear his own status, he wasn't a Foundation Establishment senior, and he still didn't understand exactly how tremendous the power was of each special envoy's organization. In addition, the few people that had remained silent were ordinary people, but through their status to sit in the VIP section, it already demonstrated their identities weren't ordinary by any means!

It was already made clear it wasn't a student when he was sending out kick by kick. The only possibility was that it was an action of someone in the VIP section because there simply wasn't anyone else that had the qualifications to touch the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena qi-severing mechanism. He had a premonition that this person couldn't be questioned.

But!

He suddenly clenched both of his fists. The person who had shattered his chances at breaking through as it was right before him was here, yet was he was incapable of doing anything?

No! If it were like so, his convictions would be unrealized! He would remember the cruel fact one day that as he had once stood



before that door, someone had ruthlessly pulled him away!

Was overwhelming power capable of deceiving the masses of the truth? He would not be obstructed here!

He considered it for a while, and it was quiet on the outside for a period of time, as well. After a long moment, Xu Yangyi's voice full of hidden meaning finally echoed out: "The day before, I failed to break through. Originally, I should've advanced to the middle stage of Qi Condensation, but at the most critical juncture, someone severed the qi of heaven and earth."

Clatter! Simultaneously, a clear and crisp noise resonated throughout the entire arena! Wobble... A teacup lid was rolling on the floor, but no one went to pick it up.

Chu Tianyi's expression was blank, not even able to be read. He was drinking his tea as usual. No one knew though that his entire back was already covered in cold sweat!

How dare he! How dare Xu Yangyi speak of this now! As Xu Yangyi had spoke just now, he was so frightened that his spirit nearly left to ascend above the heavens!

He knew undoubtedly that it wasn't limited to just five Foundation Establishment cultivators here, but there were definitely other people present. No, not even to mention Foundation Establishment cultivators, even if the thousands of Qi Condensation cultivators presented a petition with the name of a Foundation Establishment cultivator attached to it, perhaps even for he, the deputy minister, it would be enough to fiercely drink down a pot of tea!

What was the Department of Energy? There were two explanations. One was for Earth's cornerstone—an explanation to the common masses. The other was an explanation for cultivators!

No one paid attention, but his hand holding onto his teacup was shivering. He was terribly shaken. He truly was in a dreadfully

panicked state. Right now, even fear had arisen within his heart. If this Xu wanted to get to the bottom of this, what would he do?!

Wasn't Xu Yangyi scared he had a million methods to make things hard for him later on? Was he not frightened he was offending a true big shot? He had to know that the person who had done this was not ordinary by any stretch of the imagination!

“Deputy Minister Chu.” Amidst the silence, Firecloud gently said: “Steady yourself... If you don't, perhaps you'll scald your hand...”

Chu Tianyi smiled, his expression as usual. Merely, his vest was terribly cold.

From the awkward silence, everyone had guessed the identity of the person who could do such a thing was by no means simple. After a while, Vulture gritted his teeth: “Although the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion doesn't know who caused Fellow Daoist Xu to suffer a failure in his breakthrough, we shall investigate with no stone left unturned. In the case it's discovered, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion will cease services with that person for half a year!”

“Hehe, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion is still so small-minded as ever.” Wang Buzhi sneered: “A cultivator's first failure to break through has an enormous influence. It's not an exaggeration to say that to hinder another from breaking through is a blood feud. In the end, who could be so... despicable?”

“Junior, join my sect, and I guarantee I will bring that person by their toes to you!”

His gaze firmly swept over Deputy Branchmaster Qi—perhaps Qi Condensation cultivators wouldn't be able to guess who the person could be to do such a thing, but for Foundation Establishment cultivators like them, they could guess through a process of elimination! How many people in a Heavens Law branch were capable of such action? What kind of position did these few people have?

“Wouldn’t you say? Deputy Branchmaster Qi?”

The spiritual pressure of the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment was like thick, sticky blood wrapping around Deputy Branchmaster Qi’s body. His forehead was covered in a cold sweat, and he gritted his teeth and laughed: “Of course, that’s...”

Xu Yangyi’s voice echoed out again: “I’m just speaking casually. No need for everyone to take it so seriously.”

Chu Tianyi painfully shut his eyes, wishing to slap Xu Yangyi to death within his heart!

## Chapter 49: [Asura Grounds](#) (1)

---

Regret spread within his heart like a tide. He knew at last that while this person knew he couldn't do anything against them now, Xu Yangyi could frighten them into a cold sweat! This was his deliberate display of strength!

Yes, I am unable to take action now, but it doesn't represent I won't be able to later! I may not be able to tally this debt for now, but sooner or later, there will be a time of my reckoning!

The repentance within his heart wasn't so much because he had provoked Xu Yangyi, but rather the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion's business! Not even to speak of business that hadn't even been finished, the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion would still sever business dealings! A half a year... The financial loss would at the minimum be over a 100 million!

How could his heart not be aching? How could it not be dripping blood? He might as well say he was marvelously well where he stood! At the very least, he could still refute such a person who was hesitating with his words and would truly cause his death!

Moreover, it didn't need to be said... If some old berserk monsters caught wind of this matter, never mind him, what about his family members?

As he thought of this here, he steeled himself! There were still many fugitives that didn't fear the investigative criminal law of the Cultivation Court! He clenched his hand even tighter and his fingernails dug into his flesh. His heart ached numbly in pain as if it was being bitten over and over again by a legion of ants.

"Our Featherwood Guard will also investigate this immediately! Moreover, we'll give Fellow Daoist an answer as soon as possible!" Hibiscus cupped her hands and said: "In the case it's discovered, headquarters will halt the other party's registered cultivators' granted missions posthaste!"

“Our CSIB will reject all the other party’s requests for half a year!”

Chu Tianyi’s throat was aching. He knew that these people had roughly guessed who it was, however... How could they care for someone else’s insignificant matter?

No one was mentioned by name, and he himself couldn’t suddenly appear. Right now, these people were clearly playing the fool and making all kinds of promises! Moreover, he was without the least bit doubt that they would truly follow through with their promises!

Damn it... Goddamn it!

“Many thanks for every seniors deep consideration. I will give an answer for everyone tomorrow.” Xu Yangyi finished speaking and said no more. He exhausted his whole strength to press down on the bullet in his chest, but the bullet wouldn’t come out like it had taken root.

This feeling without qi in his body was too difficult to bear.

His words had at last thoroughly put this scene of fighting over him to a temporary reprieve. Regardless of no matter how unwilling everyone was, they couldn’t not give him face.

For such a hot commodity, the others couldn’t be rude. Merely, everyone present knew that tomorrow’s price would surely be much higher than today’s!

“The great gate of Core Formation...” A youth of the talisman-based Wang Clan looked up towards the sky and sighed, sitting down in his seat. His entire person appeared fairly despondent because of his steep disappointment: “A million cultivators replacing one another as the first falls and the second follows in this struggle for the Grand Dao in order to steal this shred of an opportunity...”

“This entrance has opened up by a crack now... It's dangled

before me, yet it still doesn't belong to us..."

"A single Xu Yangyi is already tempting, as is the exquisiteness of Daomaster Floatingcloud's chess move, yet I didn't expect... ultimately, the matter still hasn't been determined..." A clan master said quietly: "Tomorrow... what will the price that the other clans take out look like?"

Moonchaser's complexion was awfully ashen.

Xu Yangyi's words... In the end, it was Daomaster Floatingcloud that had supplied the arcane effort, but Xu Yangyi had unexpectedly still not selected Daomaster Floatingcloud! He was a Core Formation master! A figure at the world's pinnacle!

Where was there a problem? Moonchaser puzzled over this matter over a hundred times, but was still left without explanation. He turned around and sighed deeply. His face calm, he said to his assistant: "Ask Heavens Law whether or not did young friend Xu have any other requests when he was studying at the academy? Or perhaps interests?"

"Your Excellency..." The assistant wearing a well-tailored western-style suit was somewhat embarrassed: "I don't know what's going on... I wasn't able to contact the above just now. It seems there's some issue with the signal."

"This is understandable." Firecloud overheard their conversation and laughed: "The arena opens only once every five years, so there's too many troubles with the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens's communication circuitry installation. The Fengyi City branch isn't the Shanghai branch anyways; where's all the money to maintain it going to come from? Besides..." He picked up his cell phone and shook it: "I can't get a connection above, as well. What's the worry?"

Moonchaser snorted, but didn't say anything.

"Something hasn't happened above, right?" Shadowslay slightly

furrowed his brows.

Firecloud eventually nodded his head with a kind of “you’re watching him with ill eyes” expression: “Should be. For example a big explosion or something, hehe...”

They laughed casually, their moods not too stifled. After all, at this kind of time, they had already been obviously knocked out of the running. It without saying it would be better to watch the heated affair of the object they were unable to obtain.

Besides the people of the Big Three in the VIP section that were still busying themselves, there were still two people without even the shred of a smile.

There wasn’t a trace of an expression on Chu Tianyi’s face until a voice came from his side: “Mr. Chu, [you’ve gone and prepared the wedding clothes for someone else.](#)”

“Qi Mingyang...” Chu Tianyi didn’t look at Deputy Branchmaster Qi at his side and said calmly: “If I hand the Immortal Intoxication to you right now, what would be the result?”

“I dare not lay my hands on it.” Deputy Branchmaster Qi said with lingering fear within his heart: “In any case, this is a Heavens Law branch. Of course, I wouldn’t know of the things you set about to, but the nature is completely different if I set my hands to it. However...”

“Rather than be worried about me, wouldn’t it be better to be concerned about the Chu Clan?” He laughed grimly and set down his teacup, looking at Chu Tianyi continue to stare straight ahead at the arena with a wooden expression: “This kid’s talent could be rated as fiendish. Now that he has obtained the assistance of a Core Formation arcane effort... In the number of 20,000 Foundation Establishment cultivators, I’m afraid that in a few decades, his name will be on that list, hehe... Mr. Chu, I don’t think he’s the type of man to take things lying down.”

Chu Tianyi was silent for a long period of time and he said calmly: “A genuine supreme-grade spirit stone to make him disappear.”

“It’s not enough...” Qi Mingyang said heavily: “There’s a risk to his price now; it’s insufficient.”

“State your demands.” Chu Tianyi held his teacup and pursed his lips: “I don’t want to hear his name again within a decade.”

There was no response.

“Are you scared I am unable to pay this price?” Chu Tianyi sneered at the corner of his mouth.

There was still no response.

He turned his head in annoyance, but at this moment, his entire person jumped!

At his side... separated by a single foot, Heavens Law’s deputy branch master, Qi Mingyang, the person who had caused Xu Yangyi to fail in his breakthrough, the Foundation Establishment senior that eliminated nuisances for Chu Tianyi, at this moment...

He had been beheaded!

An undisturbed smile was still preserved on his face, and his head had been raised up by a hand. This hand had raised the head high in the air, causing it to greedily spill blood. Threads of scarlet liquid poured into a tender and beautiful mouth. The crimson ichor followed the corner of this mouth to extend down towards and flow over a body!

“You... You!” Chu Tianyi was frightened out of his spirit. Even he was unable to restrain his screech: “How could you possibly be here!”

It was a lovely, young girl. An extremely beautiful young lolita.

Her long hair draped down to her waist like a cascade of black silk. She had a pair of limpid peach blossom eyes, two willowy



brows, and on her body, she wore a gorgeous bright-yellow Qing-era qipao with a vermilion phoenix wishing to take flight with flapping wings embroidered on it.

Her skin was extremely white, a whiteness like that of a dead man, and her revealed skin was like sparking and translucent snow. She appeared to be no more than thirteen or fourteen years old, but the fullness of her chest made a great majority of the women present blush in shame. With a slender waist that could be fully grasped, she had long legs like water snakes, outlining her extraordinarily captivating beauty.

However, at this instant, Chu Tianyi didn't have the bit of a mind to admire her. Rather, he was trembling frigidly from hair to toe, coldly terrified!

The beautiful young girl even twisted Qi Mingyang's still-smiling head like a toy lantern. The contrast of her snow-white skin and the dark-red blood only caused people to shiver from this strange sensation!

Rivulets of blood extended down to her body, yet she seemed not to be aware of this, only carrying an intoxicated look of delight. Her face that in all likelihood, which would become an outstanding beauty in the future revealed a kind of intoxicated joy. Her ten jade fingers fiddled around with the head in her hands, and this scene made Chu Tianyi sense a bone-piercing killing intent.

The young girl didn't respond, and Chu Tianyi quietly stood up without need of his cane. This high official of China that had not even shivered once just now tightly pursed his lips at this moment, making himself retreat back step by step as far as he could.

His head was soaked in a cold sweat and he dragged his fist with a deathly tightness. As for the two cultivators he had brought with him at the Great Circle of Qi Condensation, their spirits had already fled their bodies in fright at this moment. They were greatly horrified and their teeth made a chattering sound as they

shivered. They wanted to retreat, yet they discovered that both of their legs were completely out of their control!

This was true terror. A shivering like one's body had arrived in hell

The god of death was no less than two meters away from him with a smile that could bring the entire heart to a full shiver.

Thump... The head was tossed to the side by the young girl, and Chu Tianyi immediately froze in step. His throat was awfully sore, extremely sore. He wanted to yell, but was simply unable to shout. It was as if the palpable oppressing force had already transformed into a hand that had tightly grasped onto his throat.

“Truly a flavor that can make one feel intoxicated.” The young girl didn't wear shoes, and her snowy jade feet leisurely strolled towards Chu Tianyi. The expression on her face was absent of sorrow or joy, like it was dead autumn leaves or the abyss of the winter sun. She seemed not to have just killed a man, but only casually crushed an ant.

Did a person need a reason to crush an ant to death? It was unnecessary. If it truly was required, then...

She was hungry.

“I saw you on the television.” The young girl coolly sat down in the seat where Chu Tianyi was originally seated, holding the teacup and gently taking a sip: “Good tea... Is this that excellent Big Red Robe? The one with only a single tree in all of China?”

She slightly raised her head and her hair seemed to move as if the wind was sweeping through it, but there was no wind. She carried a sliver of sorrow in her eyes: “In my 128 years... I have never experienced this flavor...”

“Humans, how low and petty, but moreover frail...” She gently caressed the teacup lid. As if she had not spoken with humans for far too long, she faintly said: “But for society to develop to the

present... Even though those ancient and aloof cultivators were inseparable to humanity, as well...”

“Because of the thinness of qi, the flying speed of Foundation Establishment cultivators can compare to... What is it called?” The young girl raised her chin, setting off an elegant curve. It wasn’t until after several seconds of quiet did she speak: “Right, airplane. They would rather sit down on an airplane, unwilling to fly themselves... and that’s not even to mention Qi Condensation worms...”

“The cultivation world’s cornerstone is its several hundred thousand Qi Condensation cultivators. They rely on humanity’s livelihood, and Foundation Establishment cultivators can barely exceed external objects with difficulty... Heh... What am I saying?” She finally smiled, sudden like the coming of spring wind at night and the blossoming of a vast forest of pear flower trees.

“Deputy Minister Chu, I haven’t spoken for a long time, so I don’t even know what to say. How about you accompany me with a few words?”

Chu Tianyi’s entire body was drenched in a cold sweat.

Even when countless people had declared that they would assist Xu Yangyi in his vengeance moments ago, he had not been so frightened!

“What?” A smidgen of worry appeared on the young girl’s face, and she stood up delicately: “Are you unwilling to? Do you think I’m insane, too?”

“Attack!!!!!!” Chu Tianyi had not yelled, but his two Qi Condensation cultivators were finally unable to restrain themselves from releasing a hoarse cry! “Attack!!! Attack!!! Protect Deputy Minister Chu! Attack! This is NOT a drill!!!”

A mournful screech cut across the tranquility of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, and everyone suddenly jumped in

their hearts! The first reaction of the Foundation Establishment cultivators was to transform into eight silhouettes and soar towards Chu Tianyi in a flash!

[A white rainbow pierces the sun, a cold wind howls!](#)

At this instant, the Foundation Establishment cultivators erupted with their maximum spiritual force!

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi's eyes suddenly opened. What was going on outside?

One, two, three, four... eight rays of qi that could simply be called supernatural suddenly burst out! It was different from the prior eruption; these qi rays carried a killing intent that could make the heart tremble!

What was happening?! All of the Foundation Establishment cultivators were making a move?

He was without the slightest doubt a Qi Condensation cultivator because... among these rays, even the weakest was by far vastly stronger than himself!

In the outside world, of the eight silhouettes, Wang Buzhi bore the brunt of the impact!

Wobble... It was unknown when, but a violet bell had appeared within his hands, its style ancient and a speck of magenta radiance was faintly discernible within it, carrying a swift and fierce murderous aura. As if the bell was a startled goose, it raced towards the young girl.

Behind him, three old men, already so old they were soon to be buried, emitted spiritual pressure from their bodies. In the same vein, they were...

The Great Circle of Foundation Establishment!

“Even the [Three Old Friends in Winter](#) have come...” The young girl faintly exclaimed: “I see some nostalgic faces...”

“Life is bitter and short. Enjoy the present with no thought of the future. Why are you all so anxious to throw your lives away...”

Firecloud, Shadowslay, Moonchaser, and some unknown cultivator were behind the old men.

With a fan raging with flames, three cold rays of swords shot out from it, piercing towards the young girl with a speed that could chase stars and overtake the moon!

Eight furious roars carrying an unparalleled fury shook the firmament in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena!

“Fiend! Accept your death!”

“Made wedding clothes for someone else” This line is based off a poem called “A Poor Woman” by Qin Taoyu. This poem depicts the story of a poor woman that makes wedding clothes for other women, but because she is poor does not have the resources to get her own. This phrase has come to be known as an idea of “Doing all the hard work for someone else’s benefit”

长虹贯日, 寒风飒起 - White rainbow penetrates the sun, cold wind howls. Line by a Tang poet, Li Bai (701-762). Believed to be an astrological sign that the world will be thrust into disaster

岁寒三友 - “Three Friends in Winter” This is kinda hard to get down in English, since this phrase is based on a traditional Chinese story/lesson. These three old friends refer to three types of trees: Pine, Bamboo, and Plum. It is said that these three trees are extremely strong and hearty, so that even in the winter, they still grow. It is said that pine is evergreen, never old, bamboo follows the path of the noble, and plum is clear as ice clean like jade. Because these three trees can grow together and remain healthy in the cold of winter together, they are said to be three “friends”. So there is your story inside a story.

Asura Grounds has a couple different translations, but myth behind it is more significant. Supposed to depict the region where

Asuras battle and fight. In Buddhist mythology, Asuras are considered demigods that follow a particular sin, usually wrath. While they are powerful, they are incapable of using peace to settle things and delight in battle. This particular chapter title is to denote a bloody battle.

## Chapter 50: Asura Grounds (2)

---

The spiritual pressure was like an ocean tide or lofty mountain. All the present Qi Condensations cultivators, those at the initial stage and middle stage, were simply incapable of speech, cold sweat overflowing their pores. Only late-stage cultivators were able to support themselves with great difficulty, looking towards the VIP section with fright permeating their hearts.

“What’s going on? What’s occurred?”

“I don’t know, didn’t someone just scream ‘attack’?”

“That can’t be! This is the lowest level of the Heavens Law branch! Who dares kill their way in?”

“Are they not afraid they’ll be hunted down by humanity’s cultivators?”

“Is it really an attack? Who could be so audacious? There are eight Foundation Establishment seniors here!”

“If it’s not an attack, but moreover an invasion, how could the eight seniors possibly worry the least bit about us to erupt with their maximum spiritual pressures?”

Over ten thousands gazes looked towards the VIP section in unison, following the eight furious shouts. In the next second, fist, palm, sword, bell, and fan all struck the opponent’s body.

Firecloud’s eyes suddenly narrowed as if he had seen a most terrible thing. Firmly tossing his hand aside that was holding his fan, he snarled: “All Fellow Daoists, withdraw!”

There was no need for him to speak. In a flash, the eight people completely departed! Although they were many and had assumed a ring-shaped encirclement around the young girl, the looks in their eyes were terribly shaken!

The sword had sliced into her flesh in three sections and the fan

had scorched one side of her body. All of the fists and palms had struck her body, leaving a large indentation.

However... there wasn't the least bit change in her expression! She only calmly surveyed the various kinds of bladed weapons that had pierced into her body.

"You... You're actually..." Shadows' Adam's apple trembled a few times, bringing with it an incomparably solemn voice as he spoke: "Half-step Core Formation..."

Squelch... The young girl quietly extracted a sword from her body and placed it in front of her to study. She gently parted her red lips: "Do you know?"

"If you don't enter Core Formation, you will forever be uneducated on how formidable the apex is. I keep on having these ridiculous dreams, yet I don't know if I'm only an insect that could be squashed to death with a slap..."

No one spoke. Eight Foundation Establishment cultivators, these eight figures that were already too high to reach in the eyes of Qi Condensation cultivators, at this moment, of these eight magnificent cultivators, not a single one of them were of mind to speak.

"What's happened?" A young girl asked suspiciously: "Is this woman a demon? Are the eight Foundation Establishment cultivators unable to kill her?"

Before her voice had even fallen, her grandfather at her side had already covered her mouth. She raised her frightened gaze to see that at this moment, the flesh on the face of her ordinarily widely grinning grandfather was shivering because of this immense fear, cold sweat freely dripping off his forehead.

"She's not dead?!" On the other side, a youth firmly nailed his terrified gaze on the young girl's body: "H-how is this possible! These are eight Foundation Establishment seniors! Four of them



are at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment!”

“Shut up...” At his side, his father’s face was already deathly ashen. The youth glanced at his father and nearly jumped in horror! Their Luo Clan’s prime treasure, a silver hoop, was already clenched in his father’s hand at some unknown point in time.

In his father’s surroundings, his father’s younger brother, older brother, and the ordinarily taciturn elders were grasping a talisman in one hand and a weapon in the other at this moment. All of them wordlessly stood up and looked towards the VIP section with an extreme solemnity. To the extent that...

He didn’t know if he had seen it correctly, but he seemed to have saw a kind of deathly sorrow on the faces of his family members.

“Hong’er... Remember... as soon as there is an opportunity, nevermind us, you must escape! No matter what, you must not be concerned about us!”

Swish... A group silently stood up, headed by an elderly woman accompanied by four middle-aged men and women. The old woman shivered falteringly as she opened a canvas. In a twinkling, saber qi like that of a roaming dragon carrying the distinct and clear sound of a dragon’s cry leapt into midair.

Another crowd of people quietly stood up, not saying anything and locking their eyes on the VIP section. However, there was a bladed weapon in every person’s hand.

Swish... Swish... Swish... As if there was a soundless alarm, legions of all the present cultivation clan members, 3000 cultivators, all stood up without exception at this instant.

“Fiend... Leave the Heavens Law branch at once, and I can act as if nothing has happened!” Moonchaser rigidly gritted his teeth, and the muscles of his entire body were like they were being pricked by needles, stretched taut to inflexibility. He dared not to shift his gaze from his opponent’s body by even a fraction of a hair:

“There are many cultivators here. Even if you’re half-step Core Formation, you cannot provoke them all!”

The young girl glanced at him distantly and suddenly laughed: “Don’t you want to know why I have come?”

“It’s quite simple...” The young girl giggled, not waiting for Moonchaser to respond and opened her mouth: “It’s because there are already no more living people upstairs. Haven’t you all not been able to connect with the upper level for quite a while?”

“Vermilion Snow!” Once the several high officials of the Heavens Law branch heard this, their eyes nearly split apart in fury: “Were it not for the benevolence of the Core Formation masters, would you still have a path to survive?!”

“During the dawn of the Qing dynasty, you even massacred four cities! Your crimes cannot be forgiven! After you die, you shall be carried off to the Eighteen Levels of Hell! You still dare act against Heavens Law?!”

The fact they weren’t capable of contacting the above level hadn’t drawn their attention because the communication signal here originally couldn’t be considered too great. After all, it was only opened once every five years. But none had expected that as the competition took place below, a massacre of unparalleled savagery had just occurred above!

The young girl didn’t say anything, only looking indifferently at the four large, majestic characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens that towered above her head. Eventually, she dimly smiled: “How vulgarly written.”

None of the Foundation Establishment cultivators said a word. The nature of half-step Core Formation was different from their own! Even if the present 3000 clan cultivators obstructed her, how many people would die? Of the mortal entourages and juniors they had brought with them, what would the number of dead be?

This location... was doomed to flow with rivers of blood!

“What are you going to do?” Wang Buzhi gritted his teeth: “Even though you’re half-step Core Formation, you’re not a Core Formation master! By concealing from all of China’s cultivation world that you have broken through to half-step Core Formation, you’ve already arrived at the apex! What else is there that you desire to do!”

“Impudent.” Vermilion Snow turned her head, looking at him without a bit of emotion: “Is what I want to accomplish something a thing like you can question?”

She finished speaking and suddenly began to laugh: “However, I’m in a pretty good mood today. There’s no harm in giving you a chance to guess.” She raised a finger: “Guess incorrectly once, and I’ll kill a Foundation Establishment cultivator. What do you think?”

No one moved. The cost of raising a hand against a half-step Core Formation demon was too great. But at this time, a large bloody hole burst out of Moonchaser’s chest without warning. Both of his eyes went round and blood suddenly sprayed out from his mouth. Even in death, he looked at Vermilion Snow incredulously.

“Getting into contact with Daomaster Floatingcloud?” Vermilion Snow hooked a finger on her smile and an eagle-shaped origami flew out from the recently deceased Moonchaser’s body. Afterwards, it combusted, devoid of the wind: “Forget about it... [The night is long and the dreams many](#). Some games still aren’t a waste of time to play...”

“Although it’s rather boring, how about I tell you all the answer?”

“Do you remember Heavens Law’s record of me?” She stood up: “My slaughter of four consecutive cities in Hegu Province was for Foundation Establishment, right?”

These words were like a primer. The faces of the Foundation Establishment cultivators in front of her all changed!

“Your arcane effort... requires a blood sacrifice to break through a great realm?” Firecloud asked, shrill of voice.

“How clever. Perhaps all of you could take out one of those legendary life-death reincarnation pills? I’ll turn around and leave, but don’t use those pill elixirs to try and fool me.” Vermilion Snow’s hair danced of its own accord in the absence of wind: “Pitiful... Obviously, all of you remember. Why don’t all of you consider it a bit about why I have to kill people?”

“I have no such fondness for killing...”

“100,000 people.” Already, her voice carried a wisp of bloody insanity: “With the blood sacrifice of a 100,000 people, I will become the eleventh in the Core Formation realm!”

“Thus, all of you... must die.” She turned to face towards the heavens and laughed maniacally. In the next second, a surge of spiritual pressure that made the heart tremble suddenly erupted from her body in madness!

The spiritual pressure was a like a rank twelve earthquake on the Richter scale! It was like a tornado added on with a tsunami! All the present initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators and every human stood frozen in place!

“In years past, I killed enough people to fill the open plains. How could I care about all of your many lives?! Even if I am met with the ten [Yama Courts](#), they might not necessarily accept me!” Her entire body floated into the air, cast off from physics. Her long hair that reached her waist moved by itself, free of the wind, and her pupils transformed into slits.

[“For a monarch to settle the matters in the world is to win fame in life and death!”](#) As long as I break through to Core Formation, who cares how others assess me after I die!

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi had already stood up without further delay! As that seemingly supernatural spiritual pressure exploded with a rumble, a deathly aura had shattered the peace of his meditation in a flash. He was familiar with this aura, too familiar with it.

Vermilion Snow! Vermilion Snow had personally come!

His thoughts had presently swiftly turned around, and he immediately recalled all that Zuo Lun had told them day.

The massacre of the citizens of Hegu Province that had left their bodies filling the open fields, the slaughter of four consecutive cities, the blood sacrifice of several hundred thousand people, breaking through to Foundation Establishment... So it turned out to be... It turned out to that Vermilion Snow's truth had always been within her records! Merely, no one had ever took note of it! All eyes had been drawn into her brutality!

It was no wonder... No wonder that besides this matter, she had simply done no other evil!

On that night she broke through to Foundation Establishment, she dyed an area of a 100 li with blood and earned her demon name. It wasn't madness and it wasn't to demonstrate her power, but rather she had a reason that demanded her to take action as such!

She had patiently waited across from Heavens Law without transformation or variation over the long years in order to suddenly rise in revolt as she broke through to Core Formation! Because of how long she had lived, she was already incredibly understanding of Heavens Law's rules and regulations!

The graduation ceremony that took place once every five years... In her eyes, perhaps it had long become a quinquennial sumptuous feast! Besides here... where else were there so many cultivators? Besides here, where else would hordes of cultivators converge once every five years?

She hadn't made a move in the past because the time was not ripe. If she had no certainty, then she wouldn't have come to the time to advance.

By stretching out her silent endurance of over a century, she had already lowered the Fengyi City branch's vigilance. Now... the death god that had sat quietly for a century had finally extended her sharpened claws.

Xu Yangyi's breathing was gradually becoming rushed as a million thoughts ran through his mind. Currently, all he could do was wait if the Foundation Establishment cultivators were capable of stopping her! However...

Confronted with the situation of their lives vanishing at any time, who would come out fighting to the death for Qi Condensation cultivators that they weren't even acquainted with?

Their own circumstances were no longer important. Right now, there was only a single circumstance.

To continue living on.

Under the situation of Vermilion Snow's mad sorcery in order to achieve Core Formation and daring to brave the whole world in her great atrocity of washing Nantong Province's Heavens Law branch with blood, he could only persist in survival!

But... he was closed out inside the qi walls!

There was an advantage though. The following battle would undoubtedly be a bloody carnage of flying flesh and blood, a bloodbath that would form rivers! Vermilion Snow was a demon at the kind of realm that demanded a massacre on these ancient ceremonial grounds, a sure attack without distinction!

A Qi Condensation cultivator... was capable of living on for nearly a century! Ordinary people didn't even have to be mentioned!

However, he could!

In order to manufacture his own chance to get close, Firecloud hadn't let he and Chu Zhaonan out. Nonetheless, he clearly remembered what Firecloud had said before. These qi walls were of Daomaster Floatingcloud's technique! It could obstruct a Core Formation cultivator for a period of time!

He could live longer than everyone else for a period of time. But as for afterwards!

He had a terribly awful plan, but because Vermilion Snow had [dared to come meet her foes with a single sword](#), he had absolute confidence in it!

Her hundred-meter-long demon form had given him an overwhelming murderous aura at that time, yet he was positive that not even she would make light of the present harebrained scheme he had cooked up in his brain.

The qi walls were an area that protected him, but also a prison that restricted him!

“What's there to be done!” He firmly placed his hand on the qi wall, yet discovered it was simply indifferent to his strength!

That wasn't to mention that because of the bullet presently lodged in his chest by Chu Zhaonan, he couldn't use a lick of his qi!

Right now, life or death would truly be decided in an instant!

夜长梦多 - The night is long and dreams many. Chinese phrase meaning that “A long delay means trouble”

Yama Courts: In Buddhist mythology, there are ten palaces where the ten Yama Kings reside.

了却君王天下事,赢得生前身后名 - “For a monarch to settle the matters in the world is to win fame in life and death. This lines comes from a Song dynasty poet and general Xin Qiji. Background comes from a poem where the king realizes he has warred all of his life for his achievement of uniting the lands of China, but is now too old to enjoy it and his imperial court gone.

Dared to come meet her foes with a single sword. I like this idiom a lot so I did not localize it. The meaning behind this is “showing up to a fight by yourself/without any other measures”.



# Chapter 51: Asura Grounds (3)

---

“All cultivators, hear and obey!” Shadowslay’s, Firecloud’s, and Wang Buzhi’s voices all rang out at nearly the same time: “Excluding initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators, all cultivators above the middle stage lend us a hand in this battle!”

“Yes!”

“By your lead!”

“Decapitating demons and eliminating devils, this is the intrinsic nature of us cultivators!”

Countless people, regardless of whether they were willing or not, drummed up their courage at this moment. This was because there wasn’t a ghost of a way to retreat. They had been sealed within this underground chamber by an old half-step Core Formation demon. To withdraw would only lead to a path of death!

Even though boundless terror arose in their minds in regards to this half-step Core Formation demon, and even if they only had the courage for a single blow, this blow had to be dealt!

“Slay demons to defend the Dao.” Wang Buzhi separated both of his hands by a fraction and a scarlet blade appeared in his hand. Soon after, he roared: “Kill!”

“Kill!!!”

The sound of the word “kill” overflowed the heavens! At this instant, every one of the present several thousand cultivators were all of one heart! The roars of several thousand people caused the sand on the ground to tremble!

The innumerable talismans and countless spirit artifacts brought with them a steady, long cry that filled the entire sky, teeming with a sublime majesty and unfaltering heroism! In the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, several thousand felicitous kaleidoscopic rays like hazy mists shot towards Vermilion Snow as

if they were fireworks that stretched across the whole sky!

This performance of scintillating light released [the iron lock of the star bridge](#)!

The qi fluctuations aroused by several thousand cultivators shone upon Vermilion Snow's tender face.

Beneath the myriad auspicious lights, she didn't retreat the slightest degree, but rather softly parted her vermilion lips: "[Young beauties turn gray and fireworks are left fleeting...](#) I am not unreasonable. I will certainly bestow upon you all a flawless death."

Motion and inaction formed a perfect painting of mourning and captivating beauty.

Boom! In the next second, a thousand rays of black majestic light spilled out from each one of Vermilion Snow's pores! It seemed to pour out from within her!

From all seven apertures of her head, blackness surged out! An oppressive qi that far surpassed what she had revealed before exploded with a rumble!

Rays of black light in the sky like several hundred thousand unreincarnable souls surprisingly released a chilling rustling! These rays formed a black mist that overturned the sky!

"She's going to take demon form!" Wang Buzhi turned up towards the sky and howled: "Kill!"

Inside the qi walls, Xu Yangyi's heart was wholly preoccupied with the outside world. He used his spiritual sense to gain a rough awareness of all that was occurring on the outside world. Several thousand cultivators made a move in unison and mystic rays of light and qi cut across the vast sky! With a scattered display of prismatic brilliance, their will to battle overflowed the sky!

Each sword and each fist carried a determination of certain victory like a breaching tide. They flooded towards the

incomparably colossal monster and surged forth!

This was a battle of cultivators! This was a war of humanity! There were no firearms nor heavy weaponry! This assault was even more resplendent than fireworks, but carried with it the grimness of death!

“Huff...” He sucked in deeply. So this was the world of cultivators... If he could come out of this alive, then this world was bound to become even more marvelous because he was a member of it.

In the outside world, there was [the whiteness of the remaining willow catkins fluttering about, covering the earth, and peach blossoms falling, brimming full with red!](#)

On Vermilion Snow's body, the abyssal blackness was all shed off, and following a cackle of a fox, the black mist completely dissipated as if it was blown away by a gale! A snow-white body appeared, a nine-tailed silver fox over 200 meters in size. Already, the beast stood proudly in the viewing platform!

Its gigantic form made humans seem to be ants in comparison to it. With its feet on the earth and its head to the heavens, the fox's berserk aura was like the descent of a demon god! Once the nine snowy-white tails were swung forth, they would draw an explosive tsunami of qi!

On the fox's forehead, there was an incredibly conspicuous strange black seal.

Snap... The nine tails waved casually like nine dragons dancing in upheaval. Each place that the tails hit were left with an enormous scar that appeared on the ground! This was a true demon... An unbelievably massive demon! It far surpassed the tremendous serpent Xu Yangyi had slayed at that time!

Amidst the immeasurable qi attacks, its snowy-white tails each sent a torrent of matching waves.

“Three Realms Demon Phantasms!” Vermilion Snow raised her head and let loose a provocative howl towards the characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens. In a flash, hordes upon hordes of black qi instantly appeared! With Vermilion Snow as the core, the black qi engulfed everyone like a hurricane!

Dong! Shadowsly raised his hand to obstruct the gale, yet he felt as if he was being battered by a massive 10,000-catty hammer! The instant he had come in contact with the seemingly powerless squall, he had been sent flying back and spitting up blood!

“Get down!” Following an angry shout, his figure was swiftly rolled into the wind and his voice faded away, no longer to be heard.

Boom! Xu Yangyi suddenly opened his eyes and he looked over at the qi walls without saying a single word. In that moment just now, a terrible wave of spiritual force had passed inwards, even if it was separated from the qi walls.

The entirety of the qi walls were met with a heavy strike! All the milky-white qi shook incessantly! It seemed it was going to collapse in the next second!

A bead of cold sweat seeped out from his forehead. His fists were already involuntarily clenched.

If... everyone collectively welcomed this enemy, perhaps there would a path to survive...

But! Since his failure to break through was caused by someone's ruthless severing, he didn't think the people on the outside would wage a battle to the death for total strangers.

Human nature was intrinsically hard to fathom. Life or death was hanging by a thread.

At this kind of time, words had already become moot. This was a matter of life and death. All he could do was watch whether or not everyone on the outside world was capable of linking arms to

contend against this foe.

His gaze twinkled and he unwaveringly locked his eyes on impenetrable qi walls. In the outside world, auspicious qis filled the sky and golden spears covered the earth.

However, the auspicious qis and mystic rays were swept away by the black storm-like qi, completely scattering into the air like dead leaves in autumn wind.

Ding ding ding...

Dong dong...

Ten seconds later, like pearls of all shapes and sizes falling on a jade platter, the magik artifacts that all the cultivators had just struck out with were entirely blown away into discord as if there was a shower of magik artifacts raining down from the sky.

The disparity in realms was too great.

“Kneel and wait for death in peace. I promise everyone that I’ll grant you all a painless death!” Vermilion Snow proudly stood in her original spot and said with a voice devoid of emotion.

“Puh! Puh! Puh!” The sound of blood being spat out could be heard from the mouths of all the Foundation Establishment cultivators. The seven of them had been swept by the black wind like ruined catkins in the wind, all of them vomiting blood and sent flying back into the ground.

“Is this the realm of half-step Core Formation?” At some point, Firecloud had taken out a long saber, propping it on the ground and clutching his chest as he stood up. He used his reddened eyes to look at the enormous nine-tailed demon fox before him that’s head couldn’t be seen: “Us seven Foundation Establishment cultivators... were actually defeated on first contact?”

All the present several thousand cultivators were dumbstruck.

Moments ago, they had practically struck out with their valiant

blows. However... their attacks had been casually dispersed by their opponent?

Even the Foundation Establishment cultivators they had believed would lead them to safety were of hardly any effect?

“This... This...” An old man trembled from head to toe. He couldn’t escape because Vermilion Snow was standing in front of the entrance!

“Could it be that all of us are going to die here?!”

“How could it be like this?! Why is it like this?!”

“Are the Foundation Establishment cultivators unable to obstruct her?!”

“How can this monster be THIS strong!”

The masses continued to fall back, and unceasingly, shrunk back without pause.

A burst of energy would wane the second time and be exhausted the third. Just now, their attack that had drained away their maximum power against this old monster whose realm far exceeded theirs seemed to overturn the heavens with battle intent, but among all of them, how many people had no choice but to fight?

They had placed their greatest expectations on this move. Already, their ambitious spirits had been consumed.

And as well as their courage.

Especially since this assault had been subdued effortlessly. Fear had already sprouted in the hearts of many cultivators.

It was quiet, a silence like that of death. All that remained was the frenzied dance of black wind that covered the sky and the legions of people rocking side to side unsteadily beneath the tremendous demon.

Shadowslay silently closed his eyes. When he opened them again,

they were radiating a cold light. Circulating his qi in his dantian, he shouted: “I am one with the Dao! Come, my sword!”

In midair, wind and thunder rang out awesomely. Countless white motes of qi suddenly converged together in one spot, and after a few seconds, a three-foot jade sword appeared in the sky.

“There’s no need for you to do this.” Vermilion Snow’s mocking voice echoed out: “You’re perfectly aware that you will die. Is it not preferable to enjoy the peace?”

Shadowslay’s closed eyes faintly trembled and he suddenly laughed. “I was raised in Dongling Province. When I was 10, I tread into the immortal path. When I was 70, I arrived at the pinnacle of Qi Condensation. At 150, I stepped into the middle stage of Foundation Establishment, step by step, in contact with humanity.”

“I have had those who I have served master to, those who I have cherished, and those who have humiliated me...”

“But no matter who it was, never was I taught to draw back a single step against a demon!”

“The ways of humans and demons are separate. [To not be of my race is to inevitably have a different heart](#)! Thou has committed crimes against my peoples, and even though I am far from adequate, you shall be put to death!”

He stifled the billowing qi within his body that he would soon be unable to endure, spat a mouthful of blood onto his sword, and used it to point falteringly at Vermilion Snow: “Fiend... receive your death!”

As if it heard his words, the sword immediately erupted with a layer of scarlet brilliance, making a droning hum.

“Well said...” At this time, a frail voice rang out in the outside world. An old man leaning on a cane and clutching his chest stood up together with seven people.

“Deputy Minister Chu...” Vermilion Snow sneered and glanced at the man: “You still haven’t died? Sit down quietly; I respect your position and can leave you with a complete corpse.”

“You jest.” Deputy Minister Chu turned towards the heavens and laughed heartily: “Humanity has flourished for millenia. Your insignificant demon race, you ilk of ant spirits, dare let loose such absurd poppycock to me?!”

“You know, if I was at the Capital right now, I would have a nuclear warhead prepared just for you!” At this moment, not a shred of an elderly man’s aura could be seen on Chu Tianyi’s body. He seemed to be a fierce tiger that had left the mountain and even took a step forward: “Are you aware that if I survive today, I’m capable of retrieving your dog head in less than a month!”

“It’s a fox’s head.” Vermilion Snow said indifferently: “And so, I bestow death upon you.”

The nine tails raised up high and nine tremendous qi orbs shockingly appeared at the tips. Immediately, nine shiver-inducing white rays of light like mercury swathing full the earth covered everyone present!

“Grandpa!”

“Dad! Save me!”

“Fiend! I will not rest until you die!”

“I swear it! There will be a day where I behead you under my [three-foot bronze sword](#)!”

Miserable wails suddenly converged in the entire arena!

The nine pillars of light transformed into eighteen. From eighteen they turned into thirty-six, and from thirty-six they turned into seventy-two... In a flash, light pillars cloaked the whole arena!

The dense smell of human blood assailed the nose and saturated



the entire Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena! One... Ten... A hundred... A thousand, like the mowing of grass, countless people continued to perish beneath the pillars of light with hardly any resistance! In the case one was struck by the light pillar, a portion of the body seemed to evaporate, smoothly cut off!

With the death of each of person, the seal on Vermilion Snow's forehead became a bit redder.

Within the qi walls, Xu Yangyi's gaze suddenly flashed, and he stared unflaggingly at the qi walls where nothing could be seen! In a twinkling, something seemed to open within his spirit. It was a soundless language, the realization of a holy scripture. It was a thing that even words failed. There was only great courage and great sorrow that could be its context.

He seemed to suddenly realize why to this day it was humanity that possessed the bulk of the strength. Why the demons that were much stronger than the battle capabilities of an individual soldier had to give way in the face of superior forces.

It was something that circulated within the veins of every man, women, and child of Chinese descent. At this instant, his heart began to throb without the least bit justification, and he suddenly thought of the two-character word cultivator that he frequently heard, that at this moment, sent the blood into a boil!

Some were scared, some were brave, some ran off, and some persevered. Those silhouettes that persistently struggled on deeply stirred his heart in this second. At the same time above everyone... there was an even more burdensome responsibility to protect everyone!

To take oneself as a cultivator.

His qi seemed to be shedding something off like a caterpillar breaking out of its chrysalis, finally spreading its wings and transforming into a butterfly.

The sudden dawn of an epiphany.

This is a line by a Tang Poet Su Wendao. Background behind it is tied to a curfew during that time period. But, when people are having fun, things get loose.

Not a line with clear ties to ancient poems even though it sounds like one. Its origins are unknown and is thought to come from someone in the modern era. Idea behind it is that happiness and joy leaves us all too quickly

Another line from a poem. Originates from the work of a Yuan Dynasty poet named Zhao Mengfu. Poem is about people lighting fireworks in the street. In this context, it is supposed to be a flowery phrase to explain how striking and beautiful the fireworks are.

“To not be of my race is to inevitably have a different heart.” This is a play on a phrase said by a famous blind Chinese poet Zuo Qiuming

三尺青鋒 - Three-foot bronze sword. Copy paste these characters to get a better idea of what this looks like. Shadowslay has the same sword, but it is jade. Because it is jade I could not call it a bronze sword.

## Chapter 52: Asura Grounds (4)

---

At this instant, a fierce and sharp pain suddenly exploded in his chest! It seemed like an untold number of awls were drilling into his heart! The fierce pain caused him to cover his dantian with his hand. Even he, who could patiently endure anything, released a cry of irrepressible pain from between the gap of his teeth.

“Huff...” Without the least hesitation, he immediately took a look. He discovered to his astonishment... The black lotus imprint on his chest... had moved!

His flesh was still, but the black lotus, one that he had believed was but a mere tattoo since the small chest vanished, at this instant, appeared to be alive!

In the outside world, a light pillar was suddenly launched before Chu Tianyi. In the next second, following the sharp cry of a fox, the pillar unexpectedly dispersed!

Chu Tianyi wore a grim smile on his face with a pitch-black trigger button in his hand. He was directly faced with Vermilion Snow’s frightened eyes.

“You said I didn’t dare to?” Chu Tianyi’s aged body walked over step by step and he repeated once more: “Did you say I dared not to?”

Vermilion Snow didn’t say anything and suddenly erupted with a screech: “Old thief!”

Following, a gigantic fox claw raked towards Chu Tianyi! Merely, as the claw arrived in front of him, he didn’t budge an inch. The claw stopped and faintly trembled.

“Stow your hand... I will let you leave!”

Chu Tianyi didn’t speak, but rather smiled towards the other cultivators: “Are all of you capable of obstructing her?”

“We can’t.” Firecloud hacked up blood: “Even if the elevation of realms is half-step, the disparity is as vast as the distance between heaven and earth... We can hold her off for half an hour at most.”

Chu Tianyi nodded and soon after pressed down on the button as he smiled: “Everyone... I’ll have to trouble you to accompany me on this journey.”

“[Why is life joyous and death bitter?](#)” Shadowslay laughed heartily: “If I can drag a half-step Core Formation old monster that ranks ninth on the Heavenly Demon Ranking to roam together with me in hell, what is there for me to even dread?!”

“A biological weapon, eh...” The Three Friends in Winter laughed as they stood up: “Never did we imagine in our wildest dreams that we three that have been cautious our entire lives would meet our ends here...”

Not one person fell back!

Eight solitary men faced off against the tremendous 200-meter-long demon form. They seemed like clanging swords, not conceding a single step at all!

Vermilion Snow’s face had turned solemn for the first time. If humans only relied via social connections to stand firm as the master of the world, then it wouldn’t be frightening. Frightening was the scientific developments they had made to this day. There were already some things that were completely capable of threatening Foundation Establishment cultivators!

Like the button in Chu Tianyi’s hand. However... after three seconds, not a sliver of any abnormality occurred!

“As expected, you fear death...” Vermilion Snow sighed in relief as if she had released a heavy burden: “Next... I shall make you believe death to be but a kind of luxury.”

“Trying to make a fool out of me? You... This... This is!?”

Before her voice had even fallen, the body of the gigantic fox

surprisingly wavered, her voice carrying horror: “Im-Immortal Intoxication?!”

“How could you have brought such a thing?!”

“Flee!” A furious shout was released from Shadowslay’s throat: “Everyone, immediately evacuate from the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena!”

Dazed for less than half a second, all the cultivators and ordinary mortals made a mad dash for the entrance!

The tide of people was like an ocean and the stream of people was like knit. The remaining several thousand people dared not to stay a second more. The long dragon formed from the stream of humans mingled with the rising and falling of mournful wails. It carried with it the fleeing light of magik artifacts and cultivator with talismans stuck onto their bodies... At this instant, it was as if this tide rushed forth to the entrance behind the unsteadily standing Vermilion Snow!

“Old thief!” Vermilion Snow’s mournful howl streaked across the sky. She was forced to look on as the few surviving, approximately four to five thousand cultivators fled towards the entrance behind her, unable to move a finger!

Immortal Intoxication... the body of one who was struck by it would be without a smidgen of spiritual force and their four limbs would grow pained and feeble. Even for someone of her realm, it could persist for no less than a couple minutes!

Although she was relying on her demon form, and she still wouldn’t die, but...

All the Foundation Establishment cultivators including Chu Tianyi stirred not an inch in front of her!

“In life I was an illustrious sage and in death I will be a mighty ghost...” The ordinarily seemingly chicken-livered Firecloud tremblingly grasped at the long saber in his hand, pointing the

shattered tip straight at Vermilion Snow: “I, Firecloud, have lived for a 180 years. The time is not distant until I return to the earth... In any case, I was born in China and raised in China and elected to this position above tens of thousands of people. At the least, I cannot just [destroy the bridge after crossing the river](#), no?”

His words were soft, yet they carried with them a determination of certain death. He clearly understood that if they retreated now, there would no doubt that the fleeing low-level cultivators would meet their doom!

The furious Vermilion Snow couldn't let go of a single person. If one had seen what she had done before, they would know! If one had seen how she had obtained her epithet, they would understand!

The enticement of Core Formation was right before her! How could she possibly let a single person slip away? She couldn't withdraw and she was also unwilling to step back! Furthermore, she couldn't retreat!

“I am unworthy of being a mighty ghost, but as a ghost soldier, I am willing to accompany Fellow Daoist Firecloud on this journey.” The Three Friends in Winter guffawed loudly, facing towards Chu Tianyi and saying: “Your Excellency, take your leave.”

Chu Tianyi's gaze sunk and he finally nodded: “I will leave. Be at ease, I shall look after every clan and each youth of the younger generation on your behalfs.”

“May there be a day where my Chu Clan is your clan one day.”

“Of course, this is a debt that you as deputy minister are unable to resist, so who shall come fight it?” Firecloud turned towards the sky and roared in laughter: “Leave! The importance of your departure alone is equal to ten of us Foundation Establishment cultivators in concerns to China!”

Chu Tianyi said nothing further and immediately left after he

bowed.

Vermilion Snow's eyes reddened! Even now her tails wouldn't budge, and she was unable to stand!

“Juniors!!!” Her scorchingly enraged howl tore through the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, and her eyes inflamed: “Remain, you wretches... I need the rest of thou souls to ignite my [celestial lantern](#)! I have burned for several centuries! I will wither away and die!”

“To disturb my Core Formation Grand Dao, I will not rest until all of you die!”

“I wasn't intending to live on any longer!” Shadowslay raised his sword and laughed heartily: “Fiend, be on guard for my sword!”

Dong! The sword light was wrapped by a bamboo leaf, a leaf no less than the size of a man and covered with blood-colored veins. Vermilion Snow gnashed her teeth and said: “Junior... This will at most maintain for a quarter of an hour... If I don't pull out thou tendons and flay thou skin, I would have lived in vain for these several centuries!”

“Haha! What is there to fear?!” Firecloud laughed brightly and brandished his saber. The face of it radiated with layers of flames, and it left behind a burning scar in the sky.

“Fiend! You kill people like harvesting hemp; there will be a day where you shall meet a grisly death!” The Three Friends in Winter laughed uproariously and transformed into three streaming lights, scattering their bodies: “We three brothers will be waiting for you in the nether!”

“To kill one man is to be a murderer, to slaughter ten thousand is to be a hero! I count that a hundred thousand people have fallen by my hand; how could I fear life or death?!” Vermilion Snow's mournful cry filled the entire Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, causing the heart to shiver.

There wasn't anyone that had paid attention, but within the billowing qi walls, the forlorn and stifled shout of a man rang out. The anguish was extreme, a moan incapable of being repressed by any measure.

“ARRGH!!!” Xu Yangyi clutched at his chest and wailed towards the heavens.

This wasn't a pain that traveled from the outside to the inside like a blade or hatchet wound. This... was a pain that radiated internally to bleed out externally! It seemed to be an agony that split apart his body in two!

His fists were already clenched in a death grip and each muscle of his bared upper body swelled. The veins atop his muscles moved erratically and his entire body secreted a layer of cold sweat. There was simply no method of relief.

It was just as he gained his first understanding of the word “cultivator”, an explanation that wasn't explained by a book. Afterwards, a kind of pain like a melding shadow seemed to scrape the inside of his body with an infinite number of knives! It scalded his blood, it was the burden of struggling against the heavens for life!

Regardless of whether it was Vermilion Snow who had cut down humans like grass and killed her way into Heavens Law in a berserker rage to break through a great realm, or the several Foundation Establishment seniors that were sacrificing their lives in order for Nantong Province's hundreds of clans to escape... This was a true cultivator!

A man of true character knew how to carry himself and what conduct there was to be avoided. This was a cultivator!

At this moment, he laid prone on the floor, but his body was drawn like a bending bow. With his right hand supported on the ground and his left hand firmly pressed down on his chest, beads of agonizing cold sweat followed down his unwavering chin to the



ground. Although he was already enduring the pain tenaciously, a suffering moan still came out from the gap of his teeth.

No... Not like this! Before the pain that caused him to completely lose his spiritual sense, Xu Yangyi already knew that the present seven Foundation Establishment cultivators had taken themselves as bait, staying behind as the authorities of the previous era!

Ranked ninth on the Heavenly Demon Ranking, this was an ancient demon that had claimed several hundred thousands of lives in her hands! An old monster that had lived on since the Qing dynasty to the modern era for a century!

If he couldn't maintain lucidity right now, then later on... even if there was an opportunity, it would pass on in a twinkling!

He had to leave this place... He swung his head that was even now muddled in pain and rigidly gritted his teeth. With his hand clutching at his heart, Xu Yangyi's entire person landed on the ground with a boom and his right hand fumbled about unsteadily.

Finally, he found a sharp rock, and without further words, aimed it at his right arm and stabbed it in with all of his strength!

"Fuck..." A heavy groan came out of his mouth. He couldn't thrust the stone into his leg because Chu Zhaonan's damned bullet was still in his chest and he needed his leg to escape.

A piercing pain spread from his left arm to his brain. He didn't know if he could fight fire with fire, but he surprisingly felt the internal pain take a fair turn for the better. However, he didn't catch sight that some of the splattered blood had dyed his chest and unexpectedly been absorbed by the black lotus imprint on his chest. Moreover...

After the lotus absorbed blood, it went so far as to slowly turn white!

"Huff..." He wiped away at the cold sweat on his head, planning to wake up Chu Zhaonan, yet at this moment, his face suddenly

changed.

A qi had disappeared... In Xu Yangyi's heart, it was like a shooting star streaking across the sky. His throat unconsciously tightened...

This was Shadowslay's qi... Just now, it had been thoroughly crushed. Shadowslay had fallen in battle.

He didn't have time for sorrow, and moreover, he didn't have the time to consider how dire the situation was on the outside. This was because the second qi to succumb immediately followed.

"Senior Wang..." His heart was rather aggrieved. Among these people, when it was time to scramble over talents, some were annoying naggers, some were chicken-livered, and some had grave and stern faces but a belly full of evil tricks. However, at the most critical juncture, all of them stood up and rose to the occasion.

They had used their lives to give Xu Yangyi a lesson. In a cultivator's life, the most pivotal moment, and also the most important, was to trace back to one's origin.

What was a cultivator?

This was his Dao. It was his truth. It was his root.

The second Dao... The third Dao... until at last, there was only one Dao that remained!

Swish... At this time, the four qi walls collapsed with a rumble! All gazes were suddenly concentrated on his body!

Xu Yangyi rigidly clenched his teeth, trembling as he clutched at his chest. His somewhat reddened eyes saw in astonishment a half-dead, half-alive man skewered on Vermilion Snow's claw. It was Firecloud.

As for the others... he couldn't see them anymore, only the remnants of their qi in the air, proving that they had once walked this earth.

Vermilion Snow was dazed and so was Firecloud. It had been beyond Vermilion Snow's expectations that there would still be someone here.

In his heart, Firecloud roared weakly! He had forgotten... The developments that had occurred were so abrupt that he had practically forgotten he had shut off Xu Yangyi inside like a "good friend".

This person... couldn't be lost! In the future, he alone would be capable of safeguarding 100,000 Qi Condensation cultivators! Firecloud had this kind of premonition!

"Young man..." Originally, he felt that his spiritual sense was already scattering away and his pupils went slack, yet at this moment, he was suddenly brimming with a boundless strength: "One day... for... us... us eight... you must take vengeance!"

The final radiance of a dying sun.

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply. He didn't know why, but the present boiling of the blood of his chest was simply clamoring! He hadn't considered it a shred at all, but because of the violent pain of his heart, his voice was trembling fiercely. However, he said word for word with an incomparable staunchness and a resolution that could chop through nails and cleave apart iron: "I hereby vow."

"I, Xu Yangyi, in the rest of my days, shall slay this demon!"

"Why is life joyous and death bitter?" This is a line from who I think is Xuanzang, a famous Buddhist who was worried about the "purity" of buddhist text in China so he made a 17~ year journey to India. Already a famous figure, he became well known because of the story "Journey to the West". This phrase is used in a rhetorical matter, since the idea is that life and death are two sides of the same coin. Therefore to think of both as separate things is pointless.

"Destroy the bridge after crossing the river" - To achieve success

and then discard one's benefactor

“Celestial Lantern” - Sky/heaven lantern whatever. I thought this was part of demon physiology, but it's more like an allusion to a great achievement/goal

# Chapter 53: Emperor Armament (1)

---

“HAHAHAHAHA!” Vermilion Snow’s roaring laughter spread about like a ripple: “You?!”

“On the basis of just you!? By relying on yourself, a Qi Condensation insect?”

“When I was cultivating at the [Green-Hill Mountain](#), your great-grandmother hadn’t even come into this world yet!”

Firecloud laughed as well, not because he felt it to be ridiculous, but rather because he was relieved. A fiendishly gifted cultivator added on with a Core Formation arcane effort... He didn’t think it to be a laughing matter at all.

It was a pity... that he wouldn’t be able to see it for himself.

“Run!” He roared, and in a flash, Vermilion Snow suddenly cast him off her claw!

“Detonating your qi sea?!” She looked at Firecloud in shock. Never would she have imagined that he would be so unyielding. Just now, she had felt the qi sea within his body come to a sudden boil. This was the prelude of the qi sea’s self-detonation!

Xu Yangyi stiffly clenched his teeth and headed behind Vermilion Snow without a second word, but her nine tails madly rushed to block off the entrance!

Just as he took a step, the body-wide pain, the pain of the absence of qi, the pain of his heart—all the aftermath of his battle with Chu Zhaonan—enveloped his entire body like a tide! His eyes reddened and he unflinchingly pressed his teeth together. Suddenly using his leg to tread forward, he exercised all of his strength to rush towards the entrance!

The opportunity would only exist in this instant!

This twinkling that Firecloud had traded his life for wasn’t for

him to take revenge now! Rather, it was for later on as he arrived at Foundation Establishment and stepped into Core Formation to visit this enmity once again!

Bang! Less than two seconds later, a small mushroom cloud exploded in front of Vermilion Snow. Following her miserable howl, Xu Yangyi didn't turn back but instead drew upon his full strength to rush urgently towards the entrance!

Behind him, a violent shock wave proliferated all around. The clothes on Xu Yangyi's whole body were suddenly rushed forward by it! It was as if the center of his back had been struck by a hammer, and he was unable to put up any resistance in vomiting a mouthful of blood!

Firecloud has passed on. The eight Foundation Establishment seniors, at this moment, had all fallen without exception. In order to allow all the people of Nantong Province to escape, they hadn't pulled back a single step.

He had to move faster! He needed to speed up again!

Firecloud had already done the utmost he could accomplish; Xu Yangyi had to flee!

Closer... He was getting even closer. He didn't know how he was actually capable of running so quickly without spiritual force, but the door was a distance of several tens of meters away, barely apart by twenty meters! He charged forth with the wish to survive!

Swish... At this moment, a petite silhouette appeared before him.

Thump... He halted his footsteps without delay and swiftly drew back. At this split second, he instantly recognized it was Vermilion Snow's human form. This was because the bloody smell on her body and her terrifying might were one in the same!

"What're you rushing for?" A jade hand waved softly and was accompanied by gentle laughter like a silver bell: "He was doing nothing more than teasing you. Did you believe the self-detonation

of an insignificant middle-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator could harm me? What ridiculous naivety.”

Bang! The hand appeared weak and powerless, yet seemed to carry a tremendous force that could topple mountains and overturn seas! Xu Yangyi had already crossed both of his arms to protect his chest, but he had been sent directly flying several tens of meters without the slightest concern!

Crack! The bones of his entire body seemed to like they were going to break, and he painfully covered his chest. With a rip, the wound that had been healed recently by Firecloud tore open again, even more severe than the one from an hour ago.

Cough... All that he hacked out was blood, and he silently surveyed the state of his body. This blow had at the minimum fractured half of the bones in his entire body... Speech came as an impossibility to him, and all that spilled forth as he opened his mouth was blood. He was struggling to stand up, but just as he straightened his figure, a slender jade foot stepped on his back.

Boom! Like a massive 1000-catty hammer had struck him, he was firmly trampled down beneath her foot, unable to lift a finger.

Vermilion Snow hadn't seen it, but because Xu Yangyi was pressed down, glimmers of golden light had flashed fleetingly from his seven apertures. It seemed as if inside his body... there was some hidden object that radiated golden light.

“Let me guess... You're this graduation's paragon?” Vermilion Snow didn't give any mind to the mixture of blood and mud all over his body and laughed dazzlingly: “Take a look, there's no one here now. The annoyances have all died. I killed several thousand people this time; shouldn't I take a bit of interest from your body?”

A long snow-white leg appeared before Xu Yangyi, and Vermilion Snow crouched down. Using her hand to raise his chin, she gently helped him push aside his hair: “I want to ask you a question.”

Xu Yangyi's gaze looked forward. Vermilion Snow's left hand had raised his chin and her right hand was incessantly spinning a jade chest.

Seeing his gaze, Vermilion Snow said matter of factly: "Do you want this item? That won't do. Old Ghost Firecloud was protecting it to his death... It's sure to be a good item."

That belongs to me... Xu Yangyi closed his eyes. This time, he wanted to kill. He wanted to chop off this demon's head, place it in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, and use her blood to offer sacrifices to all of today's fallen martyrs.

"Be good now; it won't do to behave too greedily." Her gaze followed all the way down from Xu Yangyi's pectorals to his abdominals, and she extended her foot to rub against them in passing: "Say, weren't they idiots? They were fully aware they were going to die, but they still obstructed me?"

Xu Yangyi's Adam's apple stirred, and he closed his eyes, not speaking. It wasn't that he didn't want to say anything, but rather his entire body from head to toe was surprisingly in pain! It was a sensation like being set aflame, a scorching terror!

Vermilion Snow didn't know that he didn't have qi right now, but he knew. With his constitution several times better than a normal person's, he had been slammed from the highest point of elevation of the several-tens-of-meters tall audience stands into the arena ring! A great circle of spider webs broke open, yet he actually hadn't died?

"Fuck you..." After a while, he finally had a sliver of qi and used it without the slightest hesitation for his most familiar insult.

Crack Before his voice had even fallen, Vermilion Snow picked up his broad hand and effortlessly broke one of his fingers: "I'll say it again. Weren't they idiots?"

Severe anguish spread into Xu Yangyi's brain, but he didn't



shout, but rather looked unwaveringly into Vermilion Snow's emotionless eyes. The muscles of his cheeks stirred and he said word for word: "Listen up."

"Fuck you." He laughed fiercely, yet the corner of his mouth was teeming with a delighted arc: "[F-U-C-K Y-O-U](#)."

"Got it? Whore." If he was going to die, he absolutely wouldn't choose to go down kneeling!

Vermilion Snow sighed gently, raising her head to look at the already scar-covered Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena: "The first time I saw you, I felt you were carrying an extremely familiar, but extremely loathsome scent to me...so I will gently remind you..."

She pinched Xu Yangyi's chin and thoughtfully propped her hand neck and said faintly: "An era seems quite far ago, no? Let it be... I can't recall it."

Letting go of Xu Yangyi's face, she took her hand back, laughed, and calmly snapped another one of his fingers: "Little boy, be obedient, I'm giving you another chance. Say that you're my servant and then kneel on the ground and kiss my feet. I will grant you bliss."

"Haha..." Xu Yangyi didn't even heavily groan as he heard his finger snapping like a firework. The [ten fingers linked to his heart](#), yet the pain didn't cause him to scream at all, only bringing blood and laughter.

The burning within his body... was becoming hotter and hotter. If not for his whole body covered from head to toe in blood presently, it would've long become visible.

Inside his body, there seemed to be something erupting. Something that his skin, his flesh, and his bones were unable to obstruct. He truly was without strength; to say more would be superfluous.

Vermilion Snow's face chilled. She sighed gently: "Then... go to hell to accomplish your sweet dreams, alright?"

In the next second, her hand thrust straight into Xu Yangyi's heart. His gaze shrunk and he didn't even feel the pain. He only felt his heart burst and his blood cease to circulate, an ice-cold whole-body sensation.

Am I going to die... His defeated eyes carried a heavy irreconciliation. Am I going to die like this?

He had just seized the paragonship... and now he would be killed here by such a demon?

Swoosh! At this instant, his entire body suddenly erupted with a golden radiance! The golden rays illuminated the entire Unrivalled Beneath the Heavens Arena! It spilled forth from within his qi sea like the descent of a holy child! Not only was it Xu Yangyi who was knocking on death's doorstep sent into a daze, but even Vermilion Snow was wholly stunned!

What was this?

Xu Yangyi didn't know. He only felt... that within these several seconds, his entire body had unexpectedly underwent an astonishing restoration! This was a kind of restoration that transcended all he knew about pill elixirs! In nearly a twinkling, he had recovered to his initial state!

"This..." He even nonchalantly raised his hand, looking in shock at everything that occurred before him, which had surpassed his imagination.

Vermilion Snow slightly gaped. She who had lived for several centuries had never seen such a spectacle. With her own hands, she had pinched his heart to rupture, so how could this be possible?!

Buzz... In an instant, the golden rays become more and more magnificent! Xu Yangyi finally discovered from where these golden

lights were coming from! It came from above his qi sea to outside of his body from a palm-sized golden chest that was frantically trembling!

A droning sound like Buddhist chants seemed to be in disarray, yet came through with an extreme rhythm from the chest. Every ray of light appeared like the red afterglow of the heaven's horizons, the color of the setting sun at night, a boundless magnificence with such holy purity that it caused none to dare look closely at it!

It was a kind of indescribable heavenly might. A mere glance at it and one would know that while these rays held not a shred of a power, they dared not to even touch them at all.

As the chest rolled over and over about, Vermilion Snow couldn't help but to seize the jade chest and recoil. She sensed... the object inside the upper half of this chest, this item... was very terrible, extremely terrible... so that it even caused her to feel a coldness birthed on her back! Moreover... this sensation was incredibly familiar!

Yes... That was right! What caused her to glance many times at this brat as he entered the branch was this certain feeling! This sensation... caused her to be so nauseated that she wanted to vomit, yet because it had been ages, she still felt a shred of danger!

How long had it been since she had last encountered it? Fifty years? No... A century?

“Yes! A 113 years ago, the item that damned imperial eunuch took out in his hand to slay me with carried this sensation!”

In her veins, this ancient memory exploded with a rumble, a kind of fright that had come bestowed by the heavens. In a flash, it took hold of her thoughts.

“Emperor Armament!!!” A resounding screech suddenly erupted from her throat, and she turned back to flee without the slightest

hesitation!

At the same time, on the first level of the Heavens Law branch, the area was already filled with corpses. However, at this moment, a tremendous mechanical face on the ceiling opened its eyes without warning, zeroes and ones circulating within its eyes.

“Spiritual force fluctuation... Unable to be calculated... Spiritual force intensity... Unable to be calculated... Spiritual force persistence: three to five seconds...”

“Retrieving guidance procedures... Located on an organism in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena. Retrieving all data. Recording...”

Before the machine’s voice had fallen, it opened its mouth and a tiny green leaf, perhaps only one third the size of a palm, fluttered down unhurriedly. Subsequently, this green leaf, like it had transformed into a bolt of green lightning, charged towards the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena with a speed incapable of being viewed clearly by the naked eye!

Simultaneously, in all of China, ten pairs of eyes that seemed to be long dormant in slumber suddenly opened. Nearly synchronously, two words came out from their mouths.

“Emperor Armament?!”

Green-Hill Mountain - I want to make note that this is an actual mountain in China where a nine-tailed fox is supposed to be. Mentioned in The Classic of the Mountains and Seas

Author actually uses english here to for the spelled out swearing

“Fingers linked to heart” I feel this requires some explanation + I think this is considered a chengyu. The idea behind this phrase is that the fingers are used a lot for sensory task, so that when you hurt them, it goes straight to the heart and is very painful

## Chapter 54: Emperor Armament (2)

---

Vermilion Snow couldn't flee. This was because Xu Yangyi's hand had firmly seized onto her's! Xu Yangyi didn't speak, only using his faintly reddened gaze to look at Vermilion Snow's panic-stricken expression that covered her face. He didn't know why he had done such, but it stemmed from instinct.

Within his body, golden light radiated all around, and an unprecedentedly powerful qi filled each one of his muscles to the brim! Every one of his bones! He dared not to believe that this was his own body. He also knew this was absolutely not his own cultivation!

But... then whose was its?

He was only aware the he was very strong! The current him was terribly strong! Strong... to the degree he could stand on equal footing with Vermilion Snow!

“No... Let go of me, junior!!!” Vermilion Snow didn't know what to think, completely lacking her prior leisurely sauntering composure and releasing a screech! Following, her hand immediately sprouted white fur! Layers upon layers of fur spread forth in transformation! She was undergoing her demonization again without the slightest hesitation!

Rays of white qi flickered, and afterwards, golden brilliance radiated from all over Xu Yangyi's body. Like a god overlooking the human realm, he lightly seized Vermilion Snow's finger.

Swooosh! Layer upon layers of snow-white silver tails swiftly emerged from Vermilion Snow's body. In a twinkling, a tremendous fox appeared once more! This time, it was devoid of grace or unhurried calm. There was only a voice that flooded the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena!

“Kill!!!”

An over 200-meter-long silver nine-tailed fox with her right claw at her foremost had been grasped in the hand of a youth covered in blood, as to the extent that the youth was only pulling on a few of her hairs. However, she alarmingly discovered she was unable to wrest herself free!

She was a half-step Core Formation demon, and he was at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, yet she... was still unable to throw him off!

“Accept your death!” Vermilion Snow’s killing intent had thoroughly erupted, and her nine tails and mouth spread open at the same time. A purple origin crystal like thunderfire suddenly flew out!

It was only the size of a soccer ball, and in comparison to Vermilion Snow’s demon form, it could be that it wasn’t possible for it to be even smaller. However, the surface of it was covered with blood vessel-like veins, streaks of rushing thunder, and wisps of clamoring purple clouds, certifying that it contained a might that could overturn the heavens!

This was an origin crystal. An origin crystal born from a half-step Core Formation demon. In the case Vermilion Snow reached Core Formation, the blood vessel-esque veins on the surface would disappear in their entirety and become a true demon core.

She was merely a step away in distance from the true realm of Core Formation. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have dared brave the massive peril of washing the Heavens Law branch with blood. She couldn’t NOT break out. The present Xu Yangyi gave her a sense of extreme danger! Confronted with such an “organism”, her first instinct was to attack!

This was because this attack was in order to escape!

It was an Emperor Armament... An Emperor Armament! Her heart screeched, how could such an item lost for countless of years possibly be in Xu Yangyi’s hands?!

Escape... Escape was her first reaction! Even though over a century had passed, she vividly remembered how she who was already at Foundation Establishment was laid to waste under the hands of that damned eunuch and had to flee miserably! This current Xu Yangyi appeared to be even more powerful than that eunuch!

“What powerful strength...” Xu Yangyi didn’t look at the flying half-completed origin crystal at all, but rather he surveyed his person. There wasn’t a single trace of a flaw over his entire body, and rays of golden light erupted from his pores and his seven apertures. Half of a palm-sized chest revolved in his qi sea. He himself didn’t dare to believe it; what even was this realm? Making a fist, the wind around his figure immediately tightened as it rustled.

Thou only has three breaths.

“Who are you?” He immediately asked as a voice suddenly appeared in his brain. No one responded, but Xu Yangyi wasn’t in the current mood to listen to the other’s explanation.

Three breaths... Three seconds?

The will to battle within his heart erupted like a volcano!

Several thousands of human lives... The lives of eight Foundation Establishment cultivators...

“Time to settle the debt... whore...” There was no reason to speak. He would kill without mercy!

The first second!

“Solution Ninety... Life Sacrificatio**n**! Solution Eighty-Three... Starfire. Solution Seventy... [Water-Moon Void](#)!”

“Alert! Alert!” At the same time in the level above amidst the savage desolation, motes of information frantically flickered all over Heavens Law. Without a shred of emotion, the voice echoed unceasingly: “Detecting energy that surpassess world’s tolerability

levels... Detecting energy that surpasses world's tolerability levels... Initializing scanning..."

"Initial-stage Core Formation... Middle-stage Core Formation... Late-stage Core Formation... Great Circle of Core Formation... Alert! Alert! Incapable of continuing data retrieval! Has transcended branch avatar's scope of power! World-transcending energy grade!"

"Request whether or not to activate Slaughter Weapon? Request whether or not activate Slaughter Weapon?"

"No..." At the same time, several complex voices spoke out in unison and echoed out within a room, close yet worlds apart. Subsequently, information beams suddenly flashed all over Heavens Law's avatar. Afterwards, it shut its eyes.

"Record all visual." A voice rang out: "Include this matter on secrets surpassing S-rank. Pertaining the Emperor Armament, we must not grow complacent by even a hair!"

"Shut off all channels. Within ten minutes, This Dao Master shall personally take to the scene."

In the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, a mirage as fast as lightning drew out a long afterimage behind it with a speed impossible to see clearly with the naked eye. In a flash, it appeared on top of a fox head!

Life Sacrificion amplified all skills. Starfire, as he remembered it, was the swiftest body lightening solution. Water-Moon Void was a solution in the middle ranks that he had always wanted to use, but was simply incapable of utilising!

Everyone knew the Hundred Solutions was an elementary-rank arcane effort; who would spend so much thought to study it? Even Xu Yangyi only remembered several tens of the solutions. Life Sacrificion was worthy of use, however, the cost was too great.

At this instant, Life Sacrificion seemed unable to put his



spiritual force to use! However, the speed that shifted at nearly a wink caused Xu Yangyi's gaze to flicker. Nevertheless, he didn't stop.

The present landscape was no longer the joyous and harmonious scenery that had taken place an hour prior. Ruined limbs, blood, and corpses... were everywhere! This was an asura ground. The gazes of several thousand lives and eight Foundation Establishment seniors landed on him. With this fist, he exhausted his full strength!

Boom! A heavy sound rang out, and Vermilion Snow was forcibly smashed down into a gigantic crater by the crown of her head! However... things didn't end there!

The Water-Moon Void was a solution that erupted with layers upon layers of spiritual force. After the first punch descended, Xu Yangyi's fist raised upwards, and in the middle of the sky, echoed out with a series of heavy booms!

Crack!!! The Baihui Meridian was located in the crown of the head and a heavy blow to it would incur fatal consequences! Vermilion Snow raised her tremendous head and screeched miserably! This was the first time she had been met with blood, and moreover, the blood spilled from her seven apertures!

“Junior!!!” In the midst of her throat-splitting screech, her voice transformed into ripples visible to the naked eye! The waves scattered in all directions! Followed by a rumbling, the floor of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena and the audience stands all collapsed one by one!

But just as she raised her head upwards, looking at Xu Yangyi with a fury that split her eyes apart, Vermilion Snow's pupils suddenly needled! This was because... in the sky, the four characters of unrivaled beneath the heavens ceased to be!

It was not a true non-existence, but rather the countless golden rays and red clouds stirred! Glimmers of golden light outlined the

image of a man! It was a bizarre leopard-headed man riding atop a strange beast with the body of a horse and the head of a boar. His face was nebulous, yet it could be plainly felt at a glance that it was vacant. With a bamboo slip grasped in one hand and a fist formed in the other, he slowly advanced to hammer her down!

Buzz! At this second, the hair all over her body, as if there was a massive airplane propeller on top of her head, was completely sent billowing through the air! Such was the extent that it even blinded her eyes!

Crunch! Without warning, her four claws forcefully trampled into the ground, splitting apart the floor! Giant spider web cracks appeared! Her sharp fox eyes turned into slivers as they were blown downwards by the tremendous wind pressure.

She caught sight of a fist. It wasn't fast, yet she was incapable of evading it at all!

"How... How is this possible!" She screeched towards the heavens: "It was 'erased'! My intention to 'dodge' was 'erased'! What the hell is this monster!"

Boom! Before her voice had even fallen, the golden fist had already hammer down on her head neither slowly nor swiftly!

Crack! Crack! Crack! The sound of teeth breaking filled the air, and all of her teeth, because the top of her head and jaw had both been struck with a heavy blow, shattered completely!

Blood freely torrented out from her seven apertures! Already, a clearly visible depression had been left on her head! This strike had sent her seeing stars, and her feet stood unsteadily! Her tremendous body fell on the ground with a rumble, and the sand on the ground scattered into the air!

Second number two!

Xu Yangyi didn't give his opponent an opportunity to rest, and his second strikes came like lightning! It was an ordinary blow,

however, the strange silhouette twisting in untold golden rays appeared behind him again!

“This, it’s...” At this waning moment, Vermilion Snow recalled an ancient legend. A leopard-headed man sitting atop a boar-headed horse... nonetheless, it was too late. A fist twisting with endless golden lights rumbled above her origin crystal mercilessly! This blow was directed towards her origin crystal.

You want to produce a core? Then, I’ll shatter your origin crystal to pieces!

CRACK!!!! A blood-curdling scream that seemed like the collapse of dead wood rang out! Just as Vermilion Snow’s massive body over 200 meters long fell to the ground, blood came jetting out of her mouth! Her heart was trembling!

The origin crystal and a demon’s cultivation were intimately related. In this twinkling, Vermilion Snow only felt that her body was like an iron leaf, set down and frantically pounded with a gigantic hammer! However, her heart was without an iota of struggle. Since she had recalled who the void image behind Xu Yangyi’s back was, her desire to continue battle died out!

What a joke... This was... a legend! A legend known to all in China!

“Yiiiiip!” The female fox howled mournfully upon receiving this heavy blow, yet she didn’t attack, and instead, her tremendous body keenly turned tail, madly escaping towards the entrance! She had to escape! This was frightening, too frightening!

This legend was actually true! In her life spanning over two centuries, this was the first time she had seen it! Flee! She had to flee! Staying here would only lead to a path of death!

In the thick of her escape, her body swiftly shrunk, finally transforming into a young girl wearing a qipao, terror smeared across her face. However, her hands, feet, and hair were all formed

from black smoke. Within the lingering black smoke, she made a mad dash towards the entrance!

The third second!

In the sky, only a golden afterimage could be seen! In the next second, Xu Yangyi was already standing before her, looking at the fright-stricken face of the young girl.

“Spare...”

Boom!

“A while ago, it was you that wanted to kill me.” Xu Yangyi felt his fist sink into Vermilion Snow’s tender abdomen, not giving the other a chance to finish speaking at all. Her expression was terrified, and her stunning visage’s lustrous cascade of black hair almost hung down on his shoulder. His expression was ice-cold without a sliver of hesitation due to her beauty.

With a heavy thud, Vermilion Snow’s entire being was struck to the ground. On her back, there was a distinct bulge that had been dug in by the deep insertion of a fist. Her mouth opened wide and her eyes saucered. She was incapable of believing in what had transpired in any measure.

This insignificant Qi Condensation insect... This dreg of a Qi Condensation cultivator... This trash that had casually grinded her to death! Despite everything... she had actually been beaten into such a state by him in three seconds!

In this instant, her facial features twisted, her whole face alternating between demon and human unceasingly. Sometimes she had fox ears and other times she had human ears. Occasionally, her pupils would be slitted, and at others, they would be black. Her skin that was snow white flickered in between fur and skin without pause in less than a span of a second! Her hair fluctuated from black to white, and in one moment, it would be nine white sections, and in the next, she would have a full head of hair like

ebony silk!

Both her hands trembled madly, suddenly extending to foot-long fingernails. In the next second, the nails would recede once again! Her origin crystal trembled; her demonic base had suffered damage... In her heart, her spirit fled away in terror!

A fist had almost brought her back to her true form!

Water-Moon Void - is directly translated as water moon no space between (very close) I thought void was a fitting way to describe this. Mean to represent the closeness of the moon and water

## Chapter 55: Emperor Armament (3)

---

Vermilion Snow didn't have a sliver of time to react. This was because ensuingly, her opponent had vanished again!

"Where are you!" Vermilion Snow's entire body was emitting black smoke, her hoarse voice screeching: "Come out! Get the hell out here!"

Boundless golden light illuminated every crevice of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena. At this moment, she and Xu Yangyi seemed to be like Ye Gucheng and Ximen Chuixue locked in contest at the summit of the Forbidden City.

"Receive your death!" Vermilion Snow shrieked, her left hand madly grabbing out towards her left side. Just as she extended her hand, inches of it turned large and finally transformed into a tremendous, several-tens-of-meters-long fox claw!

Her body leaned sideways, and as she leaned, she dredged up flights of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heaven Arena's audience stands.

"Damn you!" Her voice was incomparably mournful, and she exhausted all of her strength to claw out five several-meter deep scars that immediately appeared on the audience stands! "Junior!!!" On her right hand, her five fingers condensed five plate-sized black spirit pearls that exploded with a rumble!

Boom boom boom! No less than a greater half of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena was destroyed! Countless gravel stones surged and fell about. This was a frightened madness, a berserking used to conceal the extreme fear in her heart! At this time, the corner of her eye suddenly flickered, and a silhouette interweaved with golden light moved without warning.

Crack! She saw him, yet even if it was her, she was incapable of reacting at this moment!

With a leg, Xu Yangyi leapt up and used his knee cap to slam his opponent into the ground from behind. The rumbling sound of stone shattering roared and fractured apart in succession. Countless rivulets of blood gushed out from the ground. The sound of bones breaking could be heard coming from Vermilion Snow's back. Xu Yangyi could hear it quite clearly, yet it didn't stir his emotions one bit.

“This one is for the several thousand human lives here.” It wasn't enough... It still wasn't enough! The blood within his heart was boiling, and there was a voice shouting that these several punches were simply insufficient!

A cultivator's integrity. A cultivator's responsibility. A cultivator's burden. On this day, with the cost of 7000 lives as the price, he had learned these things. Now was the time for remunerations.

From where this strength came from was not important. What was important was that he had to realize his promise to Firecloud right now and put this demon to the edge of a blade! Afterwards, he would take her demon head and lay it in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena in consolation to the true cultivators.

“Hehe... Hehehe...” A wretched laughed came from Vermilion Snow's mouth, whose head was being pressed down upon by Xu Yangyi. Her hair had long fell into disarray, and the veins on both of her hands were exposed. Clawing at the ground, she broke apart layer upon layer of broken stone through both of her hands! All of a sudden, she denounced: “Junior! On this day, I shall not rest until you meet your end!”

Her condition made her seem to be a devil, and her full head of black hair loosely draped over her shoulders. Even now, she was dyed unbearably filthy with blood. Her bewitchingly beautiful face was completely covered in mud and blood; not only that, her left side was bulging outwards and her right side was sunken inwards. She was essentially not of human form!

“This one’s for...” Just as Xu Yangyi was about to punch a third time, he abruptly discovered a tremendous crack had materialized in his surroundings!

A spatial crack!

The feeling of the pure-black spatial crack was quite odd. If it was said the surrounding air was paper, then this paper had currently split apart. The air seemed to turn viscous, and this viscosity formed a strange black crack. Xu Yangyi was situated in the center of this black crack, and a bizarre attractive force was dragging him towards the inside of it.

He didn’t know where this spatial crack would lead, and he didn’t know what was inside.

Simultaneously, his entire body’s spiritual force, a spiritual force that was just frighteningly abundant, receded away like a tide. Vermilion Snow sensed the pressure on her whole body ease up, and already in her mind, she was planning to exert every fiber of her being. Standing up, she discovered an astonishing scene.

“Heh... Hehehe! Hahahahaha!” She turned towards the sky and began to roar in laughter like a madman: “You still can’t kill me! You’re still unable to kill me!”

“Bastard! This is your last chance! Next time we meet, I shall pull out your tendons and flay your skin!” Her luxurious cascade of ebony hair danced disorderly, and blood flowed from her seven apertures. The present her was just like a berserk demon.

Xu Yangyi’s entire form was slowly sucked into spatial crack.

Crack crack crack... Time seemed to have reverse, and his wounds of three seconds prior had returned in their entirety. A pain that caused his five viscera and six bowels to shift made him unable to restrain himself from vomiting a mouthful of blood.

What the hell was this object? It could reverse time? Supply spiritual force? It appeared to do all these things, but in his heart,



Xu Yangyi kept on feeling it wasn't so simple. His wounds became increasingly greater and and more severe until he felt that all the bones in his body seemed to break, and he released a heavy groan.

“Remember...” Vermilion Snow was ten-odd meters away from Xu Yangyi. She said with her voice hoarse, her body seemingly inhuman, and blood spilling from her seven apertures: “Dreg... You best pray you don't meet me again...”

Xu Yangyi stifled the surging sharp pain within his body, and before his entire body's spiritual force drained dry, he suddenly pointed out with his finger and a golden brilliance formed a tiny snake, which fluttered towards Vermilion Snow.

Vermilion Snow's laughter immediately died, and she screeched as she used both her arms to protect her head. However, there was nothing. No... She had carefully seen that as the spatial tear nearly joined seamlessly, nonetheless...

Her... jade chest that she was holding with an arcane effort inside had disappeared! Furthermore... the unconscious man that was just on the side had vanished, as well!

“Solution Eighty-One... Stealing Heavens, Swapping Sun...” At the center of the spatial crack, Xu Yangyi and Chu Zhaonan were glued together, and Xu Yangyi's hand that was dragging the jade chest was trembling. He laughed bitterly: “Fuck...”

Afterwards, he blacked out, too. His wounds had returned, reversed to when Vermilion Snow had slapped the spiritual forceless him down into the ground by several tens of meters. He had long since lost the capability to support himself.

If it weren't for the heart-like hot blood sustaining him, perhaps he would've fell over early on. Merely, his hand still grabbed onto the jade box. This was the establishment source of his cultivation path.

Vermilion stood dazed where she was, looking at the spatial crack

in the air that ultimately vanished. The crook of her mouth suddenly raised strangely.

“Ahahaha...” Gentle laughter rang out a couple times, and soon after, she turned to the sky and laughed heartily: “Go... Go well, go very well! Hehehehe!” Her heart finally eased, and her gaze turned absolutely icy again. “Little Bastard... Just wait...” She sneered: “For you to actually be in possession of such an item... even if you don’t find me to settle the score, I will search for you...”

Vermilion Snow sucked in deeply and she fiercely clenched her teeth. Her loss this time was great, and her blood sacrifice had went incomplete. Finally, that nameless junior’s explosive strike had brought her foundation to near instability. She would have to recuperate for at least over a decade to slowly mend it.

She didn’t expect these damned human Foundation Establishment cultivators would be so fearless of death... It was out of her calculations that Chu Tianyi would have Immortal Intoxication at hand.

But her error above all errors was that she didn’t foresee that there would still be two other people within the qi walls! And among one of them, he could actually injure the her that was of half-step Core Formation! All these threads had completely come together in the end to form a whole necklace.

If the situation was normal, she would be able to kill such cultivators with a breath of air!

This was her humiliation. She, a magnificent half-step Core Formation demon, only below ten people and above myriad masses, had been beaten into such disgrace by a Qi Condensation cultivator! Even more critical was that her breakthrough to Core Formation was unsuccessful. The kill order of China’s human cultivators was bound to follow! This major affair was enough to sentence her to a death of a thousand cups a hundred times! With her present situation, if a couple of humanity’s true geniuses made

a move, she would be unable to force an escape, as well!

“Bastard...”

Inhaling deeply, she transformed into tendrils of black smoke, fading away at the center of the arena stage.

It wasn't known how long it had been, but the desolate arena stage was quiet without a soul. In a flash, all the stones on the floor all began to lightly tremble!

Clatter clatter clatter... It seemed like the charge of a ten million-strong cavalry. Subsequently, all shattered stones flew back to their original positions like magic! Crack crack crack! It appeared that an invisible hand was manipulating these blocks, as if time had turned back once again. Less than thirty seconds later, the entire Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena had already returned to its initial state!

Swoooooosh... An illusory silhouette gradually took shape and substance. If there was anyone here, they would definitely be awed in shock. This was because... this person was clearly standing in front, yet his appearance was incapable of being clearly seen. It was to the extent that even his height and external characteristics had strayed past the head, entirely unable to be imagined!

He appeared like a foreign being isolated from this space. He didn't exist in the world and perhaps he had surpassed it, transcending above all living things.

In the ravaged landscape all around, he seemed to suddenly hear something. His indistinct hand gently grabbed at the wind, and a voice uncertain as to even whether it was a man or woman fluttered in the air: “[Ming Di](#)?”

After several seconds of silence, the silhouette faintly swayed: “So it turns out you've already reached half-step Core Formation, eh... In order to prevent our perception, you went so far as to arrange a formation that covered the entire sky. You sure have

given it much thought... For Core Formation, you have already walked upon an evil path, what a pity..."

.....

At the tip of his nose a fragrant scent arrived. It was the aroma of flowers.

Xu Yangyi's nose faintly stirred. He didn't distinguish what flower this was, but it was rather clean and new, causing a person who smelled it to feel their state of mind and senses to be refreshed. His body seemed like a block of wood, slightly unstable. A familiar feeling revolved around his body, cool and moist. It was water.

His bare upper torso, especially some wounds that were itching, seemed to have something sucking on it incessantly. According to his deductions, what he should've been feeling was fish.

It was like creek water in summer. His sweat carried a salty nature and after it fell into the water, it kept on drawing in little finger-sized fishes sucking on his toes. It was the privilege only a carefree person with mountains on one side and water on the other could have.

It was unfortunate he wasn't privy to it.

Swish... His eyes slightly opened and his body surprisingly felt not a sliver of pain. He opened his eyes, looking at the sky, and sorrow arose without warning. This graduation ceremony, he had experienced far too many things... In the end, the only person left behind had been himself.

That was incorrect... There was also Chu Zhaonan.

Thinking about this, he discovered that the bullet lodged in his chest had already vanished at some point. Subconsciously, he revolved the Hundred Solutions to absorb spiritual force, yet he found...

There wasn't a scrap of spiritual force here! There were no birds

in the sky and neither were there clouds. All that existed was a dark-blue sky. He looked all around him and was incredibly stunned posthaste. At this moment, he was actually soaking in the center of a tremendous lotus pond!

He couldn't see the sides of it, and he couldn't see the end of it. The depth of the lotus pond water was simply unknown. The pond appeared clear, yet likewise, the bottom couldn't be seen.

Lotus flowers swayed gently in the wind, as if the pink-snowy color even reached the ends of the sky. Below, clusters of lotus leaves calmly drifted on the surface of the water. It truly should've been heaven's welcome of the boundless jade of lotus leaves, a classical poem of the different reds of lotuses cast by the reflecting sun.

Chu Zhaonan's figure that he had pulled in couldn't be seen in sight. Within this vast, limitless lotus pond, there were no frog croaks or bird cries. It was as if this corner had been forgotten by the world.

However, he was the only one here! It wasn't limited to this. In the next second, his hand subconsciously grabbed at something and his gaze suddenly sunk. The jade chest had vanished! The arcane effort he had risked his life for... An arcane effort that would lead straight to Core Formation wasn't in his hand right now!

"Fuck!" He didn't give it any thought a second more and sucked in fiercely, immediately diving beneath the water. He couldn't lose it!

This was his take-off point; it wasn't an option to lose here! How many cultivators could only beseech a glimpse at its exterior? How many cultivators because of this arcane effort had raised up an astronomical price during the segment to snatch up talent?

He had refused Daomaster Floatingcloud's recruitment; this item was his lifeline! How could he possibly lose it here?!

明帝 - Ming Di. I am unsure if this is a title or name at this point. Will possibly change in the future. Could very well be “Emperor Ming” Or I am dumb and this is Vermilion Snow’s name.

## Chapter 56: A Fleeting Life like an Empty Dream (1)

---

However, the lower Xu Yangyi went down, the heavier his heart became. There was no end...

This lotus pond seemed to be as deep as a bottomless pit! He had exhausted his full capability, and the blue veins of his neck bulged, yet he couldn't even see the end! The dark-jade pond water in his surroundings fluctuated. Apart from the dark green, there was also dark blue. According to his eyes' abilities, he had reached up to about ten-odd meters, but there simply was no trace of the pond's bottom.

"Fuck!" He drilled through the surface of the water, rested for ten seconds, and clenched his teeth. Without hardly any hesitation, he moved towards a lotus. His body was still dreadfully sore, but this pain right now couldn't match up to the deep worry of his heart.

He didn't know where this was. He searched all of his memories, yet he didn't discover a place that could match a name. This lotus pond like an ocean was certainly fresh water, but which great lake had such a vast lotus pond?

The sky was washed in jade, without wind nor cloud. He couldn't even see a distant mountain or dry land. To say this was an ocean of lotuses wouldn't be the least bit of an exaggeration. It wasn't possible to have such a large ocean of lotuses inland. He needed dry land. If there was dry land, it represented a possibility there might be people. If there were people, he would know where this place was located. Even more important was...

If he continued to follow dry land, he could edge along it and slink beneath the water! Even if he had to scour this lotus pond, he had to find the source of his foundation!

A cultivator could only master a single arcane effort in their lives. The rank of this arcane effort would directly determine a cultivator's heights. In the future, it wasn't something that could be replaced, however, to replace a primary arcane effort wasn't limited to the need of washing meridians and raking marrow; countless heavenly treasures were also required! After the meridians were cleaned and the marrow sundered, a period of twenty years of recuperation was still needed!

Not even to mention Qi Condensation cultivators, even Foundation Establishment cultivators wouldn't be able to endure these two decades!

He swam towards a lotus, yet discovered the lotuses here were particularly large. The petals that unfolded were approximately around a meter, and the lotus leaves below were one to two meters. There some that even grew up to three to four meters.

Resting on the lotus leaf for a moment, he jumped into the water again with a splash. As if it was the same moments ago, there was still a boundless green and drifting lotus stems. However, at this moment, he didn't know if whether it was because of his blurred vision, but he seemed to notice a whole pool below him move!

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes, and a sliver of azure light swept past. In that twinkling, he almost believed in himself to have seen the pond's bottom! Nonetheless, it was only a careful glance of a second. His heart skipped several beats, and he immediately covered his mouth, stifling his breath to use the gentlest of movements to get there.

He was like a frog exposed on the water's surface, even causing minute ripples to rise. He swam to a lotus leaf and gently lied down, motionless. His gaze twinkled, his ear pressing closely to the lotus leaf, listening to the each and every movement beneath the water.

It wasn't the pond's bottom. Within this great sea of lotuses like



like an ocean, there was something... This was because... he could clearly see that the glimmer of azure light just now was...

A scale!

A boundlessly infinite scale! An azure scale! A scale that ends could simply not be seen! In a place a hundred meters beneath his feet, there was a creature that could send a person's head swimming in fear. It was quietly concealed beneath the surface, as if the beast was a silent god of death! At the present, he was pretty much walking on this creature's back!

"Rooaaarrr..." Extending onwards for ten minutes, a water-jostling sound could be heard from the water below. Because the sound came from the extreme deep, it was unable to be deciphered whether the lotuses on the surface moved. Even if they did, one would believe it to be the blowing of the wind. If Xu Yangyi wasn't lying down on the lotus leaf and carefully listening, he wouldn't be able of hearing it distinctly at all!

Xu Yangyi used the smallest width to stand up. He felt that the beautiful lotus pond had become embroiled in great danger from all sides in an instant.

A demon? He pursed his lips and leapt to another lotus leaf like the one beneath his feet was a cushion. An old Foundation Establishment monster had a hundred-meter-long demon form... Just from his startled glance, this beast was absolutely more than a hundred meters! There was a possibility it was a thousand meters!

Pressing down on his heart's impatience, he used his softest movement to leap between each lotus leaf. There was no point being anxious now. If there was water, there was fish. He couldn't just starve to death, and while he didn't have qi, he still had his hands and feet. As long as he was careful in the short term, there should be no dangers.

He didn't know how long he walked, but his surroundings was still a boundless sea of lotus leaves. However, he discovered he

wasn't hungry or even tired in this place.

"I've walked for roughly eight hours..." He sat down on a lotus leaf, a shred of doubt finally emerging within his heart. Was this place... the real world? In these eight hours, the color of the sky hadn't changed, he didn't grow tired, and he wasn't hungry. This was like spiritual sense yet not in itself. "Have I entered an illusory realm?"

This was also a possibility. He had heard that awesome talismans and formations could render a person incapable of sensing anything whatsoever. However... what about that gigantic creature? He wasn't aware whether or not the other was a demon, but if it was, what realm was it at?

While talismans and formations were amazing, his instructor had said it could only simulate the capabilities within oneself. Otherwise, wouldn't Foundation Establishment be able to trap Core Formation? This wasn't realistic.

He dared not to sense the aura of that creature, but he dared to be certain that even Vermilion Snow couldn't be simulated! A chilliness overtook his heart, and followingly, it burned once again without equal.

The coldness was that if this was true, this world was a surviving secret. One of few secrets that had carried on since several millenniums ago, too frightening and too astonishing. In a place unknown to humanity, perhaps at the bottom of a river or perhaps underground, an eternal pair of eyes and an endlessly long body had watched humanity on the surface.

What was burning was that no matter the number of concealed secrets in this world, they were all waiting for him! So long as Xu Yangyi advanced, he could truly participate in these secrets, in a top-secret ancient remnant that was claimed as "sealed" in all of China and explore ancient cultivation ruins and probe his fortune and destiny.

“Huff...” He sucked in deeply and his gaze settled. Everything else could be revisited later as soon as he left. Roaming untiringly, he didn’t know how long he walked. Maybe it was a day or perhaps it was three days. It might’ve even been a month...

Finally, after he leapt onto the tallest lotus, he discovered there was a sole location within this sea that was different. A tremendous lotus appeared in the horizon, approximately ten meters in diameter. There weren’t any lotus leaves set off from it, making it appear as if floated like so on top of the water. However, there was surprisingly a ruined pavilion constructed on the center of that lotus!

No one could be consulted, and moreover, there wasn’t any other choice. Sucking in deeply, he immediately jumped forth without a second word. All his movements were incredibly soft. He hadn’t forgotten that there were some things beneath the water that couldn’t be given voice to. In no way did he desire to awaken the slumbering death god.

“This...” Just as he jumped, his gaze brightened... because there was a jade chest placed on top. This jade chest was rather familiar. It was the Burning Heavens Revelation’s jade chest!

“Huff...” The massive boulder in his heart finally fell to the ground. He extended his hand to take it, but at this time, he suddenly discovered countless gentle golden lights seemed to be floating off of his “body”. Appearing like muslin and resembling mist, it was as if his entire person was formed from these gentle golden lights!

In the next second, the jade chest that was almost within reach exploded with a bang, fragmenting into numerous pieces! An ornamented book appeared amidst the collapse of the jade chest, and he knew that the Burning Heavens Revelation hungered to the extreme by countless people was recorded within, the key leading to Core Formation.

Not waiting for him to react, the ornamented book suddenly flew towards the top of his head with a whoosh.

Swish... At the same instant, in the vast, cloudless sky, the sound of bamboo and silk rang out. Hanging beneath endless golden rays, a nearly inexhaustibly large bamboo scroll was followed by golden light gently stirring about! It wasn't known how long it was and its width was a mystery, as if it was able to uphold both heaven and earth!

The bamboo scroll wasn't tangible, but rather it appeared to be a qi structure. At this moment, it undulated like a wave in the sky. In comparison to the bamboo scroll that its ends couldn't be seen, the boundless gold seemed to be the most ordinary black at this moment. Merely, it served to set off the most dazzling white.

Xu Yangyi didn't know what its appearance should've been like, but if it was necessary to find a word from his dictionary, it was divine. The golden light that constructed this bamboo scroll was much more "divine" than other lights! It even caused a feeling of insignificance to be birthed at the bottom of one's heart. At this instant, he seemed to be standing beneath the Heavenly Court, a mortal gazing up at the Heavenly Temple in hope.

Swish! The ornamented book opened by itself, free of the wind. The ink characters on the book seemed to dance in the breeze, as if through spiritualism, and they swiftly flew onto the endless bamboo scroll! In a flash, a milky-white ray of light bloomed at the core of the golden expanse! It seemed to be the primordial light from when Pangu hefted his axe and split the heavens and the earth apart.

Subsequently, lines of script shockingly appeared on the bamboo scroll. The headline read: Burning Heavens Revelation. However, the proceeding characters fluttered incessantly as if there were a pair of formless hands controlling their "typesetting."

There was a word that suddenly broke away from the middle,

and in the wake of this, golden light danced like a dragon. Grains of golden dust that seemed like butterflies silently fell onto the bamboo scroll, wordlessly bringing forth many more words. There were no lack of characters that were rejected, transforming into golden dust and gradually dissipating in the air.

Xu Yangyi looked at all of it, his gaze twinkling. He didn't say a word.

"Fifty-nine... Fifty-seven..." He softly read these numbers out loud, from sixty to zero. Appearing to be brimming with patience, he continuously repeated these digits. From the beginning, he counted sixty forty times. He suddenly stood up and said heavily: "This not the real world!"

"I had suspicious before that there couldn't possibly be such a great ocean of lotuses inland. Just now, I counted a whole forty minutes, but not a single person showed up!" He sat upright on a lotus leaf: "It's impossible that the entire world's cultivation satellites haven't captured a formation this large! Humanity's seven Core Formation cultivators oversee seven directions. Regardless of which direction, they would've definitely arrived within half an hour!"

"At the moment... there's no one else..." He narrowed his eyes: "I'm not tired and I'm not hungry. This in itself is already removed from the rules of a Qi Condensation cultivator. In that case..."

"Who pulled me here? Is this place a secret realm of the legends? Or perhaps someone is manipulating my spiritual sense?"

Swish! As Xu Yangyi's thoughts revolved at an extreme speed, the gigantic bamboo scroll formed from golden light finally ceased to move. It wasn't known how long the bamboo scroll was or how many bamboo slips constituted it. Among the ten-plus slips, there were shockingly more lines of tiny golden script!

The first bamboo slip had a lone line of large characters. Xu Yangyi had clearly remembered this was originally the position for

the Burning Heavens Revelation, but... now, it wasn't. Five grand characters radiated a resplendent golden light from every single brush stroke to flourish and replaced the characters for Burning Heavens Revelation with incomparable tyranny. Magnificent and imperial, these words resided at the head of the bamboo slip!

### [The Eternal Alchemy Canon!](#)

Eternal Alchemy Canon/Eternal Pill Sutra King, can also be translated as Myriad Ancients Pill Scripture King/whatever. Myriad ancients is a mouthful and really just to denote it's really old.

## Chapter 57: A Fleeting Life like an Empty Dream (2)

---

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply, and he watched character upon character flutter on the ornamented book with his own eyes. Personally watching these characters enter the golden light bamboo scroll, he looked on as if a pair of incorporeal hands were automatically arranging the script in the sky. The result was that after everything was sorted and increased, there was no character that was the same!

Dong... At this moment, a faint voice rang like the chime of a bell from some unknown location: “Return... to...” The voice was leagues away, but extremely rich in cadence. When this chiming bell of a noise echoed out, the color of the sky suddenly turned black!

In the next instant, a lotus ignited with a shining blaze. Subsequently, the lotus flower instantly burst into fire as if it had been doused with gasoline! It wasn't confined to this lotus... but rather... the entire lotus pond!

Craaaacckle... In the wink of an eye, half of the sky reflected the redness of flames, bringing the lotus flower ocean that stretched as far as the eye could see to shine like daytime! On the water's surface, the reflections of flames all gently swayed! It appeared that the lotus pond water was boiling!

Xu Yangyi wasn't alarmed. He stared unflaggingly at the bamboo slip in the sky. Whether or not this situation could be explained, was the Burning Heavens Revelation only a badly ruined secret law? If it was explained... was it originally this never before heard Eternal Alchemy Canon? In the case it was made clear... wasn't this a true arcane effort lost to the long river of history?

The Burning Heavens Revelation was already a Core Formation arcane effort. If that was so... what level was this completed

Eternal Alchemy Canon? No... It wasn't limited to just that!

He sucked in deeply, and from his experience starting at leaving the branch academy to the graduation ceremony, he was already aware as to what extent modern Alchemy Dao had fallen to. And so... was it possible this arcane effort was an alchemy arcane effort? A supplementary arcane effort?

All kinds of doubts arose in his heart. When he was in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, he could've taken the others' pledges any time he desired. However, in comparison to his present harvest and the complete activation of the mysterious upper half of the chest, their promises were like firefly light contrasted to a luminous moon, unable to be mentioned together on any grounds!

As he carefully observed each character, suddenly, countless bubbles erupted from underwater!

"Shit!" He suddenly gritted his teeth and laid down on a lotus leaf without a second word. In the sea of lotus leaves, perhaps such a large movement had long disturbed the terrifying prehistoric beast below!

SWOOSH!!! A massive wave that could overflow the heavens flipped over the sky. A fishtail no less than a kilometer whipped out from the sea of lotus leaves! Beneath flame, the azure fish scales glimmered with a devilish brilliance!

The fishtail rose up, blotting out the sky and concealing the earth! This simply couldn't be a creature that could appear on Earth! Even if it was the legendary kraken of the North Sea, it was impossible to have such a tremendous volume!

The sky's brilliance was covered by the fish tail, serving as a deathly still black cloth that covered the surface. Countless lotus leaves and lotus flowers were sent flipping in the air in the wake of this gigantic mountain range-like fish tail, and with a rumble, an explosive tide climbed up a hundred meters high as if it was a



tsunami! It charged directly at the golden light bamboo scroll in the sky!

When the Kun Peng flaps its wings, whirlwinds and tornadoes would arise within 45,000 kilometers. It shouldered the azure skies to look below at the city walls of the human realm.

From extremely large to extremely small, Xu Yangyi's pupils suddenly magnified. He could already imagine that as the fish tail fell, a mega tsunami would erupt from the whole sea of lotuses! He was like a withered leaf within torrential rain, facing imminent crisis!

"Huff..." Life and death hanging in the balance, Xu Yangyi suddenly closed his eyes. He seemed to hear a crash, and the entire landscape before his eyes shattered.

Thump... Thump... The violent beating of his heart seemed to resonate at the side of his ear.

Swoooooosh... Torrential rain downpoured, striking his eyes and making wet his body.

Vroooooom... The sound of a car raced past from a not so distant location. The camouflage pants on his body had long been soaked in the heavy rain. He immediately felt a fiery pain from the injuries on his bare upper body. His entire skeleton appeared to be broken, and he couldn't even summon a bit of strength.

This was a small mountain at the side of a highway. There were trees growing all over, and he just happened to be on a hilltop. From this location, a few vehicle headlights could be seen on the highway as well as a nearby thinly spread metropolitan area.

Below, not a skyscraper could be seen, representing the lightning of the population concentration degree was frighteningly sparse. At least, that was what Xu Yangyi who had just come to Fengyi City believed.

"Heh..." He let loose a breath of air in lingering trepidation, and

his heart palpitated fiercely. The scenery moments ago seemed to be just before him. He could even still clearly remember the thousand-meter-long fish tail that could overturn rivers and seas, as if the landscape was like a natural disaster.

It was as if it was a lifetime ago.

Was that scene just now real or fake? Was that experience an illusory fantasy? If it was a fantasy, why did he remember everything so clearly? Nevertheless, it wasn't important.

He tested out his qi sea, and it was completely void. On the contrary though, the bullet in his chest had faded away, but his current "reserve" of qi was almost nihil. With such grave injuries, and without qi to mend his body, he knew that if he laid down here that while he wouldn't die, he would surely come down with a serious illness.

Gritting his teeth, he turned his body over. Facing the torrential downpour of the night sky, a trace of a smile surprisingly hung from the corner of his mouth.

"Hehehe..." He began to only laugh gently, but finally, he turned up towards the heavens and howled in laughter: "HAHAHA!"

Everything else was unimportant. What was important was that he had survived. From the midst of hellish tempering, he had survived! All the Foundation Establishment cultivators had been exterminated and the amount of dead Qi Condensation cultivators and mortals numbered in the thousands. It could be said this was the first major case in close to thirty years!

He had continued to live, and moreover, had even ruthlessly beat up Vermilion Snow.

A painful sensation passed on through his entire body, endlessly reminding him that this was the proof he was alive.

"Huff..." He inhaled deeply, feeling strength slowly return to his body, and familiar qi began to bore strand by strand into his qi sea.

He shut his eyes, and his first order of business wasn't to circulate his arcane effort, but rather immediately arrange his thoughts.

Being the first place of a branch wasn't so simple. He had to be outstanding countless of times in live combat training and had to be tossed alone on an uncharted island filled with demons an unknown amount of times. Over a decade of hell training had caused him to cultivate a very good habit.

Fearless to assume, but even more fearless to confirm.

If the Burning Heavens Revelation was a splintered fragment picked out from this "Eternal Alchemy Canon"... Wasn't this section the primary arcane effort of an apex cultivator of this world? In that case, what was the power of the intact Eternal Alchemy Canon? What was its rank?

Almost without a sliver doubt, he immediately began to recall each character of the Eternal Alchemy Canon, taking advantage of time he had still not forgotten it. If this arcane effort was assumed true... Then, his key to treading into this world's great gate would surpass everyone's imagination!

This... was quite possibly an arcane effort that transcended the current pinnacle of the world! Above Core Formation!

Success would be taken from details, riches and honor would be sought out amidst danger!

Cultivation was to defy the heavens with all of one's life! One who was fearful of the slightest thing and overly cautious would forever be incapable of reaching the [other shore](#)!

Perhaps this chance was only a sliver, but he had to seriously concentrate on it! After all, in case he seized onto it, it would be a genuine [Mark Six](#)!

Just as this thought surfaced, a golden brilliance appeared without the least warning in his spiritual sense. Golden characters neatly floated into view within his brain, and the title was the

## Eternal Alchemy Canon!

Xu Yangyi's gaze deepened a bit. The Eternal Alchemy Canon had actually been carved into his mind! He sucked in deeply and his qi sunk into his dantian. He suddenly sat down.

Shhh... A sound gently rang out, and there was an object that had rolled onto the ground from his body. He looked on in shock; it was surprisingly the upper half of the chest that had disappeared.

He looked complicatedly at this item. It had caused his qi sea to boundlessly expand, and now that it perhaps couldn't even be seen, it even brought to him some advantages. However, in the wake of his realm progressively becoming higher and his cultivation increasingly becoming deeper, it was akin to drinking poison to quench thirst!

However, it had yet saved his life during a calamity. What was the meaning of Vermilion Snow shouting "Emperor Armament"? This item... in the end, was it good or was it bad? Was it a secret treasure or deadly nightshade?

"Although I don't know what the heck you are..." He laughed grimly as he put the box into his pocket: "This ain't the academy, and I got ten thousand kinds of methods to clearly get a hold of your origin."

Gazing into the distance as far as his eyes could stretch, his eyes reached a place with lights waning. While the heavy downpour concealed the heavens, it was incapable of obstructing the bright scenery of the human realm.

Snap... His fist made a cracking noise as a knuckle was squeezed. His gaze had already turned fiery. A tiger was left free to reign in the mountains and forests! A dragon roamed about in the great sea!

This human realm, this world, this was the moment he had at last truly set foot in it! With the status a demon slayer! With the status of an avenger! With the status of a cultivator!

And with the status as a human, Xu Yangyi's status.

He didn't do anything else, and rather began to calmly meditate. No less than an hour later, he felt the rain truly immerse his skin in icy-coldness. It was then that he stood up.

The initial stage of Qi Condensation was still not the time one could fast. It wasn't until the late stage of Qi Condensation could one be detached from the life of an ordinary person.

"I have come..." His gaze swept over four staring shadows within the rainy night and he grinned: "Be careful, demons."

In his qi sea, a layer of weak qi was roiling. Although he had only restored approximately one percent of his qi, the feeling of cultivating under rain wasn't all too great. In particular...

His gaze cast towards a few shadows in the city. Was there not an even better place to rest...?

At this time, a tree behind him split into two with a crash. Just as he turned his head, a boy wearing high schooler's uniform suddenly appeared from the parted area. To say it was a boy was not completely correct.

The other's skin was considerably good, but he shockingly had two pointed ears on his head and a pair of dark-green slitted pupils. His hand was black with thick hair. Because of his mouth opened half wide in astonishment, his steel-needle-like teeth could be seen filling the insides.

Evidently, the other also hadn't expected a person would be here. The boy's shock lasted for less than half a second, and his first response was to let loose a low wolf's howl from his throat. Subsequently, his four limbs touched the ground, his body arched, and he seemed to immediately want to pounce forth.

Xu Yangyi didn't move at all. The transformation of moments ago... was simply outrageously weak. Even if he only had one percent of his qi right now, he wouldn't even need thirty seconds

to wrap up the thing before him. That was, if it dared take the initiative to attack.

However, in the next second, just as the boy prepared to pounce, the front half of his arched body abruptly laid on the ground, as if he had suddenly sensed something. His fierce howl surprisingly forced itself to become a kind of cute sound, and he incessantly wagged his stiff tail.

Spare my life! This was his first reaction just as he was preparing to launch his assault! This man that had incomprehensibly appeared before him could only be considered to have confused him amidst his stupefaction, yet he cautiously become aware of...

From snout to tail, he was exuding a body-wide cold sweat!

How was this possible?! How could such a terrifying human cultivator appear in this kind of remote location!? An elite of the Featherwood Guard? A special agent of the CSIB? A manager-level figure of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion?! Or perhaps he was a reclusive weird professor of Heavens Law?

His heart nearly leapt out!

“You’re rather intelligent.” Xu Yangyi looked at the boy on all fours who was incessantly wagging his tail and laughed: “My impression of demons has never been very good, especially now.”

Xu Yangyi’s laughter was quite soft, yet the boy on the ground felt his entire body tremble and buried his head deep in a pile of wet leaves and mud. He dared not raise it at all.

“Fiend, behold my magik treasure!” Before his voice had even fallen, the voice of a delicate young girl shouting could be heard loud and clear from the forest.

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes. Magik treasure? This word evoked his interest. Unless one was at Foundation Establishment, how could a magik treasure possibly be used? In addition...

The aura chasing from behind was no different from this weak

wolf!

Thus, he saw a... trembling [peachwood](#) sword, worn-out and dilapidated, with a 300 RMB demon-breaking talisman suspended on it, carried by an incredibly frail qi that was staggering like an eighty-year-old grandma, coming towards his direction.

Interesting to note that the word for “other shore” has the meaning of paramita, a buddhist idea of perfection or completeness. This is Daoist, so I left it as “other shore”.

Mark Six is a Hong Kong lottery game. In the lottery, there are six drawn balls and one extra ball. Getting all six drawn ball numbers means getting “Mark Six”. I don’t think I need to explain how insanely lucky this is.

Historically, peachwood is known as the anti-demon wood.

## Chapter 58: Time Flies By (1)

---

The boy trembled all over, standing up to flee in conditioned reflex. However, just as his body moved, his head followingly became wet with cold sweat and his four limbs firmly grounded themselves on the floor. He dared not move a hair.

Pitter patter pitter patter... The heavy rain poured cats and dogs. Even though he couldn't clearly see the man in front of him, he could feel the man wasn't even possibly as old as him. However, while he was ten-odd meters away, he could sense the terrifying atmosphere even separated by the massive rain curtain!

A kind of murderous aura that caused others to choke formed a tangible sharpness. It seemed as long as the other willed it, he was capable of taking his life at any moment.

The flying sword was very slow; at least in Xu Yangyi's eyes it was such. It swayed like a house fly, and its weak aura quite tempted him with the desire to slap it out of flight.

Where was this place?

Cultivators... Demons, both were unreasonably weak! Not even to be compared to himself, but in comparison to Luo Sanfeng, Gao Ye, and the other champions, they were far inferior. If it had to be compared, he was presently Firecloud on that day and they were the cultivation clans, as well.

As the distance between the flying sword and the wolf demon became increasingly closer, the shivering of the demon's body became progressively fierce. He was close to using an appealing gaze, stealthily looking at Xu Yangyi. With his cultivation, while he wouldn't die from being stabbed by this sword, he would be seriously injured.

The person in front of him could definitely save him! In his heart, he held this hope, not looking at the other's clothing that



was ruined like heaping trash. However, so long as this man was willing to save him, he was absolutely capable of doing so!

Xu Yangyi looked pitifully at the flying sword, as to the extent that even the people behind could clearly hear it.

“Young Mistress! Over here! I pecked it, so there’s no way it can flee!”

“Be at ease! With my Heaven-shattering Earth-splitting World Annihilation Meteor Sword here, it won’t be able to escape!”

Heaven-shattering Earth-splitting World Annihilation Meteor Sword...?

Xu Yangyi resisted the urge to grin with great difficulty and gently waved his hand. The sword instantly lost direction and shakily flew into his hand. Subsequently, his two fingers grabbed onto it, taking this [kickass-sounding](#) Heaven-shattering Earth-splitting World Annihilation Meteor Sword to press down on in the space between his fingers.

The wolf demon had a head full of cold sweat, and he laid on the floor, not daring to say a word. This was a cultivators low-grade demonslaying piercing weapon from the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion that could cause him serious injuries...

However, the man seemed to be at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, as well? How could the difference be so great? How did the sword cease to be so effortlessly? It perished? It came to an end!!!

Casually playing around with the peachwood sword like it was a lousy vegetable knife, Xu Yangyi suddenly asked: “How tall are you?”

His voice was quite soft and rather ordinary, yet it caused the wolf demon to break out with a cold sweat from tail to snout. The wolf demon dared not to raise his head and said shrilly: “1, 1.82 meters...”

“You got smokes?”

Xu Yangyi tossed the peachwood sword into the mud at the side, and the wolf demon buried his head even lower: “None...”

Xu Yangyi sighed and clicked his tongue: “Take off your clothes.”

“Yes... Huh?”

The wolf demon was rendered dumb. Take off his clothes? Had he heard incorrectly? Nonetheless, even though he had his doubts in his mind, his body honestly stood up in an instant, starting to shed his clothing. He was wearing a school uniform, one from some high school, and quickly took it off. After he took it off, he awkwardly held it in his hand and ensuingly discovered an even more awkward matter.

“Take off your pants.”

“...” The wolf demon continued to sincerely take off his trousers.

“Fiend, don’t move!” At this time, following an attractive and tender shout, a young girl and... a hen jumped out not too far away with the grace of a tiger. Afterwards, the young girl was stunned.

In front of her... there was a man wearing tattered clothing forcing her prey to take off his pants... moreover, the pants were even half-shed.

“Pervert!!!” After three seconds of silence, accompanied by the shrieks of a young girl and a hen, the human-chicken duo turned around in unison, using their hands and wings respectively to cover their faces. Their sharp voices reverberated throughout the grove.

“Keep going.” Xu Yangyi’s expression didn’t change, beckoning towards the wolf demon who was awkwardly holding onto his trousers and left only in his underwear. The wolf demon’s face blushed red and pink, and he respectfully handed over his clothing.

“No!” The young girl reacted and turned her head around, angrily reprimanding: “Fiend... Heavens!!!”

Xu Yangyi removed his belt neither slowly nor hurriedly and cast off his tattered camouflage clothing in the mud, not raising his head towards the young girl who swiftly turned around: “There’s no need to shout so loudly. In fact, you can turn around.”

“Per! Vert!” The voices of a person and chicken amped up by eight decibels.

The clothes were quite well-fitting, and Xu Yangyi nodded: “Turn around.”

The young girl and hen turned with reddened faces, In the next second, the young girl released a high-pitched shriek once again: “Pervert! Y-you put on some clothes, eeeehhhh!!!”

The wolf demon felt that in his several decades of life, he had never lost so much face. In the summer, it was normal to only wear underwear. His clothes were swapped on Xu Yangyi’s body right now, but the one being called a pervert... was him...

However, without Xu Yangyi’s nod, he dared not to move. In the comparison of his face and his life, it was obvious the latter was much more precious.

“You... You... What are you thinking!” The young girl turned her face around. It was then that Xu Yangyi could clearly see her appearance.

She was quite normal, not pretty, but not ugly, as well. Her appearance was roughly sixteen or seventeen years old. There was a bit of baby’s fat on her face, and her hair was directly pulled back into a ponytail. She wore a cheap T-shirt and an even cheaper pair of jeans and sneakers. Her waist was pinned with a spacious belt and the front of it was fastened with several bags. If he hadn’t seen incorrectly, the insides were all of the Bountiful Treasures Pavillion’s lowest of the low’s demonslaying products. Items that

he had used approximately for the first five years when he had just entered Heavens Law.

“Young mistress! He’s only the initial stage of Qi Condensation! The initial stage! He’s also a human cultivator!” The hen at the young girl’s side looked stealthily at Xu Yangyi from her wing, suddenly screeching: “Young mistress! Be reasonable! We should defend our interests!”

Xu Yangyi tilted his head and the wolf demon immediately dodged behind a tree, only then letting loose a long sigh. There was no need to confront that man... This feeling of his naked body was a thousand times better!

“Hold on!” At the hen’s words and on top of the wolf demon that hid behind a tree, the young girl immediately became worried: “What the heck are doing! Are you taking him under your wing?! This is my demon that I caught through trial and tribulation! The handling rights are mine! Moreover! How did you get a hold of my magik treasure?!”

“Who did you catch?!” When the wolf demon heard these words, his spirit went half flying! A human cultivator had just let him loose! If Xu Yangyi heard these words and his mood soured, what would he do if Xu Yangyi gave him up in passing?

Hiding behind the tree, he stuck out his head and cursed: “I just bumped into you guys! Is it okay for you to chase me?! Don’t chase me just because you say I’m a demon! Have you no shame?!”

“Aren’t you a demon?!”

“Yes... Darn it! Wasn’t it you that jumped out from there, [Your Highness](#)! It just happened to be that you ran into me! I was going to let the patriarch find you this morning!”

“Yeah, right! I already saw your demon qi soaring earlier! C’mon! Get out here! If I don’t take you in today, I’ll have let down my ancestors!”

Xu Yangyi listened to this with a smile. This really was a hopelessly convoluted story. As for the specifics... a tentative descendant of what was considered a demon slayer had fallen for a boy and wanted to pursue him. She didn't pursue him though since it was said the other was a demon. Under her incessant pestering...

She hadn't expected the other would truly be a demon...

"What's funny?!" The girl didn't hold back on her anger, inhaled deeply, and said furiously: "Our responsibility is to distinguish demons from the crowd! This was merely my honey trap! You... Which organization are you from! Be careful or I'll go the Cultivation Court and sue you for harboring!"

Xu Yangyi swept an eye over her: "Got water?"

"I do! ...No! Answer my question first! Who are you?! This my income for the next month!"

"Young mistress..." The hen gently coughed, using her wing to jab at the girl's leg, and said gently: "He seems fiercer than you..."

"So what he's fierce? Does being fierce mean you can screw around with the law? ...Can't you wrap up what you're saying in a single breath? You want water, right? Here!"

A warm cup of water was placed before Xu Yangyi in irritation. He took it without the least bit politeness and took a swig.

The warm water seeped into his innermost core, and he sighed comfortably. Smiling as he raised a finger, a water drop drifted unhurriedly in the center of the three people. Soon after, he flicked it effortlessly, and a sound like a bullet hitting a tree crisply entered everyone's ears! He furrowed his brows; the result wasn't quite good. Ordinarily, the water drop should've been able to pierce through the tree.

"Hiss..." The wolf demon coldly gasped. His vision was extremely good, and he already clearly saw the fist-sized hole that emerged on a large tree ten meters away!

Silent, the hen rushed over to the tree in the proceeding aftermath. Afterwards, she immediately used her wing to cover her beak, looking at Xu Yangyi like she didn't recognize him. The young girl's mouth formed an O-shape at the very first moments of the water drop's impact, and both her eyes went round as she looked at the tree. Eyes still wide, she looked over at Xu Yangyi. Looking at the tree in disbelief, she gazed incredulously at Xu Yangyi once again.

Her gaze roamed endlessly between the person and the tree. Her noisy mouth instantly closed tight, and everyone looked at Xu Yangyi like he was a demon.

Xu Yangyi closed his eyes and experienced the warm water moving about in his ice-cold chest. He then asked: "Where is this place?"

"Mingshui Province's Bai County... City." The young girl immediately supplied an answer, standing up incredibly straight and proper. Her voice hovered between respect and docility, switching between the two rather well.

A county-level city?

Xu Yangyi sighed gently. It was no wonder that the standard of cultivators and demons here were so frighteningly low. In particular, a county and county-level city simply couldn't have a branch from the Big Three and that was granted some provincial-level cities at the fringe wouldn't have one. Even if the Big Three wanted to spread out, they still didn't have that many people.

"How many clans and hunting grounds are there? Which power is greater?"

"There are three clans and four hunting grounds. The cultivator's power is greater."

Xu Yangyi nodded and opened his eyes to look at the hen: "Is that your manager?"

“Yes, mister!” The hen immediately squatted on the floor, and her animal face seemed to carry a flattering smile: “I truly am very happy to be able to meet you, sir! The weather seems to have brightened up!”

The torrential rain was still downpouring as before. This kind of bald-faced lying skill caused Xu Yangyi to recall Mao Ba’er.

Mingshui Province... appeared to be light years away from Nantong Province, located at China’s most northern side. It was a separation of what might as well been 5,000 kilometers.

That spatial crack... had surprisingly brought him to such a faraway place? With his sudden disappearance, wouldn’t Mao Ba’er be [a cornered dog jumping over a wall](#)?

The use of this phrase was pretty good... but anyhow, his first order of business was to contact Heavens Law headquarters. He still had to enroll and get in touch with the Featherwood Guard. Perhaps Hibiscus was also nervously waiting, right?

狂拽酷炫吊炸天 - Chinese slang. I used the word kickass-sounding. Actual meaning: Madly dragging awesome that can f\*cking explode the heavens. LUL

I did some localization here. Your highness = “Great god” Chinese slang net slang.

This is a chengyu “cornered dog jumping over a wall” meaning “drive to desperate actions.” Didn’t localize because Mao Ba’er is a dog.

# Chapter 59

---

Author skips chapter 59, so next one is 60!



## Chapter 60: Time Flies By (2)

---

“Is there a Featherwood Guard branch here?”

“You, no, sir, are you a person of the Featherwood Guard?” Dazed for a second, the young girl’s tone suddenly raised a pitch, her voice stuttering: “M-may I ask if sir i-is a r-registered member?”

Xu Yangyi glanced curiously at her: “No.”

The expressions of the young girl and the hen immediately dimmed. The youth behind the tree gently sighed in relief. Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and looked over at the highway: “They’re specially appointed to me. I don’t have to go to them.”

“S-specially appointed?!” In the following second, three surprised voices cried out from behind him.

Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze and looked towards the wolf demon and asked: “If there’s nothing else, take me into the city and buy me a ticket to get to Tanshan City.”

“Sure!” The wolf demon instantly responded, the radiance of his eyes beginning to twinkle.

“Not necessary!” Before the wolf demon’s voice had even fallen, the young girl’s voice subsequently echoed out: “Although our Bai County doesn’t have a branch, h-however, my clan can assist you in your contact with the Featherwood Guard! Sir might not know, but according to our newest order, any cultivator that has newly joined the Featherwood Guard has to go to a branch to enroll. They must be notified first in advance! After a cultivator undergoes an identity check, they can fall in!”

Xu Yangyi faintly knitted his brows: “When was this order issued?”

“Three years ago!” The girl’s complexion was fairly flushed, and she stifled the excitement within her heart: “Three years ago,

Fengyi City's Vermilion Snow Incident became the first major event in fifty years! Is sir not aware of Vermilion Snow? That's that nine-tailed silver fox old demon! An old monster that ranks ninth on the Heavenly Demon Ranking!"

None had seen it, but Xu Yangyi's hand in his pocket clenched fiercely. Three years ago? Fengyi City's Vermilion Snow Incident?

"Can you be more specific?" He felt his heart speed up, yet he asked this question with a steady and composed face.

"This matter caused a massive upheaval." The young girl inhaled deeply and followed up: "Three years ago, the famous peak powers of the cultivation world, at the Heavens Law Graduation Commencement... Sir, you're aware of Heavens Law, right?" The cultivation world's most prestigious school! The graduating students from there and we fringe cultivators aren't the same. I don't know how many organizations are waiting with reddened eyes to employ them! If it's the paragon of a graduation... Tsk, tsk... In all of China, there's only so many that they number less than the amount of fingers and toes a person has. The treatment each paragon gets is sufficient to provide for a small cultivation clan!"

The young girl spoke with incomparable excitement as if she was the paragon, however, she didn't pay attention to Xu Yangyi's face. She suddenly stopped her mouth and coughed dryly, awkwardly saying: "Sorry... sir... I got off topic, sir won't take offense, right?"

In her eyes, Xu Yangyi faintly lowered his head and mumbled to himself. She believed the other disliked her verbosity, yet she simply couldn't be aware that the present Xu Yangyi was filled with complex feelings.

"Continue." He grabbed at his pocket in habit, yet didn't feel a cigarette.

"It's like this, that graduation, Heavens Law's system wasn't perfect enough, and Vermilion Snow blood sacrificed 7000-plus

people of Nantong Province's cultivation clans and even eight Foundation Establishment seniors! I heard that battle brought forth rivers of blood, and not a single person came out alive!"

Xu Yangyi faintly sighed and laughed gently. But there were... There were two people. In the end, two people had come out alive...

He and Chu Zhaonan that he had saved.

"Is Vermilion Snow still alive?"

"Of course!" The young girl nodded her head in trepidation: "However, she vanished. The Core Formation masters tried to track her down, but couldn't discover her whereabouts. Right now, she's already rank one on the Heavenly Demon Ranking! Her bounty is 12 billion USD!"

"Heh..." Xu Yangyi raised his head to look at the sky and allowed the rain to strike his rain. The cold rain brought with it a trace of the summer night chill, yet a killing intent like roiling fire had emerged in his heart.

You still haven't died. That is truly... fantastic. If you died at the hands of a Core Formation master, wouldn't it be too convenient for you? How could the oath I promised to the eight Foundation Establishment cultivators be completed?

His gaze turned somewhat cold: "Did no one ask about that graduation's paragon?"

"Of course there were!" The young girl didn't know why, but she felt fairly chilly. It should've been a misconception, right? Her body shivered and she laughed: "The paragon of that graduation, Chu Zhaonan, made it out alive! He was the sole person to survive! Currently, he holds post at the Featherwood Guard!"

Xu Yangyi's gaze suddenly flared, but it immediately faded away. Upon hearing this, he was already certain. [Zhuangzi dreamt of a butterfly](#), and with a single dream, three years had passed. After he

entered the space-time crack, three years had surprisingly gone by in the outside world!

How many people still originally remembered those eight cultivators?! How many people still remembered the scene of legions of people altogether resisting a half-step Core Formation old demon? But moreover, they wouldn't remember... there was a paragon that had defeated the 4A Chu Zhaonan that possessed Gun Kata who was the true number one.

Heavens Law had to give everyone a statement... He himself was in a dream for three years, so they could only make Chu Zhaonan first place. That was good. There was still an acquaintance worthy of his regard that had survived... from that hell of mountains of corpse and seas of blood...

"But it's quite strange. Mr. Chu has never said himself to be number one in front of others. Even at the First Place Bestowal Ceremony, he didn't participate in the use of the title of paragon..." The young girl said pensively: "Last year, in order for Heavens Law to rebuild the Fengyi City branch's prestige, they invited paragons of the recent ten years to return to participate, but he still didn't go..."

Xu Yangyi laughed. It ought to be like so. How could such a prideful person who hadn't truly defeated him possibly desire the first place, which was the same as charity?

"Is he... doing well right now?" He questioned indifferently.

"Certainly! He's awesome! He's the Featherwood Guard's youngest legion commander! Although there are only fifty cultivation legions, he's a legion commander! There are only 200 legion commanders officially recognized by the Featherwood Guard! There has to be over 300,000 cultivators that want to join a corp of registered cultivators!" The young girl's face flushed again, and she pursed her lips, but was simply incapable of masking the admiration on her face.

Xu Yangyi laughed as he looked at her: “Do you really like him?”

“...He’s handsome, he’s tall, his cultivation is high, and his family background is good, too...” Two dimples appeared on the young girl’s face, and she shyly buried her head: “Anyways, I’m just wishing...”

“Lead the way.” Xu Yangyi nodded: “Let’s go to your cultivation territory, and you can help me contact the Featherwood Guard.”

“No problems!” The young girl immediately answered enthusiastically: “My clan is one of three major clans in Bai County! I guarantee we’ll use the fastest speed to handover your report, sir!”

Xu Yangyi laughed and raised his chin towards the young girl: “Clan? You have a clan?”

“Of course!” The young girl stuck her chest out with a blush on her face: “Bai County’s Zhou Clan! You can just ask around; there’s no one in Bai County’s cultivation world that doesn’t know us!”

“Moreover, Young Mistress Tingting is the Zhou Clan’s only girl!” The girl excitedly supplemented without delay.

Xu Yangyi truly laughed happily this time. This was because he remembered the young girl had just said that Bai County only had three clans. There were only three clans, and the Zhou Clan was the third “major” clan.

It was worth pondering. As Xu Yangyi saw the [half beaten-up BYD](#) parked at the side of the road, he felt that there was a strong possibility his guess was a fact.

“P-please...” The young girl helped open the car door for him somewhat awkwardly and laughed hollowly: “A cultivation clan can’t compare to some major powers. A great majority of conditions are quite difficult...”

Xu Yangyi smiled and sat in the backseat, closing his eyes to recuperate.

He wouldn't expose this proud young girl. Originally, when he stood in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, it wasn't hardly an exaggeration to say that some of the province's peak cultivation clans could rival a province in wealth. To say presently that a great majority of the circumstances of some cultivation clans were quite difficult was insisting to [gild one's face with gold...](#)

Then just gild it.

Bai County wasn't large, and as a county-level city it was somewhat greater in comparison to normal counties, but when put next to a provincial capital like Fengyi, it was so small it didn't hold the least bit radiance to a star.

Currently, it was already late at night. If this was Fengyi City, the streets would be congested with heavy traffic at the moment. It could even be said to be a time where some owls were lively with high spirits. However, in Bai County, not even to mention the peddlers at the side of the road that hadn't opened their doors for business early, but even the pedestrians on the street were few. In the rain, the yellow hazy street lights reflected the meager silhouette of the city and also the characters of the signboard hung slanted on a small five-story building that said "Zhou Clan Dojo".

Although he had already prepared for the worst, Xu Yangyi hadn't expected that Bai County's third "major" clan would still surpass his anticipations.

It was an alley with a shabby building pressed down on both sides by walls. The middle road was approximately two meters wide, and the car couldn't even go in. If one didn't raise their head, there was no way they could possibly expect there would be a dojo here.

Evidently, with the facts laid out in front of them, the young girl's gilding came to a rattling stop. She gently coughed and stammered: "The outside doesn't look that good, but the inside is pretty nice... For the most part, the circumstances of cultivation

clans are quite hard these days...”

Xu Yangyi laughed and nodded, walking inside with the young girl.

The Zhou Clan Dojo was on the top floor, and the inside was indeed better-looking than the outside. The floors were crafted from a single kind of real wood that was both soft and richly flexible. A banner that said “Zhou Clan’s Century Taiji Dojo” was dazzlingly drawn out at the center. Xu Yangyi looked around and asked: “Where’s your family?”

“I’m the dojo master..” The young girl coughed a bit and said somewhat unnaturally: “I-I’m Zhou Tingting. My parents passed away a long time ago. Although our dojo appears ordinary, this place is one of very few places in Bai County that’s rich in qi...”

Xu Yangyi finally realized the reason why the other had become so enthusiastic when she had heard he was a registered cultivator of the Featherwood Guard.

He didn’t know whether or not the Zhou Clan was an orthodox cultivation clan. However, even if it was, the clan’s inherited Dao legacies were in all likelihood backwater methods, something that all of China’s cultivation society refused to recognize. Not even to mention a Foundation Establishment senior, perhaps they hadn’t even produced a single middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivator. They could be classified as the lowest caste of marginalized cultivators.

On one account, they couldn’t withstand the apex powers one bit, but on the flipside, they were surely stronger than ordinary people. At the very least, it wasn’t a question that this young girl could beat up seven or eight men. Yet this kind of situation where they couldn’t endure the heavens or receive the earth happened to be the most awkward place for the cultivation world’s disaffected.

Perhaps she had no one to guide her on how to cultivate, but her talent could be already considered pretty good for her to be capable

of facing the challenges of relying on a backwater Dao legacy to charge into the initial stage of Qi Condensation. Now, that she saw him, the real deal, she definitely wanted to curry favor with him, in her eyes, a “wealthy second generationer” of considerable background! For Xu Yangyi to give her direction on her cultivation journey would be the greatest of assistances!

“P-please have some tea.” Before he had even finished his thought, Zhou Tingting was already holding a cup of tea that was permeating the air with its aroma. Xu Yangyi didn’t neglect the nearly negligible amount of spiritual force in the tea and even further the fleeting expression of soreness on the young girl’s face.

He smiled and took it. Taking a big gulp, he nodded: “The tea’s not bad.”

Zhou Tingting’s gaze wavered, and she pursed her lips, lowering her head.

Zhuangzi dreamt he was a butterfly is a well-known chinese poem/story by Zhuangzi, famous Chinese philosopher. In this story, Zhuangzi is unsure whether he is actually a butterfly who dreamt he was Zhuangzi or Zhuangzi that dreamt he was a butterfly. So immersive was this experience

BYD is a Chinese auto brand

“Gild one’s face with gold” keep up appearances



# Chapter 61: Chinacultivation.com (1)

---

“Is there a computer?” Xu Yangyi asked.

“There is!” Zhou Tingting immediately brought over a very old laptop. After Xu Yangyi opened it, he swiftly entered in the url of a website that couldn’t be even more intimate.

www.chinacultivation.com

He tapped the computer keys in a practiced motion and a familiar web page instantly appeared before him again.

In the following second, Zhou Tingting’s hand nervously shut off the computer. Moreover, her chest was faintly moving up and down. Her complexion was wan, and she appeared to be greatly frightened.

Xu Yangyi raised a brow, indicating for her to explain.

“Cough...” Zhou Tingting realized what she had done and said in trepidation: “Cough... Perhaps sir is used to connecting online like so, but this won’t do...”

“Chinacultivation is a website that requires payment. A low-grade spirit stone for a single week, but my monthly expenses have already been used up. So...” She opened up a website with a green-colored symbol on the computer a bit awkwardly: “You have to use this...”

“A VPN?” Xu Yangyi was a little curious. This was something he had truly never seen at Heavens Law.

“This isn’t a normal VPN.” Zhou Tingting’s laughter carried a sliver of haughtiness: “This is the Green Leaf VPN!”

“I decoded this from several hundred cultivation softwares. In case the spirit stone isn’t paid on time, Chinacultivation’s general proxy will immediately block off your IP address. However, with the Green Leaf VPN, all blocked addresses can go in! Not only does

it use a proxy server, but it's also claimed that the server is the hardest to pinpoint! At the very least, I still haven't been discovered! What's most important though is that it accepts Chinese currency!"

Xu Yangyi was unable to stifle his laughter and shook his head. There would always be a countermeasure to deal with a policy. It seemed he was a person [ignorant of the plights of others](#).

The website quickly loaded once again. It wasn't know who drew the background, but in the midst of immortals lingering on clouds, there were several handsome ancient young cultivators riding on flying swords. They were surrounded by winding mountains and freely scattered mystical clouds, immortal cranes flying in harmony. Above their heads, there were large characters drawn in ink, dazzling to the eye: Chinacultivation.com.

At the center, there was a section that took up around three-fifths of the screen. On the left and right, there were two lines of messages left behind. On the left it said: "[A Dao that can be tread is not the everlasting Dao](#)". On the right it said: "That which is true is that which is the Dao."

Zhou Tingting's breathing was urgent as she clasped her tea, kneeling behind Xu Yangyi as if she were a maid. She had already stretched out her neck as far as she could, appearing like she wanted to bore through the computer. Nevertheless, she gritted her teeth and restrained herself and even assumed the style of a pretty daughter from a humble family.

"Can't you not use a VPN for a link? Xu Yangyi raised a brow and asked suspiciously.

"It's not the same!" Zhou Tingting shouted a reply without missing a beat. Afterwards, she gently coughed and said bashfully: "This website... even if you use a VPN to connect to it, we can only get into listings and transactions categories. As for other 'Cultivation Tips', 'Issued Missions', 'Dao Result Conventions' and

‘Industry News’, our small clans can’t get into these four areas.”

“Why?”

“Because this website needs real-name authentication...” Zhou Tingting sighed with secret bitterness: “In case it detects fringe cultivators like us, the system won’t supply higher privileges... and moreover, Chinacultivation.com doesn’t offer the service of raising one’s privileges...”

Before she had finished speaking, Xu Yangyi had come to understand.

This site was open with full access to Heavens Law. They had the privileges to enter all the regions. For many years, this was the only website they were capable of accessing, a view that had long since been incapable of become even more familiar. He was rather understanding that Chinacultivation only had two kinds of methods to increase one’s privileges.

Method one, if you made contributions to the real world, your ranking would increase. You could then enter setup messages such as “Reading Privileges 100” or “Reading Privileges 888”. The highest reading authority a Qi Condensation cultivator could have was 50. The highest reading privilege set up for a Foundation Establishment cultivator would be 100. As for Core Formation cultivators... whatever amount they wanted it to be was whatever it was. In any case, weren’t there only ten people that could view it?

Method two, even simpler, and that was to recharge.

After all, the present age was Cultivation Civilization. The cultivation world and the human world were intimately connected, and a majority of genuine high officials, for instance one like Chu Zhaonan’s affluent three generations, were incredibly well-versed with the cultivation world. Perhaps a good part of Qi Condensation cultivators didn’t possess their thorough understandings.

In the case they were aware, who didn't want to cultivate? The ages of those clan masters were too old to cultivate, but didn't they have grandchildren? Great-grandchildren? There was no short supply of their posterity!

However, if you weren't a cultivator, you were simply incapable of advancing through the real-name authentication. Thus, after China set up the internet in the 90s, the people at the top of the nation's pyramid joined together to draft a bill. A requirement in "accordance to circumstance" that the children of ordinary people ought to enjoy equal benefits. Later on, this wasn't only limited to the inheritance of Dao legacies...

On the next day, there was a function to recharge credits.

A union master cost 10,000 low-grade spirit stones.

A gold union master cost a 1000 middle-grade spirit stones.

A diamond union master cost a 100 high-grade spirit stones.

An exalted lord cost 10 supreme-grade spirit stones.

Basically, once you were an exalted lord, it wouldn't be a problem even if you wanted to read a Core Formation master's post. But for fringe cultivators, there wasn't enough time to cultivate. How could they recharge a price of 10,000 low-grade spirit stones?

Originally, they wanted to compromise on the balance of power between the cultivation and human worlds, but who would've imagined the magic of money would truly be so great without boundary? On that next day, twenty-three exalted lords appeared. It was the service merchants of the cultivation world's turn to be rendered dumbstruck this time.

Halting his train of thought, Xu Yangyi laughed and entered his account information. Smoothly logging on in an instant, he felt Zhou Tingting's eyes at the side of him stiffen.

"HL...01..." Zhou Tingting took a glance, and in the next second, her screech nearly flipped over the rooftop: "HL! Heavens Law!

You're from Heavens Law?! A-and you're also 01?!"

She covered her mouth in shock. Although she couldn't enter the sections she desired to the most, she'd been around long enough to know that not counting Heavens Law, there was the Big Three: the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, the Featherwood Guard, and the CSIB. However, Heavens Law was known as the cradle of high-level cultivators! Out of every ten Foundation Establishment cultivators, half would come from Heavens Law!

The organization couldn't join in on the struggle of power, but it was a publicly acknowledged apex power.

Even more important was... the two letters 'HL' were required to be authenticated. It was said that it was incredibly difficult to graduate from Heavens Law, however, which graduate wouldn't not be scrambled over each graduation? Those with the two letters HL in the front of their login ID were all graduates-to-be or graduates!

In particular... the two digits of 01...

"You... You... Sir..." She felt her breathing become rushed!

Heavens knew that the first time she had saw Xu Yangyi, her initial thought was to bother him! So long as he was willing to dispel her cultivation woes for her, everything was fair game besides her body!

Soon after... looking clearly at his appearance and build, she felt that her body wasn't exactly off the table... Finally, the two digits of 01 appeared, and she completely collected all of her thoughts. Being 01 was the representation of a city champion! A candidate to contest the title of paragon! The highest of priorities that all parties would fight over for!

"Sir... Sir is a champion?" Her gaze twinkled fiercely. She dared not believe by any stretch of her imagination that she managed to pick up treasure when she went out for stroll!

“In the past.” Xu Yangyi answered indifferently and clicked on the “Cultivation Rankings” section while he was at it. No one knew whatsoever, but the instant the ID HL-01 logged on, the computer screens of the four major powers all rang out with an ear-piercing beep!

“Lost information captured... Lost information captured...” At this moment, in the Mingshui Province branch, a mechanical face suddenly opened its mouth and a stream of zeroes and ones endlessly circulated within its eyes: “Locating position...”

“Verifying data chain... Position captured...”

In the Mingshui Province Featherwood Guard Panshan City branch, a middle-aged woman raised her wristwatch in doubt and looked at it. As she saw the cover emit red flashes, her pupils immediately sharpened.

In the following second, she ran to the front of the office without the slightest hesitation, stifling the wild palpitations of her heart. Knocking gently on the door, she didn’t even wait for the other side to answer and pushed her way through the door. Her voice carried a trace of urgency: “Branch master, the person the top brass requested to track has appeared!”

Before her was an old man that appeared to be over seventy years old. He wore a pair of rimless silver glasses with crystal lenses and an azure-colored changpao, and his hand holding a brush was comfortably writing. His disposition was hale and hearty, his age not showing the least bit at all.

“Good character!” The secretary at his side holding a towel didn’t pay attention to the middle-aged woman and laughed: “Branchmaster Chen’s Liu Style calligraphy is simply divine. Sir, look at the straight hook of this 托. Even if [Liu Gongquan](#) was still in this world, he could do no better than this.”

The old man smiled and set down his brush, extending his hand to take a lukewarm towel into it. He casually wiped them, not

raising his head: “The person being tracked?”

“Of the Featherwood Guard, the CSIB, and the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, which branch doesn’t have a person they want to trace?” He lifted his changpao and sat down on the sofa, crossing his legs in satisfaction. With a wave, a cup of lukewarm tea flew into his hand: “Who is it?”

“Three years ago on September 8th, sir mentioned a person by name to track” The middle-aged woman said gently without delay: “It was just investigated that his Heavens Law username HL-01 has appeared again! He’s in our Mingshui Province!”

The old man’s gaze flashed, and he inhaled deeply: “Are you certain it’s him?”

“No!”

“Then what are you waiting for?” The old man laughed grimly as he set down his tea: “Conduct an investigation straightaway!”

“Yes!”

“Slow down.” Just as the middle-aged woman was about to leave, the old man laughed: “If you’re certain don’t take action by yourself. Notify me at once.”

“Understood!”

The middle-aged woman left and the secretary laughed: “Branch master, does this necessitate such importance?”

“Moron...” Branchmaster Chen closed his eyes, his smile even colder than ice: “What do you know...”

This was a cultivator that had escaped from Vermilion Snow’s clutches!

Eight Foundation Establishment cultivators about the same as himself had died in battle! Among them, four were at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment! But from that landscape of mountains of corpses and seas of blood, Xu Yangyi was capable of

surviving against all odds!

What was most important though... was that there were apex figures that mentioned him by name to track down! Otherwise, why would he be concerned over a trifling Qi Condensation cultivator?

He just didn't understand. Why was it that an insignificant Qi Condensation cultivator was able to obtain such importance from a lordship?

At the same time, in the middle of a jungle, there were thirty to forty people leaping on a tree over twenty meters tall like energetic squirrels.

"Distance from the target is forty meters!" A series of red numbers appeared on the goggles of a camouflaged man wearing protective eyewear: "It's already been confirmed the demon accompanying the Featherfall Grass for it to bloom is at the late stage of Qi Condensation. Moreover, it's a demon of unknown size. Commander Chu, report complete."

"Close in on three sides, leave one path open." The chilly voice of a man could be heard in everyone's earpieces: "Stick to the plan."

"Yes!"

"Roger!"

Of the last of the troops, there were only two people. A man whose entire body was wrapped within a cloak and only holding two enormous eye-grabbing pistols emitting a coldness in his hands. The other man's fingers seemed like they were flying as they moved over a tablet, incessantly making calculations.

At this moment, both men's wristwatches rang out with a beeping noise in sync. They nearly paused in step simultaneously.

"This..." The man in the cloak's voice revealed a wavering for the first time: "He's still alive?"



“Gao Ye!” He immediately turned his head towards the person at his side.

He obtained the other’s low excited roar: “Understood!”

On the tablet, the entire chart that had just appeared on it vanished straightaway, and another completely different data chart surfaced.

“Ignorant to others’ plights” Direct translation is “Why don’t they eat meat” A phrase allegedly said by Emperor Hui of Jin when he heard his people did not have rice to eat. Somewhat along the lines of Marie Antoinette saying “Let them eat cake.”

“The Dao that can be tread is not the everlasting Dao.” This line is the first line of the Dao De Jing, THE Daoist scripture, one of the most translated works in the entire world. I am unsure of the second line specifically.

Liu Gongquan is a Tang Calligrapher. Very famous

#### **Note:**

Quick explanation on the forum tier level things: its also like that on China’s forums. There are different VIP levels, privileges granted base on level, etc.

## Chapter 62: Chinacultivation.com (2)

---

Xu Yangyi was none the wiser to all of this. Following his mouse click, the cultivation ranking page completely opened up.

On the top, there were a whole ten rankings! Each one was as dazzling and lustrous as a glittering jewel! So long as one was a cultivator, this was where they would pay attention to the entire cultivation world's number one!

Xu Yangyi's gaze began to deepen. In three years, three whole years, how many changes would have occurred to this familiar list? When he was at the academy, how many times had he and his classmates looked at these rankings with incomparable expectation, imagining a day when they tread out from the academy doors and came to be ranked among one of these ten names? In an instant, their statuses would go soaring!

At that time, only then he would dare claim himself to be an illustrious sage. Only then would he venture to title himself as the hero of a generation!

The Core Formation Dragon Ranking!

The Foundation Establishment Phoenix Ranking!

The Qi Condensation Tiger Ranking!

Xu Yangyi carried a fiery gaze as he looked over these three rankings. It was China's cultivation world's "China Cloud Cultivation Data Corporation" that had the greatest authority to construct these rankings. Over the course of a century, there weren't many changes to it. Before the internet, newspapers were used. After the internet's advent, the papers were unwilling to pass on their roles to others, so they became Chinacultivation.com's most clicked on section!

These three lists had eternally been the lists that all cultivators paid the most attention to. One list only recorded ten people. In

the case your name was on this list, even if you were ranked tenth, each major power would sacrifice their hard-earned resources to headhunt you!

Those who were the strongest were obvious at a glance. Those who were not required held no interest. Humanity's gaze had forever been focused on those who were strong.

Inhaling deeply, he didn't open it straight away, but rather continued to look.

Pill Elixir Dragon-Tiger Ranking!

Magik Artifact Dragon-Tiger Ranking!

Talisman and Formation Dragon-Tiger Ranking!

Magik Treasure Dragon-Tiger Ranking!

Outside of the Core Formation, Foundation Establishment, and Qi Condensation rankings, these four great auxiliary rankings were the second lists that deserved attention!

Any supreme pill elixir, supreme magik treasure, and mountain-protecting great formation were the undisseminated secrets of each major power, the foundation that ensured their continued survival. It was similar to Fengyi's talisman-specialized Wang Clan that had originally wanted to snatch up Xu Yangyi. If they brought out their Six Yang Gods, Six Yin Fairies; Immortal Erudition, and Dragon Swallows Setting Sun, would these items not sell at a sky-high price?

It was an absolute possibility!

In the modern era, each of the ten names on these lists were categorically the apex pills, talismans, and artifacts of noble families. These families presently possessed the most profound of techniques and the most of esoteric of knowledges. Of course, these were the noble families most understanding of flexibility and progressiveness, capable of completely meshing with modern cultivation.

Moreover, these side channels brought enormous profit, sufficient to let them rank in the riches of the ten great cultivation clans!

He continued to look.

Demon Familiar Rankings!

Arcane Effort Rankings!

If these two lists were released on the outside and obtained, they would unquestionably give rise to open gambling from every major power and the transaction of benefits in secret. Placed among these nine great rankings, these lists could only be classified at the third grade.

A demon beast that failed Form Transformation wouldn't be capable of cultivating a human form and fitting in with other cultivating demons. Even demon cultivators themselves looked down on these demon beasts, as well. They could still only be called demon beasts.

However, there was a reason to fail Form Transformation.

No matter if it was a human or demon, both had bloodlines. The stronger the demon beast, the more pure and more valiant the bloodline. As a result, Form Transformation would be more difficult. Xu Yangyi had once seen an educational video of a silver cap with a bloodline concentration rate of 70% breaking through Form Transformation during the initial period of the nation's founding. Its Form Transformation wasn't the same as ordinary demons; it had transformed into a dragon.

He remembered quite clearly the endless amount of carps following destiny at the Yellow River's Hukou Waterfall in the Great Jinshan Canyon. They arched to leap over the dragon gate in the face of heaven-toppling river waters that surged no less than several tens of meters high!

In the end, 81 bolts, 9 set of 9, of heavenly thunder tribulation

had forcibly turned that silver carp whose head had already transformed into that of a dragon's into flying ash at the edge of Form Transformation.

It was on that day the carp's corpse descended from the Hukou Waterfalls and spread wide through the river. Even ten-odd days after its fall, it was still not salvaged. Furthermore, every carp was shedding tears of blood, eyes still wide in death with lingering grievances.

This was the sole case after the founding of the nation that had surpassed the Chinese government's control, and was also not an event included in Qinshan Province's provincial governor's M-Files. This was because... at that time, countless crowds of ordinary people had beared witness to it. It was unknown how the matter continued to be suppressed after the event.

Before these demon beasts completed Form Transformation, and their intelligence still not yet bloomed, they would be taken in by cultivators and be called demon familiars.

Qinshan Province's Shui Clan was a lone lineage that had resided beneath the Qinling Mountains for 230 years. They had a specialized signing agreement process with demon familiars. Although the Shui Clan didn't surpass ten successors every generation, they weren't inferior in any regard to the three great auxiliary ventures of pills, artifacts, and talismans.

The last list was...

The Power Ranking!

In the cultivation world, all powers would be on this ranking. Regardless if it was public, secret, demon, or human, all would have a numerical evaluation on this list.

Thus, even if a person of China Cloud ran into demons with a fondness for killing, they would usually be able to keep their lives.

The time now was Cultivation Civilization, not that of ancient

cultivation. In the End of Days, talents had withered away, and any person knew of the direct ratio between talents and resources.

As for the Heavenly Demon Ranking frequently discussed by China's human cultivators, it was the sole list not arranged by China Cloud. It was produced by the CSIB that was equivalently an authority, however, they couldn't publish China Cloud's other rankings by any measure.

"This is so awesome..." Zhou Tingting didn't know the number of times she had looked at these rankings, yet her face was still full of yearning: "If there's a day where I too can be on this ranking..."

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. To be capable of being on this ranking, one admittedly had to be of a dazzling lineage. Her Zhou Clan could be overturned with a single move.

However, was it possible?

How many powers' geniuses were without hope? If so, then what about a weak self-conscious girl without any power to prop her or a fortuitous, unique arcane effort, even if she had someone to provide her with pills? Would China's government excavate great mountains and vast rivers to look for spirit veins for her?

"Then I wouldn't have to worry about money again!"

Xu Yangyi pursed his lips and his Adam's apple stirred. When it came to pondering such a thing as a person's heart, he didn't desire to willfully guess as to its subtleties. His vision skimmed over all the rankings. Afterwards, he clicked the Core Formation Master Dragon Ranking without the least delay.

First place: Old Demon Blackmountain!

It was still him! Xu Yangyi sighed. This figure wasn't a human, but rather a centuries-old spider that had survived since the Mongol dynasty. This demon's aptitude was normal, but against all odds, it had walked the path all the way to the Great Circle of Core Formation. Were it not for fated chances being difficult to

search for during the End of Days, perhaps it would've tread into the legendary Nascent Soul realm long ago.

Second place: Mountainlord. Third place: [Droughtbringer](#).

There weren't any differences from three years ago. He rubbed his chin; true, a Core Formation master's lifespan was four centuries. These figures were living fossils that had survived to the present from the era of the Qing ancestor Giocangga. There wouldn't be changes so easily to this list. Besides, Mountainlord, who had cultivated a demon form in the mountains and seas of the South China Sea, had a very long lifespan. This demon had survived since the era of Kuhtughtu Khan and was at least six centuries old. It was difficult for there to be changes among the other Dao Masters.

Nonetheless, these three positions were all demons!

A demon's individual battle power in itself far outstripped a human's. Otherwise, Vermilion Snow simply couldn't have possibly slaughtered eight Foundation Establishment cultivators in succession at half-step Core Formation. Anyways, the first three positions were all demon cultivators. In an age where humanity reigned as master, it was more or less an irony.

The following seven were human cultivators: Floatingcloud, Ancientpine, Cloudcrane, Titanspirit, Skybearer, Earthcleave, and Hiddenscent.

Any one of them was an authority!

At the same time in the Panshan City branch, an old man deeply furrowed his brows: "It's untraceable?"

"Yes..." The middle-aged woman in front was in a cold sweat: "According to our investigations, the first time he appeared was within our Mingshui Province. However, his IP address kept on drifting all over the world afterwards. The last time it appeared..."

She glanced at the old man, not daring to continue speaking.

“Speak.”

“Yes... In Osaka, Japan...”

The old man’s brows deeply locked together.

“He should be using a kind of uncommon login software... Please be at ease, sir. Within three days, we’ll be sure to discover his precise location!”

“Three days?” The old man laughed coldly: “Do the people of the technology department have to be changed?” The middle-aged woman dared not to answer. “You have half an hour.” The old man looked darkly at the woman: “If you can’t find him in an hour, you, along with your technology department, are out of the branch. Get a better job elsewhere.”

“Crystal?”

“Yes...”

In another place, in a forest, a man in a cloak asked heavily: “Haven’t discovered it?”

“No! Gimme some time!” Gao Ye’s ten fingers were flying to decode, and beads of perspiration secreted from his head: “Dammit! He’s using some fuckin’ software! Is he so poor?! His IP address keeps on floating around! I can’t wait to find out which crappy company developed this hateful software! I’m going to frickin’ disclose him to cultivation network’s rights protection department!”

“Pick up the pace.” The man spun his pistol somewhat impatiently: “You should know... I hate waiting.”

“Of course, I know!” Gao Ye gritted his teeth and moved back and forth over his keyboard: “He’s really a troublesome spirit! Is he worried he’s going to meet a ghost?! I’m gonna beat him black and blue when I find him!”

“You’ve beaten him up?” The man lit a cigarette.



Gao Ye was dazed, and his hand stopped, as well. In the following second, he continued to type on the keyboard with lightning speed: “Your shortcoming is that you’re so blunt about the truth!”

In Bai County, Xu Yangyi moved the mouse neither hurriedly nor slowly as before. His next objective that he chose was the Foundation Establishment cultivators.

First place was Sunnihiliator!

This was a name he had an impression of. A true genius that humanity only encountered once every century. In less than a hundred years, he had cultivated to the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment. Every martial arena bore his nameless stele for the observation of new students.

Xu Yangyi only did a skim over because he wasn’t familiar with the people on the ranking, but it was impossible for their names to go unheard, like that of thunder piercing the ear.

Next, he clicked on the Qi Condensation Tiger Ranking.

Xu Yangyi gathered his wits. The people on this ranking were ones that he wanted to meet very soon. He himself had already entered this world of manifold colors. All of these people would be his opponents or perhaps his comrades. However, the Qi Condensation first place caused him to focus on it for three seconds.

A familiar name...

Chu Zhaonan.

Below each cultivator, there was an introduction to their entire lives. Before, he hadn’t clicked on any of them, but right now, he mumbled to himself for a couple seconds and finally tapped on a key for the first time.

“Sir has an interest in the top spot, as well?” Zhou Tingting, who had kept silent, scooted over and said excitedly: “I can read it out loud for you to listen to. Chu Zhaonan, age: twenty-four, height:

1.89 meters. Sex: male. Marital status: single. He rose to prominence three years ago in Fengyi City's Qualifier, shaking Sunnihilator's stone stele. His Gun Kata has already attained a higher level. Last year, he slayed a middle-stage Qi Condensation demon at Yuyang City by himself..."

Droughtbringer = 魃. This demon is normally just called Ba, second tone. Droughtbringer is something I made up because just calling it Ba sounds weird even though it is correct. Also, Mountainlord is a typical title for a tiger. Just a heads up, not sure if most of you guys realize this, a good deal of these creatures come from actual myth and the companies i.e China Cloud, are based off actual companies and are in some cases supposed to be a magical version of that company. Yeah, this novel is a cultivation novel, but is also supposed to take place in the REAL world.

# Chapter 63: The Eternal Alchemy Canon (1)

---

Xu Yangyi was somewhat spellbound. He was only accustomed to listening to information he was more or less aware of, screens of the past. His yesterday had already been three years for everyone else...

In his mind, it was as if the savage scene of Vermilion Snow causing great upheaval in the crowds in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena was before his eyes. The battle where he had made his first showing and become famous was still vivid and fresh in his mind.

“What realm is he?” He looked calmly at the computer screen and asked.

“The middle stage!” Zhou Tingting’s face was flushed: “He’s simply a genius! In thirteen years, he cultivated to the middle stage! Cultivators that can presently rise a small boundary in two or three decades are a dime a dozen...”

Was that so?

Xu Yangyi suddenly laughed. Had he not dreamed for three years, he himself would’ve been at the middle stage three years ago.

“Sir might be unaware, but last year, he came out of seclusion from the Featherwood Guard and single-handedly went to Yuyangy City and killed all the demons with a criminal record. Some were even ten years his senior... S-Sir, this?”

She looked puzzledly at Xu Yangyi, but the other had already silently closed out of the page and opened the industry news one.

She was quite confused.

Obviously, this... Huh? Well, this cultivator she still didn’t know the name of seemed to hold quite an interested expression towards Chu Zhaonan, so how could his interest disappear as quickly?

She couldn't have known, but just from this familiar name, Xu Yangyi was fondly recalling his own past. Yet it was just this and nothing more.

On Chinacultivation.com's news page, Xu Yangyi took a quick glimpse at the stickied post.

"In 2016, in the first major case to occur in China in fifty years, Vermilion Snow massacred the Fengyi City branch. Afterwards, at the end of last year, the four major powers: Heavens Law, the CSIB, the Featherwood Guard, and the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, formally took charge of full responsibility altogether for the incident."

"Three years ago on August 21st, Heavens Law's Nantong Province branch held the quinquennial graduation ceremony. In total, 12342 people participated. Among them was Nantong Province's 130 cultivation families, in total 342 people. In addition, there were 12000 guests. The number of Heavens Law graduates numbered 62. Each city's champion summed up to thirteen people. After the end of the Qualifier, Vermilion Snow suddenly killed her way in. This had lead to an unprecedented heaven-frightening incident in China's past five decades."

"Firecloud, Shadowsly, Wang Buzhi, The Three Friends in Winter, Moonchaser, and Tigersplitter, these eight Foundation Establishment cultivators, acted to allow the survivors to evacuate and sacrificed their lives in honor and glory. They did so without qualm as true cultivators. Through the Chinese government's Deputy Energy Minister, Mr. Chu Tianyi's suggestion, they were posthumously recognized as martyrs, and the families of these eight cultivators were arranged for by the government. Those who had families were automatically upgraded a level. Their children and younger generations will get to enjoy a tuition-free education at Heavens Law and will moreover have the privilege to select an occupation among the Big Three. Fengyi City's Heavens Law branch has already erected a heroes monument."

A tide of sorrow rushed over Xu Yangyi's heart. Presently, he was looking at the already black and white characters, but yesterday, they had still been before him, not drawing back a single step at all as if they were sharp swords.

The boiling killing intent within his heart suddenly flared, yet it noiselessly fizzled away. Strength, only strength was number one. Even now, a burning expectation had arose in his heart regarding the Eternal Alchemy Canon.

He continued to read.

“The demon's greatest organization, the Myriad Demons Palace has already stated their responsibility for this matter. As one of their authorities, Vermilion Snow had ranked early on as one of the Myriad Demons Palace's elders. Moreover, Old Demon Blackmountain specially declared during a news conference last year on New Year's Day: he wouldn't cover up this event by any means, and they would even search for her. Daomaster Mountainlord revealed himself for the first time in two centuries and furthermore expressed his own attitude: the Age of Cultivation Civilization is absolutely not the olden days of imperial autocracy. A civilized system is unable to tolerate such a provocation, and even further, the modern civilized system cannot be allowed to collapse. At the same time he stated: If he discovered Vermilion Snow's hiding place, even if she was separated by a distance of 5000 kilometers, he would definitely put her to death.”

“Daomaster Droughtbringer didn't make an appearance, but he entrusted his Majordomo Senior Farcloud to pass on: The era of ancient cultivation when the strongest fist reigned supreme is already a thing of the past. If anyone dares to provoke modern-day Earth's sphere of culture, in my capacity as one of the Myriad Demons Palace's three forebearers, she must comply with the decisions of the greater tide.”

“To date, there has been no word of Vermilion Snow. The Yixue Clan and the Zhou Clan have calculated the divination three times,

but are unable to find her whereabouts. Mr. Tao Hongzhi, an expert on the study of Demon Society and Modern Civilization has suggested that of Earth's numerous secret ancient cultivation realms, if Vermilion Snow hid in her own private secret realm she had discovered, almost nothing could be hardly accomplished within the next several decades. However, a majority of human cultivators suspect the Myriad Demons Palace of deliberate asylum. This Spring Festival, Nantong Province's 4000 surviving cultivators will stage a sit-in at Shennong Forestry, Daomaster Blackmountain's Dao sanctum, drawing widespread attention. Several of the Chinese government's high officials have appeared to temporarily settle this matter."

"As of now, Vermilion Snow's bounty is 12 billion, and she ranks as number one on the Heavenly Demon Ranking."

"It's certain the influence of this tremendous incident will be far-reaching for the next decade. Still, it will become the target of everyone's attention. This incident in itself cannot be considered a change in peace and security of what things in the future will be like, as brought by the path between humanity and demons. We'll have to request everyone to wait and see."

Below, there were all kinds of comments that nearly flipped the heavens of the red stuck message.

"Bullshit! There's no question the demons are shielding her! Apart from the Myriad Demons Palace, where could she go hide?! Humanity should take a hard line! Force the Myriad Demons Palace to hand her over! This is really fuckin' indulgent! If there was a first time, there's gonna be a second! It's hard to say the next time will be a second Vermilion Snow! To transgress against my human race, even though I am insufficient, she must be put to death! Don't tell me we're scared of those pack of demons?!" — ID: Eyes Obscured by a Single Leaf.

"Comment above, you're too excited; force them? You really believe the demons' three great Core Formation masters are

vegetarians? Their amicable replies are already sufficient face. The Myriad Demons Palace has also stated they would take responsibility. You still want an even greater disturbance? Disturbing so that China's government nukes their Core Formation cultivators? Will you only be happy once a provincial capital has been leveled to the ground? Have you thought about the ordinary people?" — ID: My Buddha is Merciful.

"Well, I'll say! The present era of Cultivation Civilization is really too weak! I read in a web novel that they wouldn't accept and ignore something like this, that the greatest fist is the big boss. THAT is a cultivator!" — ID: Huainan zi

"Comment above, are you ill? Is that era of small clans and powers still alive and well? Aren't there mortals still around? There's no reason to be worried every day that you'll be killed off by someone with an unseen blade! You know that's just a novel, too! Even in the ancient cultivation era, things weren't like that! Even the State of Qin still needed to pay attention for a good reason to send out troops! Any time period has a civilized ground work! These days, a guided missile can threaten a Foundation Establishment cultivator and a nuclear warhead can pose a threat to a Core Formation cultivator. This is society's balance of standards. You're not taking into account that ordinary people have invented all kinds of things; things that you can't use!" — ID: My Name is MT.

"That's right! If you're not going to make a web call, are you going to use a paper crane? A call takes a second! It's not the quarter hour of a paper crane! A quarter of an hour is enough time for a Foundation Establishment senior to kill you ten times! Moreover, unless you're a Foundation Establishment cultivator, the cars and airplanes of ordinary people are convenient! Don't tell me it's like the ancient cultivation era, and I'd still be required to ask my senior to sit on his flying sword if I left the sect? Isn't that funny?" — ID: Glutton.

“Ordinary people use both their hands to change the world. This is worth of respect.”

“Without them, it would be simply impossible to have satellites scan every one of Earth’s nooks and crannies, so that cultivators could find spirit veins and secret realms.”

“Mortals have used their own knowledge to stand at equal height with cultivators. At the very least, I can’t keep myself away from the items of ordinary people every day. From clothing, food, home, and transportation, which one can be parted from?”

“Their just deviating from the topic...” Zhou Tingting looked on in high spirits: “Mister, don’t pay it any mind. It’s just like that. It’s just troll posting. In my opinion, they’re even more nationalistic than mortal internet trolls.”

Xu Yangyi calmly closed out of the web page. The more he read, the more he felt the killing intent in his heart become stronger. Even if he somehow restrained it, it would soon come breaking through from the bottom of his heart.

These people that were commenting were doing so in a lackadaisical and uncaring manner, treating this incident with the attitude of a spectator. As for him, he truly remembered that day vividly, and how desperate it was.

That day caused him to become enlightened as to what was his truth, his own Dao.

“Let me borrow your cultivation area.” He stood up without the trace of an expression on his face: “After I leave seclusion, you can come to me should you have questions.”

“Sir! Do as you please! No, I’ll take you there!” An excited flush suddenly appeared on Zhou Tingting’s face. He wasn’t leaving! This cultivator wasn’t leaving! This was the acceptance of her friendship. Moreover, he appeared to be quite easy-going. In half a year, she could ask several cultivation questions that had long



nagged at her!

Cultivate.

Xu Yangyi's gaze seemed to hardly ripple as he looked at Zhou Tingting leading the way ahead of him. The fire in his heart gradually calmed down. Merely, calmness was sometimes a kind of soundless perseverance.

Right now, what he had to do the most was cultivate. With Chu Zhaonan at the middle stage, there was no reason for him to still be at the initial stage! He would walk step by step, Qi Condensation... Foundation Establishment, until there was ultimately a day where could use his hand to pinch Vermilion Snow by the neck, chop off her head, and place it at the center of the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, so she could repent day and night.

"There's also you..." Xu Yangyi stroked the pendant on his chest, his gaze staunchly resolute like a boulder. For his blood hatred of thirteen years, he had finally set foot in the true world. There would inevitably be a day where he would stand before his nightmare and personally smash apart this nightmare of thirteen years by his own hand.

The two people walked down to the first floor from the fifth and stopped before a large door. Zhou Tingting turned around and bowed respectfully: "Mister, in the basement below... is one of several places in Bai County that is rather rich in qi. Inside, there is a small Spirit Drawing Formation. Sir, would you like me to call for you once every week?"

"Sure." Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply and prepared to step in, yet he suddenly stopped in step: "Have you ever heard of... the Eternal Alchemy Canon?"

"The Eternal Alchemy Canon?" Zhou Tingting tilted her head as she pondered it over, yet her answer went against Xu Yangyi's expectations: "Of course, I know."

“I’m just asking.” Xu Yangyi replied without so much as batting an eyelid, and his gaze gently swept over the other: “With your status, you actually know what it is?”

“The news forums!” Zhou Tingting awkwardly laughed: “It’s on there... also... also, you would even know about the Eternal Alchemy Canon if you Baidu’d it...”

Xu Yangyi’s brows slightly stirred, and he raised his chin, indicated for the other to continue speaking.

“Mister, you should know that the Tang dynasty was one of the most flourishing eras in China for Daoism, right? It was because their emperors, of the Li lineage, all held a shortcoming among all of China’s emperors, and that was to demonstrate the legitimacy of their throne by using the relationships they obtained with celestial immortals. This was to prove they had received the Mandate of Heaven, and their lives would be eternal and prosperous. The immortal that the Tang won over was the Old Master, [Lao Er](#).”

“However, the reason why Daoism thrived was because in the Han dynasty before the Tang, an extraordinarily famous scholar appeared. Wei Boyang of the Eastern Han wrote a text that could even be said to be the basis of Daoism...” She pursed her lips and looked towards Xu Yangyi: “Its name is [The Harmony of the Trium](#), but it has another name, and that is The Eternal Alchemy Canon!”

Lao Er is Laozi. Laozi means Old Master. In his life, it is believed Laozi’s real name was Li Er. Laozi is considered the coolest dude in Daoism.

The Harmony of the Trium is my personal spin on the various translated titles of “周易参同契”, which has been translated by other as “The Kinship of Three” and “The Kinship of Three in Accordance with the Book of Changes”. In case you are unaware, the Book of Changes is considered one of THE Daoist text. I thought about using the title “The Trinity” but as you may know,

this is a term used in Christianity. The three components of the unities can be considered: the Dao, cosmology, and alchemy.

## Chapter 64: The Eternal Alchemy Canon (2)

---

“The theories of Daoist internal and external alchemy have continued to be derived to this day. The so-called cultivation to produce a core is in fact to ‘cultivate the Dao’; all cultivation systems from the Daoist school of Qi Condensation, Foundation Establishment, and the beginning of Core Formation. However, you can also say these days that ‘cultivation’ is in fact a type of thing, the Dao and the truth. There are two kinds of explanations. If the Dao is said to cultivate something, it is an internal alchemy system. The truth is said to be one’s comprehension in regards to the Dao, the physical and the metaphysical...”

Xu Yangyi’s gaze faintly flashed. Heavens Law hadn’t spoken into such detail about these subject matters at all.

“It can also be said the truth is to speak of the real. Perhaps the self? The first thing that one does is the first thing that appears in one’s mind? The heart’s most original thought?”

Xu Yangyi pensively put his hand on the basement door and mumbled: “There are some cultivators where their devotion to upholding justice is their ‘truth’. There are some cultivators where even the favor of [the heavens is insufficient for the drawing of a hair](#), yet this is also their ‘truth’...”

Zhou Tingting looked at Xu Yangyi’s face. His expression wasn’t impatient, but rather meticulous in reflection. She continued to softly speak: “However, there are also experts that say the ‘Dao’ and the ‘truth’ are actually a single kind of thing these days. It’s just that their interpretation is different. The Dao, according the explanation of experts, is a path. The truth is one’s true self. In reality, both are to advance onwards. Anyways, even in the last several thousand years, the debate of this academic theory has still yet to be finished...”

“By the way...” She pursed her lips and said: “There’s a secret.

That in those years, there were actually two editions of The Harmony of the Trium, that is The Eternal Alchemy Canon... The edition left behind was only for ordinary people to read, and Wei Boyang, as an ancestor-level figure in a Daoist alchemy sect, had the other cultivation arcane effort, which is carved on something... It's said that even the name of the Eternal Alchemy Canon was blessed by [Celestial Master Zhang](#), Zhang Fuhan, and was even taken by Celestial Master Zhang Daoling himself..."

Xu Yangyi suddenly looked towards Zhou Tingting, and she jumped in fright, immediately stepping back and waving her hands in disarray: "It's just something I heard! All of it's hearsay! Sir knows that there's similar information like this on the news forums everyday! For every hundred articles there aren't, there are eighty that are! That's really what I've heard!"

Eventually, Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze. Those words had sent his heart rate pumping. The arcane effort inside the chest on his person was the Eternal Alchemy Canon! Even Daomaster Floatingcloud's Burning Heavens Revelation was born from this arcane effort!

After experiencing the mysterious lotus pond, the Burning Heavens Revelation had expanded no less than ten-fold in characters. If it was said that single portion of the over ten-fold-expanded Eternal Alchemy Canon was enough to create the modern cultivation world's treasured Burning Heavens Revelation, then, as the hidden edition of The Harmony of The Trium, it was at the minimum absolutely impressing to the modern cultivation age.

"You're quite interesting." After he swept his eyes over Zhou Tingting, he immediately pushed open the basement door. At the same time, in his heart, he had already resolved upon it. Once he left seclusion, he wouldn't mind guiding the other for a bit.

This girl would even insist on preserving her face even in death. And while her aptitude was rather high, it by no measure on the

same level as his. However, she had a strong point.

Her memory was terrific, and moreover, she had a sharp curiosity concerning the fantastical secret matters of the [Eight Trigrams](#).

He lacked such a person at his side. Even though he would establish contact with Mao Ba'er later, the latter was more proficient on how to grow his reputation, how to get him better missions, and finding better opportunities and so on.

He needed a vizier on the cultivation world.

Thump... The door behind him shut and what appeared before him a basement formed from limestone. There were no other items. However, the surrounding limestone was carved with a talisman he was exceptionally familiar with.

The Spirit Drawing Formation. It was a simplification of the Spirit Focusing Formation and its efficacy was estimatedly only one-twentieth of a low-grade Spirit Focusing Formation. However, its advantage was that it didn't require spirit stones.

In comparison to the surrounding qi drawn by the Spirit Focusing Formation, it was obvious the changes were different. The Spirit Drawing Formation only caused a thin layer of milky-white mist to appear on the floor. If a normal person entered this stone room, they would certainly feel extremely comfortable and their ailments would completely vanish. But for Xu Yangyi, a genius cultivator, it merely made him feel that the old wounds on his body had improved a bit.

He calmly sat down in meditation. The incredibly familiar Hundred Solutions instantly bubbled forth in his mind. His thoughts seemed to bob up and down again as if they had entered a spirit spring, and each one of his pores comfortably opened up.

He was a genius. However, he we even more understanding that there were many geniuses in this world!

The reason why Sunnihilator was called a genius among geniuses wasn't because his aptitude surpassed all others. Rather, it was on account of his capability of using his superhuman talent to survive and cultivate to the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment!

Only by continuing to survive did one have the qualifications to be called in genius. In China's history, there had never been a lack of geniuses that had come to an early end halfway through their journey.

His first step was to heal all his internal injuries. Then, with the most perfect of attitudes, he would begin to cultivate his primary arcane effort—The Harmony of The Triums, The Eternal Alchemy Canon!

Beep beep beep... Simultaneously, within a secret room in the Featherwood Guard branch, countless maps were endlessly exchanging locations on ten computers. Yet at this moment, all the maps turned completely gold and issued a beeping noise. The massive “Incapable of Assessment, Tracking Failed” message was terribly piercing to the eyes.

The inside of the room was deathly quiet. Several people looked at the computer with a cold sweat and felt a faint killing arua come from behind.

An old man carried both his hands behind him and seemed to stand leisurely at their backs. He was still wearing a changpao and his long white beard fluttered on his chest as before, but both of his eyes had turned incomparably icy since the beeping noise had begun to echo out.

“I have been cultivating for a 112 years...” His fairly hoarse voice rang out in the room: “Five years ago, I ended my 21-year seclusion.” What he said was irrelevant, but not a single one of the present people dared to answer. Even the secretary at his side was bowing at the waist, drenched in cold sweat. “I don't understand the internet. But, I do understand one thing.” He suddenly walked

over to the side of an employee and patted the latter's swivel chair, faintly laughing: "And that is, if you don't understand, then hand it over to a professional. Right?"

"Yes..." As the other spoke, he didn't dare look directly at the old man.

"However..." The old man laughed grimly: "This is how all of you treated my 'trust'."

"We beg your forgiveness!!!" Before his voice had even fallen, there wasn't anyone that remained seated. Presently, everyone had stood up and collectively and orderly bowed in unison as if they had conspired to do so, causing the short old man to appear a good deal taller. He seemed to be a crane amidst a flock of chickens.

There was no response and only after a few seconds passed did they hear the old man faintly say: "Stand up."

No one got up, and the old man coldly laughed, taking his three cultivator secretaries out of the room with him.

"S-Sire..." Just as the old man was about to step out of the room, a high-level employee gritted his teeth and said lowly: "I r-really am sorry, but..."

The old man's gaze swept over him like electricity and he paused, yet he still said bitterly: "Just now... the target that you wanted to track... not only was the target not found..."

The old man light moved forward a step. The employee's head was buried even lower: "But moreover... because the target's web duration was so short, the matter was so sudden, and the positioning being so unimaginably fast... In the final phase... In the final phase..."

"Someone hacked into our Featherwood Guard branch's central system. J-just now, all of the data..."

Bang! Bang! Bang! The door opened by itself, absent of the wind, and soon after, a heavy repeated smashing on the door frame



nearly splintered it.

Just as he left the room, the old man's complexion became even chillier. At this moment, he was truly exhibiting the suppressive might of a cultivator that was capable of reaching Foundation Establishment. The footsteps of the three Qi Condensation secretaries behind him became much lighter.

“How many legions are under the control of Mingshui Province's Featherwood Guard?”

“Senior, among the registered legions, forty of them are C-level...”

Before he had even finished speaking, he was cut off by the old man's icy words: “How many legions among them have scouts that specialize in tracking?”

“Three.” The secretary hurriedly lower his head and said: “The Heaven Listener Legion, the Wind Trace Legion, and the Tiger King Legion...”

“I want an A-level legion!” The old man turned his head, a sneering smile hanging at the crook of his mouth: “Those Good-For-Nothings, can't even find the IP address.”

“Commander Chu's Hidden Dragon Legion...”

“No need to speak to him.” The old man laughed coldly: “If there's no one else, immediately have the Heaven Listener, Wind Trace, and Tiger King legions dispatch their best scouts. Straight to the Mingshui Province branch.”

“But the Hidden Dragon Legion...”

The old man looked at him without a shred of emotion, and the secretary pursed his lips and lowered his head. “Senior, please forgive this junior for being presumptuous... However, these three legions are presently undertaking missions... Perhaps they'll be able to debrief after two months...”

“Then have them come straight to see me when they debrief!” The old man deeply sighed, his gaze throbbing with eerie killing intent: “If anyone leaks a bit about today’s matter...”

“No! I dare not to!”

“I shall not act outside of senior’s instructions!”

Coldly snorting, the old man stormed off.

The Hidden Dragon Legion?

Only someone of his position could know about that lordship’s command. If there was anything else... it was that Chu Zhaonan was a special cultivator of China’s government!

The branch’s system had been hacked? And just on the verge as the target was to be found? It was an absolute certainty that one of his men was a rat!

Thunk! Somewhere else, Gao Ye set his keyboard aside, sweating profusely. His fingers were slightly trembling, and he shut his eyes while leaning back into his chair and said: “Brother Chu, it’s just like you expected. The Featherwood Guard branch was just using their search system to retrieve his address at full capacity.”

The man in the cloak appeared to be a sculpture in night, not saying anything.

“Brother Chu.” Gao Ye lit a cigarette and said suspiciously: “It doesn’t matter if we let them find him, right? On the contrary, hostilities are going to break out between you and the branch master. What we did was too obvious. I was too pressed for time just now; I didn’t have enough time to cover up my tracks.”

“Dead.”

“???”

“He’ll die.” The man raised his head to look at the starry sky: “In case someone else finds him, he’s dead meat.”

“How’s that possible!” Gao Ye stood up in a fright: “H-he’s the

true number one! His potential is boundless! He also has a Core Formation arcane effort! How could that be! Who'd want to give up on him?!"

The man didn't speak and said sorrowfully after a while: "In the face of a taboo, there is no room for the willing and unwilling, only the worthy and unworthy."

"There's a genuine apex authority that's put an astronomical bounty on his head."

"A taboo? A Core Formation arcane effort?" Gao Ye jumped straight up: "A true apex authority? Who?"

There was no response. After several minutes passed, the man lifted his cloak and jumped down from the treetop. His gaze already laid in a place devoid of human presence, radiating an edge like a sword.

I know you won't just die like this. I haven't defeated you, so how can you perish? Three years, three whole years, I've searched for your information. How can I let someone else fight over you right in front of me? I owe you a life, and I'm using this time to return it to you!

Time flowed on second by second. In the blink of an eye, a week had passed. In the basement, Xu Yangyi opened his eyes for the first time. At this moment, he only felt incomparably well.

His entire body, every cell had recovered to their peak state. He clenched his fist and a powerful strength appeared once more in his flesh. Three years ago, he was capable of defeating all his graduation classmates without rival. The present him held that similar kind of self-confidence!

The favor of the heavens is insufficient for the drawing of a hair - I think I did justice to this phrase, but it's supposed to mean the person is mega cheap and stingy. A super tightwad.

Celestial Master Zhang is a real figure. In fact, his bloodline has

even been traced down to this day, albeit with some current succession conflicts. All the names I wrote down all belong to the same person. Chinese figures (especially ancient ones) get different names (courtesy, etc). Celestial Master Zhang is considered a major Daoist figure. You can read more on wikipedia.

八卦 - Eight Trigrams. Important concept in Daoism. Kinda hard to explain, but it's an idea of the interpretation of the cosmic on the real world. Heavily involved with topics such as “Feng Shui”, Geomancy, Anatomy, Astrology, etc.

## Chapter 65: The Eternal Alchemy Canon (3)

---

Within his body, every single internal injury had been resolved. He sucked in deeply, not wasting a second as his entire consciousness immersed itself into his mind.

Boom... An expanse of misty golden light spread out as if it were a mad golden torrent. Less than five seconds later, rays of golden light converged once again within his mind into the bamboo slips of an arcane effort.

The Eternal Alchemy Canon!

His breathing, even if he was cultivating, couldn't help but to become rushed. He stifled his heart's expectation and continued to read character by character.

“All things are born from being, being is born from non-being. To use nothing to form something, the vessel must be void... The Flame Records were not written with futility and to broaden on Change will illuminate them. The lunar crescent bore on her back is the cauldron on the furnace, while the White Tiger simmers at the core pivot. The mercurial sun becomes the shifting pearl, the Azure Dragon in accompaniment. Rising east to merge at the west, the Hun and the Po mutually sustain each other. The upward bow at Dui counted eight and the downward bow at Gen also eight; the two bows are united in essence, forming whole the body of Qian and Kun. Eight ounces on eight ounces to beget a pound. The path of Change, correct and indomitable...”

Skraw! Like the cry of a phoenix, the inside of his mind became clear. Xu Yangyi's eyes trembled twice, yet the didn't open. Nevertheless, a heaven-toppling surging tide rose within his heart! THIS, this was an alchemy technique!

The genuine refining of “pills”! Not the production of medicines! Not the concoction of pill elixirs! At the present, the secret arts of pill refining had long vanished. Not for anything else, in China's

history, there was a rather obscure, yet incapable of being extinguished, fact—in every dynasty, [there would at least be two or three emperors who died](#) to the art of “immortal pills”.

As the cultivation world fused with human society, the Dao of Alchemy ultimately welcomed its collapse after the Qing dynasty. With the eruption of World War II, everyone realized that what was capable of saving people wasn't immortal pills, but rather drugs and medicines.

The cultivation world's dependence on the human world signaled the collapse of their understanding towards the Dao of Alchemy. So great was this influence that it spread to a majority of the cultivation Dao heritages. In a span of nearly two centuries, the Dao of Alchemy had started being completely eradicated. It was to the extent that even a decade after the establishment of the People's Republic, it had become extinct in its entirety.

It was precisely because of this matter of the world war that caused the cultivation world, that had stayed sheltered in their mountains and watched the fires of conflict, to begin to view human society as a central construction, the influence of Earth's civilizations on the cultivation world. It truly caused immortal sects and Dao heritages to recognize that the ancient age had already passed and a completely new era had arrived. So it was from the beginning of this time that many immortal sects hidden in the world began to open their grand protective formations and little by little step out from their vast mountains, great rivers, and even the desolate Gobi Desert.

Until the present, emperors were the only ones in the past that knew of immortal sects and Dao heritages, yet nowadays, cultivation was taken as the other side that had formed a symbiotic relationship with human society.

This history reverberated within Xu Yangyi's mind and he felt his lips somewhat dry.

This was alchemy... True alchemy! Perhaps it was the last alchemy technique on Earth! Although in China's history that pertaining to alchemy techniques had long become submerged in the long river of the past, there would inevitably be a few phrases passed down. It was by the side by side comparison of these texts he immediately understood what the meaning was.

The text said the White Tiger belonged to the metal element of the lung, and the metal element of the lung harbored the Po, which was also the origin foundation of simmering the golden core. The heart's fluid was mercury. It was the multifarious moon that acted as the steadfast furnace. The sun of the heart served as the shifting pearl in accordance to the compatibility of the Azure Dragon and the liver's Hun. The liver's Hun belongs to yang and the heart fluid's primordial essence belongs to yin. In union, they are called the yang soul.

"The sun belongs to fire, and fire returns east to wood, the root from whence it was engendered. The moon holds water, and water returns west to beget the source of metal..." He inhaled deeply, a bit of understanding pouring into the bottom tip of his heart. He almost dared not to believe the things spoken of by this arcane effort!

He closed both of his eyes. Silently lighting a cigarette, he calmly took a drag. The concepts from moments ago were too profound. He need to carefully reflect on them.

Arcane efforts were divided into primary arcane efforts and supplementary arcane efforts. A primary arcane effort was a cultivator's foundation and the supplementary arcane effort could increase a cultivator's external strength. He had originally believed that with the name of the Eternal Alchemy Canon, this was possibly an alchemic arcane effort. In regards to the technique in itself, it didn't have any benefits, however, after carefully pondering it, only then he knew he was wrong, incorrect beyond all reason!

This wasn't so simple as a supplementary arcane effort! It was an alchemy technique! However, it was actually an alchemy technique that none had ever trained in! One that used the body as furnace and cauldron! It would refine the whole body from east to west, heart and soul, a primary arcane effort of the flesh!

It would use a cultivator's body to bring forth a natural primordial pill. The body would serve as the furnace and the Hun would act as the vessel, while the mind would be an assisting force!

Pill concoction required the assistance of the Five Elements. According to this arcane effort, it was tantamount to using the Five Elements to torture the body day and night! It was unknown to what level of tyranny the physical body of a cultivator who was "refined" as such would reach! Moreover, it was unknown as to how high of a degree one's resistance against the Five Elements would attain!

To make an analogy, it was like a human tank in a video game that had finally trained up to "resistance level 999" added on with "magic immunity"!

No one could inquire as to how it had completely changed into something like the Burning Heavens Revelation. However, he was equal to the first forerunner of the Eternal Alchemy Canon in this era. To be trained or not trained, everything was decided, and he had to assume the responsibility of the aftermath!

"Nonetheless, it really is suitable for me. It's like it was measured and developed for me..." Taking a deep drag, he puffed out azure smoke that wafted through the air. He mumbled: "I myself am an [attack damage-type](#) with a fondness for close-quarters combat, rather than an attack damage carry-type that hides behind people..."

An anti-magic body with max resistances was simply measured and created for his style! His cigarette not yet finished, he calmly placed it in front of where he was seated in meditation, sticking it



into the ground. Closing his eyes once again, he entered meditation.

A great profit was bound to have great danger. But in the world, there was no possibility of obtaining something without putting in the hard work.

Time passed on day by day. Outside the basement, Zhou Tingting had brought food a couple times. She hesitated for a long time, but didn't knock on the door. Even if her cultivation was not high, she knew that disturbing one's seclusion was a cultivator's taboo.

"He's been in there for three days now..." She looked at the calendar placed on the door and pursed her lips: "H-he seems to be at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, as well, right? How can he be fine if he doesn't eat or drink?"

No one answered her. There was only the tightly closed basement door.

Five days passed, eight days passed, fifteen days passed, and twenty days passed... yet the basement door still hadn't opened. If other Qi Condensation cultivators were substituted in, perhaps some would even starve to death.

However, within the basement, not only was Xu Yangyi's appearance not frail, but on the contrary, the third time he opened his eyes, his gaze was fiery as he sat quietly in his original position.

In these thirty days, he had not stopped for rest or sleep for the entire month until he had at long last finished reading the Eternal Alchemy Canon. In spite of this, the verdict he had obtained caused him to be incapable of arriving at this final conclusion.

Firstly... this arcane effort, from what he could see of its narration, opposed the heavens. An honest-to-god defiance of the natural order. Cultivators had to comply with the Cycle of Heaven and Earth. To defy the heavens was a matter of life and death. However, this arcane effort didn't even follow the Cycle of Heaven

and Earth!

Any arcane effort absorbed qi. Afterwards, this “origin energy” was used by an arcane effort’s cultivation method to push this portion of origin energy to undergo amplification. It was then stored in the qi sea. This process was called cultivation.

However, this arcane effort didn’t require the absorption of qi. It could even be cultivated in some faraway land. But! It could take the qi hidden within the body and use the body to simulate the circulation of qi, a self-formed cycle!

He even started to believe it to be simple; the body was the furnace and cauldron, and the mind was the assisting force, yet he lacked an equivalently crucial object—fire!

This fire had to be true fire! The Eternal Alchemy Canon had said with extreme clarity that when Heaven and Earth were born, there were four Spirit Fires of Heaven and Earth that fell scattered in the human realm. What he needed was such a fire!

Of course, other flames were fine, as well. However, the text had said distinctly that the better the fuel, the higher quality of the refined “pill”!

Spirit Fire. This was the name that the ancient cultivators had taken for these four flames. According to that which was said in the Eternal Alchemy Canon, Wei Boyang held onto one kind of these four great flames. Based on Xu Yangyi’s extrapolations, the so-called immortal pill in Wei Boyang’s hands was quite possibly a true immortal pill!

There was another person that also possessed one of the four flames.

Zhang Daoling, Zhang Fuhan, the ancestral forefather of Daoism. Even if the Eternal Alchemy Canon had not said it, a piece of famous history emerged within his mind.

That among all of the few phrases passed down throughout the

world in the ancient records, that of the sole acknowledgement of immortal pills that had truly come into the world, there were only two. As for these two, both had come by Zhang Daoling's hand!

The first completed pill had [a sun, an azure dragon, and white tiger](#) revolving it. This was the origin of the Azure Dragon on the right and the White Tiger on the left. The pill was refined in Ganjiang Province at the Longhu Mountain. However, on the day the pill was formed, it had fell to waste because all the materials had been exhausted.

The second pill was the renowned Dragon-Tiger Immortal Pill within the Dao of Alchemy!

At this instant, a few ancient legends filled in the blanks within Xu Yangyi's mind. If there was no immortal flame, how could there be an immortal pill?

Zhang Daoling had a Spirit Fire of Heaven and Earth in his hands. This matter was nearly set in stone. As for this flame... the Eternal Alchemy Canon had recorded it as the first Spirit Fire!

### [Vermilion Bird Fire!](#)

The hottest flame in the world! In all of China, for the past several millennia, there was only this fire!

All he had to do was place this flame in his dantian and surrender to it, causing it to become the catalyst of the Eternal Alchemy Canon. Then, this arcane effort could be considered to have achieved a higher level!

Nonetheless, these days, after the passage of several thousand of years, Daoism had long ceased to be the era of the massively unified [Five Pecks of Rice Cult](#).

The Benevolence Congregation Sect, the Scripture Sect, the Talisman Recording Sect, the Pill Cauldron Sect, the Divining Sect, the Beginning Scripture Sect, the Rushing Void Sect, the Lesser Yang Sect, the Proper Yang Sect, the Pure Yang Sect, the Old

Mount Hua Sect, the Sea Toad Sect, the Sanfeng Sect, the Ancestor Sa Sect, the Violet Yang Sect... In China's several thousand years of growth, [many of Daoism's sects](#) couldn't bear the millenniums! As for the naturally birthed Vermilion Bird Fire, where was it?

There was still the possibility that perhaps... it could've been taken by Celestial Master Zhang into his heavenly mausoleum? The tomb of a [half immortal](#) from a prior dynasty?

This couldn't even be considered the most frightening thing. What was most terrifying was... that with the passage of several millenniums, what if... it became a demon?

Thinking of this, Xu Yangyi was unable to restrain himself from faintly sighing. The difficulty factor just increased a 108-fold...

Secondly, what would he use for the power source? This problem was the origin of true head-splitting pain for him. Even if he had Spirit Fire, he couldn't just burn scrap metal, right? Recalling the names of the bizarre materials listed in the Eternal Alchemy Canon, he needed not think at all that presently these items had long since gone extinct. However, there was still an even simpler method.

Burning spirit stones. At the very least, a high-grade spirit stone! As to the specific amount, this couldn't be calculated without driving the Spirit Flame to engulf these spirit stones piece by piece. This was the Eternal Alchemy Canon's exemplary method of enhancing qi.

Recalling his own bank balance, he couldn't help but sigh. Not to even mention a high-grade spirit stone, he didn't even have a single medium-grade one! Lastly, this arcane effort was just a scroll fragment!

It was only after the first part was completely cultivated and the requirements attained could the second part be cultivated! He was simply unaware what else the following would require! Or as to even what dangers it also entailed!

Yet likewise, the greater the risk, the greater the reward. In comparison to these risks, this arcane effort's earnings were even greater!

Traditionally, most ancient “alchemists” who concocted immortality pills used mercury as the basis, which we all know is not a very smart idea. One emperor who died to a mercury elixir that I recall is the first emperor who unified China, Qin Shi Huang. In fact, mercury was used by ALL ancient Chinese at one point to preserve food. We can imagine how long their lifespans lasted...

Attack Damage-type/Attack Damage Carry-type. In the original chinese, it's labeled as AD and ADC, both slangs. Makes sense if you know it, but I changed it so that it's more apparent for everyone. To be honest, I have no clue as to what these things are, but from my research, these terms are used in League of Legends to describe the scaling normal-type attack of heroes. AD refers to more melee and ADC refers to ranged attackers.

There is so much to explain here. The Azure Dragon and the White Tiger are two of four important symbols to Chinese astrology. In a chinese star map, the east is considered the Azure Dragon. West is the White Tiger. North is the Black Tortoise and south is the Vermilion Bird. Longhu Mountain is a real mountain. Said to be where Zhang Daoling founded his immortal sects. The terms Dui, Gen, Qian, and Kun refer to the Eight Trigrams (bagua), an important context in daoist cosmology on the concepts of reality. If you take anything away from all these Daoism notes I'm doing, just keep in mind that Daoism is a system of connections and united thought that somehow manage to combine all together.

南明离火 - actual text here literally translates to “South Luminous Beast Fire”. If you look above at the beasts explanation that I wrote out, you'll recall that the south position is taken by the Vermilion Bird.

Five Pecks of Rice School was a real sect/school founded by Zhang Daoling who has been previously mentioned. Zhang Daoling

started this school, saying it was the command of Laozi to rid the world of evils and decadence. This school was called Five Pecks of Rice because one needed to donate five pecks of rice (one peck is considered 2 dry gallons) to be accepted. Alternative names for this school include Way of The Celestial Masters

These are all real sects for the most part. Not going to get too deep into them. One thing I do want to point out though is the Sanfeng sect. You may remember a character from the earlier chapters name Zhang Sanfeng. Zhang Sanfeng is the name of an actual famous Daoist.

Text says half immortal, which is a way of referring to someone with an extremely high position

### **Notes:**

I think I did more time doing research than actually translating this chapter. Almost split my head open looking for sources to try to do a good job. I feel like I am dying. Mind you, that entire text from the Eternal Alchemy Canon is REAL and in classical Chinese. Might do a write up later on further explain this stuff, but all you need to know is that this is all Daoist Alchemy mumbo jumbo, but I do want to make clear one thing.

In Chinese traditional religion and philosophy, there is an idea of a dualism of souls, the Hun and the Po. In Daoism specifically, there are three Hun and seven Po. These concepts are both souls, Hun is yang and Po is yin. That is why you see in that alchemy text talk of using the Po, because it is yang-natured, which is considered fire.

# Chapter 66: Black Kill Order

---

First of all, the fact was that this was an alchemy technique, and every detail of this alchemy technique was integrated into cultivation. It could be said that to cultivate this arcane effort was equal to becoming a grand alchemist!

This was a pill, not a pill elixir. He could already imagine that as long as he refined a medicinal pill, the issue of fuel would absolutely not become a major problem! During the End of Days, it would be the only medicinal pill! Only he would be capable of refining medicinal pills!

Pill elixirs were subject to the leakage of medicinality, and in the End of Days, spirit flora were few in number. Modern technology was incapable of simulating the unique growth environment of genuine heavenly treasures by any measure. Moreover, it was unable to decipher the immaterial system of the self-cycling of heavenly treasures. To use one plant symbolized one plant less. Regardless of whether it was the pill elixir injection faction or the capsule administration faction, the leakage of medicinality had forever been a problem both sides were incapable of evading.

If a true medicinal pill was brought out... he could send any modern cultivator into a frenzy! But, he had to be terribly careful, as well. Under such enticement, the Core Formation masters undoubtedly wouldn't mind braving tremendous hazards and more over a medicine slave.

However, this would be fine if he was able to train in this arcane effort.

Besides, he was simply incapable of escaping the enticement of max resistance and magic immunity. He was a person that followed the heart! There was also quite the possibility that this was the only arcane effort in the entire world that could cultivate the body to such a perverted boundary. He understood as well as to

why the chest has expanded his qi sea. In case he cultivated the Eternal Alchemy Canon, the meridians of his entire body would enlarge accordingly!

What to do?

His gaze sunk on the cigarette ash in his hand that accumulated more as time passed on. Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself.

It was rather simple to begin cultivating the Eternal Alchemy Canon. The first matter that had to be done wasn't to cultivate, but rather refine pills! He required a large quantities of low-grade spirit items! Yet this represented an ocean's worth of capital! Regardless of whether it was Chinese currency or spirit stones!

The Dao of Alchemy had its own techniques, and these techniques were a process of constructing oneself as "furnace and cauldron". The refining of the first pill symbolized the completion of furnace-cauldron construction. One could then draw in Spirit Fire and "fuel" to begin cultivating.

At the same time... oneself would be able to feel the true location of the Vermilion Bird Fire! Although it was only a general scope, an area of a thousand square kilometers, this was already serious progress!

"This really is fucking cruel..." He exhaled and went straight to lying down on the floor. If any cultivator cultivating this arcane effort knew of the location of the Vermilion Bird Fire, was there a possibility they wouldn't go seize it?

If he retreated from this question of right or wrong now, then what was there to even talk about defying the heavens? What was there to discuss about cultivation? He looked at the ceiling like this, and once an hour had passed, finally stood up. His eyes carried an indescribable determination.

"In that case... first, I have to find a plot of spirit flora." Lighting another cigarette, he puffed out azure smoke and cracked his neck:



“Afterwards, I still need an external furnace and cauldron before my body becomes one.”

“Money, eh...” After several minutes, he tossed the cigarette in his hand aside: “Looks like I’m going to have to enroll as soon as I can.”

“Since I’ve made up my mind to cultivate this arcane effort, first, I’m going to have to refine a pill. Otherwise, not even to speak of cultivating, I won’t even have the supplies to gather up.”

His gaze flashed and he pushed open the basement door: “Anyways, so long as I can produce the first, my supplies accumulation... will be sure to increase at a flying speed!”

In all of China, only he could refine pills! With this reputation, he could guarantee that while he may not have the greatest wealth, he would only be richer! Everything would originate from this first medicinal pill, this first endeavor!

At nearly the same moment, within the Featherwood Guard in the branch master’s office, an old man looked coolly at all the employees in front of him, not uttering a single word.

No one dared to meet his gaze, and everyone’s heads were hung low. They were silent, not speaking.

“Thirty days, a whole thirty days...” His left hand gently caressed a teacup lid: “Where is the person?”

“Branch master...” A man smiled bitterly: “Since the cultivation hacker disrupted our internet positioning, the account that sir wanted to find hasn’t appeared again... Furthermore, the positioning disturbance came from the Hidden Dragon Legion. We could’ve possibly investigated this erroneously...”

“Alright then, speak, what do you think is a “decent” inference?” The old man smiled.

“Yes...” The man pursed his lips and responded in fear and trepidation: “I suspect... Commander Chu interfered with our

search...”

“What is there to suspect, it’s definitely him.” The old man stroked the teacup lid neither slowly nor hurriedly, not lifting his eyelids. Suddenly, the entire teacup lid noiselessly fragmented in his hand! It seemed to be knocked firmly into the air by large hand! Of all the shards there wasn’t single one that managed to break away from this invisible basket ball-sized parachute! Every drop of tea inside oddly floated in midair!

“I gave face, but you had no desire for it.” His eyes revealed cold light: “You dare resist that authority’s command...”

“So, you’re borrowing Deputy Minister Chu’s power to openly obstruct me?” He casually waved, and all the fragments and tea seemed to be like bullets, striking behind everyone with a series of thuds, forming a concentrated bullet hole!

“Gulp...” It wasn’t known who it was that had swallowed their saliva. Soon after, everyone lowered their heads, drenched in a cold sweat.

“Get out.” He closed his eyes: “From today onwards, I wish to see none of you here at the branch again. This month was your last chance. I still don’t see ‘trust’ on any of you. All of you are fired.”

The inside of each person’s mouth dried, but they still dared not to say anything. After they saluted respectfully, they stepped out with their hearts brimming with grievance.

“Have the personnel of the Heaven Listener, Wind Trace, and Tiger King Legions come in.”

Less than a minute later, two men and a woman stood before the old man. Although their auras were at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, they nevertheless carried an obvious baleful air. It was a tangible killing aura dyed with the long term slaying of demons.

They all wore black uniform. Even if the men were wrapped in

uniform, the swell of their muscle beneath could be felt. The woman was strong and supple as if she were a cheetah.

One of the men was bald and his face was smeared with camouflage. The other man sported a buzz cut and was slim, his expression like that of a wooden board. The sole woman likewise carried the distinction of a professional hunter.

“We pay respects to Senior!” After the door closed, the three people half-kneeled in unison on the floor and said, as if they were well-trained to do so.

“Dispense of the courtesy.” The old man slightly raised his hand: “Sit.”

None dared to sit. The old man didn't give it any mind and pursed his lips to take a sip of his tea: “I want all of you to find someone. I've already had Heavens Law get hold of the item he used.” The old man grasped at the air, and a plastic-wrapped item appeared on the table.

It was a gun.

“I want all of you to remember...” His gaze deepened over the three people's bodies: “In case he is found, immediately notify me. This matter cannot be known to any third party. If outsiders find out besides myself, kill them all. I'll deal with the aftermath for you.”

“Yes!”

“Each one of you are one of Mingshui Province's most outstanding scouts.” The old man finished speaking and his face carried a bright smile once again: “You're different from those mortal technology department simpletons. I shall be awaiting your good news.”

“We hear and obey!” Once the three people bowed, the woman bowed again: “If I may, is this subordinate allowed to capture this person and bring him before senior?!”

Capture?

A jest.

The old man gently sipped his tea and quite wished he could say: None of you are simply his opponent. It will be a merit for all of you to find him.

You want to rely on yourselves against a person that was capable of survival from Vermilion Snow's claws, caused an authority to mention him by name, and vanished without a trace from all of China for three years, unable to be found?

"Exercise at your own discretions." He smiled: "However... it's extremely inconvenient for myself to make an appearance concerning this matter. What is most important for you is to unearth and comeback with his information. Under the circumstances that he is left unknowing."

"Understood!" The man in camouflage bowed again and questioned: "And what if he is unable to be captured?"

The old man narrowed his eyes: "If he dies I want to see a corpse." The three people left, and the old man calmly clasped his teacup. Eventually, he furrowed his brows: "It's been so long since we've seen each other. Are you not planning on coming out?"

No one replied, and several minutes later, a man's voice faintly echoed: "They are not HL-01's opponent."

The old man scoffed and set down his teacup, peacefully saying: "You and I walked out step by step out of Mingshui Province together that year. We were also considered brothers. Nowadays, I hack and cleave my way through all bristle and thorn in my path, and you say this?"

"Thousandedge, I..."

"I understand, I get it..." The old man made a gesture to stop and stood up. He walked over to the window, gently stroked the glass, and murmured: "What else is there to say? In human society and

cultivator society, there is nothing else but benefit, the two words “checks and balances”... Have you not come to find me because you fancy my power? On the contrary, I haven’t seen you in several decades, yet you’ve already reached the peak of the middle stage of Foundation Establishment. Will I be kneeling on the ground and hailing you as Dao Master in another forty to fifty years?”

The man didn’t speak and only sighed after what seemed to be ages.

“There’s no need to say anything else.” The momentary sorrow died away from the old man in a flicker. He returned to sit down at his desk, his gaze sharp: “I have carried out the contract, and that Xu will be brought before you. Daomaster Floatingcloud shall take me in as a disciple, no?”

It was silent once again, and the old man suddenly began to laugh hollowly. His laughter contained a dense fury. “You dare renege on the promise? I dare not provoke Daomaster Floatingcloud, but as for you...”

“No.” Before his voice had even fallen, the man’s voice rang out from within the room once more: “The Dao Master’s words are to be followed as law.”

The old man didn’t say anything, but rather looked off at certain place, devoid of a single trace of emotion.

“However, a minor additional clause shall be added on...”

Swish! A black card flashed from within the void and nailed into the desk in an instant. It was written with a forceful hand, strong and bold in its strokes.

“A Black Kill Order?!” Once the old man caught a clear glance of this object, he coldly gasped: “Death check?! Dead or alive, no time limit?!”

He glanced incredulously at the place from where the card had flown. An insignificant Qi Condensation cultivator was actually

capable of rousing the authority Daomaster Floatingcloud to action?! One of China's ten grand apex personages! And even the Black Kill Order he hadn't seen for over twenty years had been issued?!

This card was tantamount to a ticket to hell. The reverse side was red like dripping blood and the front side held the detailed information of the cultivator. Only cultivators above Foundation Establishment had the qualifications to receive this.

As for cultivators below Foundation Establishment... they fundamentally lacked the attainments to be on this card!

## Chapter 67: An Old Friend

---

“Isn’t this too excessive?” The old man truly became solemn this time. This cultivator Xu was bound to be in position that surpassed others or perhaps in a place that caused Daomaster Floatingcloud to be wary. The first time he saw this card, it had targeted a traitorous cultivator. Only cultivators that had committed great crimes had the right to be inscribed on this card, yet for the first time, a Qi Condensation cultivator had been listed on it!

“Surprised, aren’t you...” The man’s voice carried a roughness: “I was surprised, as well. Fifty years ago... Wang Buzhi was on this card because of a Foundation Establishment pill. Vermilion Snow was just on this card because of the bloodbath at Heavens Law. There have been several thousand lives... and now, for the first time, a Qi Condensation cultivator is on this card.”

“However, this Black Kill Order is for your eyes only. After all, the status of a Core Formation cultivator in comparison to our’s in the disposal of a Qi Condensation cultivator is already violating the ‘Cultivation Antitrust Law’. Be on guard... of the Foundation Establishment heavyweights at the provincial cultivation court. Those that come out from it are either noble cultivation lineages or from the powers. They are the true elite that the Chinese government has nurtured since childhood. A single one is selected from ten million people, and there are twenty major law enforcement officials of the higher cultivation court. And that’s not even to mention the chief grand justice and the deputy of China’s supreme court... Those two are great Core Formation masters... Even if master is the nation’s senior, he doesn’t dare to, nor is he capable of, making this public.”

“Besides to the Chinese government, none of them will pay respects. Thousandedge, by no means can you do this yourself. In case you’re captured by them, the patriarch won’t be able to help you. Your future prospects will end here.” The man reminded once

again: “As the Chinese government’s eyes and ears, their gazes have never relaxed one bit on the cultivation world...”

He sighed: “When that time comes, even if you captured that Xu, Daomaster Floatingcloud won’t dare to receive you.”

The old man didn’t say a word and said indifferently after a while: “What’s the point of saying these things now?”

The man’s voice went silent for several seconds: “You... If you’re caught, even if you have to do it yourself, you must not be captured by the Cultivation Court’s law enforcement machines... You should understand Daomaster Floatingcloud’s resolution. Death check... If he’s alive, I want to see a person. If he’s dead, I want to see a corpse.”

The old man’s gaze was like a blade: “Very well. If that’s the case, wait... Even if all that’s left of him is a head, I will undoubtedly carry out this task.”

.....

The air outside the room was rather clean and refreshing. It caused Xu Yangyi who had just come out from below to feel the heaviness of the atmosphere inside the room. A calendar hung on the basement door, and he looked at it nonchalantly and laughed: “Has it actually already been a month?”

He walked up straight to the fifth floor, yet didn’t enter, listening to the faint shouts that came from within. He pushed open the door and saw a group of eleven or twelve-year-old kids. There were approximately around ten to twenty of them, and they were matching taiji move for move.

If the kids were practicing, then according to reason, Zhou Tingting should’ve been instructing. However, she wasn’t here at all. On the contrary, she was standing at the end of the room, discussing something with a boy around seventeen or eighteen who was decked out in designer brands.



He was somewhat familiar.

Xu Yangyi looked at him for a full three seconds and walked over with a chilly smile.

“Mister, it’s inappropriate of you to make a purchase from me here... Really! In any case, my Zhou Clan has been around before you even came. Just ask anyone! We’re one of the top three clans in Bai County, too! Since my parents have passed on, you want to buy my dojo?” Zhou Tingting’s face was flushed red in anger. She didn’t seem the least bit like a girl: “Forget about buying it! And you’re actually only putting up a million? Are you insulting me?!”

“Hehe, were it not for your underground spirit cave I fancy, how could I be willing to purchase your crummy land! Is a million still not enough? You think yours is equal to an A-rank spirit cave? If yours was A-rank, I would’ve immediately given you a 100 million!” The youth waved the check in his hand, provocatively swaying it back and forth before Zhou Tingting in leisure. He said somewhat impatiently: “The most I’ll cough up is 1.2 million. If you won’t sell, then forget about it. You think I won’t be able to find a place to cultivate?”

Zhou Tingting’s gaze followed the fluttering of the check back and forth in frustration. She gritted her teeth: “1.5 million!”

The youth yawned: The youth yawned: “1.2 million!”

“1.4 million!”

“1.2 million!”

“1.3 million!”

The youth disdainfully stowed the check into his trousers pocket and made to leave. Just as he turned around, he suddenly froze in place as if he were a nail.

Xu Yangyi was advancing towards him, carrying the shred of a smile on his face.

Chatter... Chatter... The youth's teeth began to tremble like he was spasming. Never did he even expect this in his dreams! How could he even chance upon this monster by running into this place?!

"You... D-d-don't you come over!" He let loose a shriek in the lost of his bearings and actually hid behind Zhou Tingting, drawing the suspicious gazes of all the little kids. His voice trembling: "H-how could you possibly be here?! How can this be?!"

Xu Yangyi walked right in front of him, laughing as he carried his already somewhat dirtied school uniform. He made a hooking gesture with his finger.

"Didn't you question me why I didn't ask your name last time? So, c'mon, tell me. What's your name?"

Hearing these similar words, the youth's face completely paled. His entire body shuddered like he was suffering a stroke, and his teeth chattered. At this time, Zhou Tingting who was standing in front of him wordlessly moved to the side, laughing with the full knowledge of what was possibly coming: "Mister, I'll go pour two cups of tea for the both of you. The two of you can take your time chatting."

Xu Yangyi leisurely sat down in a chair and beckoned: "What? Don't recognize me?"

"I do..." The youth's throat seemed to hold a walnut, and pain was born in his diaphragm. How could he possibly not recognize this man? For the rest of his days, he would never forget the man from that time that had nearly taken his life!

"Sir... how could..."

"How could I be here?" Xu Yangyi was a tad thirsty, and Zhou Tingting just happened to come bearing two cups of warm tea. He laughed as he took a cup, his eyes flashing with a barely disguised killing intent: "Is there a fairly quiet place here?"

The youth was the one-horned toad that had escaped from Sanshui City's Venture Pharmaceuticals!

Zhou Tingting pursed her lips. Even she felt something and lowered her head, her voice hushed: "Does sir require more quietness?"

"Quiet to the extent..." Xu Yangyi smiled as he set down his tea, and it echoed with a light thud: "That if he shouts, no one will be able to hear."

Boom! Xu Yangyi's voice couldn't be considered loud, but nor could it be thought of as light. In the next second, the youth's entire body was kneeling on the floor, all four of his limbs on the ground, not daring to raise his head at all. He said shrilly: "S-spare me... spare my life..."

Zhou Tingting stood dazed in place. She was a young woman. She could only oblige to being a young woman that had come in contact with the true world through the internet. She was a little girl that hadn't even left Bai County. She simply didn't have the knowledge of what a true demon slayer was.

At this instant, she couldn't help but to feel her body grow cold. She suddenly realized that she and the man before her were intrinsically different. He was a true lone wolf. As for her, she was only a sheep draped in wolf's skin.

"Sir..." Her lips trembled, and she looked at Xu Yangyi with incomparable complication and then towards the youth who was kneeling on the ground and shivering from head to toe. She said softly: "Y-y-you don't have to kill him, right... H-he just moved here two years ago..."

Xu Yangyi clasped his tea with both hands. In concerns to such surviving innocence, he didn't know whether to snort in disdain or praise her for maintaining this purity.

She couldn't have known how he had at one time killed a

berserker that murdered a number of people. Moreover, she couldn't be aware that the mountains of corpses and seas of blood of 7000 people below Heavens Law's Fengyi City branch was because of the desire of a single demon.

He only used his gaze to calmly sweep over the youth's whole body without a shred of emotion, as if he was looking at a commodity. His gaze was penetrating like a blade.

"I-I can be sir's demon familiar!" The youth seemed to hesitate for age and gritted his teeth: "I-I'm willing to let you enter my qi sea and leave your personal brand..."

"Heh..." Xu Yangyi's hand pinched the youth's chin and expressionlessly brought the other's terrified face to a distance only ten centimeters away from his own. He laughed coldly: "Is my life worth just your brand?"

Xu Yangyi waved his hand in passing. The other didn't dare raise his head, and Xu Yangyi said apathetically: "Since you concealed the truth of that berserker, your crimes were destined to persist even into your death. He brandished his hand and severed all sound within a meter of his surroundings.

Purity was something to to be preserved.

A wet pool had already coalesced before the youth. It was the cold sweat perspiring from his whole body like a spring. Upon hearing these words, his face became deathly ashen.

How could Xu Yangyi be here?

He had over fled over 2200 kilometers from Sanshui City! From the west to the northeast! How could he actually even be capable of running into Xu Yangyi after two years?

Xu Yangyi had killed the berserker... afterwards, he graduated at Fengyi City! Heavens knew how long of a sigh the youth took when he had read about Vermilion Snow's great upheaval at Fengyi City. Xu Yangyi should've definitely died...

It was Vermilion Snow! Ranked ninth on the Heavenly Demon Ranking! How could the captain of a disciplinary and investigations unit not possibly be dead?!

And yet... here he was, still standing right before him!

“But.”

Swish! The youth suddenly raised his head, and Zhou Tingting took a step back in fright, looking incredulously at him.

At this moment, the muscle on the fair-skinned youth's face seemed to shift about endlessly like it was alive. Warts emerged and disappeared on his face continuously. His eyes were somewhat reddened and a light-yellow secretion flowed out from his forehead, mouth, and eyes.

The youth had actually been so frightened that he nearly assumed his demon form? She gasped coldly, glancing at Xu Yangyi with indescribable fright, not daring to say one word more. Who the heck... was this person?

“Prove your worth.” Xu Yangyi gently caressed the lid of his teacup. The action appeared to be nothing special, yet it caused the youth's body to tremble as he looked at Xu Yangyi. “I won't kill your value.”

Not waiting for the youth to respond, Xu Yangyi laughed, using a voice that only the two of them could hear to say faintly: “I was capable of survival from Vermilion Snow's claws. Take a guess. How much do I hate demons?”

“You have three seconds.”

Life or death was hanging in the balance! The youth almost didn't even think about it and immediately said with reddened eyes: “I have a secret art, it can form a dimensional space within the body!”

“Three.” Xu Yangyi picked up his lighter, gently brushing the table, not lifting his eyelids.

The youth's perspiration poured out like broth: "I have 10 million in savings and in my checking! I haven't taken a fraction of it! I'm willing to become sir's demon familiar, as well!"

"Two." Xu Yangyi raised an eye, lightly pressing down on the flint wheel of the lighter. The clicking sound was like the reaper's knell.

"You! You can't do this..." The youth's voice was quivered, and a light-yellow liquid bubbled out of his seven apertures, simply beyond control: "I-I haven't really broken any cultivation laws!"

"One."

"I have a field of Dew Congealing Grass within my body!!!" As the youth screeched these words, he seemed to be stripped of his whole body's strength, limp on the floor like a toad.

A faintly discernible smile emerged at the crook of Xu Yangyi's mouth. There were some things, such as talent, that were innate. For example, like how to force others to truly come to heel.

This was something that he desired!

## Chapter 68: Chase to Kill (1)

---

Of the 50% of pill elixirs on the market, Dew Congealing Grass was one of the main ingredients! It was even a primary component for Qi Condensation cultivators' frequently used [Guyuan Elixir](#)!

This toad had cooperated with Venture Pharmaceuticals for close to a decade. From where did he get so much Dew Congealing Grass? There was only one answer. He possibly had a kind of field that ranked as a low-grade heavenly treasure. Otherwise, it was simply an impossibility for him to have provided a supply for an extended period of time!

If Xu Yangyi bared blade and spear to force the youth to hand it over, the other wouldn't be willing in the least bit. This was his capital to survive. However, substituted with a seemingly tad coarse method, Xu Yangyi had a way to get the other to "voluntarily" hand it over.

"Make the contract." Xu Yangyi stood up, looking straight at the toad. The other tremblingly stood up and gritted his teeth, closing his eyes with resigned misfortune. His mouth opened shakily, and countless wisps of white qi slowly spilled out from his seven apertures. Congealing yet not scattering, it was like hazy mist, condensing into the form of a thumb-sized toad.

Xu Yangyi bit his hand and a drop of blood flew into the toad's body. Instantly, a crisp and clear ribbit reverberated in the air, and the youth trembled from head to toe. As if he had lost all of his blood, he fell to the ground with a wan complexion.

His heart was filled with unparalleled regret. If only he had known earlier... Why did he have to go and provoke this fierce god? Not only had Xu Yangyi killed the berserker... but he also escaped from the hands of Vermilion Snow!

A single misstep, an error at each pace, this was cultivation... A minor mistake was enough for him, who had not been cautious

enough, to forfeit his body. He powerlessly lied down on the floor, absent of a single trace of a thought.

Xu Yangyi waved his hand, and Zhou Tingting stood on the outside in shock. Just now, Xu Yangyi had isolated all sound within a meter of his surroundings. She could only see he had opened his mouth to say something, yet was incapable of knowing what was said.

“J-just now, did he spit out his [prime essence](#)?” She looked at Xu Yangyi and lowered her head deferentially: “T-t-this is the first time I’ve seen such a thing... Is it the same like what it says on the internet, where after you drop blood on it, you can control the life or death of a demon?”

“It ordinarily exists in a demon’s qi sea. Demons aren’t the same us; they cultivate qi to condense their own qi’s appearance. Afterwards they refine out the impurities within it step by step and it finally becomes a demon core.” Xu Yangyi laughed as he spoke: “The stronger the demon, the greater the likelihood they have that their prime essence will congeal and not disperse. It’ll even stay as it is two centuries after their death. So, remember, if you see the skeleton of a prehistoric greater demon later on, no matter what you do, don’t go inspecting it. Even if all that’s left behind is its prime essence, it’s enough to kill you ten thousand times over.”

“Once you sign a life-death pact, you can communicate with the pactee regardless of barrier. For example, you don’t have to talk, and as long as you think of something in your mind, the pactee will know via spiritual sense. However, the distance apart can’t go over a hundred meters.”

Zhou Tingting promptly nodded and soon after glanced at Xu Yangyi somewhat fearfully, softly saying: “Sir, how do you know so much?”

“Because I’m a professional.” Xu Yangyi kicked at the youth lying on the ground: “Name?”



“Li Zongyuan...” The other weakly replied, yet he had no choice but to forcefully rouse his spirit to stand up, carrying the hint of a smile even more unsightly than weeping: “Master, do you require the Dew Congealing Grass?”

He couldn't expose his great killing intent again. Presently, so long as Xu Yangyi willed it, he could render him in a state where he no longer possessed the will to live, but was denied the release of death. He had to wait... wait for an opportunity, wait for a chance to erase the other's brand from his prime essence, and then when that time arrived...

He would flee the country!

“Take out your savings first.” Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette, yet didn't take a drag of it. He looked at the ceiling and said: “Pick a good spot and buy a house. It has to be completely private and moreover soundproof. Pick one with an underground garage and remodel it. I'll be needing it in a week.”

At a moment where he was most short of funds to kickstart his operations, he had suddenly chanced upon Li Zongyuan who had once ran off from Sanshui City that year. The law of providence followed cyclically; it allowed respite, but never reprieve.

With this money... and a fully soundproof quiet place thrown into the mix...

Next, he would cultivate the first part of the Eternal Alchemy Canon!

During the End of Days, natural resources were the greatest problem that constricted cultivators from making breakthroughs. However, since the ancient times to the present day, anyone who wanted to obtain even more resources only had a single path, and that was in their qualifications itself!

Xu Yangyi remembered a matter, the one when he was on the plane. Hibiscus, Vulture, and Lilac had all said they would open

such conditions to the champions. However, to those with alchemy, artifact refining, and talisman Elysial Bestowments, the highest condition could reach thirty-fold!

But what if... this alchemy was genuine alchemy? What kind of conditions would they be willing to come out with?

And as for a cultivator who was ill-adept at utilising their inborn advantages that wanted to reach the apex? Was this a dream? Which one of the figures that stood at those ten Core Formation positions wasn't an illustrious personage of the modern era? Or an unparalleled greater demon?

A fire sparked and died away within his heart, but in the next second, a feeling of danger caused him to swiftly narrow his eyes. There was someone... Someone in the vicinity.

Three Qi Condensation cultivators. Two men and one woman... They were true killers, outstanding scouts, and while the odor of blood was masked rather well on their persons, their baleful auras were like an unusual flavor in the wind. After Xu Yangyi's spiritual sense increased explosively, it could be no more distinct.

This was a naked provocation towards him!

Good... He clenched his fists. Since this was a provocation, he reckoned he would fire back. A tiger trapped for three years was now a fierce tiger released from his cage. Whether or not he was still capable of the awe-inspiring might of three years prior was something he quite wished to know, as well.

As expected, he still thirsted for battle... He inhaled deeply and waved his hand towards Li Zongyuan: "Go."

"Yes."

He didn't move, but rather, he sat in the room until the evening. Heavens Law didn't teach much, but reconnaissance, reverse reconnaissance, and slaughter methods were given the heaviest weight.

As such, there were four usages, one: to see if the other party was with or without intent. Presently, he could basically confirm that these three people, two men and one woman, were rushing towards him.

The other party's spiritual senses were nearly locked dead on him and never was there a single person in the surroundings that was seen.

Two: to probe out the other party's intent. Was it surveillance or something else? He wasn't quite certain on this point.

Three: exhaust the other party's strength. If they were at a disadvantage against him, it was because at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, fasting couldn't be accomplished. Scouts like this fundamentally wouldn't be disturbed by starvation though. This was elementary.

In the space of true action, there was a 1% possibility that [the tides of favor could turn](#).

Four: to weigh the other party's essence.

These things had nearly become instinctual for Xu Yangyi. They had long since been carved into his bones, and upon running into a corresponding situation, they immediately erupted.

"Elites..." He narrowed his eyes, his finger gently rapping the table. He muttered to himself: "Who is it? Why are they using such elites to keep tabs on me? Or perhaps they want to accomplish something else?"

"Their concealment skill is rather excellent, and they're hovering at the boundary a initial-stage cultivator's spiritual sense is capable of expanding. Moreover, they've even cautiously lengthened the distance by 10%. These are the tell-tale signs of specialized scout training and long-term combat..."

"The blind spot in their thinking is that an ordinary cultivator fundamentally can't extend their spiritual sense to maximum

length. But it's a pity..." He laughed grimly as he stood up: "The one you have encountered is the true paragon of Nantong from three years ago."

These words were incredibly proud. He held absolute confidence in his own strength. Under his status as a paragon, they wanted to monitor him?

An hour passed. Two hours passed... Nearly five hours had passed. At that time, all Xu Yangyi did was pick up his cell phone and make a call.

"Since you're not making a move, then allow this 'prey' to take initiative." He walked out leisurely step by step and even whistled. Taking out a pack of cigarettes, he even put on a pair of slippers like he was at home. This wasn't a pretense, but rather... true disregard.

The shoes had nothing to do with it, but it was by these slippers that he was wearing that he had sent the Luo Sanfeng of that year flying with a kick.

"He's on the move." At this moment, a thousand meters away on the roof of a commercial building, there were three figures stationed that seemed to blend in with the night.

Even if someone was besides them, that person wouldn't hear their breathing. Even their body heat, pulse, and heartbeat would go unfelt. They appeared like three human-shaped statues placed here.

The distance from the ground was several tens of meters high. The complexions of the three in night were without a shred of change. As if they were treading on level earth.

"It's possible we were detected." An extremely soft voice, yet clearly audible, said somewhat gruffly: "Initially, we relied on less than fifty percent of an initial-stage cultivator's spiritual sense range in order to confirm the target."

“Impossible. Only if he can maintain the expansion of his spiritual sense at will. Otherwise, only a grand craftsman whose neurons have transformed would have such incredible sensitivity to the external world. Our existences could only have been possibly perceived if his neurons expanded over the A-level and his spiritual sense overflowed.” At this moment, the pupils of the man whose face was covered in camouflage turned into three. As if they were the compound eyes of an insect, they focused on the direction Xu Yangyi left.

“This is a true fiend. One that any of the several powers couldn’t possibly let go of. [A crafts genius...](#) is an existence even more favored than a cultivation genius.”

Before his voice had even fallen, on his shoulder, an owl holding a mouse in its mouth startled, screeching as it took off in flight towards a far away place.

“Continue to follow. Tiger King-03, stay behind. You’re in charge of contact with the branch master.”

“Yes.” The woman answered.

Just as their voices subsided, their two silhouettes walked down from the top of the building like geckos. They were both elites, and their cooperation would simplify matters. Moreover, they were without a shred of contempt.

Any situation had to be treated carefully. This was the advantage they relied on to achieve a higher ranking. However, they held their own similar pride within their hearts. Their opponent was also at the initial stage of Qi Condensation. However, it was no more than the initial stage of Qi Condensation!

They were elites within the initial stage, as well! Since it was two on one, the possibility of Xu Yangyi’s capture was considerably great!

“Did any of the top five paragons from each of Heavens Law’s

provinces within the last fifteen years have this person's face?" As they slid, the bald man whose face was covered in camouflage asked.

"No." The slim man said heavily: "Of the top five, even if we combined the three of our strengths, we wouldn't be opponents at all. And that's not to even mention a paragon. The top five of each province in these fifteen years have all been fought hotly over by each major power. I'm crystal clear on their appearances."

"The hidden geniuses of each major power?"

"No way. We're not scared of those geniuses. After all, they haven't crossed over the line of life and death like us." The slim man laughed wryly: "We only have to be worried about the kind that's come from that damned hell, Heavens Law."

There was no further talk.

From the deduction of any indicators, their opponent wasn't possibly a person they couldn't deal with. However, they still held onto the caution that had already become instinct at the bottom of their hearts. All they planned on was testing the waters. If their strike didn't meet target, they would immediately flee far away.

One hit was already sufficient to allow these elite scouts to infer the other party's level.

I generally dislike leaving things in pinyin, but I'm kinda hard pressed to in this case. Guyuan is an ancient medicinal food known for promoting various kinds of health benefits. It kinda looks like a solid black paste block with some white marbleization based on what you put in it. From my research, it is made from Longyan (chinese fruit, look up dragon eye fruit if you want to know more), black sesame, rice wine, donkey hide glue (traditional chinese medicine), walnuts, wolfberry, sugar, and red dates. It kinda looks like a brownie with all these nuts in it.

精元 - Prime essence. Also translated as original essence. This is

part of an important concept in Daoism known as the “Three Treasures”. The three treasures being essence, qi, and spirit.

Literal chinese here is “comeback weapon” This didn’t really make sense to me in terms of the text, so I had to look it up. Closest thing I found was something related to Dota/LoL. It’s something along the lines of a “carry hero”, where you can just win the game solo if you’re good enough. I think.

Chinese here is literally “side door genius” I had some issues trying to translate this into something that sounds good, but I think crafts is decent. Whenever you see “side door” untranslated, know it’s related to the supplementary activities of alchemy, artifact refining, and talismans/formations.

## Chapter 69: Chase to Kill (2)

---

“Two to follow, one to hold post? They’re going to continue monitoring my abode?” Xu Yangyi laughed grimly. Since the other party was relying on scent to track and initializing target verification, they had long ceased to think of such things like the position of hunter and prey.

The strength of such people was pretty good, but even more important was that their escape was extraordinarily swift! Like an aborigine in a tropical forest blowing a poisonous dart at you, the farther your eye traversed, you simply wouldn’t know where they were. This was on account that the other party had already hid in some other camouflage at the present.

Mumbling to himself for a bit, he walked towards the other party’s concealment on the commercial building. On the building, two men who were half-lying down and whose hands seemed to have suction came to sudden stop.

The two glanced towards each other, looking at the shock in the other’s eyes in succession. Their target was surprisingly walking over? Like so... step by step, unhurriedly strolling over? Had they been discovered? Or was their target taking a walk? Or perhaps this was purely a coincidence?

“There’s a possibility our cover’s been blown.” The slim man snarled lowly: “Heaven Listener!” In a twinkling, his ear began to swiftly expand. Finally, it surprisingly became a pointed ear like that of a bat’s.

“No change in heart rate, no change in blood, no change in body temperature, body surface devoid of sweat, no change in pulse, as well... damn it...” The slim man cursed inwardly, and his brow began to furrow for the first time.

On top of the building, the woman was like a statue. Her eyes suddenly expanded, and the bird on her person screeched and flew



away. Likewise, she looked down below incredulously.

“He’s walking over? Have we been discovered?”

“T-that can’t be. The ancient times are no more. Any cultivator that wants to cultivate can’t possibly conceal it from the government. Even nationless persons in the mortal world have detailed background records. This person has never been seen. It’s not possible he’s a fiend, and it’s an even greater impossibility that he’s discovered us!”

Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette and a lonesome trail of smoke rose up to follow the wake of the night wind. He was neither hurried nor slow, leisurely walking forward.

He knew that at this moment, the other party was terribly surprised. He needed them to make judgement time. Once they entered his range... not a single one of these people would leave!

Spiritual sense more formidable than a Qi Condensation cultivator’s spread forth like a tentacle, judging the distance bit by bit.

The night was absent of wind, sound, or light. There only existed a surging battle intent, secretly rising. An unseen battle of wits, a struggle between courage and intelligence, had already become pulled open wide in the curtain of night.

This was a contest of the hunter and the hunted.

“800 meters...” The slim man’s gaze was like electricity and he grinded his teeth: “He went to the side shop to buy a drink. Afterwards, he went to the garbage can at the side to toss his cigarette butt... Damn it...”

Xu Yangyi unhurriedly walked for 200 meters, yet he was still incapable of judging the other party’s intent. Were they coming straight at him? Or was this a coincidence?

“Tiger King-03, have you contacted the branch master?”

“I’m dialing right now.” The woman’s voice could be heard from the transceiver: “But it’s weird... it keeps falling through on me!”

“I suspect there’s someone here interfering with the signal.”

700 meters!

“Withdraw!” Without hardly any hesitation, the slim man growled with sharp decision.

Something was off! This was too fishy! This person... was problematic!

His long-term nerves from living on the line of life or death were sending him a warning. He felt a sensation of dark crisis: all that was here if he continued to stay was a path to calamity!

No one responded. In this instant, the three of them openly darted away towards three directions in haste. They were true elites. Even as they left, they also left behind a probe.

If the other party was without intent, no one would give chase upon suddenly seeing cultivators disperse. However, if their opponent had truly discovered them, what followed next was [the discard of the map and the reveal of the dagger](#)! It was also to force Xu Yangyi into laying down his cards! At least so they were capable of reversing a situation that was already beginning to tilt by a sliver. At the present though, it was unlikely to go so far like [the cutting of flesh with a blunt blade](#).

At that time, one of them would be capable of escape at the minimum.

Xu Yangyi’s gaze looked clearly several hundred meters away at the people high in the air that had split apart into three paths of retreat.

There weren’t any unnecessary words. In the next second, he suddenly leapt no less than ten-odd meters and immediately fell on top of a short building on the side. Soon after... his entire body’s spiritual force exploded, and with a standard running posture, he

used his fastest speed to chase after the direction he believed to be the slowest!

A maximum-effort pursuit! Of the hunter and the hunted, beneath this moonlit night, who was the hunter? Who was the hunted?

Thud! Thud! Thud! The sound of heavy footsteps rang out out from the floor, each stomp causing minute spider web cracks. The entire sole of his foot never touched the ground, always just the front part, and his two hands evenly swung back and forth ahead and behind him as if they had become the raised sail of a boat. The wisp of battle, separated from him for three years, released a joyous shout within his heart. His entire person was like a tremendous elephant stampeding inside a building complex, charging towards the three people while carrying a bold killing aura!

“We were discovered!” At this moment, the three people had come to completely realize this in their hearts.

The other party had found them early on. Likewise, as elite scouts, they thought back and immediately understood why the other hadn’t budged a move before!

Probing, and reverse probing, in addition to consuming their physical strength!

“This is a real fucking soldier!” Tiger King-03 gritted her teeth. She could clearly see Xu Yangyi charging towards her!

“It’s not just this, the other’s true battle power... far exceeds the surface!” The slim man was scared out of his spirit. How was it possible that they couldn’t see their opponent’s full-force sprinting speed?!

The camouflaged man clenched his teeth, not saying anything. He faced towards a different direction and ran off with maximum power!

“Life Sacrificaton... Flying Star... Starfire...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed explosively and he chained three moves together, yet he was still incapable of displaying Starfire. Nonetheless, even if it was like this, his speed had already arrived at an outrageous swiftness! In the air, as he jumped building from to building, all that could be seen was a black afterimage!

“Fuck!” Tiger King-03 could no longer restrain herself. In these several seconds, the distance between them and their opponent... was no more than 400 meters! A truly dangerous distance!

In particular, the other’s charging might and full-body spiritual pressure surprisingly caused her to feel herself trembling from head to toe! Taking out a talisman without the least hesitation, she gritted her teeth, stuck it to her leg, and her speed soared once more in a flash!

However, she promptly discovered in the next second... her speed was no faster than her opponent’s! The speed of both sides had approached the pinnacle, yet there was still a gap! Being overtaken was only a question of time! Perhaps it wouldn’t even take five seconds!

“Flee!” Her heart sunk, and she yelled at full strength to allow her other two compatriots to hear her.

There was no response. The other two people moreover understood when it was necessary to abort. Exhausting their maximum strength, they dashed off in different directions.

On the building, two afterimages leapt on the rooftop, and the distance between them became progressively closer!

Within his body, the sound of the unbearably heavy load on his skeleton could be heard. Without the added support of the mysterious chest, Xu Yangyi was still incapable of using Starfire. However, regarding these sounds, it was as if he didn’t hear them.

Tiger King-03 simply dared not to look behind. Her hand grabbed

inside her pocket, and in the next second, a small bamboo bird slowly fluttered out.

Swish! Just as the small bird flew out, it immediately carried with it a scarlet radiance and the bamboo joints of its whole body surprisingly recombined. Less than a second later, it transformed into a faint green bamboo sword, sparkling with several runes. It sped up in a flash, violently piercing towards Xu Yangyi!

“Tortoise Burdens.” Xu Yangyi didn’t dodge it at all. Even if he recognized this was a low-grade magik artifact, if he was obstructed by the other now, he wouldn’t be any the wiser as to why the other party was monitoring him!

To be set up on the chopping block was to be at another’s mercy. After he came out from the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena, he wished never to have such a feeling again. Especially... under a situation that he was capable of controlling.

“This is...” At this moment, Tiger King-03 turned her head back for the first time. This magik artifact was her life-preserving trump card. She was terribly unwilling to part with it. However, she just happened to see this scene!

“Heavens Law! He’s from Heavens Law!” Her harsh shout ripped across the sky, and the ears of her other two compatriots only shook as they continued to escape incessantly.

A wisp of killing intent flashed within Xu Yangyi’s eyes and he licked his lips: “This is why... I loathe so-called elites. Even at a disadvantage, they would pass on information.”

“Then if that’s the case, don’t you think about running!”

Squelch! The sound of a bamboo sword sinking into flesh could be heard in an instant. The flesh of his face faintly twitched, and in the next second, he immediately clamped down on his muscle, not allowing the bamboo sword to fly out again!

His hand was already firmly gripping onto the hilt of the bamboo

sword embedded in his shoulder. His feet simply didn't stop.

“Damn!” Tiger King-03's heart was filled with great anxiety. This bamboo sword wasn't only a one-time attack. As long as her spiritual force was interrupted, this bamboo sword was capable of being like a butterfly flitting through the flowers, attacking without end! Until her opponent was poked through into a sieve!

However... at this moment, she seemed to be caught in the grasp of [Juling Shen](#). No matter how she moved, she couldn't budge an inch!

The opponent's spiritual force and spiritual sense were completely levels above her own!

“Where did this fucking monster come from!” Her face had already blanched. The other's distance from her was no more than thirty meters!

Swish! A minute later, Tiger King-03 looked at the man stopped in front of her with a pale face, not uttering a word. All she did was calmly adopt a welcoming battle stance.

The bamboo sword clasped in Xu Yangyi's hand surprisingly only trembled a faint bit. With her cultivation and spiritual sense, it was incapable of struggling free from such a close distance!

“We're...” No matter the method, she had to clearly explain herself. Otherwise, the results would be too terrible to imagine! She didn't finish her words because in the proceeding moment, Xu Yangyi's slipper-clad foot had already swept forward into a whip, kicking towards her! The air surprisingly rang out with the faint sound of breaking wind!

In Tiger King-03's pupils, the kick became increasingly larger. With a heavy thud, her entire person flew away in the next second like a morning star without the least bit concern! She suddenly fell on the ground and the surface trembled twice!

“Urk!” Incapable of simply being suppressed, a mouthful of blood

sprayed out from her mouth! At the same time, her expression had already become terribly frightened! A kick! Surprisingly it was only a single kick!

This was in no way the strength of an ordinary cultivator! Even the normal elites of Heavens Law's graduates couldn't possibly send her flying with a kick! In her heart, an inconceivable thought came to head. It was immediately affirmed by her!

This was the strength of a paragon! Only a paragon could bring her to collapse with a single kick! Thinking of this bit, regret had already filled her heart without boundary. She had still wanted to probe Xu Yangyi out before, but who knew there wouldn't be an opportunity to do so!

Crash! Following the tremendous strength of the kick, she flew directly ten-odd meters away!

"You don't have the right to explain." Xu Yangyi cracked his knuckles and the sound of them popping rang out. He smiled as he walked over: "These preparations were made as you were monitoring me."

Bang! A punch struck towards Tiger King-03 whose eyes were filled with fright. She screeched miserably, only capable of using both her hands to protect her profusely sweating forehead.

"Puh!" A piercing pain spread through her stomach, and her spittle came spraying out half a meter high. She thoroughly lost her fighting strength.

Couldn't handle the blow, huh... Xu Yangyi pulled his fist back somewhat regretfully. This was only thirty percent of his strength. When he had originally kicked Luo Sanfeng, he had used eighty percent.

Tiger King-03 was convulsing intensely on the ground. It wasn't from fear, but rather from pain. A single kick and a lone fist were practically like the strike of a tremendous elephant. It was

unknown how much time had passed until she coughed as she smiled bitterly: “Fuck... T-this is a paragon... It has to be, it’s a... para... gon’s strength... fuck... fuck...”

The discarding of the map and the reveal of the dagger. This is an idiom that refers to the failed assassination of the first emperor of China. The assassin, Jing Ke, and his partner, Qin Wuyang, attempted to kill the emperor with a hidden dagger in a map. Qin Wuyang was said to be useless in the attempt and Jing Ke was ultimately killed, unable to catch the emperor, hence “the map discarded and dagger revealed” means “to show clear and open intent.”

The second phrase “cutting flesh with a blunt blade” is something along the ideas of “pulling teeth”. Somewhat of a pain to accomplish.

Juling Shen is a character featured in one of the earlier tales of “Journey to the West” He is one of Heaven’s generals. He wields a broad axe and is said to be incomparably fast with it, like a phoenix dancing. Battles against Sun Wukong in the story “Monkey Wreaks Havoc in Heaven”. Name literally translate to “Giant Spirit God”



## Chapter 70: Chase to Kill (3)

---

Closely following, her gaze suddenly needed. In the black night, a tremendous tongue came flipping. It was approximately several meters, and it directly struck the body of a speeding black shadow. With a heavy sound, the black shadow suddenly dropped to the ground. The distance from here... was only 2000 to 3000 meters away. This distance...

Tiger King-03 painfully shut her eyes.

On this night, of the three specialist scouts of the three C-rank legions, the Heaven Listener Legion, Wind Trace Legion, and Tiger King Legion, at the minimum, two of them were going to be captured alive here!

However, in the next second, her pupils nearly went slack, because Xu Yangyi had fished out a talisman from his pocket.

Spirit Traversing Talisman! It increased speed by 20% and lasted for ten minutes. She had just used it!

If he had access to the Spirit Traversing Talisman, why didn't he use it earlier?! Tiger King-03 silently smiled in bitterness, watching helplessly as Xu Yangyi raced towards the final black shadow. Clenching her teeth, even if there wasn't a single one of her bones in good condition, she covered her pained belly. She rigidly pressed her teeth together, digging into the ground with both hands and crawling towards a distant place.

Granted that she couldn't escape too far, it was fine to conceal herself. If the other believed she would sit around resigned to death, then he was looking down on her by far. So long as a single person escaped... she had absolute confidence that the branch master's punishment would come right away!

Furthermore... it was essential that she informed everyone that this was a paragon! A paragon on the run! They couldn't allow

themselves to lower their guards by any stretch! A minor squadron would be cleanly eaten up... All that could be used was a group encirclement. However, at this moment, a trembling voice passed on into her ear.

“You... don’t move...” Glancing forward, she saw a youth and a hen-holding girl who was leveling a wooden sword with several talisman strung on it at her. The sword tip was wavering, but it was still aimed at her. She was stunned.

“Let... me... go...” Nearly exhausting her complete strength to say these words, she hacked up blood: “I’ll... give you... guys... a hundred... low-grade... spirit stones...”

The youth shook his head: “Since I started jamming your signal downstairs, there’s no chance I can let you off... Moreover, Mr. Xu’s reward is Dew Congealing Grass. Thirty catties of it.”

“The heck are you bumbling so much crap for! You fancy her, you damned wolf!” The young girl snorted: “If she runs off, Mr. Xu is going to sort you out!”

Tiger King-03 painfully closed her eyes. At this moment, the blackness was like a rushing tide. Her final hopes had been dashed away, and even if it was her, she could no longer support herself, as well.

She didn’t know how much time had passed when she awakened, but the bright moon was still up in the sky. Merely, her two compatriots were completely covered from head to toe in blood, standing at her side.

Xu Yangyi hung onto a cigarette, Li Zongyuan standing at his side. Zhou Tingting, joined by the wolf demon, was vigilantly using her wooden sword to level it at the three scouts who were already without the slightest strength to retaliate.

The gaze of each scout carried with it disbelief and the gloom of their defeated confidences. They had come back over the line of

life or death countless of times and escaped from packs of demon beasts while besieged on all sides. Yet today, the three of them had completely fell here. Fell into the hand of a single person!

Xu Yangyi deeply inhaled a puff of smoke, looking in satisfaction at the three malicious-minded people. Indeed, all he had done was to make a call this afternoon. Only for him to bait the terribly feeble wolf demon, Zhou Tingting, and somewhat strong Li Zongyuan. They were his hidden trumps.

Modern cultivation didn't require the summon of a paper crane. All that was needed was a cell phone. He felt himself falling in love with modern cultivation. As he was arranging everything inside the room, the three people on the outside had continued to play the hunter without the least shred of awareness. Meanwhile, he had made the others do three things.

First, he would make everyone's gazes completely focus on him. As for Li Zongyuan, he had to lay in ambush on the other party's retreat path. Moreover, he would use his demon form to strike out with his strongest blow. All that was requested was this strike.

Second, he had Zhou Tingting contact the wolf demon and made him interfere with the signal of the people above. Furthermore, the wolf demon was to get ahold of a Spirit Traversing Talisman for him; Li Zongyuan would pay for it. After he got out of class, he would begin disrupting the signal. Xu Yangyi didn't ask the wolf demon about how it was done, so long as there was a result.

This was because he quite understood that these people were only the front line. The people behind them were the ones that truly wanted to find him. And as for these people, it was unconditional that they were carrying contact devices on their persons. Putting himself in their position, he didn't think the other's first item of choice would be something besides a cell phone.

In regards to other communication measures they wanted to use,

it was already late at night.

Third... In case Zhou Tingting's two-man squad discovered someone that had been defeated, they were to immediately take out their strongest weapon and pressure the other party. They could allow no person to flee.

A so-called plan didn't require that many complexities at all. The only thing required was the most suitable tactic put into effect at the most opportune time. The guarantee that a single strike would succeed.

Thus, he would personally make an appearance and draw their gazes. Thus, he would bloom with his full spiritual force and suddenly accelerate. Thus, he would explode with his entire cultivation, defeating Tiger King-03 in a flash.

This was all to make the other party's gazes pay attention to his person without exception. Tonight, he wasn't planning on letting one person escape!

Quietly removing his finished cigarette, he used his flip-flops to stamp the butt out. The corners of Tiger King-03's eyes cramped. It was this foot that had nearly wasted her with a kick.

"You're a paragon?" The camouflaged man's wounds weren't light, and he said hoarsely: "Even if you aren't... you're definitely in the top three..."

"I've never fuckin' seen your name on any list... If I saw it... there's no way I wouldn't have obtained this list..."

Xu Yangyi didn't respond, but rather nodded: "Are you going to speak? Or am I going to have to help you all out?"

"There's no need..." The slim man was the one with with lightest injuries, and the person that Xu Yangyi had specifically left to speak. He gritted his teeth: "I'm Wind Trace-03, she's Tiger King-03, and he's Heaven Listener-04. We're part of the Featherwood Guard's Mingshui Province branch. We're subordinate to the top

three C-rank legions. These three legions have the best scouts.”

Xu Yangyi laughed: “Not very resistant are you?”

The slim man grinded his teeth. In their legions, wasn't it others beseeching them? Even the deputy commander had to regard them with great courtesy! Now, they were actually being ridiculed like this by someone!

Just wait... His gaze slowly raked over Xu Yangyi, concealing an unspeakable hatred. As soon as we return to the branch, you'll already be dead.

The branch master's command was “not dead until I see a corpse”.

Calling this to mind, the corner of his mouth faintly turned upward, extremely light, dripping with blood. The moment this command appeared, there was no plan from the start to bring you to see anyone. We may be inadequate, but there are also the B-rank and A-rank legions!

“Speak of the legion's matters.” Xu Yangyi raised his chin and said.

“...The Featherwood Guard's... legions are divided into the three ranks of A, B, and C. C-rank is a legion of initial stage and middle stage Qi Condensation cultivators. After twenty bounties are completed, or a B-rank one, one can advance. B-rank is classified as a late-stage Qi Condensation and early-stage Foundation Establishment legion. The completion of an A-rank mission permits advancement. A-rank... They are the most elite legion. There are Qi Condensation cultivators, Foundation Establishment seniors... there are no lack of seeds being nurtured, and there are plenty of teams that in themselves have formidable strength... Mingshui Province has three A-rank legions... The Hidden Dragon Legion headed by Chu Zhaonan, Senior Yu Xizhi's Buried Flower Legion, and Senior Cao Mingyang's Crouching Tiger Legion...”

Xu Yangyi's gaze fluctuated.

He heard a familiar name. This kid... seemed to be getting by quite well. So in the end, he had elected to join the Featherwood Guard? It wasn't a Foundation Establishment legion, so it seemed to be a legion of nurtured seedlings? Contrary to expectation, Xu Yangyi himself was the most suitable to the Featherwood Guard's promise at that time.

He recalled that Chu Zhaonan's place of origin seemed to be Mingshui Province. Chu Tianyi was the last provincial governor of Mingshui Province.

"The upper bound of a C-rank legion's personnel is limited to thirty. After this is achieved, the advancement mission can be taken. A B-rank legion consists of fifty people. A-rank is a hundred. However, A-rank legions are frequently left not fully staffed. For example, there are only twenty-seven people in the Buried Flower Legion. Nonetheless, each one is an elite..." His gaze seamlessly swept across Xu Yangyi. This was a suggestion not to make a move against them, otherwise, any one the A-rank legions was capable of squeezing Xu Yangyi to death on a whim.

Xu Yangyi didn't mind this at all and continued to ask: "Have you heard of a person called Hibiscus?"

"Her?" The slim man laughed grimly: "She met an early end three years ago in the Vermilion Snow Incident."

Xu Yangyi faintly sighed. Another old friend had passed on to the [Western Paradises](#). At the same time, it caused him to further understand that on the path of cultivation, fortune and calamity were difficult to fathom, like treading across thin ice.

With a single misstep, there was quite the possibility of being consigned with eternal damnation.

His gaze flitted across the three and the faint wisp of the desire to kill quietly emerged. Any error originated from the first minor

developments.

“Who had you monitor me?” Xu Yangyi finally asked the question he was most concerned about: “Was it surveillance? Or some other reason?”

“The branch master, Mingshui Province’s branch master, Senior Thousandedge... the regional chancellor...” The slim man looked into Xu Yangyi’s eyes: “He commanded us to bring you back.”

Xu Yangyi laughed, his laughter splendid. He calmly looked into the slim man’s eyes, and the slim man silently looked back. The man was hiding a fact. That fact was the branch master’s command: not dead until a corpse was seen!

The man forced his eyes with his utmost strength not to reveal a trace of a billow. The present moment was equivalent to a battle of courage and wits. He understood that with such strength, this person was quite possibly a wanted criminal! Or perhaps a traitorous cultivator of the demons!

He had never seen the other, yet this opponent utilised Heavens Law’s Hundred Solutions. There was only a single explanation... Because the matter of what their counterparty had done was incapable of being publically announced to the masses, he could only be secretly investigated, and his name stricken from Heavens Law.

The Hundred Solutions was Heavens Law’s symbol. Only those of Heavens Law could study the Hundred Solutions, as well. He had an understanding of this kind of traitorous cultivator. It was quite possible if he said one wrong word that his head would end up in a different place apart from his body.

Xu Yangyi looked at him for several seconds, stowing his smile. “Your name?”

“My name cannot be spoken to a person outside the system.” The slim man pursed his lips and lowered his head. So long as they

escaped, and after they returned, what would be awaiting Xu Yangyi wouldn't just be the three of them! And then there was the entire Featherwood Guard's Mingshui Province branch! Waves upon waves of several tens of thousands of cultivators would plaster Xu Yangyi's wanted name across the heavens and earth!

"Is that so..." Xu Yangyi looked at the moon and laughed: "I was talking about carving a gravestone for you..."

These words were like a needle, piercing the slim man to get up in an instant and flee. The other two people's frightened eyes saucered, and they twisted about from head to toe, yet were simply incapable of running! Even in the next second, the shocked expressions of the three people remained. They flailed about, not daring to believe.

"You... unleashed... your neurons? No wonder..." Before he died, the slim man spoke these words with irreconciliation in his heart. He was not resigned to this; he was left terribly unwilling.

Never would he have expected that not only was this person a paragon, but moreover had unleashed their neurons. How could such a person... possibly be left nameless on the ranking?!

Even in death, his eyes were open wide.

Powerful spiritual sense was like a blade, roughly opening "the door lock" and wildly delving into the scope of their spiritual senses, stirring all their spiritual senses to shattered pieces! An utter annihilation of the mind!

The scene was quiet. Xu Yangyi indifferently wiped his hands. Zhou Tingting and the wolf demon, besides Li Zongyuan who hadn't reacted, looked at Xu Yangyi with ashen faces. They hadn't imagined that Xu Yangyi would actually take action to silence the trio!

There was not a shred of hesitation. Before everyone could react, the three people had already become corpses. This was



fundamentally tantamount to him truly taking on the name of a traitorous cultivator!

“They were lying through their teeth.” Xu Yangyi fished out a cigarette, his right hand clenching onto a fine bamboo sword. He sparked his lighter without a change in expression and deeply took a drag: “You know, when I was chasing that woman, her magik artifact attacked me in a method meant to kill me.”

“That bald man.” Xu Yangyi raised his chin towards the corpse on the ground: “Was also using tactics that put his life on the line.”

“If this Thousandedge ‘requested’ my return, then they would’ve immediately shouted their intent to prevent me from killing them.” A cold edge exuded from his eyes: “Their actions and speech were off mark. There’s only one explanation...” He looked deeply at everyone: “Thousandedge’s true intention isn’t as simple as ‘requesting’ me to return.”

“But rather to return with my head.” He stroked his neck and sneered: “Every one of his words just now was to remind me that their backer is quite great and not to be rashly acted against. Because they understood the conclusion of falling into their opponent’s hands. This was the manifestation of their guilt.”

“Why were they guilty?”

Xu Yangyi’s icy gaze swept over each person’s body and he said word for word: “Because they were concealing the truth. Concealing Thousandedge’s true command!”

“Someone... wants to find me...” He said calmly: “Even if they can’t find me, they want my life.”

“For them, there was simply no possibility of returning alive.”

Western Paradies is a Buddhist term. In Buddhism, there is a concept of “pure lands” These pure lands are said to be where Amitabha Buddha recites his dharma. This western pure land has historically been known as “Sukhavati”. You may read in other

novels that some people say “Amitabha Buddha”. The basis of saying this is in order to one day be reborn in this western pure land of Amitabha Buddha.

# Chapter 71: The Mountain God Moves

---

Once Xu Yangyi finished speaking, he said no more. The path of cultivation was the struggle of all beings. Countless facts reminded him one by one that with a single misstep, all would come to an end.

Heavens Law's negligence had lead to Vermilion Snow's invasion, no one the wiser. Ultimately, seven thousand people had been massacred and eight great Foundation Establishment cultivators had their Daos buried.

Li Zongyuan's negligence had caused him to become his demon familiar, and in addition, hand over all his Dew Congealing Grass. In that case, what of his own negligence? If he let them go this time, it would be Thousandedge himself coming the next!

Life could only be lived once.

The night wind blowing on his hand was somewhat cold. Sometimes, a battle between cultivators was even more merciless than a battle between humans and demons. From the beginning he chose to walk this path, he knew that there would inevitably be such a day.

Modern cultivation, Cultivation Civilization, beneath this flowery word, there were far too many things, hidden things that could not see the light. It was nothing more than everyone's hard-working perseverance that maintained this fragile balance.

"Prepare to relocate. Bai County is unsafe; I need a place far from the city."

"Master, we can leave the province." Li Zongyuan said lowly.

"No! I bet there isn't any surveillance camera right now that isn't under the monitor of the Featherwood Guard branch! You mustn't leave!" Zhou Tingting shook her head and said.

"That won't do." Li Zongyuan laughed: "I have a secret art that is

capable of forming a dimensional space within my body. As long as all of you get into my dimensional space, I guarantee that I'll bring you away."

They were still somewhat unwilling to part from their home.

"I don't wish to remind everyone." Li Zongyuan didn't possess the respect he had for Xu Yangyi to these two, and he laughed grimly: "But if you remain here, all of you are sure to die. In less than a day, arrest warrants will fill the sky. In any case, I will deliver you to the [Western Paradise](#). Afterwards, wherever you wish to go will be no concern of mine."

"Will your movement draw heavy inspection from the government?" Xu Yangyi looked towards the starry sky and asked indifferently.

"No!" Li Zongyuan immediately laughed: "Demons, if they awaken early, will be around fifteen to sixteen, and our appearances will change no more. In order to not make neighbors and friends feel why is it that their neighbors haven't changed in several years and rouse society's panic, it is written in the Shennong Convention that not only can we not be disturbed, but we must be given protection!"

Xu Yangyi nodded, withdrawing his gaze: "We leave at once."

Time dragged on.

Bang bang bang... Simultaneously, in the Featherwood Guard's branch master office that was twinkling with light, the sharp and crisp sound of bamboo cracking could be heard from within the room.

The secretary was stunned, and he walked to the door to ask what had occurred, but just as he neared the front of it, he heard the branch master's ice-cold voice: "Get out. Any who trespass will receive thirty lashes."

Within the room, Thousandedge's gaze looked deeply at the three

tiny bamboo effigies before him. Written with the names of Wind Trace-03, Tiger King-03, and Heaven Listener-04, they entirely split apart in two at this moment. At the same time, they had completely died!

He inhaled deeply and calmly picked up his cup of tea, placing it at his mouth, yet not drinking.

“Little bastard... you even truly dare to kill the best three scouts of the C-rank legions...”

“I really am becoming more curious. Why is it that Daomaster Floatingcloud must find you?” He stood up, his finger stroking a glass window: “HL-01, Xu Yangyi, Heavens Law’s Yuyang City students still remember you. And yet... there was no news of any of your information at the graduation ceremony...”

“Three years ago, there wasn’t so much as a word disseminated from the heaven-shocking Vermilion Snow incident. You just happened to be at this graduation. Then if that’s the case... what connection do you have with this event?”

“It’s possible that Heavens Law’s avatar recorded a video. The scope of privileges so high that not even I can view it... and Daomaster Floatingcloud issued a Black Kill Order, one that has never existed. How much does he hate you? Or is it... how much he fears you?”

“If it is hate, he can act righteously without deceit. Compared to a Core Formation cultivator’s fury, even the government has to make considerations three times. In that case... it’s fear.” He turned around, each finger of both hands constantly rubbing: “What do you have in your hands that even causes Daomaster Floatingcloud fear? Fear to the extent that if it is goes unobtained, you must be killed? Fear that goes so far as to clearly wish to obtain it swiftly so that on the contrary it warrants the black kill order that is dared not to be issued lightly?”

He ponderously narrowed his eyes at the black card in his hand.

No death, no rest. Without time, without limit.

“As of now, the three hounds let loose have all died. Should I personally take to task? No... If I handle it myself, my Foundation Establishment qi fluctuations will be sensed by those Cultivation Court bastards in less than five minutes. My future prospects will be ruined in a short time because of the violation of cultivation trust laws... however, if that little scoundrel does indeed have an item that can stir the heart of a Core Formation master in his hands...”

He was silent. Only after no less than half an hour later did he set down the card, noiselessly sighing. Currently, what was most important in the end was what did this HL-01 have in his hands? Was it worthy of him braving the danger?

Of those capable of treading into Foundation Establishment, which one wasn't a person of wisdom and tenacity, of courage and ambition? Vermilion Snow dared to bathe a Heavens Law branch with blood to achieve Core Formation. If this opportunity truly was sufficiently large, Thousandedge would absolutely not mind braving the risk.

Wealth and honor would be sought amidst danger, success would be taken from the details.

Thud... At this time, after the sound of the door knocking rang out three times, the door was pushed open, and a tall, handsome youth walked in.

“Branch master.” He hammered his hand on his chest and said without any respectful demeanor: “The Hidden Dragon Legion has completed the mission and returned. I've come specifically to report back.”

[Backstabbing](#) son of a bitch... Thousandedge carried a smile, yet his gaze was void of a single trace of sentiment. Is that Xu your father? You actually dare put on pressure before me?!

Otherwise, why would there be a need to sacrifice three hunting dogs?

Once the IP is locked on, he won't be able to escape even if he sprouts wings!

“Commander Chu has gone through much hardship.” He laughed and said: “Deputy Minister Chu is an old acquaintance of mine, as well. Commander Chu need not be restrained.”

Chu Zhaonan didn't take to his words.

“Go rest up first, alright.” Thousandedge waved his hand: “Commander Chu still has two years of field work left. When the time comes, I shall preside over your formal advancement ceremony to an A-rank legion myself.”

“My thanks, branch master.” Chu Zhaonan paused and followed up: “In addition, because the friction between the demons and humans of Mingshui Province is straining, I've requested a party of five prosecutors of the Mingshui Province Cultivation Court to head towards my stationed region of Panshan City and conduct an investigation for half a year. I am hereby notifying you of this.”

“Hiss...” A gust suddenly fluttered before Thousandedge. It was unknown when, but the wooden desk his hand was pressed down upon was already one small piece less. It seemed to be shaved apart by a thousand blades, transforming into flying dust.

He didn't look at the other, and he didn't have a smile, as well. After a minute passed, he insipidly raised his head, looking calmly at Chu Zhaonan. His voice was chilling like ice: “Commander Chu, do you put my in your eyes?”

“I dare not to. Junior is only following duty.”

No one spoke, and the Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure increased by a hair. Chu Zhaonan only felt bursts of desolate pain from his chest, the blood of his heart almost jetting out. Suddenly, the spiritual pressure loosened. His head drenched

in sweat, he stood in place, gritting his teeth.

“Leave.” Thousandedge smiled: “Later on, remember to report these kinds of matters first.”

“Yes.”

The door closed. Thousandedge sat peacefully, holding his teacup. The moonlight outside the window illuminated his body and the window curtains blew in the night wind. This scene appeared gentle and tranquil.

Yet in the next second!

Bang! Bang! Bang! The sound of countless fragments shattering rang out in the room! The window, the desk, the resource materials, cabinets, floorboard, all in the blink of an eye! Everything fell into ruins!

Thousandedge himself seemed like a demon sitting among the wreckage.

“Junior, you really believe I don’t dare to move against you?” He coldly licked his lips, his voice dense with killing intent: “You should be thankful you have a good family, otherwise... I certainly would’ve sliced you up by a death of a thousand cuts!”

He was already certain, it was 100% a person of the Hidden Dragon Legion that had hacked into the branch’s computers! Caused him to be incapable of locking on to the IP!

Right now... he was one step closer to being forced to resign. This was informing the other party that the personnel of the Cultivation Court already had their eyes on you, and the matter between us ought to just pass, as if it hadn’t occurred.

Moments ago, he was truly stirred to fury, however, as his Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure swept past, he discovered Chu Zhaonan had at least three magik artifacts on his body that were capable of resisting the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment for a whole hour!



At that instant, Thousandedge was truly placed in a position where he could neither advance nor retreat! Above, he had accepted Daomaster Floatingcloud's command. In case the mission wasn't completed, his prestige and opportunity would all go scattering like ash in the wind! Below, there was the Cultivation Court, the Chinese government's dog! In case the mission was completed, his prestige, his opportunity, and even his future and prospects, would likewise go up in a puff of smoke!

He was awfully aware... that apart from nuclear warheads, if the Chinese government didn't have a true weapon capable of threatening Core Formation cultivators, the world's balance would immediately change.

This wasn't to mention all the gathered scientists in Heavens Law though that had painstakingly created the three great Slaughter Weapons. These armaments were also the same, capable of causing the cultivation world not dare to take action lightly.

"Emperor Armament..." He sucked in deeply: "If I had an Emperor Armament in my hand, how could I be so passive this time..." He still lacked the confidence to shed all pretense of cordiality with the Chinese government. Just as incredibly fast as his boundless imaginings surged, they settled just as unfathomably.

A day later, at the side of Panshan City's national highway, countless cars converged. Entering the national highway of the provincial capital was always this congested. Especially since Panshan City was still the north's largest city besides Beijing.

"Ugh, it's so backed up." In a car, a forty-plus-year-old driver was playing around with a child as he grumbled: "It's gonna be clogged up for at least half an hour. These road conditions really do suck."

The child was a girl approximately around seven or eight years old, yet at this moment, she didn't listen to her father's words at all, but rather stared unblinkingly through the car window glass.

“Sweetie, what’re you looking at?” Her mother sat in the front passenger seat, following the girl’s gaze over for a glance, and was immediately stunned.

“Hey, don’t pull, don’t pull.” The mother’s hand was pulling on the driver, and the driver raised his head and furrowed his brows: “What’s going on, eh? What’s there to be ruffled about...”

The mother’s hand was gently trembling and her other hand was covering her mouth, a finger faintly shaking as it pointed out towards a direction. Just as the driver looked over, he was rendered astonished, as well. At this instant, an immeasurable number of people had left their cars on the national parkway, some even using their cell phones to take pictures of this strange scene.

“Is this the Mountain God moving?”

“Holy shit! What could be so big?”

“Has a monster left the mountain?”

“Hurry up and take a photo! If you put it on Weibo, who knows how many people will come! Live stream it!”

“What on earth is this thing?”

On a mountain not too far away from the side of the national parkway, absent of the wind and without the other trees moving, there was a sole stretch of forest that undulated like a wave and moreover everything below!

It was like... there was an enormous creature walking by within the forest, pushing down on the other trees! From Panshan City, it continued to creep towards a distant place, progressively venturing further away!

They didn’t know that at this moment, within the mountain forest, an old farmer was shivering flat on his butt at the center of a six-to-seven-meter-long footprint of a gigantic toad. At a distant place, another silent footprint gradually proceeded further away.

“T-this is the Mountain God moving!”

Making a note here as a refresher, but Western Paradise refers to the Buddhist concept of the “pure land” The exact line where this concept is introduced though is from the novel of a Qing era novelist named Wen Kang, from his book “The Gallant Maid”. The idea behind delivering someone to the Western Paradise is to bring them to safety.

Backstabbing here is actually a chinese idiom that I localized, since I think it fits too. Real meaning behind this idiom is “to accept one side’s benefits, but put in work for another side”

# Chapter 72: Cultivation Civilization (1)

---

The formless footprint was followed by bursts of ground tremors, extending onwards neither hurriedly nor slowly. He seemed not to be fast, but the fact of the matter was that with Li Zongyuan's bulk, he could well go several tens of meters in a single step.

Inside a car, a middle-aged man lifted his sunglasses, and his right eye reddened, appearing to build a bridge between the human and demon realms. Eventually, he leaned his head towards his female companion at the side and laughed: "A demon is relocating, nothin' to see. It probably couldn't keep on staying in Mingshui Province."

His female companion looked into his eyes and laughed cutely as she used her hand to pat his shoulder: "Don't use the Heaven Eye; even though it's an elementary version of Heavens Law's teachings, it's freaky to look at in the dead of night."

"Moving house, eh..." Ahead of the three large character signboard of Panshan City, a police officer sighed, turning around and continuing to uphold public order: "Nowadays, our lives really are getting harder."

Li Zongyuan simply didn't pay attention to any of this, but rather blustered about on the mountain. In any case, ordinary people couldn't see him and the others who could still had to protect his relocation. The heck was he scared of?

But to say he wasn't scared wasn't the whole truth. He quite dreaded... the master within his stomach. His full-on sprint was certainly much greater than his current speed and to say his current speed was a walk was more or less correct. However, if Xu Yangyi was shaken—and if Xu Yangyi was unhappy—it was game over for him. This boundlessly cycling thought caused him to rather enjoy this kind of leisurely strolling life.

As well as controlling the wild expectation of breaking free that

was hidden within his heart.

Xu Yangyi, Zhou Tingting, and the little wolf were all in his stomach. It couldn't be helped to say that this demon was a demon that really liked to live it up. He had built a small dimensional space, and while his land of honey and milk wasn't completely filled with Dew Congealing Grass, it introduced a stream of water and established a wooden house around 265 square meters.

Zhou Tingting and the little wolf were in the living room absentmindedly playing on a computer. Inside another room, they had moved in their items. As for Xu Yangyi, he stayed in the third room, not leaving. He had continued to ruminate a question.

What had caused him to receive the kill command of a branch master he was total strangers with? The answer came quickly to him. After almost several minutes, he was certain of everything. Someone was concealing from China's cultivation world the examination results from three years prior. The results, as well as its content, had all been tampered with. For him to be on the receiving end of this hunt, it could only originate from his battle of three years ago.

"Is it you...?" He sat in meditation on a bed, looking at a little chest placed before him.

Since his leap of three years, it no longer existed in his qi sea, and on that rainy night, it had materialized. Moreover, Xu Yangyi used a silver necklace chain to wear it on his neck. With golden script in a simple and unadorned painting style, the chest lacked any other peculiarities.

Xu Yangyi closed his eyes. In his mind, he began to recall all of his problems since he left Sanshui City to the present.

"How did that berserker obtain this chest?"

"What the heck is this chest... Who is this leopard-headed man whose ornate design was engraved? Without it, I wouldn't have

been able to go into the lotus pond, and I also wouldn't have known about the existence of the Eternal Alchemy Canon. Without it, I would've long died beneath Vermilion Snow's hand."

"What is that lotus pond? Was it but fantasy? If it was fake... why can I remember the arcane effort from inside? If it's real, in China... no, the Earth, there can't possibly be such a terrifying, tremendous demon."

"Who forged this chest? Why hasn't such an important treasure been mentioned in history?"

Question upon question lingered in his mind. He was absolutely certain that only because of the chest did today's degree of situation come about.

However...

He didn't regret it at all. Was the recruitment of various factions significant? Was a Core Formation arcane effort important? Both were vital! Yet in comparison to the Eternal Alchemy Canon, they were categorically a nonfactor!

Alchemy was to refine the self. So long as he studied this arcane effort, so what about recruitment?

That depended on their "sincerity".

This Core Formation arcane effort... was nothing more than a lesser fraction to the greater whole of the Eternal Alchemy Canon!

During the graduation ceremony, he was the one that truly reaped benefit! Chu Zhaonan's legion, the position of first place, was nothing in comparison to this mysterious little box! However, how was it that it seemed to have been leaked?

Narrowing his eyes for several seconds, he suddenly recalled that amidst Vermilion Snow's unrestrained terror, she had once yelled out "Emperor Armament"! He inhaled deeply. Perhaps this was the key to opening the door of this mystery.

Li Zongyuan. He called out lightly in his consciousness.

Master. Li Zongyuan's voice immediately reverberated. Heavens knew that on the outside he was being exceedingly careful, awaiting at any time his master's spiritual call... No, summon.

"Do you know where there are antique research specialists...?" He picked up the chest: "I want to conduct a decryption. There's only a single requirement: the decrypter must be tight-lipped."

"And if they are insufficiently trustworthy?"

"Then you take care of it." Xu Yangyi's voice was without the slightest ripple. This object was capable of causing a Foundation Establishment cultivator to hunt him. If it was divulged, all there was for him was death!

"If..." He was silent for a few seconds: "You leak it, there won't be a need for you to come see me."

Suicide... Li Zongyuan thought of this word and his tremendous body shivered. However, he gritted his teeth and still said: "Mister, this is quite difficult... If there really is someone that is hunting you down, and incase you emerge, there is a possibility you'll be killed. The aura of the item you hold and you yourself can't show up at the same time by any means. Cultivators' arcane efforts are infinite, and arcane efforts that trace back to the origin are far, far too many..."

"I'm only asking if you're capable of doing it." Xu Yangyi said indifferently.

"I can!"

Xu Yangyi faintly raised a brow. He had only asked in passing, but he hadn't expected the other would actually truly be capable.

Lifting his chin, he hinted for the other to speak. Li Zongyuan answered deferentially: "Mister, China... is not the only people interested in these ancient riddles..."

A collaboration with demons? Xu Yangyi nearly didn't give it any consideration and nodded: "I'm reminding you once more. This item cannot be revealed. You will die first before me."

"Yes!" Li Zongyuan immediately replied: "Master, presently... which faction are you part of?"

Xu Yangyi laughed: "I am from the pragmatic faction."

He was also somewhat helpless. Without any other options, Li Zongyuan was the only one he could truly trust right now. However, this was a collaboration partner that was certain to cancel his pact and immediately abscond, never to be seen again until death.

"I will stay here and enter seclusion afterwards. Once my seclusion comes to an end, I will require an answer."

"Mister, please set your mind at ease..."

The man and the toad were silent. After several seconds passed, Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette: "Tell me about the matters of the cultivation world."

"Yes... Mister, what do you want to hear? I've drifted about in the cultivation world for over thirty years, and although I am unschooled in the affairs of cultivation, there are some assortment of matters..."

Xu Yangyi snapped his finger, cutting off the other: "Just talk. I'm a bit bored."

Li Zongyuan pursed his lips. This tempo of a boring journey that needed a driver to put on a movie... still needed the accompaniment of song... However, he dared not to be discontent whatsoever. Once a life-death pact was signed, and as long as his cultivation wasn't higher than the other's, it couldn't be removed. Yet with Xu Yangyi's talents...

He had given up on this notion earlier.



“Mister, the cultivation world is presently Cultivation Civilization. In fact, it’s development has been brought up since the first world war...” Clearing his throat, he said: “Before this, the cultivation world basically didn’t care for the human world. But after this great war, the rapid advancement of science and technology were already capable of causing injuries to initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators of insufficient cultivation. It was only at this time, the cultivation world began to regard humanity with level eyes.”

Xu Yangyi was laying down on the bed in his room. The night stand was a small refrigerator and the inside was stocked with all kinds of beverages and booze. On the bottom, there were snacks and braised dishes, which flavors were pretty good. He took out a bottle of beer and slowly toasted to himself, drinking alone.

Li Zongyuan’s voice rang out again: “But most important was the second war. Already, tanks were capable of causing injury or death to initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators. Especially when the first cruise missile appeared. There were clans in the cultivation world that finally ended their several thousand years of separation and began to get in touch with humanity.”

Nevertheless, for you to come to me to chat without restriction in topic is interesting, if just for this journey of several hours. Cultivation is too brief and it could be said it is without the least pleasure.

“I remember something from a book. In the beginning, it was only some small clans. Only clans that couldn’t go on any longer and were faced with the extinction of their Dao legacies that chose to contact humanity. After all, in their long training, ordinary people were insects.” Xu Yangyi found a plate of braised duck and used a toothpick to get a piece in passing. He narrowed his eyes as he said in pleasure: “At that time, the speed of trains and cars weren’t faster at all than that of talismans, not to even mention the flight of a Foundation Establishment senior. Nearly no one

anticipated the enormous change that would be brought about by the words science and technology...”

“That’s correct.” Li Zongyuan said: “Master, did Heavens Law also teach cultivation history?”

“They did, it’s just that I didn’t take it too seriously.” Xu Yangyi said lazily: “However, to say that the cultivation world of this time has levelly opened their eyes at humanity isn’t completely correct. It should be nothing more than the opening sliver of the eyelids.”

“Yes, master is wise... The true turning point was when the United States dropped the atomic bomb on Japan. As those two cities transformed into ruins, that worldly annihilating might finally caused the cultivators that had long looked down on humanity to sound the alarm.”

Xu Yangyi said somewhat sorrowfully: “In the End of Days, Nascent Soul is no more and Core Formation is the peak. At that time... I’m afraid there were no Nascent Soul cultivators, no?”

“China still had two Nascent Soul cultivators at that time.” Li Zongyuan said softly: “It is recorded that the longevity of Nascent Soul is six centuries... Mister, I knew early on my cultivation wasn’t high, so because of this, I sought joy and pleasure. Yet because of this, perhaps my understanding of these things is a bit greater than some elites... Nevertheless, it gave me matters to concern myself with in this senselessly endless life...”

Xu Yangyi smiled. Li Zongyuan truly did dread him, his courage fractured in its entirety. Any of the first slivers of dissatisfaction Xu Yangyi had were immediately supplemented, needless of action.

Anyways, this was quite good. He needed a person like this. Any cultivator had their own team. It was impossible for everything to be done by oneself. In the sole consideration of the enterprises of Core Formation masters, their enormous estates reached up to over ten thousand cultivators, comparable to a major corporation.

He would also have his own sooner or later.

“However, I suspect that they’re still alive...” Li Zongyuan added on, causing Xu Yangyi’s gaze to suddenly turn bright.

“Your reasoning?”

“Master... I have no proof, but...” Li Zongyuan laughed wryly: “Do you know of Daoism’s three great ancestral halls?”

“Sichaun’s Heming Mountain, Mount Qingcheng, and Ganjiang’s Dragon Tiger Mountain... Mister, these are the Chinese Government’s true hidden aces... Any of the Core Formation cultivator knows this, yet none of them dare not to touch upon this matter...”

“Of our cultivation, Qi Condensation is muddled. Once at Foundation Establishment can one choose their own Dao. Buddhism, Daoism, and Confucianism, each school has an extremely deep reserve in China. As for myself, I truly do not believe, that in the hands of these three true mega sects, there is not a single supreme existence.”

Xu Yangyi was silent for a moment: “Are you saying... they are the genuine mega powers?”

“Master, they can’t be considered powers! They are titans! The range of their power is not great, their associations with humanity not many, and their true disciples rarely enter the world if at all. However, any cultivator in all of China dares not to touch them! This kind of several millenniums-old Dao heritage, the emperors and monarchs they have witnessed, the secrets, the profundity of their reserves cannot be dared to be imagined! Truly, I truly quite suspect those two legendary Nascent Soul lords from that time have yet to actually die! They are hiding within the great mountains of these three great Dao heritages!”

## Chapter 73: Cultivation Civilization (2)

---

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply, yet only felt his blood boiling! Nascent Soul... Any book said that Nascent Soul didn't exist, but right now, Li Zongyuan had merely said there was also a possibility.

But!

This kind of style that disdained the world, a manner where one did not exist in [Jianghu](#), yet Jianghu held the might of one's legend, could truly be considered unrivaled beneath the heavens!

Whether or not they were alive was already unimportant. Even if they were only corpses, China was also incapable of halting the legend of Nascent Soul!

If there is a day where I am capable of walking to this stage... [I shall ascend Mount Tai, glancing over the many mountains below as insignificant!](#)

In his mind, an idea that had existed even in the past was incomparably distinct at this moment. As soon as things settled down, the first thing he would do was cultivate the Eternal Alchemy Canon!

Power, power was number one! Without strength, a Foundation Establishment cultivator could force him to choose between a temporary retreat or the tip of a spear. If he was at Core Formation at this moment, would he still need to waste his breath?

He clenched his fist.

Foundation Establishment, Senior. Core Formation, Dao Master. Nascent Soul... was called Dao Lord?

He downed a big gulp of beer, letting his mood settle: "Continue."

"Yes... After the explosion of the atomic bomb, within a week,

over a dozen Core Formation cultivators in seclusion came out in astonishment. Two weeks later, the [Zhou Clan of the White Horse](#), as a clan of a thousand-year inheritance, lead the five great cultivation clans of Nanjiang to Beijing for the first time, formally opening the gate to cultivator-human cooperation.”

“The Zhou Clan? Not the Chen Clan?”

“Master...” The inside of Li Zongyuan’s mouth was like he was sucking on a bitter melon: “It’s the Zhou Clan...”

Xu Yangyi oohed, his finger gently tapping on the nightstand: “I remember there were two more occurrences that greatly shocked the cultivation world. Tell me about them; I seemed to have fallen asleep at that time. I wasn’t listening.”

“Yes, master. Just as it began, the cultivation world likewise wasn’t paying attention to humanity. This kind of situation even persisted for a long time... until the first satellite was launched in 1957. The [Heavenly Eye](#), this was the second shock of the cultivation world...”

“The third time was the arms race between the United States and the USSR, causing great fear and trepidation to the Core Formation masters... Later on, humanity’s rapid progress in technological and scientific development, from the end of the World War II to the present, could be counted as humanity’s fastest and fiercest era of growth... Cultivators finally had to recognize humanity’s position...”

“Because their lives were already inseparable to humanity’s inventions.” Xu Yangyi laughed ruefully, flicking at a beer bottle: “Do you know what the best thing to buy for each province’s China Clan Cup Finals and the National Cultivator Ranking Championship is?”

Li Zongyuan understood implicitly without pause, yet asked, not daring to believe: “B-beer?”

Xu Yangyi laughed as he looked at the small dish before him: “Or all kinds of braised foods and barbecue.”

Li Zongyuan lamented: “Master is wise... Foundation Establishment seniors are still good, but they also have their family members and their clans, as well. Yet their descendants are incapable of separating from the internet, automobiles, airplanes... clothing, food, transportation, and home. This is a true village encircled by cities... Cultivators realize this, but simply think not to change...”

“A Dao Master cannot cast away convention, as well.” Xu Yangyi laughed.

Qi Condensation’s longevity was normal. Foundation Establishment’s longevity was greater by a single-fold, those of demons’ being two times more. Thirty to forty years was likewise the maximum proportion. In such an endless time... humankind’s golden age of development had thoroughly reversed cultivators’ impression of humanity!

“Since the beginning that cultivators discovered their administrative methods fell behind; their food, transport, home, and clothing were retrogressed, and all of their everything failed to meet this previously disdained colony of insects, in the 60s, nearly all the clans thereupon started inseparable relations with humanity. Master, in the cultivator clans, true geniuses are as rare as phoenix feathers and qilin horns. For the most part, there are many ordinary cultivators like me that are without hope to advance and cannot even step into the middle stage. The people of those clans subsequently...”

He coughed: “These people were the first so-called ‘cultivation capitalists’. They began to use the cultivation world’s easily acquired jewels and even pill elixirs to trade for large sums of mortal capital... however, this posed a question. Mortals don’t accept the cultivation world’s common currency, spirit stones.”

“This is the well-known ‘monetary harmonization’. I still remember this.” Xu Yangyi drank from his beer and followed up: “From the sixties to the eighties, because the cultivation world wanted widespread access with humanity, they finally incorporated the spirit stone into each country’s currency exchange table. Of course, so long as they live, ordinary people can’t see this table. Only special organizations can view it. This was also the first time the cultivation world yielded to humanity.”

“For there to be a first time means that there will be a second. Followingly, all kinds of cultivation world goods began to enter humanity’s exchange list. If you were fortunate enough to participate in each major city’s Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s and famous clan’s auctions, you would know of these things. Next, the cultivation world finally got a taste of the strength of humanity’s capital, that is, the power of money. The entire globe’s major monopolies and governments began to offer to the cultivation world the good they were most scarce of: people.”

He stopped. His understanding in regards to humanities was limited to this. After all, he was a martial tyrant.

Li Zongyuan recognized his cue and immediately continued on: “That’s right. Any cultivator can’t possibly go accomplish anything by themselves. They also need a team. As a result, all kinds of elites from human society were pulled into this true world after they signed a life-death pact.”

“And then here at last, even though the cultivation world was sealed off for several millennia, in a short several decades, it underwent a perfect fusion with humanity... Now, all kinds of cultivation companies are everywhere. The vast mountains and great lakes, legendary secret lands, all are developed by cultivator-employed human companies, organizations, and cooperative partners. All kinds of ancient industries such as auction and pawning have been revitalized from death from under the foundational premise of humanity’s several billion people...”

“Soon after, many kinds of contracts began to be signed. For example, between the cultivators, humans, and the demons, there was the most famous ‘Shennong Convention’, as well as the ‘Cultivator Antitrust Law’, and so on. At the same time though, many parties started to appear in the cultivation world. Ultimately, they were separated into two factions. One faction was the doves, advocating for amicable relations with humanity. The other faction was the hawks, persistent in their belief that powers aside from cultivators ought to be taken with a hard-line stance.”

Li Zongyuan laughed hollowly: “Master, in fact, I think that regardless of which faction, cultivators are no longer capable of tolerating a breakaway from human society for a day... because they have already become accustomed...”

Xu Yangyi was somewhat rueful: “As the benefits began to come together, everyone was left unable to free themselves.”

“Yes, master. Nevertheless, there was benefit. Cultivators started to discover that they were actually able to earn spirit stones even easier than before by developing spirit veins in comparison to staying in seclusion. You see, if there was no generous profit, would the China Cloud Data Corporation that supplies China’s cultivation net with data give up on cultivation to do this? They’re all people hopeless in cultivation, but for the honor of their sects, they raise profit to rear a few top successors.”

“Aren’t the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion and the Featherwood Guard also like this? They have many people without hope to break through. Enjoying wealth and rank, and earning money for an assault on Core Formation to supply to headquarters... Master, I once read a book that had a phrase in it. Capital is a thing that when released cannot be taken back... The modern world is of this structure; benefits are number one. Moreover, if you want to cultivate, which one of a cultivator’s Four Directives, wealth, scripture, companions, and spiritually rich lands, can do without money?”



“For example, the doves hold harmonious relations regardless of humans or demons. Even the hawks have never advocated for excessive unyieldingness.”

“Thus, for the cultivator world, humanity, and demons, there exist the present steady, yet weak, development period. Master, I’m done reading.”

“So it is.” Xu Yangyi tapped at the bed. The cultivation world had already completely evolved into a small society. This was the reason within. Just as he stood up, he suddenly raised a brow and laughed: “Done reading?”

In the outside world, Li Zongyuan was fiddling with an iPad in his hand, using his webbed finger to gently tap on it and said respectfully: “I once bought the hacked account of an Exalted Lord on Chinacultivation.com. I can almost read all the messages. These were all things from the cultivation net... Otherwise, I wouldn’t have been able to give such a clear analysis. Is master still bored?”

Xu Yangyi paused, silent for a moment. He asked cautiously: “Have you... heard of Emperor Armament?”

“No!” Li Zongyuan answered rather swiftly: “In my thirty-odd years, I’ve never heard this name... What is it?”

“Search the cultivation net.” Xu Yangyi said.

Several seconds later, Li Zongyuan’s voice was heard again: “Master, still nothing.”

Xu Yangyi nodded, narrowing his eyes as he stroked his chin.

Vermilion Snow was already half-step Core Formation. The possibility that an object which could cause her unparalleled astonishment was fake was not great. It shouldn’t not have existed... but rather it couldn’t be spoken of, didn’t dare to be given voice to.

“Interesting.” He laughed, sitting down in meditation.

The room quieted down, and like so, time passed on by the day. After approximately a week went by, Li Zongyuan's respectful voice emerged in his consciousness: "Master, we're here."

A group of people walked out from the sealed space. Before them was a paradise. Verdant open plains littered the stepped fields of the hillside. Below, there was a quiet stream and groves of pink peach blossoms formed the most beautiful ornamentation for this brook.

"Master, according to the map navigation, this place should be in China's most northern major province, a remote village subordinated to Wei City, which is in the middle urban district of Songjiang Province."

Xu Yangyi took the cell phone in the other's hand and looked at it, nodding in satisfaction.

The north bound was the border between China and Russia. The location seemed convenient, but the greater the border, the easier it was to receive specific attention. From here to the border, he could make it in several hours with full-blown sprint. If an accident occurred, there was also a retreat route.

This present location wasn't a county. It was a place that had currently broken away from all of the Chinese government's internet that could be accessed. After all, the capabilities of a Foundation Establishment cultivator couldn't be disdained.

Especially since this Foundation Establishment cultivator was still a provincial branch master of the Featherwood Guard.

"This is the place." Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze: "In three days, I'll need a large basement. The basement must be shockproof and soundproof. Prepare half a year's worth of Fasting Pill Elixir. Go."

Li Zongyuan immediately left. Xu Yangyi looked towards the somewhat cowering wolf demon and the wordless Zhou Tingting: "You only have one choice."

“Follow me.”

The duo didn't speak, and Xu Yangyi didn't press them at all. He only turned around and left, pulled out a cigarette and lit it, and took a deep drag: “Don't think I owe you anything.”

“Back then, I asked whether or not you were willing to help me. Moreover, I said I didn't know of those peoples' identities.” His gaze was without a trace of fluctuation: “I told you explicitly that their backing was quite great.”

“The reward is Dew Congealing Grass. You accepted it, and afterwards, I also settled accounts. We've broken even.”

“Or perhaps there is also an even simpler method.” Xu Yangyi turned around, smiling as he looked at them: “There's only one kind of person that can keep a secret for eternity.”

Already, he had no time to take care of other matters. His person was burdened with two oaths and his own blood hatred. Even now he was impatient to begin cultivating the Eternal Alchemy Canon. At this kind of time, any uncertain elements had to be erased. This wasn't a time to act according to emotion.

[The tale of the farmer and the snake](#), and the old story of Mr. Dongguo was told too many times. It didn't need to be spoken of again.

Jianghu, a.k.a Rivers and Lakes. If you've been reading these cultivation/wuxia/xianxia novels for a while, you have an idea what it is. If you don't it's kinda of an idea that encompasses the lifestyle of a martial artist, perhaps it could even be thought of as a greater idea of a martial path. I didn't choose to translate this because I feel that this word in itself comprises a greater idea and should be left unchanged.

This is a line from a Tang Poet, Du Fu. His works are extremely well-regarded, introduced to western readers as a Chinese Shakespeare, Baudelaire, Ovid, etc. In a more straightforward way,

the line means “To be at the top and then look at the mountains down below and see how small they are”.

There is a lot of historical background in this, mainly the Zhou Clan of the White Horse. Unfortunately, I am unsure if I truly understood the history behind this. Otherwise, it is the Baimazhou Clan, which doesn't really quite make sense. From what I know/researched, the Zhou Clan here is probably pointing to the house of Duke Wen of Zhou, credited with writing The Book of Changes. The Zhou dynasty was before the Qin dynasty. The White Horse portion is a bit more tricky. It is either referring to A: the White Horse Temple, the first Buddhist temple established in China (68 AD during the Han Dynasty) or B: refers to a nod towards a school of thought known as the School of Names, which originated from Mohism. Modern day, those of the School of Names are knowns as Logicians or Dialecticians. This school of thought originates from an idea of viewing the world through complements. The idea of the White Horse is a paradox from this school that involves the idea of two people arguing between the idea of a white horse is not just an ordinary horse, while the opposing side views the other speaker as thinking that a white horse is not a horse in itself. Very difficult to explain. I suggest looking up this paradox for further study. In any case, I am inclined to believe it is referring to point B because Zhou Dynasty and School of Names existed in the same era.

The Heavenly Eye is a real thing. It is better known as the 500 meter aperture spherical telescope.

This lines refers to two stories, The Farmer and the Snake, and the Wolf of Zhongshan. The Farmer and the Snake is traditionally a story from aesop's tale. The Wolf of Zhongshan is a traditional chinese fable dated back to the Ming dynasty (1500s~). You can look up both these stories up on wikipedia, but long story short, moral of the story is you don't mess around with real important stuff.

## Chapter 74: Refining the Heart (1)

---

The wolf demon trembled from head to toe, cold sweat dripping down desperately. However, Zhou Tingting didn't have a bit of a scared expression. She only looked at Xu Yangyi with a shining gaze.

“After departing from Bai County, I gave you one final chance.” Xu Yangyi gently puffed out smoke, watching the azure vapor drift away in the wind. He said indifferently: “Now, you can choose on your own to leave right away. However, at that time, you'll have to let me leave an imprint in your spiritual senses. The same as Li Zongyuan.”

“However, you can choose to walk together with me.”

“Right now...” He inhaled deeply and stamped out his cigarette butt, looking coldly at the duo: “You know where I'm staying, and you know that I'm being hunted. You know of the opposition's background. There no longer exists even a shred of retreat for you. Follow me or die.”

“I'm willing to follow you, sir!” Before his voice fell, Zhou Tingting immediately bowed: “From the beginning I saw you the first time, I knew I could only follow you, and only you were able to guide me!”

“In the past several days, I've truly seen how fierce you are, sir! I have faith in my choice!”

Xu Yangyi smiled and leaned his head. Zhou Tingting pursed her lips as she walked over to the side. He didn't speak, only calmly looking at the wolf demon. “I still don't know your name.”

“C-Cheng Jianfeng...” The wolf demon simply dared not to look straight at the other, lowering his head. After a while he said: “Why are you telling us this?”

“Only to let you know that I'm not a person that enjoys killing by

any means.” Xu Yangyi said a tad bit ruefully and sighed: “Sometimes, some people choose the worst place at the worst time to appear before someone that they should show up to the least. That’s why he has a reason to kill.”

“If you don’t choose, I’m sorry. If you have some final testament, you can tell me now. I’ll deliver you to eternal slumber without suffering. I’ll also agree to help you complete your desires.”

The wolf demon’s lips shivered. He was still young. He hadn’t left the city, and he simply didn’t think of what a true cultivator was like. Now, in this year of 2019, he would remember this day for the rest of his life. He, had broadened his horizons on a true cultivator.

Merciless, yet sentimental. Only oneself as god, with no clear belief and respect to the deities. Forever, they held the greatest confidence in themselves. Any and all affairs that influenced their cultivation, so long as they didn’t violate their principles, would be cleanly handled.

He quite understood the kind of situation he was in right now.

Friendship? No, he had only seen one side, nothing more than a one-time cooperation. However, he knew of the other’s secret and the identities of the people hunting him down! Xu Yangyi had a hundred-and-one reasons to kill him.

If he was swapped with Xu Yangyi’s cultivation, then perhaps he would’ve already made a move while inside the toad’s stomach.

“I... am willing to swear allegiance...” Cheng Jianfeng gritted his teeth, white mist continuously exuding from his seven apertures. In a flash, an elaborate little wolf appeared before Xu Yangyi.

Xu Yangyi silently bit his finger and a drop of blood fell into the surface of the little wolf. Cheng Jianfeng shivered from head to toe, and a kind of indescribable sensation suddenly emerged within his spiritual sense. It seemed... like there were two thoughts in his

spiritual sense. He could vaguely feel the other, and likewise, the other existed within his spiritual sense.

Xu Yangyi closed his eyes. All was readied and he only had to wait several days to begin cultivating.

Four days later, within the forest.

Within the basement of a two-story cottage near a fish pond, Xu Yangyi looked at a lump of silver dust in his palm, muttering to himself.

Placing it under his nose and sniffing at it, a fresh aroma battered his senses. It was like a fragrance after a rainy spring day that could cause someone to stop in intoxication within a bamboo forest. However, this scent was even more simple and elegant, still ancient.

Using his forefinger to touch it, he placed it in his mouth for a taste. Entering his mouth and then transforming, raindrops seemed to come together as water. Yet in his mouth, it left behind a flavor even more refreshing than any chewing gum. It was as if all his taste buds had opened in a flash.

The basement didn't allow for wind to pass through. In barely three days, Li Zongyuan had bought it. Were it not for him, because this house was still being used for a pickled vegetable business, they had a sizeable basement as a result.

The space was seven hundred square feet and four meters high. Originally, it should've been a dusky space permeated with a strange odor. But now, a kind of fresh fragrance, that of a spring valley, pervaded the air. The ground was no longer the cheap slate of a peasant family, but rather installed with a layer of true wood flooring. On top, a layer of soft scarlet carpet was spread out. At first, the overhead was lit by fluorescent light, but had early on been exchanged with four or five crystal chandeliers. A few calligraphic pieces and paintings of unknown origin hung on the wall, appearing refined and tasteful.

Li Zongyuan nervously stood at the side. He had done all the decorating here and expended much thought into it. However, he was even more understanding it was Dew Congealing Grass that allowed for his survival. If these things couldn't please the fiend in front of him, then when the time came...

There was the possibility that in a long time from now, someone would discover a tremendous toad corpse around twenty to thirty meters in this basement...

“High grade.” Xu Yangyi took a box containing the powder and placed it at the side in satisfaction, nodding: “Dew Congealing Grass sprouts at midnight. As the first rays of the sun rise, the qi vanishes. In case it comes across a human body, it will immediately wither. It can only be grown in an extremely acidic place...”

Xu Yangyi glanced at Li Zongyuan: “I won't ask of your secret art. However, how did you establish this dimensional space within your stomach?”

“Master is resplendently brilliant.” Li Zongyuan's heart pounded and he swallowed his saliva, laughing wryly: “I've already been picking this Dew Congealing Grass that I cultivated for more than a decade. Canaries must be used to pick them, and then they are placed in a cold ice container... This is a delicate work...”

The implication from the toad to the human was clear. You want to cultivate? Only I can do these matters. I'm still quite useful! Don't kill me!

Xu Yangyi smiled. From the beginning, he never had the thought of killing the other. Compared with the Eternal Alchemy Canon, the life of the insignificant Li Zongyuan was not even worth a scrap of value.

“You have proven your worth.”

It was only when these words were spoken that Li Zongyuan felt his whole body relax. He nearly sat down on the ground,



paralyzed. Throughout the whole journey, only his heart was truly hanging! He had always strived with his best efforts to strike up relations. Only now did he feel his life had come back.

Next... was to see if the pact could be removed. Although the hope for it was quite uncertain, was the time still not long?

“And the others?” Xu Yangyi asked.

“They’ve gotten in touch with a school...” Li Zongyuan watched his expression and replied: “Mr. Xu, they’re still at the age of a junior in highschool... without a great teacher to guide cultivation, and since you’re also going to enter seclusion now, their best choice is but to rely on a cultivation university to seek advancement and wait for you to come out seclusion.”

Xu Yangyi nodded. Presently, he really didn’t have motivation to take care of the others, as well.

“Next, go buy several kinds of items for me.” He snapped his finger: “I speak, you write it down.”

After Li Zongyuan took out his cell phone, he nearly pricked his ears up to listen. Granted that he had much discontent in his heart, and furthermore the thought of escape, right now, he absolutely could not display a trace of it!

If it manifested, he was very certain that the young man he was speaking nicely with wouldn’t mind causing him to relive the nightmare of three years prior at all.

“Ten catties of Violet Yang Flower.”

“Ten catties of Imperial Heaven Wood tips.

“One cattie of Cinnabar Fruit peels.”

“Three catties of Pentascent Seeds.”

As Li Zongyuan recorded more of these vast raw materials that numbered over twenty, the suspicions in his heart became greater. These items seemed to be quite familiar... Where had he heard of

them?

“Got it?” Xu Yangyi’s voice rang out again, and Li Zongyuan immediately restrained his mind.

Coughing with a smile, he said: “I noted it all down. I’ll read it all out once more, and master can see whether or not anything was overlooked.”

“Ten catties of Violet Yang Flower, ten catties of Imperial Heaven Wood tips, a catty of Cinnabar Fruit, three catties of Pentascent Seeds... T-this!” Just as he recorded it, his attention scattered. He hadn’t paid it any mind, but now that he was reading it, and drawn a connection to the Dew Congealing Grass, a cold sweat exuded from his entire body in fright!

This was the formula for the Spirit Strengthening Pill Elixir!

The ancient formula still existed nowadays, merely the alchemy technique had disappeared! Clever modern cultivators had taken these pill methods and transformed them into pill elixirs or capsules.

Through a cultivator’s life, not many pill elixirs or capsules could be injected or consumed. The drug was somewhat poisonous, and although cultivation seemed quick, excessive pill elixir usage would lead to the medicinality in the pill elixir to choke up the meridians. Ultimately, the heavy accumulations were difficult to pull back from, and one’s cultivation stopped at some boundary.

However, the Dao of Alchemy was rich with several thousand years, a craft that wouldn’t cause people to fear the essential despite minor risk by any measure or pace!

Any modern grand exlixirist knew. Genuine pill elixir could be used frequently to restore the body’s injuries and cautiously raise one’s cultivation! However, there was a kind of pill elixir that all cultivators could not abstain from!

Pill elixir specialized for breakthroughs.

For example, Wang Buzhi had in his hand the world-shaking Hinayana Pill alchemy formula. Its ancient name was... the Foundation Establishment pill!

And there was also the Life-Death Reincarnation Pill once mentioned by Vermilion Snow. Its ancient name was the Core Formation Pill!

These were items that any cultivator would truly fight over! Especially those old undyings who were already confronted with death at the end of their lives, stranded in a position to break through to a great realm!

Spirit Strengthening Pill Elixir was among one of the kinds! Any cultivator assaulting a minor boundary would run into the “bodily limiter”. It was formless, yet material. Only by shattering it could the next boundary be entered.

The Spirit Strengthening Elixir increased the present solidification level of a cultivator’s spiritual sense. After it was used, the odds of breaking through contrasted ordinarily would increase by 10%!

Li Zongyuan looked at Xu Yangyi in stupefaction. The thoughts within his heart nearly changed in a flash! If, say, Xu Yangyi was an alchemist, then there wouldn’t be any harm in following the other! Not to mention being a demon familiar... he was even willing to be a personal pet!

“Any successful cultivator has an alchemist of thundering renown behind them.” This was a saying in the cultivation world, one that was absolutely not unfounded!

“M-Master...” He felt his voice crack. Before, his heart was filled with grievance and thoughts of escape, yet in a flash, they dissipated like smoke. For the first time, he called out ‘master’ with honest sincerity, his voice shaky: “Y-you’re an alchemist?”

“No.” Xu Yangyi said, thoroughly crushing his delusions: “I’m

only studying.”

The lofty expectation in Li Zongyuan’s heart, the kind of disappointment that was raised up high and then heavily thrown down, caused an unrestrainable smidgen of despair to emerge on his face. Clenching his teeth, he said: “Alchemists are required to go to the Alchemy Association’s ‘Pill Cauldron Corporation’ subsidiary to enroll. Did you go? Also, I’ve heard that aptitude is still going to be tested. Master... y-your neurons have opened?”

Xu Yangyi was faintly dazed; he didn’t understand these matters at all. Mumbling to himself for a moment, he said: “Go buy the items first and return. Tanshan City’s Bountiful Treasures Pavilion’s branch has them on sale.”

Li Zongyuan nearly spat out blood in his heart. What was this? This was the thought of trying out whether or not one could refine pills from seeing the majestic status of an alchemist! Every year, if there weren’t ten thousand such cultivators, there was sure to be eight thousand! These colonies of penguins were everywhere! There couldn’t be too many of these kinds of dimwitted ninnies!

The important point though was that this cost was still his money!

His fate was already joined together to Xu Yangyi’s, and spending money on cultivation really didn’t matter. Between a master and demon familiar, a master of high status wouldn’t mind advancing his demon familiar. However, wasn’t this a reckless waste of cash?

“The money isn’t enough...” His throat and even his diaphragm ached, and he secretly gritted his teeth: “I only have 10 million... The new car was 700,000, this house was 500,000... The basement remodel was 100,000... Master, a catty of Violetfire Flower is 200,000... Master, it really isn’t enough!”

“Our funds are only sufficient to concoct five times!”

## Chapter 75: Refining the Heart (2)

---

“Of course 10 million is insufficient.” Xu Yangyi quietly lit a cigarette, a smile yet not a smile scraping at the corner of his mouth: “But I can apply for the Pill Cauldron Corporation’s newcomer’s project aid.”

“Master!” Li Zongyuan was astonished, his mouth teeming with bitterness: “The applicant for this project must be an alchemist! Moreover, there has to be a definite result and project planning! The team size and the project progress! Computer-drafted design graphing and exhaustive data has to be offered to the Pill Cauldron Corporation for investigation, and each newcomer’s project aid represents several tens of thousand to even a million spirit stones! The regional CFOs of the Pill Cauldron Corporation will lead their team to personally estimate...”

“Are you reproaching me?”

Before Li Zongyuan’s voice even fell, Xu Yangyi’s smile yet not a smile caused Li Zongyuan’s entire body to grow cold. Xu Yangyi’s following words had completely corked his mouth. Choking on them for a couple seconds, he then laughed self-deprecatingly: “Little me dares not to. I only...”

Xu Yangyi moved to wave off his closing remarks with his hand. Xu Yangyi faintly furrowed his brows: “Don’t call yourself little, and don’t say master, too. It’s unpleasant to listen to; use proper names.”

“A couple years ago when I was resting, I watched a relaxing anime once in while.” He seemed to think back of a story and gently tapped the table: “There was [a toad called Bunta](#).”

“...Yes...”

“You’re only required to carry it out.” Xu Yangyi said without a trace of emotion: “There will never exist a pact of equality between

I and those not of my race.”

Li Zongyuan’s Adam’s apple shivered and he said lowly: “Understood.”

“How many idle cultivators are there in this village county?

Clearly recognizing his own status, Gamabunta... No, Li Zongyuan said softly: “Approximately several tens of people... Mast—Mr. Xu. Are you going to recruit them?”

“Recruit three people with a speciality in cultivation supplies statistics and cultivation time programming. Those from the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion take precedence. Also, bring me back a pill furnace, one of high quality. Go.”

“Mr. Xu...” Li Zongyuan swallowed his saliva and summoned his courage and asked: “Are you certain not a pill elixir vessel, medicine condensing device, and drug stirring tool?”

Xu Yangyi glanced at him, and Gamabunta immediately bowed at the waist, gritting his teeth: “It will be delivered in five hours.”

Li Zongyuan moved into action quickly. It was the afternoon right now. As night fell, a car had already brought the items back with three additional middle-aged cultivators.

“Zhang Gongchang.” A middle-aged cultivator looked at Xu Yangyi who was sitting upright in the middle and immediately recognized this was his employer. He bowed slightly: “Initial-stage Qi Condensation. I once did the statistics for the Bountiful Treasure Pavilion’s drug ingredients department.

“Li Mu. I was once an employee of the CSIB’s planning department. Initial-stage Qi Condensation.”

“Wang Chunlai. I’m a retired employee of the CSIB’s computer department. Initial-stage Qi Condensation.”

Xu Yangyi only nodded, his gaze falling on the half-a-person tall pill cauldron behind Li Zongyuan.

Pill cauldrons weren't expensive. Since the technique had already vanished, all of its related components only had a single value and that was collecting.

This pill cauldron was a four-legged cauldron, the surface carved with profound runes. There were five round holes on the body of the cauldron, split apart into five spirit objects of corresponding attribute. The inside of the cauldron was a thick black shell, however, there was no unusual scent at all, rather it emitted a dull medicinal fragrance of over a hundred interweaved medicines.

These were the medicine dregs... Xu Yangyi's gaze slightly fluctuated as it swept over the hard black shell. Was it not known where that ancient alchemist was today? To be capable of causing the pill cauldron to emit medicine dregs, his alchemy technique was bound to be a cut above. However, with the past several hundred years and that which had transpired in the last millennium, he had obtained this cauldron.

"What is its name." He looked at the medicine cauldron and asked indifferently.

"It has no name." Li Zongyuan laughed self-deprecatingly: "Mr. Xu, as you will."

Xu Yangyi walked over, gently stroking the cauldron: "Then... it will be called 'Origin'."

"One gives birth to two, two gives birth to three, and three gives birth to all beings. As all return to the beginning, all things are born anew. You aren't a three-legged cauldron, and through countless eras, you have arrived in my hands. This is also a rebirth of nature."

With a flick of his finger, the pill cauldron issued a droning just like that of a dragon's cry. He nodded his head in satisfaction.

"Without my demand, do not come in." He finished saying these words and picked up the pill cauldron in hand, walking towards

the cultivation room.

Watching Xu Yangyi walk to the room door, Zhang Gongchang stroked his chin and faced towards Li Zongyuan and laughed: ‘Fellow Daoist, are you unaware of what we’re going to do?’

“I don’t know!” Li Zongyuan’s expression sunk in a flash, his face so ashen that water could be wrung from it. 10 million... His many years of capital and holdings! In a single afternoon, it had been wiped out clean! Moreover, he even had to buy this useless hunk of junk!

Without testing the degree the neurons had activated, without a system of study, and without detailed arrangements, he, Xu Yangyi, actually dared to refine pill elixirs as such!

Presently, all the pill elixir manufacturing tools he was using were all produced from the most famous cultivation research institute, the Bright Truth Company. All that was required was for a cultivator to throw in the drug ingredient amount, and the devices would tune it to a hair. There wouldn’t be a loss of the refined pill elixir. The difference in medicinal efficacy could be completely viewed in an alchemist’s two hands, and the neurons could sense how much there was of the drug ingredients. A tenth of a percent more or a tenth of a percent less, there was quite the possibility of two kinds of results!

This was already under the situation that alchemy techniques had died out. The pinnacle of what modern cultivators could accomplish.

And as for Xu Yangyi?!

He had zilch! Yet he dared to refine pills in such a manner! Even using a most ancient pill cauldron! Where would the hygiene certification for pill elixirs refined like this be obtained? Who was willing to test the quality?

Even though his wish to escape was uncertain, looking on



helplessly at such a waste of his money was practically like a blade cutting apart his heart!

“Bunta.”

“Yes! Yes! Do you have instruction?” Li Zongyuan’s extreme misgivings of moments ago were thoroughly vanquished at the sound of this voice, the expression on his face piled with a slow smile like it was conjured.

Xu Yangyi stood before the door, looking at him with a hollow smile: “Remember, you still have another matter to do. I hope by the time I come out of seclusion that you have some development.”

“Understood!” Li Zongyuan knew that what was being spoken about was the matter of the chest.

The door rang out with a thud as it shut. Li Zongyuan breathed in deeply a couple times, the pain of dripping blood in his heart dissipating. An expression of a smile heaped on his face and clenched teeth existed simultaneously, and he said awkwardly: “Mr. Xu... seems to be going to refine pill elixir. Your duty is to record the wear and tear of drug ingredients, classification, accuracy to zero-point-something grams, and the time required for failed furnaced pills... please.”

As he said please, his teeth gnashed in fury. An alchemist was a sunk cost; there wasn’t enough money to fill it! How many alchemists were there that went hungry before they grasped talents? Sold their own blood to buy medicine ingredients?

Restraining the anger in his stomach, on the contrary, he dared not to let it flare out. Furthermore, his name had been inexplicably changed! He clenched his teeth and walked up stairs.

Below, the three cultivators looked at each other in dismay.

“Alchemy?” Several seconds later, Zhang Chunlai looked towards Xu Yangyi’s tightly sealed room like he had seen a ghost: “Pill furnace? Did I not see that incorrectly?”

“Hehe... I almost thought I saw it mistakenly, a pill furnace to refine pills... This?”

“Say a few words less.” Li Mu sighed, pouring a cup of water thoughtfully: “Cultivators and demons have a dove faction and a hawk faction. The dove faction pays special interest to the development of equality, and the hawk faction cares for hard-line treatment... All of us are from the dove faction. Since we’ve accepted this work, then it’s regardless of who posted it. In any case, we’ve also taken a few hundred grand in hand.”

The trio spoke no longer, finding places to sit down in succession and starting the portable computers they had brought with them.

Xu Yangyi pushed open the basement door and walked in. This basement had been separated in two halves. One half was a living room and the other half was a cultivation room. Naturally, this was his exclusive cultivation room.

He looked at the surrounding fixtures in satisfaction. The pill furnace had already been placed before him.

Stone, everything was stone. The inside of the room was built with the hardest stone. After that, there was also a great amount of soundproof materials added on. It appeared quite simple and crude, yet it really was in accord with his soundproof and shockproof requests.

As he had said, he was of the pragmatic faction. White cat or black cat, a cat that caught a rat was a good cat. The process was of no significance. What was important was the result. It seemed he simply didn’t mind things like collaborating with humans or demons. Sitting down on the ground, he closed his eyes and his mind entered meditation. His spirit condensed in his qi sea, and in a flash, the Eternal Alchemy Canon appeared once again in his mind.

“Immortals are divided into nine ranks, paths divided into [three vehicles](#). The Dao of Alchemy is one way, deep and profound.

Ancient cultivators differentiated those who had refined a thousand Qi Condensation medicinal pills, and made less than two errors, as elementary pill disciples.”

At this moment, a great voice clearly resonated within his mind. Both of his eyes shimmered, and he immediately gathered his mind to the extreme and carefully continued to listen.

“Refine the way a thousand times, and its meaning will be self-evident. According to this arcane effort, this is the refining of a thousand pills or the attainment of the Great Circle of Qi condensation. Seek a chance for Foundation Establishment. A Qi Condensation pill is elementary craftsmanship in the Great Dao of Pills. The abundance of Qi Condensation medicinal pills a master can refine is different from a pill disciple. The way of pills is profound. One that can rouse seventy percent of the medicinality is called a envoy pill. Eighty percent, an assistant pill. Ninety percent, a minister pill. A hundred percent, a monarch pill.”

“A single monarch pill is equal to a hundred envoy pills. Thus, the Dao of Alchemy is boundless, the path so entered by monarch, minister, assistant, and envoy. Daolord [Ge Hong](#), an ancient cultivator of the Eastern Jin, once again innovated in his book, *The Master Who Embraces Simplicity*, of an emperor pill that had a hundred-and-twenty percent of medicinal efficacy above the monarch pill. Beyond the emperor pill was the titled sovereign pill. Surpassing the sovereign pill was the primordial pill. The end after the primordial pill, its name was... to create something from nothing, a mirage.”

Xu Yangyi tightly shut both of his eyes, the sliver of a stray thought ceased to be. Never did he expect in his wildest imagination that in the instant the pill cauldron appeared before him, a kind of deep connection would emerge as if it was the world. The *Eternal Alchemy Canon* surprisingly began to explain a general outline of the scripture!

The so-called general program was the outline for a part of the

arcane effort and its spirit. He didn't understand what he wanted to study, but he wished to learn. Yet that which was studied was merely the wooden word-by-word reading of a secular scholar removed from the world.

The so-called scripture explanation was a person of high capability matched with a dull beginner student, taking these concepts and crumbling them to lecture another. It wasn't memorized and used, but rather the understanding to truly make a person understand was placed within the heart..

His hand carved a picture on the ground with great striving. This matter had occurred suddenly, and he hadn't made any preparation, while the Eternal Alchemy Canon hadn't displayed notice whatsoever. However, in that twinkling, he arrived at a decision.

Strength passing through his fingertips, and he drew robust and vibrant details on the ground. He didn't know whether things would still be explained later, and he moreover didn't have the time to know who was explaining, however, this opportunity could not be relinquished!

“Of the realms of the Dao of Alchemy, the first layer is the western wind of yesternight blowing on the withered verdant trees, to stand alone atop a tall building and gaze towards the end of heaven's path. [This is a Pill Disciple.](#)”

The second layer is the gradual broadening of the sash to an unrepentant end. For she, a man will grow wan and sallow. [Cultivators of this realm are Pill Experts.](#)”

“The third layer is to seek through the crowd in a myriad motions to search for her in nought. With a sudden turn back, one finds her where the lantern light dimly wanes. [This is an Artisan.](#)”

“The fourth layer is the inseparability of two hearts beating as one, like a phoenix without its two vibrant wings. [This is a Master.](#)”

“The fifth layer is where the jade sleeve splits through joss all around, the bright pen giving birth to a flower in a familiar dreamland. [This is a Grandmaster.](#)”

“The sixth layer is the minor skill to just idly chat and delight, none the wiser I am an immortal. To take nature as master and follow. [This is... a Pill Lord.](#)”

“Engrain it into the mind, only a Pill Lord’s methods can challenge to create something from nothing, else not, the concept will fall apart. Irrevocable in retrieval.”

Scribble scribble scribble... Xu Yangyi’s finger cut notes into the ground with the utmost effort. After these words ended, there was eventually no longer even the sound of half of a breath. Yet just as he paused his hand, a grand noise like a bell chime rang out again.

“The Eternal Alchemy Canon enlightens: set free the medicine song. Congeal the pill with the four abilities. Control the secrets of the fire. Complete the pill in the essential way.”

The name was terrifying in a simple and crude manner, yet Xu Yangyi didn’t have the least bit of carelessness, rather his expression was incomparably solemn.

In history... these four things were what was lost to the cultivation world!

In true alchemy, each step had to inwardly conform with heaven and earth. Which worldly treasure had to be put in first and which one had to be put in last? Which ingredients would produce what reaction? What kind of situation would arise because temperature was insufficient or control was imprecise? There was a possibility it was one kind or several kinds. These circumstances had to be understood in the heart.

Congealing a pill was to refine each respective essence of the ingredients, form it into an orb, and how to cause their qi energies not to clash. It was the section on how to whittle away at the

minute conflicts into a single piece. The completion of the pill was how to tenderly nurture this piece and condense it into a crystal. Even still, the importance of controlling the fire was of the highest order.

Even if one section was amiss, and granted that the other three steps were known, this Dao legacy could only be gazed and sighed at.

For those unaware, this is a reference to the giant toad in the anime Naruto called Gamabunta.

Just a quick note I wanted to make. The word vehicle here is interesting to use, especially the number three. The idea of “vehicle”, at least in the texts that I am familiar with, refers to the three vehicles of Buddhism: Theravada, Mahayana, and Vajrayana. This sentence might also be referring to Daoism, Buddhism, and Confucianism themselves though.

Ge Hong is a real scholar from the Jin dynasty (283-343). Perhaps his most famous work, Baopuzi, is a collection of works that talk about immortality, alchemy, elixirs, and demons.

The flowery writing in this sentence is part of poem by a scholar from the Song dynasty, Yan Shu. The poem is called “Butterfly Loves Flower”.

Poem here is from a Song dynasty poet named Liu Yong. I know I worded it quite vaguely, but this line of the poem refers to how a man will waste away for a woman he loves because she is worthy of it.

Poem from Song dynasty poet Qin Xiji.

Poem from Tang dynasty poet Li Shangyin.

Poem from Yuan dynasty poet Tang Shunmin (circa 14th and 15th century) Some background on this poem. Although Tang Shunmin wrote this, it is referring to the Poet Li Bai whose writing skill was so great that he dreamt he drew a flower in a dream.

Poem from Tang Dynasty Chancellor Lu Yan.

## Chapter 76: Refining the Heart (3)

---

“These four secret arts are altogether four divine abilities. Therefore, they are the foundation of the Dao of Alchemy’s myriad ways. I must remember this, no matter the cost.”

Swish... Xu Yangyi’s finger finally stopped. After he waited no less than half an hour, not a trace of a voice rang out. He then opened his eyes.

The black floor was already filled with white scratches. His surroundings were dense with characters. If a modern pill elixirist saw this, they would’ve most certainly madly fell to their knees, prostrating these ancient marvels.

He inhaled deeply and his gaze was somewhat bloodshot because of the excitement in his heart. Absent of a second word, he opened the door, and with strength coursing through his fingertips, six large characters appeared astonishingly on the stone door.

Trespassers will be killed without pardon!

Apart from him, no one else could be allowed to see the things inside! The jaws of the three people outside fell to the ground as they watched this scene.

“What is this?” Li Mu was shocked as the door opened and closed. Regarding the large characters on the door, he said bafflingly: “Is he mad...”

“Doesn’t matter, we just take the money and go with it... All alchemy nutjobs have problems anyways.” Zhang Gongchang looked at his personal computer as he scrolled a web page indifferently.

Within the cultivation room, Xu Yangyi cautiously looked at the front of the large cauldron, listening to the magnificent voice expound this most fundamental arcane effort word for word.

The Fire Manipulation Art, the Wind Brandishes Traces.



To speak of controlling fire was in fact to manipulate the wind. Any cultivator could make a fireball out of thin air. This was the most common flame that the most ordinary cultivator used at the beginning of alchemy.

His spiritual sense was like threads of silk, stretching out all around. Circulating the arcane effort, he quickly then felt the direction of the wind flow. It was different from a normal flow. He could even feel the rushing movement of qi currents inside the windless cultivation room as they neared his body, forming unseen vortices.

“My neurons have surely been unleashed...” He inwardly thought to himself in his mind: “After I originally killed that berserker I had already become accustomed to that sensation of seemingly viewing a new world. For example...”

He opened his eyes and narrowed them as he looked around, muttering: “There’s no way the past me would’ve been able to see the flow of these qi currents... even incapable of winning the paragonship in the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena. However, after that...”

He silently clenched his fist. It was now that he discovered this already accustomed feeling granted him many advantages! For instance, in shadowy surroundings, it was equal to him having many more countless sets of eyes vigilant for him from sneak attacks in the dark.

“Now...” He inhaled deeply, suddenly revolving the arcane effort.

The wind brandishes traces, the blowing snow cleaves the bridge, and the clouds perch upon pine.

In an instant, he distinctly felt the surrounding wind move. As if he had become a magnet, at this moment, the surrounding air was completely drawn to him like metal! His all-encompassing spiritual sense “feelers” were like invisible helpers, manipulating the surrounding wind. The slivers poured into the furnace fire within

the cauldron.

Simultaneously, his right hand gently waved, and a scarlet flame crackled in ignition inside the cauldron. Xu Yangyi's gaze was calm as usual, carefully watching the skip of each flame. The Wind Brandishes Traces was required to attain the most fundamental alchemic requirement, to make the flames within a six hour period to not decrease and moreover not increase.

In the way of alchemy, the intensity of the fire was the whole cornerstone of pill refining. When the fire was great and when the fire was small, if these matters were incorrect at a single step, the requirements would not be met. Precious heavenly treasures could only be completely squandered.

The Wind Brandishes Traces, as the name implied, was to take all wind traces and draw them into the blaze via the spiritual sense. This was the Fire Manipulation Art. Xu Yangyi carefully manipulated the trajectory of each trace of wind, prudently pushing them towards the flame. However...

The flame pulsed about rather obviously. This was evidently an unfamiliar omen. He didn't care; in any matter, it was impossible to ascend to the heavens in a single bound. At the same time, as he controlled the wind power, he was performing the first counting: to see how long he was capable of persevering.

From the scripture explanation of moments ago, he already understood that in ancient alchemy, a Qi Condensation medicinal pill would take around fifteen days, a Foundation Establishment one at least two months. For Core Formation, a year was standard. As for that beyond... there wasn't any record.

That was to also say that he presently had to maintain at least twenty-five days worth of energy. Only then he could consider to begin to take the next step. This was because he was unclear whether these fifteen days were talking about a skilled pill disciple or a novice like him.

One hour, two hours... three hours passed by. The flame before him swooshed and was thoroughly extinguished. As for he himself, his back was already drenched with cold sweat. He stood up, taking a long sigh.

“It’s even more difficult than I imagined.” He narrowed his eyes, looking at the suddenly darkened cultivation room. This time’s failure was within his forecast. Not only was he not a bit dispirited, there was an even more fiery expectation!

This was an alchemy technique. An alchemy technique lost to the world for a century! So long as he brought forth a pill, the entire cultivation would go mad for it! Pill elixirs and capsules, both were simply incapable of preventing the problem of medicinal volatility, options of last resort!

“Proceed!” He gaze flashed. Absent of ideas of rest, he rather immediately threw himself again into training the Fire Manipulation Art’s Wind Brandishes Traces.

After all, in the Eternal Alchemy Canon, alchemy was cultivation. His great hatred was still unavenged, and he couldn’t even discover a shadow of his hated foe. His promise to Firecloud was also uncompleted, and there was also Su Lian Yue’s promise back then. If he even considered stopping, he would be unable to make it through this seclusion.

A day went by, two days passed... a month... two months... half a year...

Apart from coming outside to eat everyday, Xu Yangyi seemed to live in the stone room, seeing no one at all.

“Is he crazy?” The weather had already changed to spring’s end, and all things were flourishing with vitality. Not to mention Li Zongyuan, even the three cultivators were incapable of containing their nervousness. This was because the time that Xu Yangyi left seclusion was becoming longer and longer. There were too many times that he actually required the aid of Fasting Pill Elixir.

Furthermore... each time he left seclusion, while his mental state was well, the condition of his entire person was awfully poor!

Even now, his hair had transformed from short locks to a shawl that trailed over his shoulders. He disliked this inconvenience, so he had tied his hair into a braid. If he was also wearing a narrow-sleeved long gown of the olden days, he would be like a living incarnation of an ancient cultivator in the modern world.

There were holes that appeared on his body's clothing. In a flash, he seemed yet not to smell. Each time he left seclusion, he would finish eating and bathe, using a Cleansing Talisman to wash, and then enter the cultivation room once more.

"Fellow Daoist Li... say, what's up with Fellow Daoist Xu?" Another month passed, and Zhang Gongchang couldn't bear to ask: "What... is he doing inside?"

Li Zongyuan shook his head, bitterness stretching across his face. In this half a year, his capital had long since been wiped out clean. Fortunately, the market demand for Dew Congealing Grass was great, capable of supporting them. Otherwise, even the wages of the three people couldn't be issued.

However, what were these three people counting? They had originally come to do statistics, but none dared to enter the door that bore the six large characters of "trespassers will be killed without mercy" on it.

And he still had to fork over their salary of several hundred thousand per month by the person!

The dissatisfaction in his heart towards Xu Yangyi and the unspeakable hatred in his bones had reached an absolute stage of teeth-gnashing rage.

"It won't do for this to continue..." Li Mu sighed: "Fellow Daoist Li, we want to cultivate, too. We had originally planned to make a quick buck in your place. However, at most, once another two

years go by, we'll have no choice but to bid farewell."

"In the opening and closing of a cultivator's eyes, many years and moons usually past. If Fellow Daoist Xu is in seclusion for three to five years, isn't that the same as us waiting on him for three to five years?" Wang Chunlai said somewhat reluctantly: "I also haven't cultivated in more than half a year... In the struggle of all things, without advance, there can only be retreat. Fellow Daoist Li, after this month's bill is settled, I'm going to have to take a temporary leave."

Li Zongyuan was eager for them to leave now! Nonetheless, without Xu Yangyi's word, he simply dared not to play the master.

"Since that's how it is, then I won't stay much more, as well..." He put on an act and said: "It's still not known when Fellow Daoist Xu's cultivation..."

Creak... Following the rasp of a stone door, a stone door that hadn't been opened in more than a month opened once more. Xu Yangyi walked out with a hale and hearty spirit, but his outward exterior couldn't be ventured to be praised.

A scraggly beard already graced his face, and although it seemed give him an even manlier air, because of his skin that had seen the light few times, the present whiteness was somewhat frightening. Even his eyes seemed to be faintly reddened—anyone who looked at fire for many years was like this. Under this contrast though, he appeared to be fairly incongruous. The word "terrible" could be completely used to describe his entire person.

Merely his eyes were like starfire in the night, luminously frightening. There wasn't a single trace of a dispirited aura on his whole being, as well. Similar to wild grass in the wilderness, his spirit was blooming.

Without a second word, the gaze of Zhou Tingting who was at the side flashed, and she immediately ran up, pounding the staircase and came back holding a large table of dishes. Xu Yangyi glanced at

her, not saying anything, only slightly nodding his head and taking big bites from a bowl.

He ate with much gusto that left behind a remaining breeze, silent. Zhou Tingting pursed her lips. These were dishes that she meticulously learned how to prepare, however, she was quite rational, not speaking a word.

Thud... Xu Yangyi gently put down his chopsticks and picked up a napkin to wipe his mouth. He faced towards everyone and nodded, heading back into the cultivation room again. Cultivation was like this. After the eyes closed, the azure sea would turn to mulberry fields. Perhaps it wasn't a loneliness of the body, but rather a loneliness of the spirit. Any cultivator understood that only by enduring the loneliness could the long ages be guarded against.

As the eyes shut it was 2016. As the eyes opened, it was already 2026. Such a situation was far, far too many. The simultaneous sorrow of the whiteness of clouds turning to the grayness of dogs and the vicissitudes of current trends realized an even more formidable power within the body. It was thereupon in this feeling that [how was one to know of a fish's delight if you weren't a fish?](#)

I am not you, of course I am unaware of you. Success and failure are determined. Gains and losses, all care for the heart. So long as the heart perseveres, my true self is discerned, and in addition to all kinds of destinies in my possession, I will be able to ascend to that supreme Core Formation throne.

20% talent, 30% fortune, and 50% sweat. Any lord that stood upon the throne of Core Formation were all inhumans of absolute willpower and unflagging wisdom! Of cultivation, refining was to take nature as one's master and follow, while also the refining of one's own heart.

Half a year of seclusion was just in the details.

"Mas... Mr. Xu! A moment!" Just at this time, Li Zongyuan

anxiously opened his mouth: “The Fasting Pill Elixir is finished!”

Xu Yangyi halted in step, not speaking for a long time. He even felt his tongue turn somewhat stiff. Pausing for five seconds, he said indifferently: “Buy it.”

Li Zongyuan nearly spat out a mouthful of blood!

Buy?! Who would buy it?! What about the money? Don’t you know that while you pay no attention to outside matters, I have to earn the money here to support the family?!

Every kind of curse and swear word tangled about in his heart, the expression on his face wishing to curse yet also at a loss. Several seconds later, a cordial smile piled on once again: “Mr. Xu, can we take a chance to step out and talk?”

This fish line is a famous line from a conversation between Zhuangzi and Huizi. They are above a bridge on the Hao River talking about the joy of being a fish, which Huizi remarks “well, how can you know the fish is happy?” when Zhuangzi remarks that swimming in the water is a fish’s delight.

# Chapter 77: A Millennium-Old Demon

---

Xu Yangyi nodded, following Li Zongyuan and walking towards the outside of the door. At this time, he was suddenly struck by a stroke of inspiration. He put to use Wind Brandishes Traces once again, so familiar that he could even perform it in his sleep.

In a twinkling, the air around him unexpectedly produced slight tremblings. Subsequently, he only felt his body lighten. In the space of nearly the stirring of a thought, he arrived at the door!

“Pfft!” Zhang Gongchang, who just happened to be drinking tea, almost sprayed it out.

Click! Just as he was about to click his mouse, Li Mu’s hand stopped, and he looked at Xu Yangyi in astonishment.

Zhou Tingting opened her mouth wide, gently covering it. Her eyes nearly fell out.

Li Zongyuan’s expression was as usual, merely his body seemed to be like this, his soul yet to return to his body. He even maintained his “inviting” gesture, yet his whole head was looking towards Xu Yangyi’s location.

Fast! Extremely fast!

A moment ago, everyone only heard a sound. In the air, it appeared to produce a light, momentary buzzing. In the next second, Xu Yangyi was already standing at the door! In the 700-meter-sized basement... from where they were, there was still a distance from the door of over a hundred meters!

What was this speed?

“Gulp...” Zhang Gongchang swallowed his saliva, his hand trembling as he stood up. He he had seen quite clearly that Xu Yangyi was at the initial stage of Qi Condensation. Yet this kind of speed... was something that a number of middle-stage cultivators couldn’t wish of attaining! Perhaps even late-stage cultivators



would have trouble!

Thus... was he borrowing the name of alchemy to cultivate an arcane effort?

What kind of goddamn perverted arcane effort was this?! Among initial-stage cultivators, this speed was in the defiance of the heavens! However, if not for alchemy... why recruit them? Too much cash to burn?

“Master...” Under the spell of shock, the title that Li Zongyuan hadn’t yelled in more than half a year couldn’t be helped but to be shouted once again: “Y-you’re...”

However, no one paid attention to his address. Because everyone was looking at Xu Yangyi in astonishment. This was strength, a strength displayed before everyone!

Xu Yangyi didn’t answer him at all, but rather his gaze fluctuated as he looked at his foot. He himself felt shock. Within his heart, there was an accompanied pleasant surprise and a feeling that the bitterness had come to an end and the sweetness was beginning. Ultimately, all kinds of complex emotions transformed into placid waters.

Long solitary had tempered his heart simultaneously. It caused his heart to be slowly carved into a boulder. A cold pond. Joy or fury were not given form in color, unexcited by billowing waves.

Heavens Law didn’t give them an opportunity to meditate; the harvests of the first meditation were the greatest.

It could be the the most dreadful foe facing all people in the path of cultivation. It wasn’t a heart devil and it wasn’t external force. It wasn’t other cultivators, and it moreover wasn’t a lofty genius in the same stage.

Rather... it was loneliness.

It was startling. The direct use of the Wind Brandishes Traces as a divine ability brought a swiftness that he didn’t dare to imagine!

It was delightful. As expected from this divine ability explained by the Eternal Alchemy Canon. He understood now why he had never heard an explanation of any divine ability from this arcane effort. While the Eternal Alchemy Canon spoke of controlling fire, medicine placement order, congealing the pill, and forming the pill as divine abilities, the present move was his steep increase in confidence towards this arcane effort.

It was just as expected, it ought to be as such... The Burning Heavens Revelation of a Core Formation master was merely a minor section of the Eternal Alchemy Canon. If this arcane effort wasn't a true immortal craft, why the heck was he cultivating it?

"What's the matter?" He looked at Li Zongyuan who was as dumb as a wooden chicken and raised a brow and asked. He kept on feeling something was off, and he faintly furrowed his brows. With a gentle beckon of his hand, the pack of cigarettes on the other's chest easily floated over. Xu Yangyi's lighter ignited with a click, and a familiar flavor roved into his chest. He inhaled deeply and heard Li Zongyuan's intimately reverent voice.

"Master, there are important matters that I hope you can find some time from your busy schedule to take a look at."

Xu Yangyi raised a brow, indicating him to continue speaking.

"It's like this." At this moment, Li Zongyuan was especially deferential, lowering his head and saying: "Master, the affair you entrusted to me is done." He pursed his lips as he glanced at Xu Yangyi, his heart beating wildly.

In the past, it could be said he was still capable of struggling. But now... he simply didn't dare to think of this question!

Xu Yangyi's speed from moments ago could even make middle-stage cultivators who saw it blush with shame! Perhaps only a true son of heaven's pride was able to stand shoulder with him!

Before, he still bore the desire of escape within his heart, but at

this instant, these thoughts unconsciously turned lesser bit by bit. His attitude also wasn't that of feigned respect, but rather genuine allegiance.

Not saying anything for ages, Xu Yangyi presently felt a kind of "human" feeling fall on his body. Stroking his chin, his finger like a razor, strands of his beard came fluttering down. He said indifferently: "Who did you find?"

"Yes..." Li Zongyuan's head was wet with cold sweat. He simply dared not to look at the other's face, his voice soft.

Xu Yangyi swept an eye over him, and Li Zongyuan immediately responded: "I-i-it's a... a... possible, possible Core Formation Greater Demon..."

In a flash, he instantly felt the other's gaze land on his body, like solid thunder and lightning, causing his whole body to break out in a cold sweat! Too frightening... His heart sped up into wild palpitations. In the past, Xu Yangyi was possibly still a mere fierce tiger that had left the mountain. Now, while the fierce tiger had curbed its might, it caused people to feel an even greater trembling within their hearts!

Zhang Gongchang, Li Mu, and the others watched both of Li Zongyuan's legs shiver. The muscle at the corners of their eyes seemed to be also shivering in wake. They didn't know whether or not if they would fare any better before Xu Yangyi.

"A possibility?" Xu Yangyi sat down on a chair, still not opening his mouth. A cup of tea was respectfully placed at the side of his hand. He pursed it to his lips; all the taste buds at the tip of his tongue opened. He clicked his tongue in satisfaction: "I hope you're not mistaken in this matter."

"No, no, no!" Li Zongyuan bounced up like a pincushion and said promptly: "Mister, I really don't know. I-I also changed direction on the road to specifically come here after you said so."

“You aren’t a demon; among the demons, besides Blackmountain, Mountainlord, and Droughtbringer who are recorded to be at Core Formation, there also at least three others that can be titled as ‘ancestors’. They cannot be absolutely, categorically provoked!”

“This time, it was one of them that I sought out for assistance... No one has seen It fully activate an arcane effort, and there isn’t a person whatsoever that is aware of Its realm. Not once has It ever put on airs in front of people... Regardless of Qi Condensation and Foundation Establishment, It even treats both in the same kind of manner. Rumor has it that It also treats Core Formation with such manner.”

Xu Yangyi laughed, setting down his teacup: “Interesting.”

Xu Yangyi raised his chin, hinting for the other to continue, and Li Zongyuan promptly said: “In Mingshui Province... there is a special place called the Four Great Joint Pools. Because of the tremors of the Earth’s crust, five lakes linked together to become one. In the middle, there is a dormant volcano that accumulates water inside year round. That ancestor dwells inside it...”

“How long it has lived is unknown. Legend says that it has been alive since the era of the Five Dynasties and Ten Kingdoms. It is also said that it had witnessed the revolt of [Emperor Taizu of the Song](#)... It is titled the Demon’s Encyclopedia, and moreover It is of the dove faction. Nearly all humans at Foundation Establishment and above have heard of Its name. Its Daoist name is Jadewave, yet it is without appellation. Never has It been heard to style itself as a Dao Master, but everyone mutually addresses it as senior.”

“Each year, countless people find it to solve puzzles. It has set down a single rule; if It isn’t interested, then five-fold of the decryption expense of the puzzle will be collected. Furthermore, It doesn’t accept Chinese currency, but it takes all kinds of precious stones. If It takes interest, then It’ll do it for free, however, a single condition of Its will have to be agreed to.”

Li Zongyuan didn't speak, glancing stealthily at Xu Yangyi. Xu Yangyi was silent for a brief moment and then said: "Based on what you can see, what's Its cultivation?"

"I can't say..." Li Zongyuan laughed wryly: "For demons, the stronger the demon form, the harder it'll be to advance... I'm not aware, but has mister ever heard of the demon's Ming Clan?"

"No." Xu Yangyi shook his head. Heavens Law wouldn't deeply delve into teaching these things. What it had forever taught was how to allow you to continue surviving.

"Mister, a long time ago, when Subei Province was still the State of Pei, King Wen Mou encountered a voice telling him that it was god while he was living in seclusion in the mountains. However, Wen Mou felt the other was a demon playing tricks and chased the other away. This demon that called himself god was the primogenitor of the Ming Clan... Afterwards, they actually took on the stylings of gods, and each appointed clan master and the successive clan master would all call themselves [God Ming](#)."

"Their demon forms are unknown, and there are only some rumors... Nonetheless, it is said the rank is rather high. Their advancements are much more difficult than ours... A great majority of their clan masters in the end linger at the middle and late stages of Foundation Establishment for their entire lives. If I haven't remembered incorrectly, even now, the Ming Clan hasn't produced a Great Circle Foundation Establishment cultivator in several centuries. However, regardless of whoever it is, none dare to disdain them."

"This is because... at the late stage of Foundation Establishment, they can rock Core Formation... Likewise, there isn't anybody who knows of Senior Jadewave's true body... The appearance It takes each time It appears is different... If Its true body is incredibly powerful... granted that several thousand years have passed, there's a possibility It's not even Foundation Establishment..."

Xu Yangyi flicked the table ruefully. In the world's grandness, there was nothing too bizarre. This was the true world! A world that ordinary people would eternally be incapable of imagining! Perhaps traveling tourists in the environment never would've expected that in a lake within a volcano beneath their feet, there was a thousand-year-old demon, freely swimming at the lake bottom

How marvelous was such a truth!

His gaze suddenly glimmered. He recalled that endless scale inside the lotus pond and the tremendous tail that blotted out the sky and concealed the earth.

What... was that demon? How long had it lived? A thousand years? Two thousand years? Perhaps... even longer?

In the world's great rivers and vast mountains, what was the number of tremendous monsters that were struggling on their final breaths in hiding?

In the Chongqing Municipality, the world's number one Heavenly Pit was so deep that the bottom couldn't be seen... The Paracel Islands' Dragon Hole, the world's deepest underwater sinkhole... The Kunlun Mountains' Death Valley that none had ever come out from... Guizhou Province's subterranean cavern, the deepest in the entire world...

His heart was lit aflame, surging with a matchless expectation for the true world's mysteries.

"Master, it has already received your decryption commission."

Xu Yangyi collected his emotions, and his expression finally turned cautious.

Emperor Armament.

What was an Emperor Armament? It was capable of making the nine-tailed silver fox Vermilion Snow not even dare to desire Core Formation, sending her into furious retreat.

Sure enough... this item was capable of drawing the focus of far too many people.

“Does it have the certainty to solve the mystery?” Xu Yangyi asked gravely.

Emperor Taizu of Song lived from 927-976

God Ming = 明神. Can also be translated as Bright God/Bright Spirit etc.

These are all real places. I believe this deepest cavern is called the Miao Room.

# Chapter 78: The Middle Stage of Qi Condensation (1)

---

“Master, according to what I know, the number of commissions accepted by Senior Jadewave is approximately several tens, Qi Condensation and Foundation Establishment ones. However, under the premise the senior is interested, there is another, and that is a commission only it can solve. Moreover, no matter the cultivator, the senior won’t covet the commission.”

Xu Yangyi took Li Zongyuan’s proffered Fasting Capsule: “This is the last?”

“Master... I’ll find another way.”

Xu Yangyi nodded: “Wait one more month for me. In a month, I will personally go to the Four Great Joint Pools.”

“Yes!”

He stood up and took a Cleansing Talismans to bathe his body, stepping into the cultivation room without a second glance.

Such an old monster... He didn’t believe for a second that the counterpart’s strength was inadequate. It dared so fearlessly to accept decryption expense from all parties, abstaining from neither human nor demon. This wasn’t It being reckless, but rather the other possessed such confidence! Even though It persevered for a millennia, content with Its place, Xu Yangyi still had to make absolute preparations.

Sitting before the pill furnace, he needed to wait for a month because... he was on the verge of breaking through!

Back then, he ought to have broken through, yet an unknown person imperceptibly interrupted him. While a Qi Condensation cultivator wouldn’t suffer damage to their foundation, the one breaking through would lose a portion of their qi.



Absent of Heavens Law's conditions, it took him more than half a year to refine this qi back once more. Following the growing proficiency of Wind Brandishes Traces, he could also feel simultaneously a kind of full swelling within his dantian become increasingly apparent!

The Fire Manipulation Art was an elementary arcane effort of the Eternal Alchemy Canon. Once it was mastered, the other arts no longer required as much time. Before the veil of solving the Emperor Armament, to gain another hidden ace was just a hidden ace. He didn't have to cultivate right away, but by peacefully sitting in this secret room, he could arrange his thoughts.

"Money is never saved, but rather spent..." He seemed to soliloquize to himself: "To open a water source, but control the flow, the open source forever before the throttle. Rather than skimp out and live frugally, it's better to put forth an imposing style in collaborating with others."

"No matter who it is. Be they demon, human, or cultivator. So long as the heart is unswerving, how are the comments of the world's peoples related to myself?"

The world's peoples laugh at my madness, I laugh at them because they cannot see through.

Carrying the trace of a smile, he shut his eyes, and his spiritual sense erupted with a rumble! After the passage of half a year of bitter refining, his spiritual sense like that of a tide seemed to be a myriad tentacles, wildly extending within the room!

Compared to half a year ago when he had begun training, it had expanded by a tenth at the minimum! If this figure was spoken of, it would surely cause other cultivators to go mad! This was equivalent to a gratuitous qi absorption rate of over a tenth!

Inside the cultivation room, his meticulous spiritual sense could almost be considered to appear like fine hairs. Sensing the fruit of his half a year of hard work, the solitary and loneliness scattered

away like ash in an instant. All that remained was only the gratification of his strength rising to a higher level.

There was no delay whatsoever. He manipulated the entirety of his spiritual sense, and in the space of a twinkling, pulled all the surrounding air into the suddenly ignited flame beneath the furnace. Closing his eyes, he carefully manipulated each sliver of spiritual sense. He was rather moved because of the ancient cultivation alchemy technique.

Not only had the mere Wind Brandishes Traces tempered the solidification rate of his spiritual sense, but it had even furthered the degree of attentiveness! He was very understanding of his own body. The progress of this half a year was even faster than two or three years at Heavens Law! If not, because of the one-time consumption of so much qi to advance, it would've been impossible of him to refine it back in half a year.

He learned how to exercise spiritual force with extreme precision, not using a bit less and by no means using a bit more. Furthermore, it tempered his hard-obtained meticulousness, multitasking ability, and his manipulation of spiritual sense to draw upon wind power. From the very beginning of the flame extinguishing in just a couple minutes to the present...

He was already capable of persevering for five hours and fifty-five minutes!

He was only short five minutes from being considered at minor completion in the Eternal Alchemy Canon and entering the next phase. Alchemy hammered his spiritual sense in refinement, and spiritual sense was capable of deepening one's acuity towards the qi of heaven and earth, directly increasing the absorption rate of qi. Thus, it repaid oneself. In the past few days, he had secretly calculated it, and his current cultivation speed ought to have been approximately three-fold greater than some cultivators on the outside!

Of course, that wasn't to say he was capable at all. He was only at stage where he could "use" it, still far from being "able". Merely, this ability to employ it was representative that he could cultivate the next step!

Already, he was impatient to break through this final obstacle! At the same time, that swelled sensation within his qi sea reminded him, as well. Perhaps that step of treading into the Eternal Alchemy Canon's introduction was the instant he would assail the middle stage of Qi Condensation.

Originally, he had already bought the materials, but the sole matter worthy of rejoice at the moment was that these materials weren't required for the time being. They could be stored and used later as soon as he reached great completion in the way of alchemy. This was also not considered a waste.

He just hadn't anticipated the Fire Manipulation Art would be so difficult to train. Time passed by day by day. More than twenty days had already went by.

"You feel anything?" On the twenty-first day, Zhang Gongchang, who was bored senseless scrolling a web page, suddenly furrowed his brows. He raised his head and asked Li Mu who was in the middle of playing with his cell phone.

Li Mu paused, set down his cell phone, and strained his senses. He said suspiciously: "The qi... has increased?"

"It's become strong." Wang Chunlai drank his boiled water and followed up: "It started yesterday."

"What's going on?" Zhang Gongchang placed his computer mouse down: "A location's qi density is constant. It gets weaker the bigger the city, and higher the closer to nature. This place is already considered decent, so how can it actually be THIS dense?"

"Not necessarily." Li Mu stopped playing on his cell phone and murmured: "If some heavenly treasure ripened in the vicinity, the

qi density would also rise significantly. However, this would persist for nothing more than a few days.”

The three of them were just chatting in their down time. They were unaware that within the cultivation room, there was a flame burning continuously for five hours and fifty-nine minutes!

Xu Yangyi didn't loosen up by a hair. A travelled distanced of ninety li was merely half of a hundred li journey. For the past ten straight days, he had fallen at this final minute. It seemed that even the surrounding air knew that this minute possessed a difference in quality in comparison to those other several hundred minutes.

Regardless, the fire would die... He shuttered gaze slightly trembled, and he wordlessly pursed his lips. THIS was the reason he had failed countless of times in the last minute. As if the six hours were a cycle, once six hours passed, all the follow-up techniques afterwards weren't the same.

“Ordinary methods can't be utilised to accomplish the final minute...” Xu Yangyi didn't have the least bit of a thought to skimp out on the minute. The Eternal Alchemy Canon had written it rather clearly; three two-hour periods were three two-hour periods. It was said skill training could never be done half-heartedly.

However, the ten days of defeat weren't only just failure. In any defeat, there would be a kind by-product.

Experience.

“I've already experimented with over a dozen techniques, but none were capable of allowing the flame to continue burning.” His gaze glanced over at the clock ahead. There was still five seconds. If there was no mishap, the alchemy flame would die out this time, as well.

Five seconds later, the flame before him faintly flashed; this was

tell-tale sign of its extinguishment! He muttered for a brief moment. At this time... even in this second, there was no error. This time, he was planning to fearlessly fight it out.

“I don’t believe that while I’ve went through all the techniques, this flame still won’t burn!” His spiritual force completely withdrew, and the flame suddenly became unstable. Followingly, a milky-white qi wall, like a barrier, tightly enclosed the entire pill furnace.

Since the wind was inadequate, then he would just try without it.

He was already banking on another failed plan, yet at this instant, he unexpectedly discovered to his surprise that after the flame flickered twice, it actually stabilized once again! Furthermore, there wasn’t any indication of it dying out!

In his mind, a divine light seemed to flash through, and he abruptly opened his eyes, coming to a sudden realization of this minute and what he was lacking!

Sizzle... With a ripple of his mind, a single unsteadiness, the flame faded away in an instant. However, this time, Xu Yangyi didn’t have a shred of a disappointed expression, instead his gaze burned.

“So it was like this...” He looked at the pill furnace in front of him complicatedly: “This is the starting move—the cycling force—the process of restraint.”

The revelation of a single thought connected a hundred. His thinking immediately diverged. If his guess was correct, there wasn’t an issue with what he was doing before, merely, at that final step, a misconception had arisen. He once also suspected that while all arcane efforts could be easily grasped, they were difficult to master. All excessively complicated arcane efforts had silently vanished in history’s long river in their entirety. This was because they were in-adept at fitting into history’s tide of development. They were unfavorable to spread extensively and

research.

He was puzzled; how could the difficulty of this arcane effort be so high? By no means were his talents weak, yet unexpectedly in his study of more than a year, this first step was unable to be taken?

Like a living organism's history of development, any creature unsuited to the world's structure disappeared. For instance, dinosaurs. Creatures that survived were the ones that conformed even further with the world's structure, such as humanity.

This was natural selection. If an arcane effort caused all to fall back, especially in the situation of an alchemy technique filled with ancient cultivation, then it simply failed to be in accord with law of the world's development. Moreover, it was unsuited to be a scripture!

“After the ignition of the flame, the medicine placement follows. As for this process, spiritual sense is incapable of attending to both feats. I once read that ancient pill formulas have at least five to six kinds of heavenly treasures or at most over a hundred. In comparison to only relying on pure spiritual sense right now to control the furnace flame, the mutual pairing, the harmonization level, and greatness of the undertaking is like the light of a firefly beholden to a shining moon.”

“Perhaps ancient cultivators had special medicine placement and firestarter boys. However, a good arcane effort is in no way only focused on extraordinary appearance. Only one enjoyed by the common man and the intellectual alike can be called a scripture. The Harmony of The Trium was capable of becoming Daoism's scripture; this point absolutely cannot be underestimated...”

He sucked in deeply: “Thus, after five hours, or maybe five and a half, once five hours and fifty minutes go by, the furnace flame ought to be stabilized, and the phase of placing heavenly materials is to be prepared. This phase is like restraining force. Stabilization

is vital, rather than the continuous drawing of wind power. I have to keep on putting on the pressure.”

“Before five-plus hours, it must be tested like when a new car leaves the factory. Its stability has to be tried.” His gaze flashed: “That’s it. Just now, when I stopped the wind power, the flame wasn’t extinguished. That must be the truth behind this minute!”

Deeply breathing a couple times, he closed his eyes again.

There was no joy, rather his heart welcomed reverence. In this cultivation of over half a year, the Eternal Alchemy Canon’s effect on the advancement of spiritual sense was as clear as day. Furthermore, spiritual sense could be used to support oneself, accelerating the absorption of qi. In the modern era, arcane efforts that could advance spiritual sense had scattered like ash to the four corners. The value of this arcane effort was far more precious than whatever enlistment of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion and the Featherwood Guard by ten thousand-fold!

“The first step... will succeed in a few days!”

# Chapter 79: The Middle Stage of Qi Condensation (2)

---

Li Zongyuan worriedly looked at the door of the cultivation room. Twenty-six days had gone by, but Xu Yangyi had still not appeared. The Fasting Capsules also should've been finished, no?

In the end, what was master doing on the inside?

He paced back and forth somewhat jitterily at the door, and Zhang Gongchang took a newspaper into his hand and laughed: "Fellow Daoist, you need not be concerned. In my opinion, Fellow Daoist Xu is cultivating an arcane effort."

"Yes, last time he came out, although I carefully observed that Fellow Daoist Xu's appearance was unsightly, his spirit was not the least bit crestfallen. Of the people that cultivate, do any one of them emerge from seclusion with sterling appearances? Fellow Daoist, your uneasiness is unnecessary." Li Mu looked at his cell phone as he laughed.

"Fellow Daoist Xu is a smart, talented man." Wang Chunlai laughed as he consoled Li Zongyuan: "Fellow Daoist Li, indeed, you need not be too worried. If my guess isn't off, I'm afraid that we three altogether are not Fellow Daoist Xu's opponent. It's not a question that with this level of talent, he'll advance into the middle stage within a decade."

Li Zongyuan glanced somewhat impatiently at the several people. He wasn't to be nervous? His prime essence had the other's drop of blood in it! If something happened to Xu Yangyi, he would also meet with mishap ensuingly! Was it possible for him NOT to be worried?! This was also the reason why Xu Yangi dared to set his mind at ease by boldly handing over matters to him to manage.

"Fellow Daoist Wang, you have such a feeling, as well?" Zhang Gongchang looked at Wang Chunlai in astonishment and then



laughed wryly: “I thought I was only one that held such a feeling. When I saw Fellow Daoist Xu back then, my intuition was telling me that this person mustn’t be provoked... but I didn’t have the nerve to say it...”

“What’s there to be embarrassed about?” Li Mu sighed and set down his cell phone: “We’ve seen quite a few geniuses, as well. It’s nothing more than fate making fools out of men. 80% of people are like us. There’s nothing good to be found in blaming the heavens and faulting others.”

“Yes...” Wang Chunlai drank his tea, nodding towards Li Zongyuan: “Fellow Daoist Li, if there’s nothing else, I’m planning take my leave at the end of this month. There’ll be a chance later to reconvene.”

“Yes, good, splendid...” Li Zongyuan naturally agreed without reservation.

“While I don’t know when we will see each other again, perhaps Fellow Daoist Xu’s realm will already be at the middle stage...” Li Mu glanced at the door of the cultivation room a tad complicatedly and shook his head: “How about we make a bet? When will Fellow Daoist Xu advance to the middle stage?”

“Hehe, people who can advance a single minor boundary in twenty years or even thirty years are a dime a dozen. On average, Foundation Establishment takes over seventy years. How could it be so easy?” Wang Chunlai laughed despite this, yet carefully mused: “I think that he has the promise to break through the middle stage within five years.”

“Too short.” Zhang Gongchang shook his head: “He’s just in his early twenties. Apart from that fiend Sunnihiliator that has been drawing qi into his body since he was ten, I’ve never heard of anyone else that was capable of accomplishing this. Till now, maybe he’s been cultivating for seven or eight years. Five years ain’t it, but neither is twelve... I bet eight!”

“Within eight years, Fellow Daoist Xu has the promise of advancing into the middle stage in a total of fifteen years!”

“Fifteen years...” Li Mu said somewhat enviously: “By then, he might be thirty-five or thirty-six as well... Such a golden age... Which clan wouldn’t want to fight over him? Even if he isn’t a core seedling, he’s still a secondary core seedling. Unlike us, who still need to find this kind of fast money... I feel that in a total of fifteen years, Fellow Daoist Xu has the promise to charge into the middle stage, too.”

No one was any the wiser that three years ago, Xu Yangyi had assailed the middle stage. If not for Chu Tianyi’s flagrant interference back then, at this moment, he would’ve long ranked in the middle stage.

“I shall bear all of the Fellow Daoists’ auspicious words.” Li Zongyuan laughed dryly, yet his gaze deepened in worry. At this instant, everyone’s gaze converged. Soon after, the four people looked towards the surrounding space in unison.

It wasn’t known when, but motes of qi at the size of rice soundlessly emerged in their surroundings. They were very small, but... rather numerous!

In the last second, they had only just appeared, yet in the next, the motes that had solidified from nothingness progressively became more! They were densely swarming together!

The whole basement was different from the ocean of spiritual light of Xu Yangyi’s last advancement. This time, it was even greater! The one prior was merely ten to twenty meters. This time... it was shockingly over fifty meters!

Motes of qi appeared to feel some beckoning, and they joyously bounced and spun, causing the surroundings of Li Zongyuan and the others to become a beautiful expanse too resplendent for the eye, a lovely scenery like that of the Milky Way Galaxy!

“Qi Pours into the Body...” Everyone silently stood up, and Li Mu observed the surrounding sea of spiritual light that caused him envy and said trilly: “Fellow Daoist Zhang... y-you’re breaking through?”

“What fantasy are you going on about!” Zhang Gongchang’s eyes were somewhat reddened. A breakthrough, right before him, someone was breaking through!

He had already cultivated for twenty-three years and to this day was at the initial stage of Qi Condensation. The shadow of the middle stage was left unseen. Every now and then, he had seen a couple fellow Daoists assail the middle stage, and no matter who it was in the surroundings, they gave their congratulations. Yet now, there was someone unexpectedly before him advancing to the middle stage!

Wait a second... before him?

He thought back and everyone thought back. Immediately, followed by an orderly swishing sound, each person’s gaze looked ardently at the tightly closed cultivation room. In the present scene, there was only one person with such a possibility!

“H-how can this be...” Li Mu’s lips shivered faintly: “I shouldn’t have been mistaken... H-he’s just in his early twenties! How can he possibly break through now?!”

A breakthrough was representative that the qi sea had already swelled. They had cultivated for over a dozen years, close to twenty, and had still only filled approximately three-fifths of it... The other had only cultivated for some odd years, yet they had even just he would advance within eight. Within a total cultivation time of five years to advance, there was hope for Foundation Establishment. But in the next second, Xu Yangyi was advancing right in front of them?!

The emotions of each person’s eyes were filled with various complexities, yet not a person opened their mouths whatsoever.

These were Xu Yangyi's silent words. Genius and talent could not be envied.

“Hehe...” Wang Chunlai laughed wildly all of a sudden as he said lowly: “Way back, I observed a fellow Daoist's breakthrough. His sea of spiritual light was no more than five meters... It's no wonder... no surprise that there's someone in the same stage that is more fearsome than us...”

“The larger the sea of spiritual light, the greater the benefits obtained after breakthrough... This purest qi of heaven and earth will serve to perfect the flesh of any cultivator that succeeds in advancement... causing their bodies to become more suited to cultivation and even further facilitate the harmony of qi...”

He spoke half way and continued no more.

To those who had cultivated for ten-odd or twenty-odd years, what was a more envious matter than the breakthrough of someone who had cultivated for an odd number of years below their eyelids?

No, no longer was this envy, it was unbearable! Presently, they simply wished to break into a dash and run. Yet hadn't they only come to earn a quick buck? This, what the hell was this! However, based on a cultivator's instinct, to esteem those who were strong, they simply found it difficult to move their legs.

“A sea of spiritual light of fifty meters...” Li Mu's mouth dried, yet he looked at the surrounding sea of spiritual light with obsession in his eyes: “I... have only read about this in books...”

Within the cultivation room, Xu Yangyi suddenly opened both of his eyes. It had come... It had arrived! That feeling of the surrounding qi coming to a sudden boil had come once again! He could even sense the surrounding qi was like the surface of water, happy and cheerful. This time, none would disturb him.

Without the slightest hesitation, he opened all of his pores,

absorbing qi at full power! Immediately... the meridians of his whole body unexpectedly produced cracking noises, and an acute pain bubbled up to his head. He rigidly clenched his teeth, enduring.

His qi sea had continued to minutely expand. Later on, he learned it was in order to match up with the Eternal Alchemy Canon. Now, that the preliminary Wind Brandishes Traces had been completed, the first violent expansion was welcomed!

Outside the cultivation room, in the last second, the boundless white lights were only scurrying and jolting about, yet in the next second, it was as if they suddenly heard some command! In an instant, they strived to outdo each other in being first to throw themselves into the door of the cultivation room!

“As expected... it really is him!” If said they were still somewhat suspicious before, right now, Li Mu sat down, shrill of voice, and Wang Chunlai and Zhang Gongchang looked on in amazement at the rushing tide of the qi ocean on top of their heads, their feelings incomparably complex.

A genius? Was this a true genius? Cultivators like them who coalesced a sea of spiritual light of ten meters could brag for several decades. This was because the breakthrough of ordinary cultivators was difficult. However, going by over their heads right in front of them was a sea of spiritual light no less than fifty meters! It was resplendent and fragrant. Seemingly like the Milky Way on a summer night. Yet it didn't even glance at them, directly charging into that sealed door, gradually vanishing within.

“A genius... A true genius...” Wang Chunlai sighed in acceptance, staring fixedly at the door with an impassioned gaze. At the same time, in the countryside village, two people raised their heads simultaneously.

“The qi is fluctuating? No... Qi Pours into the Body?!” Originally sleepy, a proprietor of a kiosk was like a pincushion at this

moment, suddenly jumping up from his position, not daring to believe as he looked towards a direction. “There’s actually someone in this little village breaking through?”

In a farm field, an old farmer sitting on a farming ridge looked to the sky in astonishment, his snow-white beard trembling in disarray: “How could it be... How could an amazing cultivator possibly come here? How is it possible someone is making a breakthrough?”

One more middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivator was different. The feeding grounds would have to be repartitioned; weren’t they just a picture of happiness? How could a middle-stage cultivator even fancy this place anyways?

Xu Yangyi was simply unaware of all of this. He could only sense that his qi sea had transformed into a maelstrom filled with [cosmic winds](#). His qi was like iron chains, undergoing a most fierce forging!

It was the same as last time... yet also different! This was because he quickly discovered in his qi sea, the qi that had already been “forged” seemed to construct something! It was visibly indistinct and also nebulously imperceptible. It seemed like it was going to build another soul within his qi sea.

“Could this be a strange phenomenon of after cultivating the Eternal Alchemy Canon?” Nonetheless, he simply didn’t have the effort to care about this because the qi of the outside world was madly rushing in. This time, he had drawn upon a sea of spiritual light not ten or twenty meters, but rather a full fifty meters!

Motes of spiritual light charged into his meridians, and he could feel his bones become more robust, his spiritual sense even sharper, and his flesh increasingly solid. As he clenched his fist, a kind of never before experienced feeling of power arose from within his body. If he was capable of breaking a ten-meter tall tree with a punch before, at the present, perhaps a fist was capable of

striking a twenty-meter, massive hole in the ground!

Qi Pours into the Body!

He didn't slacken by a hair because this advancement was yet to meet its conclusion! His spiritual sense had already touched upon a faintly discernible barrier.

The bodily limiter!

If he broke through this seal, he would be at the middle stage of Qi Condensation!

“Break...” He inhaled deeply, his spiritual sense within his qi sea condensing with complete power, and he suddenly opened his eyes, roaring: “For me!!!”

Just a minor note I want to make here. The word “cosmic wind” is based off a chinese word that has two meanings. 1, it refers to a Daoist concept of a wind that immortals ride on to travel, and 2, very high stratospheric winds. Since this is a cultivation novel, I am going with option 1.

# Chapter 80: The Middle Stage of Qi Condensation (3)

---

This call to break jolted the underground! Everyone on the outside excitedly stood up.

“B-breaking the bodily limiter... He’s breaking the bodily limiter!” Li Mu excitedly walked back and forth inside the room, as if the advancement was his own. Even his voice was somewhat hoarse: “Once he charges through this barrier, h-he’ll be a middle-stage cultivator! The middle stage! The middle stage!”

The other two didn’t say anything, but they were the same, unable to even stand. Instead, they perceived the sea of spiritual light in the air that in this moment had reached the zenith, their feelings a series of complexities.

This was the most significant barrier of the initial stage of Qi Condensation.

Strictly speaking, the bodily limiter was the only obstruction that existed in the advancement of a minor boundary in Qi Condensation. The others were all cumulative. As for this accumulation, it depended on a person’s aptitude. They had already guessed that while Xu Yangyi’s aptitude was astonishing, this bodily limiter still caused people to harbor apprehension within their hearts.

“F-Fellow Daoist Xu seems not to have brought a supplementary medicine!” Suddenly, Zhang Gongchang couldn’t refrain himself from shouting: “H-he’s using pure strength to challenge the bodily limiter?!”

Once these words were given voice to, everyone was rendered dumb. In other words... this advancement wasn’t of the other’s planning? That was to say... he had felt he could break through and immediately attacked? Thus... the other hadn’t brought



anything! Including supplementary pill elixir?!

“Careless! Too careless!” Wang Chunlai sighed deeply, his anxious understanding exhibited in his speech, as if he was breaking through: “If he doesn’t rely on pill elixir, how is he going to break through the bodily limiter?”

“Fellow Daoist Li, how about you bring in a bottle?” Just as Li Mu said these words, he recalled something straight away and promptly pulled out a jade bottle: “This is the common advancement pill elixir. If Fellow Daoist Xu doesn’t dislike it, wouldn’t it be better for Fellow Daoist Li to carry it in?”

Even if this person didn’t achieve the middle stage, his potential was astonishing. In case he did attain the middle stage... there would be many advantages without a single disadvantage in them setting up good relations!

Birds of a feather flock together. Fringe cultivators like them were at the very bottom of the barrel. Everyone that they knew were all at the initial stage, and one or two middle-stage cultivators were as rare as phoenix feathers and qilin horns. Was there even any better opportunity to get into the other’s good graces than witnessing him advance?

These words seemed to remind everyone, and Wang Chunlai’s eyes shimmered, and he likewise pulled out a jade bottled: “Inside this is pill elixir I prepared for my own use. Its name is the Azureflower Jadewater! Fellow Daoist Xu surely needs this right now!”

“I... I...” Zhang Gongchang was sweating up a storm. This opportunity to them could be said to be certainly considerable, yet in a reversal, he presently hadn’t brought any pill elixir!

Didn’t you guys come to do accounting?! The heck did you bring pill elixir for?!

He really did want to curse. Yet before their voices even fell, all of

a sudden, time seemed to be drawn down to a hundredth of a second in the entire basement. While it was quite fleeting, everyone sensed it! Not waiting for them to react, in the next instant, a light echo that seemed to be breaking glass resonated within the basement! Each present cultivator understood what this was.

The bodily limiter had been shattered! However!

The distance apart of just as Xu Yangyi bellowed “break” was merely a few breaths! At this moment, Li Mu’s and Wang Chunlai’s raised hands appeared to be terribly amusing.

“This... This is...” Wang Chun Lai fell back several steps, the jade bottle grasped in his hand somewhat unsteady: “One blow... One blow to shatter the limit...”

Li Mu looked vacantly at the closer door. If a cultivator’s aptitude was to be discerned, besides from specialized tests, the time of advancement was the best occasion for examination. The size of the sea of spiritual light, this was the most important basis. A cultivator’s storage of the body wasn’t just dependent on the qi sea. While the qi sea was a major factor, the flesh and bones were similarly capable of storing qi. Else not, at Foundation Establishment and Core Formation, how could those terrifying divine abilities be resisted? Would death not come just from the sweeping of the corner hem of a jacket?

Only during advancement would the natural world sense how much qi a person was capable of storing and reciprocate this amount. Above ten meters, and every major clan would show consideration with great effort and attentive nurturing. Twenty meters was a true genius plucked out from among ten thousand. Thirty meters was the category of a provincial paragon of Heavens Law! Forty meters... Renown on the entire nation’s ranking!

As for fifty meters...

His back grew cold, it was simply unheard of! Moreover, there

was the limit-breaking time.

The more formidable a cultivator, the faster the limit-breaking time. There were also some cultivators that didn't rely on external forces to break the limiter. He once heard that the bodily limiter was an invisible membrane. He had asked a few times, and a middle-stage cultivator that had answered him only rolled their eyes: what're you asking so much for? When the time comes, you'll know.

Yet this wait was ten-somewhat years. Even though he hadn't experienced it, he knew that Xu Yangyi's limit-breaking speed... was astonishingly fast! The limit break still overhead, it answered a following command and was cleaved through!

In this space, they could only say nothing but a few words! A time of several seconds!

"Fiend..." Zhang Gongchang collapsed onto a chair with a thud. All in all, so long as he thought of this undisguised gap, it would cause his confidence to suffer an enormous blow.

Swish swish swish... In the cultivation room, Xu Yangyi had already stood up. He had also heard that noise of moments ago. In that twinkling, he felt that the world seemed to drone, and subsequently, while unseen, he sensed that which appeared to be like glass breaking and transforming into motes of qi, scattering in the breeze.

But this qi didn't fade away at all, rather it was immediately attracted into his frantically absorbing qi sea! It became the remuneration of his advancement! He also felt that world had become even more distinct.

Currently, he even thought he could use his eyes to distinguish the most difficult to differentiate of pixels. At the same time, his body lightened. Originally, when he hadn't broken this bodily limiter in the past, he didn't feel any restrictions. Yet now, he felt that his prior existence was fettered!

His body appeared to float softly like a child of the wind. It seemed that with a stirring of a thought, he could go forth in any direction. However, this fluttering softness wasn't a weakness. He was able to simultaneously feel a hidden power within his body that far exceeded the one of the past!

If he was up against those three scouts right now, he wouldn't need a Spirit Traversing Talisman. He could merely rely on his own body's speed to chase them down! At this instant, all that remained of the revolving sea of spiritual light besides him was the last ten meters. Without delay, it charged towards his body, striving to overtake itself!

He promptly used Innersight, and under a glance, an energetic light flashed within his eyes. His qi sea was possibly... approximately 1.5-times that of an ordinary middle-stage cultivator! It had transformed into a tremendous qi transmission device!

Among his meridians, all blockages had completely dissolved. Externally, this change didn't appear to be great, yet he knew, the resiliency was many times stronger than the past!

"Alchemy requires the powerful support of qi and keen spiritual sense to act as the bridge. Not enough qi, then the spiritual sense won't have the acuity to transport it to the place where it ought to go. Not enough spirit stones, then while there will be qi throughout the air, a place to set to task will be incapable of being found..." He sensed the powerful strength within his body and clenched his fist: "The reason why the Eternal Alchemy Canon broadens the qi sea... is only because my qi sea is far from attaining the requirement of refining a pill... As long as the speed of advancement follows, this shouldn't be a problem at all and will moreover be unlikely to compel my qi to make my body explode."

"At the same time, as the qi sea grows bigger, the contained qi will become greater. The time to persist in battle will be longer, and the meridians clearer. The speed of qi transfer will grow

faster, and the arts even swifter... While it still can't be seen for now, as long as there are more divine abilities, once it reaches four to five kinds..."

He inhaled deeply and continued to use Innersight.

Of his five viscera and six bowels, bones, and each of his muscles, their external appearances seemed to be the same as the past. However, beneath Innersight, he could see a layer of misty-white light within. This was qi reinforcing and transforming the manifestation of his body.

"Nonetheless..." He mumbled as he looked into his qi sea: "What is this?"

In his qi sea, there was a brownish-yellow object the size of a small stone suspended in the air. It was uncertain to say what this item was, and it was dull without the least bit remarkability. The exterior was like a peach pit and its surface was glossy and smooth. Yet as for this object that emerged within his qi sea, apart from a golden core and qi, what else could it possibly be?

"Could it be... this is a product of cultivating the Eternal Alchemy Canon?" He was unable to make heads or tails of it. Only he cultivated this arcane effort and was the sole inheritor. Since this was his choice, he had to confront it.

Meanwhile, the proprietor of the kiosk looked on in astonishment at the region of fluctuating qi as the qi naturally became weaker. However, it didn't disperse, but was rather absorbed.

"S-success?" He looked on at that place, somewhat reluctant to believe, a cottage no higher than two stories tall. There was actually a middle-stage cultivator concealed within? Furthermore... one that had surprisingly succeeded?!

A total of half an hour was in accordance to the initial stage of Qi Condensation's advancement, however, that was the conforming

theory of the “shortest” time of an initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivator’s advancement!

“S-such fierce qi vibrations... H-he actually broke the bodily limiter in the fastest time?” As this thought bubbled forth in his mind, his first reaction was disbelief! However, recalling a fact, he discovered that this... was quite possibly true!

“H-h-how can this be!”

“If it truly is such a fiend, how could he possibly come to such a backwater place?!”

“No way! I have to go see it for myself!”

Somewhere else, an old farmer also scurried towards the small house.

“Good god... The sea of spiritual light that he drew upon is absolutely not minor! Half an hour... Merely half an hour! That’s the fastest theorized advancement time... Could he be a monster?!”

“When did such an amazing cultivator come to this backwater village?!”

“Nuh-uh, I have to go take look! If I don’t go, how can I be at peace?!”

Simultaneously, following the heavy droning of the door, the basement finally opened.

“Congratulations on the end of your seclusion, Fellow Daoist! Henceforth upon advancing to the middle stage, may you enjoy eternal happiness as the immortals and your cultivation bound forwards unbridledly!” Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes, still not having the time to carefully perceive his surroundings as he heard four orderly and deferential voices on the outside.

No one dared to be disrespectful. At the instant the door swung open, the spiritual pressure of the middle-stage of Qi Condensation spilled out like torrenting quicksilver. Even more important... was

that his present qi bore a broiling heat!

A broiling heat that was difficult to put into words. It seemed that if he was willing, Xu Yangyi was capable of using this broiling heat to transform all things before him into flying ash!

What was happening?

Zhang Gongchang and the three others secretly passed on to each other a meaningful look of the eyes. In the modern age, the characteristics of arcane efforts and so on were completely a non-secret. The internet had surpassed the paper crane's transmission of information, and there were many, many flying swords circulating knowledge. Even though it couldn't be said that the attributes of familiar arcane efforts had been seen, they were still heard of. Yet at this moment, they were all incapable of seeing through it!

What was the arcane effort that Fellow Daoist Xu cultivated? Via the senses, there was no doubt it was a fire-related arcane effort! However, how could a fire-related arcane effort possibly have such a feeling from the spiritual pressure?

Spiritual pressure, it was a kind of suppressive force. For example, if you were facing a leader, you would feel the other's aura, merely, spiritual pressure was almost tangible. Nonetheless, were you capable of sensing what kind of person the other was through their aura?

Impossible!

Likewise, spiritual pressure was also simply unable to perceive the attribute of the other's arcane effort. It was damned to here!

Xu Yangyi's whole being appeared serene like a lake, completely detached from a fire-related arcane effort. Yet his spiritual pressure oddly carried a kind of roiling heat that could cause the heart to palpitate! He seemed to be a smelting furnace in human form! A blaze made human!

It was too strange... What the heck was this cultivated arcane effort? What was he doing inside? His clothes were still somewhat tattered and his facial hair still long, an appearance of just coming out from seclusion. But at this moment, not a single person dared to look straight at him! The trio dared not open their mouths again.

They understood that it was the other's circumstance of just advancing and his cultivation yet to stabilize that caused this leak of spiritual pressure. Such a situation wouldn't appear at all in cultivators already at the middle stage for a couple years. Their spiritual pressures could be restrained and unleashed at will. In any case, as they recalled there was possibly a silent fierce beast in human form standing besides them, everyone felt their backs grow somewhat cold.

Xu Yangyi didn't speak, slowly walking instead. The world appeared to be like a newborn's, seemingly novel. Each advancement wasn't limited to cultivation, but also an upgrade in spiritual sense. Of course, the needed qi for the next advancement would be greater. Otherwise, the spiritual sense wouldn't upgrade, and moreover, wouldn't be able to keenly sensing the worldly qi. If greater amounts couldn't be assimilated faster, then how would Foundation Establishment seniors and Core Formation masters break through?

He knew that in the true seclusion of a Core Formation cultivator, an expanse of qi within a range of a hundred li would tremble in wake with the other's breathing. It was in no way comparable to his current piddling absorption.

He was silent and suddenly launched a fist towards Li Zongyuan.

Swish! Li Zongyuan simply didn't react. This was a genuine blur of the eye; a fist came before him! It was a single millimeter away from the tip of his nose!

"M-M-M-Master..." His voice quavered, and his legs shook.



However, before he finished speaking his words, all of his hair blew back because he was subsequently welcomed by the gusting of an intense wind! He couldn't even open his eyes!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Three successive crisp echoes rang out in the air. Places that the fist had waved over. Xu Yangyi pulled his hand back, nodding his head in satisfaction.

“The fist arrives first and the wind follows...” Zhang Gongchang swallowed his saliva. The passion, admiration, and envy in his eyes were nearly inconceivable! This was the might of a middle-stage cultivator! That fist of moments ago seemed to be no more than inconsequential posturing, but it was a heavy sword without edge, needless of great skill. In concerns to initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivators, it would be absolutely difficult for them to resist this fist!

For the fist wind to be capable of causing the other's hair to rise back, one could imagine Xu Yangyi's strength! There was also that banging sound. It couldn't be anything else... It was the sound of breaking air! The true speed of the fist had cleaved through the air!

## Chapter 81: [Ten Cardinals Red Lotus](#)

---

Stifling the fire within their hearts, they were even more respectful.

“Do you have a gun?” Xu Yangyi suddenly asked.

“I... I-I do...” Li Zongyuan’s voice fluttered. He still hadn’t regained his bearings from the shock of moments ago. From what outsiders could see, Xu Yangyi was testing the might of the middle stage, however, it wasn’t just him alone, it was also Xu Yangyi reminding him not to make any dirty moves, otherwise, he would come to an end!

Xu Yangyi pointed at him: “Come.”

“Yes...”

Li Zongyuan took out the gun in hesitation, shivering for ages, yet he simply dared not to fire it.

“No need to be scared.” Xu Yangyi laughed: “My intuition tells me that this thing won’t be able to injure me.”

Li Zongyuan gritted his teeth, waveringly taking aim at Xu Yangyi. He closed his eyes and suddenly pulled the trigger!

Bang!

Xu Yangyi was standing in his original position, and a tiny bullet hole had appeared on his chest. He unbound his clothes to take a look, the flesh beneath faintly reddened. Surprisingly, the bullet tumbled into his clothing.

“Heh...” Wang Chunlai smiled wryly to himself. Regardless of the number of times, this was a scene that middle-stage cultivators had to test.

At the initial stage, gunshot wounds were still capable of causing traumatic injuries, however, in the middle stage... ordinary firearms wouldn’t even pierce the skin! This was the direct

consequence of the final ten meters of the sea of spiritual light of moments ago that bore into Xu Yangyi's bones, transforming his flesh and internal organs!

His skin like bronze and his bones like iron; his speed, reaction, and power, all were over a hundred-fold beyond an ordinary person! A true transcendence! From here onwards, humans, the race, were gradually growing distant to him, a cultivator of the middle stage, an outstanding divide. The resistance of a firearm was already sufficient to state that he had taken the initial step into the immortal path.

Xu Yangyi calmly held the bullet. In his heart, a quiet sigh of emotion bubbled in his mind. The middle stage... he was finally at the middle stage.

At eight, he entered Heavens Law. At thirteen, he began drawing qi into the body. At twenty-one, he tried assailing the middle stage for the first time, but was unexpectedly obstructed. Three years later, he attacked once again, breaking through in one go.

However, he was also uncertain to say if these three years could be considered within his cultivation time limit. Truly... these affairs could be regarded as matters of the past. The recruitment fight of a couple major powers on the airplane and his scuffle with Chu Zhaonan, the bitter competition of the Qualifier, Vermillion Snow's massacre of Heavens Law, and then Thousandedge's scouts hunting him down...

In three years, there were many changes, but also many experiences. Nevertheless, he held no regrets. Even if he was lonely and even if he was solitary, such a feeling as oneself as god, such a powerful sensation of true existence, the hatred he bore, and these people displaying reverence to him, of any of these, which ones didn't come through cultivation in full?

There was never a matter that the Heavenly Dao reaped without sowing. To wish to stand at the world's apex, possess a lifespan

barred from the possession of ordinary peoples, and view the vicissitudes of the world's affairs like a deity, yet be incapable of enduring the loneliness, then why even cultivate? Why defy the heavens?

The Heavenly Dao rewarded the diligent and was always impartial.

Gently rolling the burning-hot bullet between his fingers, Xu Yangyi then transformed it into flat metal. Yet in the next second, everyone was completely dazed! This was because a fire had appeared in his hand. For any cultivator, it wasn't strange at all to create the [five phases](#) from nothing. What was strange was...

This fire... was different from ordinary fire! Its temperature far exceeded an ordinary flame! The trio was even separated by several meters, but they could even feel the scorched flavor in the air. The air currents in the entire room seemed to fuel it, and the space appeared indistinct!

“What... what powerful strength...” Zhang Gongchang forcefully gulped and fell back several steps, his heart beating wildly.

This absolutely wasn't a fire a cultivator could ordinarily produce... From its might, he knew just from looking that this flame was much, much more intense than any ordinary flame he could produce! He even had a kind of feeling that so long as it touched him, it was capable of transforming him into flying ash!

Li Mu, Wang Chunlai, and Li Zongyuan likewise looked at this fire in astonishment. It was unrestrained and leisured, and it flickered with a myriad changes in moments. From time to time, it was like a fluttering butterfly on Xu Yangyi's finger, and occasionally, it was like a snarling tiger. At the beginning... its power was great, and even now it was still great! A kind of terrifying might, completely reserved, could only be vaguely felt, yet none wished to test it at all!

“Hiss...” In less than a second, the bullet transformed into

molten iron and fell on the ground. On the ground, a scorched black hole appeared. It was a gentle sound, but at this instant, it was incomparably distinct.

Xu Yangyi pulled his hand back in satisfaction. With his initial understanding of the Fire Manipulation Art, and the increases of his spiritual sense and power, he was considerably pleased.

“No!” Zhang Gongchang suddenly called something to mind and looked at the other two people in shock: “This... This is pill elixir fire?!” Before his voice even fell, the eyes of the two other people became incredibly bright in the space of an instant.

What was an alchemist? To say without the least bit exaggeration, it was a person wholly removed from the likes of them! One of heaven and earth!

“Pill elixir fire?!” Li Mu dumbly looked at Zhang Gongchang for a moment and suddenly turned to Xu Yangyi: “Congratulations F-Fellow Daoist for congealing an alchemy flame! Felicitations to the Fellow Daoist!”

Wang Chunlai was dazed for several seconds. Afterwards, his eyes reddened, and he clasped his hands with a shrill voice: “Congratulations, Fellow Daoist! My felicitations to the Fellow Daoist!”

Pill elixir fire? On the contrary, Xu Yangyi was stunned. What the hell was that?

His gaze swept over Li Zongyuan and also discovered an astonished appearance that stretched across the other's face. Seeing the look in Xu Yangyi's eyes, his first reaction wasn't “you don't know?” But rather a deep bow at the waist that seemed to have been shot off: “Master! Pill elixir fire is the most apex flame in the Dao of Alchemy! Although a vast majority of pill elixirs use apparatuses in production, those... are of the common type!”

“Genuine pill elixir, the most supreme pill elixirs, are all

privately custom made! Ones incapable of being emulated by the use of apparatuses! A grand pill elixirist has to refine it by hand and seal the elixir! A pill elixir like this...” Li Zongyuan’s voice trembled in excitement: “Is valued at a million... no! Ten million spirit stones!”

“As for those who have congealed pill elixir fire... even among grand pill elixirist, not even one in ten has one!”

Xu Yangyi understood one matter. It appeared... the people who were capable of congealing pill elixir fire... were quite few? However, his fire was not some pill elixir one by any means.

“Well done.” In his heart, this was Xu Yangyi’s thinking, but his face was imposing with movement. He merely glanced indifferently at Li Zongyuan and said.

“Of course! It is only natural!” Li Zongyuan practically wanted to jump up in excitement! Who didn’t wish for a profound cultivation? Was it believed those cultivators indulgent in the pleasures of life didn’t hold initiative?

No... they were all once ambitious students, but they ultimately discovered their own talents were truly inadequate. Their connections were truly too inferior and their scope truly too small. In the end, they had abandoned themselves to misery.

Now... that a cultivator with the chance of someday being capable of “private custom orders” had appeared before him, Li Zongyuan’s long silent heart awakened once again! Fuck... just this possibility was also worth him staking it all, no limits! Xu Yangyi didn’t require any promise. So long as Xu Yangyi said the word, all of Li Zongyuan’s past grievances would entirely fade away without a trace!

Li Mu, Zhang Gongchang, and Wang Chunlai all glanced at each other in dismay. This reversal of events was too fast... They had planned on settling accounts and leaving... but now such a matter had surprisingly occurred! The other’s neurons had absolutely

been unleashed! In addition, the numerical figure wasn't low... no, it was quite possibly extraordinarily high!

The other really was... cultivating alchemy! What was wrong with following a master pill elixirist as a hunting dog? Even being a meat toilet was fine!

“Fellow Daoist!” In his mind, without nearly any deep consideration, Zhang Gongchang tread a step forward: “I have already taken the liberty to record Fellow Daoist’s time, the required time. It comprises the number of days of the first seclusion! How much time the first seclusion required! All of it’s recorded on file!”

Shameless!

Li Mu and Wang Chunlai realized it in a flash, however... they hadn’t produced this statistic! What was to be done? How were they to strike up relations with Xu Yangyi?

Right now, whatever the salary wasn’t important, it truly wasn’t significant. They didn’t even have the qualifications to meet face-to-face with the most rudimentary pill elixirist apprentice, but now, faced with a potential prospect seated before them, how could they be willing to part?

“Fellow Daoist Xu...”

“Everyone need not stand on ceremony.” Xu Yangyi seemed to have just discovered the others’ deferential and respectful appearances. He sat down on a chair, waving his hand and cutting the others off: “Since I just left seclusion, I need to stabilize my realm. I won’t be able to stay with all of you.”

A single word, a bolt of thunder across a clear blue sky.

The hearts of the trio were all inwardly regretting; why hadn’t they made relations with the other at the start? He had left seclusion several times, and they were all present. Why hadn’t they realized there was a real possibility that Xu Yangyi was

training in alchemy?

Several times they had greeted dispassionately, and now? Xu Yangyi had broken through to the middle stage of Qi Condensation and even congealed a pill elixir flame! Such a prior investment opportunity... however, he obviously didn't have a very great impression of them!

The remorse in their hearts rushed forth like a tide. In this half a year of training, an alchemy flame had emerged... Which sect's Dao of Alchemy was he cultivating? What kind of pill elixirs would he be able to refine later on? Absent of reprieve, their hearts seemed to be raked at by a cat!

Nonetheless...

"Yes." Three extremely unreconciled voices rang out. Everyone knew right now that whatever Xu Yangyi said was what went. Moreover, recent advancement did indeed require the stabilization of realms.

"Then..." Zhang Gongchang muttered and questioned tentatively: "Fellow Daoist Xu... may we pay a visit in a week?"

In the past, they had still wanted to leave, but now, why would they want to take off? To say the least, they wanted to strike up good relations first!

"Sure."

The three people sighed. Once they left, Xu Yangyi gently waved his hand and the door leading to the basement immediately shut. He softly stroked his chin, not uttering a single word.

"My congratulations, master, for advancing to the middle stage..." Li Zongyuan's heart was filled with unparalleled admiration. The middle stage... Each progression in cultivation brought a sizeable change. A breakthrough in realms was moreover to flip the heavens and overturn the earth.

The middle stage... If it was the past, it could only be said that the



body was more robust and qi even further abundant, but now, it possessed the most direct standard! It didn't have to fear light firearms!

To a master like this, his first feeling was—well, perhaps such a master is pretty decent? Especially... since Xu Yangyi truly was training in alchemy! He hadn't deceived him! Not to mention making him earn cash, he wouldn't even break wind now if he had to go sell his blood!

Wasn't it just Dew Congealing Grass? I'll just work a bit harder; isn't it being supplied to an elementary alchemy apprentice?!

In case Xu Yangyi succeeded... it was him that would always be the constant attendant, it was his initial investment... Thinking about this, he was even a bit bashful...

Xu Yangyi raised his hand, looking at him indifferently: “Do you have a divine ability?”

The first time they met, the toad had used the Wind Edge Technique.

“No.” Li Zongyuan promptly cooled his mind and immediately bowed: “Master... the value of a single divine ability is without market. This is the magik treasure that each great clan and major power uses to coax the hearts of men. Along with supplementary crafts, they can be jointly named as a two-horse chariot. If one doesn't join these major powers, it's very hard to get a hold of a divine ability. Of us demons, a lucky person with a high bloodline concentration might be able to enlighten themselves in one or two moves from bloodline inheritance. As for common cultivators, who would have such an item...”

“Even other ordinary divine abilities like the Wind Edge Technique and Fireball Technique can be bought so long as the initial price is put forth, no more than 2 million. Defensive divine abilities are the hardest to obtain, even the widely spread Earth Shield Technique is over 5 million... million... M-Master!!”

Before his voice subsided, his entire body had already grown weak on the ground! This was because a roaming flame dragon had appeared before him. Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and propped his chin with his hand. In the wake of his fingertips stirring, the roaming dragon moved along with his fingertips.

The wandering dragon was no less than three to four meters long, vivid like life. It was composed of flame from snout to tail, like a living creature. However, Li Zongyuan, who was rather close at hand, could clearly feel the passed on sensation of the slightly scorched hair on his head and body!

It was a kind of terrifying temperature. He held not the slightest suspicion that he would be burnt to ashes! This was a result of him beginning to feel that in such a proximity... the moisture of his entire body was swiftly falling to volatility!

“T-this is...” His perceptions were no longer too important. He looked at the roaming dragon in disbelief and said shrilly: “Divine ability?!”

Even the cool and collected Xu Yangyi exposed a sliver of irrepressible excitement in his eyes. He clearly remembered how great the shock of Chu Zhaonan’s Gun Kata had left upon the entire audience in the Qualifier that year!

Now, he finally had his first divine ability! It wasn’t the cheap ordinary Wind Edge Technique and it wasn’t the divine abilities of a low-rank arcane effort like the Hundred Solutions. Instead, it was a bonafide ancient inheritance that far outstripped the Burning Heavens Revelation, the acquisition of the first divine ability after obtaining the elementary qualifications!

No... to say such would not be wholly correct. The first move was the Fire Manipulation Art; he had gained two divine abilities! One was the supplementary Wind Brandishes Traces, and the second was this offensive one!

The wind aids the strength of the fire and the fire lends to the

might of the wind! He had continued to believe the Wind Brandishes Traces was a divine ability, however, just over the course of burning the furnace fire for six hours, this move, a true divine ability, suddenly emerged within his mind! This was the first killing divine ability of the Eternal Alchemy Canon. The Wind Brandishes Traces was no more than a supplementary arcane effort!

“It shall be called... Ten Cardinals Red Lotus.” He sensed the roaring, everlasting fire dragon coil around him. The fluctuation of roiling heat caused him to inwardly nod. Through special methods to draw the qi of heaven and earth and use oneself as a conduit to release this qi, this was a divine ability. It... could take the original move of the common, widespread Fireball Technique and transform it into all kinds of different appearances. It possessed a completely different might!

For example, his unique divine ability, the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus, held a strength that was twenty-two times above the Fireball Technique. This might comprised explosive force, sustainability, and destructive power. Moreover, it also bore its own uncontested valor.

Upon meeting water, it would not be quenched. Upon encountering wind, it would not be extinguished. Without seizing a target to cinders, it absolutely wouldn't die! In particular... he still had an idea within his heart he hadn't validated.

That was of these two moves born from the Fire Manipulation Art of the Eternal Alchemy Canon, was it a possibility... that both sides could unite? Then maybe the true might of the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus demanded the corresponding use of the Wind Brandishes Traces? Or perhaps... the addition of Life Sacrificatio

Of course, it wasn't necessary to tell these matters to anyone. This was his own hidden ace.

The corner of his mouth suddenly perked upwards. Since he left

the academy, like Chu Zhaonan had recognized him, he also only recognized the other. Back then, that bullet that had disabled him from gathering qi nearly spelled his doom. He really did desire to use this move against the other and roast him cleanly—of course, the other's clothes would be lost afterwards, and he would have to head out into the heart of the provincial plaza.

Carefully pinching this art, the fire dragon transformed into sparks in a flash, vanishing in the air.

He silently glanced at the even more respectful Li Zongyuan. How could he be unaware? Were it not for forced circumstance, demons that became familiars were otherwise in no way willing. He could determine the other's life or death with a single thought, however, to have a willing assistant was leagues better than an unwilling one.

He buried his excitement within his heart. He inhaled deeply and gradually settled his mind. Since he broke through the middle stage of Qi Condensation and grasped the initial Fire Manipulation Art of the Eternal Alchemy Canon, an esotericism of this divine ability had appeared within his mind. However, another one caused his heart to stir even further.

That was... he could vaguely sense the location of the Vermilion Bird Fire! It flashed momentarily and died away, but it deeply engraved an image within his mind. An expanse... a boundless grassland. In this grassland, a tranquil bending stream flowed. Behind it, there was a verdant cliff.

Yet this seemed to be a jigsaw puzzle. After his initial mastery of the fire control art, a thing similar to a grainy picture suddenly appeared within his mind. The Wind Brandishes Traces seemed to be a hand that wiped away at the surface of a region of grit. He couldn't see any more.

This place didn't explain anything at all. It was only capable of demonstrating a sole thing... He could feel... distinctly sense... as

he looked at this at this image, a strand of formless spiritual sense, separated by thousands of kilometers, even over ten thousand kilometers, fell upon his body!

The other could likewise perceive him! It was a strand... of inexplicable spiritual sense. It wasn't strong, and although its realm couldn't be confirmed, he felt it ought to not have surpassed Foundation Establishment. However, it carried within it the wisp of a deep, eternally ancient flavor, seemingly capable of causing a man to transform into waste beneath a glance.

Simultaneously... a kind of unexplainable intent of roiling heat charged forth from the entire image, like it wanted to burn a man to ashes! He only saw two eyes and then understood. This place was of lush green hills and clear, limpid waters, however... this place was without qi!

Anything related to qi became fuel for that Worldly Spirit Flame! As expected... it was there!

"There are still three steps..." Xu Yangyi sighed gently. Three more steps and then he would be able to clearly see the whole picture and understand where this thing was! The ultimate resting place of that Spirit Flame that witnessed several millenniums of China's development!

These words couldn't be spoken to anyone... He looked at his surroundings and furrowed his brows: "Why is it only you? What about Cheng Jianfeng and Zhou Tingting?"

Once Li Zongyuan heard these words, he suddenly coughed dryly: "Master... T-this was the affair I was just about to report to you... a joyous occasion..." He looked at Xu Yangyi's face: "Those two have recently been discussing marriage..."

Xu Yangyi's hand that took a Cleansing Talisman stopped. This was truly an unexpected horror, no, a pleasant surprise.

"When?" Once the Cleansing Talisman was stuck on him, he felt

much more comfortable and asked.

“Probably in two years...”

Xu Yangyi nodded: “I see. I’m going into seclusion for a week to stabilize my realm. After a week, we’ll immediately set off to the Four Great Joint Pools.”

“Yes!”

Just at this time, two old voices suddenly rang out upstairs: “Is Fellow Daoist here? I, Qi Nan, have come to pay visit.”

“I, Wang Sanshan, have come to pay visit.”

Xu Yangyi knitted his brows and Li Zongyuan immediately said: “Master, let’s just meet them. Right now, we ourselves don’t have a thing. Others have to bring a gift at least when they come pay visits for the first time. In addition, we still don’t know how long you’re going to cultivate here for. It’s well and fine to meet these neighbors. Master, you are of a prestigious house, the orthodoxy of Heavens Law. You might be unaware, but many opportunities do in fact originate from a few words shared between rogue and fringe cultivators.”

Originally, Xu Yangyi didn’t want to meet them; he wanted to enter seclusion again if only for the medicine placement song. He still didn’t even know how long he was going to cultivate, at the minimum over a year. Nonetheless, Li Zongyuan’s final remarks had roused him.

Yes... Presently, he was no longer of the prestigious orthodoxy of that year. He wanted to wait until he was capable of refining a pill to get in touch with those powers, admittedly in order to make prominent his own position. Even more important was...

If a branch master of the Feathewood Guard was moving against him, then what of the others?

Without completely solving how many additional people were tracking him down, and before he didn’t have sufficient protective

hidden aces, he absolutely wouldn't choose to reveal himself willy-nilly before the major powers.

Five Phases here refers to the ancient Chinese concept of the cycle of five elements: wood, fire, metal, water, and earth.

Note on chapter title: So the vanilla name of the term would be "Ten Directions Red Lotus", but I spruced it up and used the word "cardinals" instead. The gist of the concept of ten directions refers to north/south/west/east/NW/SW/NE/SE + zenith/nadir. These ten directions are believed to hold a god/buddha in Buddhism.

## Chapter 82: The Demons' Qi Clan

---

Three cups of green tea, even to receive guests, and the others simply wouldn't think to be discontent. This was because their cultivations were only at the initial stage of Qi Condensation.

Among the two older men before Xu Yangyi, one of them had a square face, buzzed hair, and was wearing a slightly faded changpao with a pair of black cloth shoes. The other was an elderly man with the style of an old farmer. A foot-long beard softly drooped down, the wrinkles on his face appeared to be like the skin of air-dried mandarin oranges, and there was a black birthmark on his left cheek. His entire person seemed not to be any different from the other old farmer.

Yet at this moment, they secretly sighed. Since Xu Yangyi agreed to let them enter, he was likely part of the dove faction. If a middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivator of the hawk faction had come to this little village, they would truly be restless!

"Fellow Daoist Xu, I am Wang Sanshan. Seven years ago, I settled down here." The square-faced Wang Sanshan clasped his hands, looking at Xu Yangyi who had his eyes hung to the tea at his lips, and respectfully took out an exquisite jade box: "Congratulations to the Fellow Daoist for breaking through to the middle stage. This a bit of my good will. I hope Fellow Daoist will kindly accept it."

His attitude was set quite low, and Xu Yangyi didn't move at all. Instead, once Li Zongyuan took it, he used his spiritual sense to sweep over it, discovering approximately twenty low-grade spirit stones. He then smiled: "The Fellow Daoist will bear it to mind."

Wang Sanshan wasn't dissatisfied whatsoever and merely clasped his hands. He sighed gently and laughed as he sat down.

"I am Qi Nan. I have lived here for fifteen years. My congratulations to the Fellow Daoist for his breakthrough to the middle stage. I also have a minor bit of good will. I hope Fellow



Daoist won't mind."

It was likewise a jade box. Xu Yangyi swept his spiritual sense over it, yet was faintly dazed. His spiritual sense couldn't pervade this jade box so easily. Evidently, it had undergone special processing. Chiefly, there weren't spirit stones on the inside, but rather a flower petal that carried a burning mark. It was roughly the size of a palm.

The original form of the petal could no longer be seen, however, with a sweep of his spiritual sense, he could feel the tremendous spiritual force possessed by this petal. If this burning petal was transformed into aqua to be ingested, it would even exceed some pill elixirs by far!

In the realm of Qi Condensation, this was already considered a generous gift. At least from what Xu Yangyi could see, he himself would begrudgingly part with it.

"A bit interesting." He opened his mouth for the first time: "This is?"

Qi Nan's gaze suddenly flashed, yet he still clasped his hands respectfully: "I obtained this little trinket by chance. A mere jest before an expert."

If the other wasn't willing to speak, then Xu Yangyi wouldn't force him to, as well. Qi Nan continued and laughed: "Fellow Daoist Xu, are you planning to stay here permanently? In general, a place far from the city is chosen for seclusion. The more natural the ecology, the richer the qi. If the Fellow Daoist is unsatisfied, twenty kilometers away from this village, there is the [Dragon Cave nearly beneath Mount Bai](#). Although the government failed to develop it, there are several middle-stage and late-stage Fellow Daoists sealed in death seclusion yonder."

This was asking him whether he was a permanent resident or transient visitor. If he was a permanent resident, it couldn't be avoided but to be in frequent contact later on. If he was a passing

traveller, there was a possibility this would be their only meeting.

“A passing traveller.” Xu Yangyi pursed his tea to his lips and said indifferently: “However, I might stay here for eight or ten years. I can’t say for sure.”

The three of them chatted for a while, and Wang Sanshan and Qi Nan made to leave and bid farewell. They had already attained their purpose; there wasn’t much of anything essential left.

“Master, I’ll go buy tickets now. Will we be headed off to the Four Great Joint Pools in a week?”

“Sure.” Xu Yangyi nodded, but didn’t get up. Instead, he took the jade box with the petal inside that was handed over by Li Zongyuan who had taken it with rapt interest. He began to fiddle around with it his hands.

“Master... Could it be that there is an issue with this petal?” Li Zongyuan asked puzzledly.

Xu Yangyi wordlessly played around with the box and only after several seconds pass did he laugh: “Take the box and open it.”

Just as he opened it, Li Zongyuan’s gaze glimmered: “This is...”

The inside of the box was astonishingly carved full of talismans. At this moment, an azure talisman emitted rays of light as it flashed.

“This is a formation that isolates spiritual sense.” Xu Yangyi finally set down his teacup and muttered to himself briefly: “I recognize a few of the runes in it. Its purpose appears to be as a measuring stick. If its standard is surpassed, the item inside can be clearly seen. If it isn’t, the box must be opened to take a look.”

“Why would he do this?” Li Zongyuan was stunned: “Although the accumulated amount of this petal’s qi is sufficiently high, at most it can be considered a generous gift, not a major one. Isn’t this unnecessary?”

Xu Yangyi looked at the entrance with a smile that wasn't a smile: "Yes... This petal can't be considered a major gift, so why did he expend such effort?"

"What do you say? Fellow Daoist Qi?"

Li Zongyuan jumped in fright and immediately lifted his head to look around, yet he didn't see a thing.

"As expected, Fellow Daoist Xu is fierce... How did you know my humble self was still here?"

Followed by a quiet sigh, a crow flew down from the beams of the room. In the wake of a foggy black mist that emitted from each of its feathers, it stood before them as the old farmer of moments ago in less than two seconds and bowed deeply.

"Clan master of the demon's Qi Clan pays respects to the Fellow Daoist. The power of Fellow Daoist's spiritual sense and the remarkability of his strength is something I have not oft seen among middle-stage cultivators."

These words were spoken by him with an exceptional sincerity, and he only stood up again after continuing to bow for no less than five seconds.

"Nonetheless... I am rather curious. How was Fellow Daoist aware that I was still here? Though the cultivations of my Qi Clan is not high, our ancestors passed down a few Minor Daos of Talismancy. Even at the middle-stage of Qi Condensation would my traces be nearly incapable of detection."

Xu Yangyi looked at the other with a smile that wasn't yet a smile: "You have no idea where I come from. It's nothing strange."

"Where we're from, such a crude testing method, if not four or five times, will happen two or three times per week." He casually took the jade box and pushed it forward on the table: "In comparison, Fellow Daoist's probe is child's play."

Qi Nan's face faintly flushed red in embarrassment: "I have

underestimated Fellow Daoist.”

Silence suddenly arrived, and Qi Nan seemed to steel his resolve. Xu Yangyi didn't rush him. After a full ten minutes passed, Qi Nan lifted his head and looked at Xu Yangyi solemnly.

“Fellow Daoist Xu...” Qi Nan's aged body moved closer and he said respectfully: “In no way do I harbor malice... Before you, I had already used this test on several middle-stage cultivators.”

Xu Yangyi nodded, hinting for the other to continue speaking.

“I am unsure, but does Fellow Daoist Xu know of this insect?” Qi Nan took off his conical bamboo hat and caught a black beetle from its surface, the size of pinky fingernail. He coughed lightly and said: “Its name is known as the reaction beetle. It's capable of sensing whether a person designated by the prompter is generally strong or weak. The instant it saw Fellow Daoist, this insect... ceased to make a sound.”

His gaze carried a sliver of complexity as he looked towards Xu Yangyi: “I have never encountered such a situation! At the onset, I believed it was a problem with the reaction beetle. It wasn't until I left that I discovered... it had unexpectedly already died!”

“There only exist a single kind of situation where the reaction beetle would die... and that is when another far surpasses it. I have cultivated for several decades, yet apart from Fellow Daoist, I have never met a single person to this day that was capable of causing my reaction beetle to meet its end.” Here onwards, Qi Nan's expression turned from respectful to fiery. He said heavily: “Truth be told, I've already handed over five of those petals. All to indigenous or perhaps permanently residing, locally famous cultivators...”

He paused deliberately, and Xu Yangyi smiled: “You mean to say that there are many of these kinds of petals.”

“Correct.” Qi Nan inhaled deeply and licked his lips: “Each time I

ask if the gift is satisfactory... in case the gift can truly be seen, I would've naturally responded here. However..."

He narrowed his eyes: "Until this day, only three middle-stage cultivators could genuinely observe it clearly. Fellow Daoist Xu happens to be the third. I am unaware..." He glanced intentionally or otherwise at Li Zongyuan and stopped talking.

"I might as well." Xu Yangyi waved his hand and all the doors and windows immediately seemed to shut tightly with a rattle as if they were closed by large invisible hands.

Qi Nan clenched his teeth and breathed in deeply a few times. He then cautiously took out a cell phone, his aged Adam's apple trembling: "Fellow Daoist Xu, before you look at this, I hope Fellow Daoist can pledge a sworn heart devil oath..."

"You jest." Before Qi Nan's voice had fallen, Xu Yangyi pursed his teacup to his mouth with his usual expression: "Has Fellow Daoist Qi misunderstood something?"

Qi Nan stood up at his original position with a complicated expression. He could not advance, yet he could not retreat.

"There are people with the qualifications to take out an item as they please and make me immediately give vow." Xu Yangyi glanced at the other indifferently: "But that does in no way include you."

An initial-stage cultivator, just the master of a clan, could only have come to seek collaboration. According to Xu Yangyi's thoughts, Qi Nan should've already silently sought out many cultivators of the middle stage. Indeed, in this era of Cultivation Civilization, there wasn't a person in the outside world that would openly commit murder to seize treasures, however, if it was in some old forest that was deep in the mountains... say, during the exploration of a secret realm that managed to evade being cleaned out. This illustrated that their clan possessed a method where they needed not to fear middle-stage cultivators.

The disparity between the initial and middle stages was great. Xu Yangyi, who had just broken through, clearly understood this. Such a dangerous person had come visiting and then wanted him to swear an oath?

Besides, just considering the idea, the other was obviously the weaker party. He had come knocking on his door for a collaboration, yet wanted him to swear an oath. This was like an unknown company running to an international monopoly and saying to them: I have an opportunity, but you have to swear a pledge.

There was only one result. Make a pledge? Not a chance, say it or not. No? Get out.

Qi Nan choked a belly full of words in his stomach. After a while, he stood up with his slightly flushed face: "It's quite possible this matter is connected to a secret realm. Since Fellow Daoist is not willing to swear an oath, I won't make things difficult."

Xu Yangyi saw Li Zongyuan give a meaningful look with full effort from the corner of his eyes, yet he simply didn't pay it any heed. He shook his head serenely: "See yourself out."

Qi Nan was completely floored by these words!

He had only tried out Xu Yangyi to give himself space to breath! Who would've thought the other would've washed his hands of the matter and then close the door?! Presently, he couldn't move forward, but nor could he pull back. Standing at his original position for ages, he departed with a calm face, not uttering a single word.

From the beginning to end, Xu Yangyi hadn't even glanced at the other.

Swish! Li Zongyuan moved forward two steps to the door, watching the other's silhouette irreconcilably.

Not only had Qi Nan not anticipated this, even Li Zongyuan

hadn't. Xu Yangyi had unexpectedly truly declined! Moreover, he had declined without a shred of wiggle room!

“Master!” It wasn't until Qi Nan's figure went unseen did Li Zongyuan anxiously turn his head: “You, t-this might be connected with a secret realm! How could you decline it?”

Xu Yangyi's face didn't change. Secret realms, he knew of them. If any industry or domain required an item that could stir the hearts of men, then a secret realm was the cultivation community's most inspiring legend!

So-and-so picked up an arcane effort in some secret realm and achieved Foundation Establishment... So-and-so obtained a high-grade magik artifact in some secret realm and entered the top hundred cultivator rankings... Because so-and-so saved a beauty like a gallant hero, he and that beautiful female cultivator fell in deep love, two trees growing as one... This was just like in the movies and television shows, when the main lead picked up a million bucks on the side of the road.

Were it not for these legends, the most fundamental of desires wouldn't exist. Any industry required these kinds of myths.

A secret realm was perhaps a different world or a large ancient site... After several millennia of geographical transformations, they had already been buried within the nooks and crannies of the Earth. Only one with great destiny and great willpower could possibly come across them. A majority of secret realms were hidden opportunities that could cause the heart to race.

Thinking of this, Xu Yangyi smiled.

In the modern age, was there any opportunity that could upstage the Eternal Alchemy Canon?

Real place. Only thing here I am unsure about is Mount Bai. Since this region is actually a mountain chain that borders on North Korea, as well. Although this might be referring to the largest

mountain of the entire chain, which is known in korean/manchu/chinese as many things, but in chinese, namely as “the ever-white mountain”. Also known as Baekdu/Paektu mountain in Korean.



## Chapter 83: Meeting Old Friends (1)

---

With such an arcane effort in his hands, did he need to consider some other secret realm? Moreover, it wasn't even certain it was a secret realm. It was merely a "possible" connection. Currently, he wished in no way to take out his trumps. Nevertheless, he wouldn't even take out a card; the player would be finished.

Sooner or later, he would go to a secret realm. If not now, he would have enough to grasp in the near future.

"Nothing but a secret realm." He laughed: "Get ready. I'll leave seclusion in a week, and we shall leave for the Four Great Joint Pools."

Granting no opportunity for Li Zongyuan to speak, he entered the cultivation room. A week's time arrived swiftly. After he left seclusion again, he immediately set foot on the road to the Four Great Joint Ponds with Li Zongyuan.

In his week of seclusion, he verified a theory. The Wind Brandishes Traces was indeed capable of acting in tandem with the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus. They were born from the same root; it wasn't contrary to his expectations. What went beyond his anticipations... was its might!

Calling to mind the several hundred meter space charred black within the cultivation room, he couldn't restrain the curve at the corner of his mouth. It was no wonder... divine abilities could stir the hearts of men. Li Zongyuan had nearly kneeled and prostrated upon witnessing his divine ability. Such might... truly ought to have been forbidden by society. Otherwise, the eruption of a divine ability, even an explosion in the hands of an initial-stage Qi Condensation cultivator, was a normal person's catastrophe.

The second validation was that regardless of what method he employed, the "peach pit" within his qi sea remained motionless. It wasn't like a living organism or a dead one. It was just quietly

floating there like so.

Already, a week had come, so he could only temporarily set aside his experimentation. After all, meeting the Master Decrypter Jadewave and uncovering the Emperor Armament's true identity was more important.

The Emperor Armament... was the first pivotal matter that he wanted to presently solve. He didn't understand what it was, and it wasn't clear to him why he was being hunted down! Moreover, he didn't have a grasp of his own situation!

Seven days later, in Li Zongyuan's new car, Xu Yangyi watched the endless flow of traffic with half-lidded eyes and cars with handsome guys and pretty girls inside. He suddenly realized... he truly seemed to have slightly forgotten the feeling of human society.

Over a dozen years of Heavens Law's militarized administration had went by like a single day. It could be considered the only place that was deeply woven into human society, unexpectedly even as he served as the captain of the Disciplinary and Investigations Unit in Sanshui City. It was indescribable and somewhat reminiscent.

Perhaps his time in secluded cultivation had been too long. He said quietly: "Slow down a bit."

"Alright."

Li Zongyuan didn't ask why, and Xu Yangyi cranked down the car window, putting his hand outside and feeling the traces of wind gust past. He didn't use qi to isolate his entire body from the cold or heat, rather feeling the summertime tail of the fiery sun as it neared October. A kind of needlelike sunshine shone on his powerful arm, faintly pricking it. Waves of hot wind blew by and seemed to disperse the roiling heat on his arm.

He wore a black T-shirt, jeans, and sneakers. He didn't care much in regards to his outward appearance, only feeling a type of

sensation of leaving the gloomy stone room and walking into the embrace of nature. It caused each one of his nerves to relax and seemed to nearly vanquish all of the haze within his heart.

Such relaxation even caused him to feel a tad sleepy. In cultivation, like the absorption of drug-like qi into the body, walking into nature was another kind of elegance.

Plup! At this time, his arm grew cold. It wasn't a drop, but rather a puddle. He faintly furrowed his brows and opened his eyes, yet discovered the thudding sound of a Sprite bottle tossed on the road. As for his hand, there was liquid that happened to splash out in the wake of the bottle.

He slightly raised his head. There were many cars on the highway, yet the most conspicuous was a car in front of them. A wind-red sports car with a streamlined science-fictionesque build and a rather interesting [license plate](#): Ming A-AA6666.

The car's windows didn't reflect light, however, this didn't obstruct him from seeing the things inside the slightest bit. They were youths using their hands to point at the side as they laughed heartily.

It was him they were probably pointing at...

Inside the car, there were two young men and one young woman. Driving the car was a bald man wearing sunglasses in a western suit. At this moment, the young woman was sneering at the glass behind, raising her middle finger, and laughing loudly at Xu Yangyi's car: "Haha, retard! How 'bout you show off! A 700,000 Audi A6L is frickin' crap. I always fall into a bad mood when I see such a lousy car!"

"The entire road is as worth as much as this car." At the side, a guy wearing sunglasses lit a cigarette and leisurely crossed his leg over the other as he took a drag: "You said you wouldn't cause a disturbance. What's gonna happen if that guy chases after?"

“Oh? I’m fucking afraid he won’t chase. I’m so scared.” The young woman rolled her eyes. It seemed her mood was extremely foul, and she unscrewed another bottle of Sprite: “Isn’t it boring on the road? It’s so hard to have some fun, and we even ran into a retarded car driving in front of us? A crummy A6L? Fuck, what I just tossed out of the car could be considered his good luck!”

She appeared quite decent, but each of her words revealed a domineering tone of since she was spoiled from childhood. Unpleasant to my eye, so I’ll just throw it away. Say something not to my liking, so I’ll just block your path. There were too many people of some status like this.

The youth in the front row laughed: “It can be regarded as your good fortune. If that bottle got in, maybe there would be news tomorrow of the daughter of Mingshui Province’s minister of the Ministry of Land and Resources, Hu Jiaojiao, driving recklessly and flipping over a passerby’s Audi without reason.”

“Hehe, then he’ll sue?” Hu Jiaojiao haughtily stuck a straw into her drink and sipped: “I’m SO scared. Scared that he won’t come?”

“Not to mention flinging it onto his body, so what if I threw it on his face?” Rolling her eyes, Hu Jiaojiao used her arm to nudge the roughly twenty-year-old youth at her side and laughed boisterously: “Whaddaya say, [big bro](#)?”

“You...” The elder cousin wore a smile and his brows didn’t even furrow. It seemed that this matter was like the law of the heavens and the principles of the earth. His finger casually relaxed, and ash from the butt of his cigarette fluttered along in the wind behind. He then turned up the window: “How you love to play, but I must remind you, it was hard this time for big brother to ask around to go to the Four Great Joint Pools today. Once we’re in front of others, you have to be good for me. It’s not like you don’t know of big brother’s temper.”

The young woman seemed to cool down a bit and shrugged: “I

know, you've said it eighty times. You don't have to worry I'm gonna be a bother. Hey... check it out, is that idiot still daring to look?"

"He can't see, young miss." The bald man drove the car quickly and steadily, and he laughed: "Perhaps he's evaluating how much money this car is? Maybe the sunshine is glaring too much on the license plate. Anyways, I want him to get a good look, then he won't have the guts to run his mouth."

"As it should be." Hu Jiaojiao laughed matter-of-factly: "What I despise the most is the vapid blustering of such a commoner."

"Pffft..." The young man in front row laughed: "I see you truly are so bored to pick a fight. Miss, you should wisen up. Careful or you'll cause your family misfortune. The internet nowadays sure is serious..."

"Misfortune? Don't kid me."

Xu Yangyi calmly pulled back his gaze. He had no desire to understand a [chuunibyou](#). Especially after experiencing over half a year of seclusion, his attitude had changed greatly.

After long periods of solitary, there were only two kinds of symptoms. The first was an inability to stop speaking and the second was habitual silence. He felt that he belonged to neither of these two sides, but he really did speak less than before. Perhaps this was the price of cultivating... or at least one of them...

He closed his eyes and his head leaned against the soft chair. He asked casually: "What's that car?"

Everything in the back row was observed within Li Zongyuan's eyes, however, without his master's word, he was inconvenienced to speak. He squinted his eyes and said: "A GT-R NISMO."

"How much is it?"

"Probably... over 2 million?"

“Oh...” The sound of Xu Yangyi understanding could be heard: “What position do you think a person has to have to drive such a car?”

Li Zongyuan could also see the people inside the car as clear as day. Reflective glass didn't have the least bit effectiveness against cultivators. Without nearly even thinking, he replied: “Rich [second-generation](#) kids with money in the house.”

“Ones that don't view a single person in their surroundings as above them, but raise their heads once they have a group. Self-important rich kids.” He stowed his gaze, bored stiff: “A good part of rich kids these days won't flaunt their wealth. Even if they wanted to, their parents wouldn't permit them to. However, there'll always be some middle-of-the-road households that produce a few marvels... Are you mad?”

“Mad?” Xu Yangyi laughed, bearing an unspeakable derision: “At them?”

“I'm just saying...” Li Zongyuan stealthily measured Xu Yangyi's expression from the rearview mirror: “Our system of values is totally different from theirs. Master, concerned persons might be thinking of you right now. It really isn't easy for you to personally appear.”

“Moreover, if I haven't remembered incorrectly, mister, the Shennong Convention has it stated in writing that cultivators and demons can by no means reveal their existences before humans unless it is absolutely essential. It's forbidden to use spiritual force and qi in front of ordinary people, and not only are a great majority of magik artifacts prohibited to circulate to the masses, the distribution of cultivation goods is banned in the marketplaces of ordinary people...”

These are the protections of humanity's peak authorities towards mankind. After all, even at the initial stage of Qi Condensation, we're all superhumans to them. In general, even if humans offend

us, we won't do anything public. Besides, it's not necessary."

He spoke for three to four seconds, and Xu Yangyi didn't interrupt, as well. As soon as Li Zongyuan finished speaking, Xu Yangyi opened his eyes, looking at Li Zongyuan in the rearview mirror. Watching him for a full five seconds, it wasn't until the other lowered his head, not daring to look at him, did Xu Yangyi say coldly: "You memorized it clearly."

"I'm really not angry."

"If I was angry, their lives wouldn't be intact right now."

"Cultivators maintain the law of the jungle's veneer of peace. If you tolerate it once, there won't even be a chance for you to bear it next time. The consideration of all consequences can't be called the struggle of fate." He looked into the other's eyes: "That is called... fearing the head and nervous of the tail. The hesitation of the mouse to step out of its hole, mired by indecision."

As he finished speaking these few words, he closed his eyes again. Too long had he not encountered humans. In reality, he quite enjoyed such a sensation. In the human world, strength still reigned supreme, yet it wasn't as naked as in the cultivation world. In the last second he advanced, and in the next, Qi Nan and Wang Sanshan, older than him by several decades, only dared to appellate themselves as humble, even avoiding to mention themselves directly.

There was injustice and there was pleasure. There existed grievance and delight. Without sharp thrills, there was but unending happiness. He rather enjoyed this kind of sensation. The liquid from the bottle that spilled onto his body, however, was the emergence of a minor ripple.

The inside of the car was saturated with the newest song from the radio broadcast. He didn't enjoy it, but he didn't make Li Zongyuan switch it off. This was proof of the human world.

“Indeed, I have been apart from the masses for too long...” He carried the wisp of a smile, enjoying his negligible happiness of a cultivator that had just left seclusion.

Time drifted by minute by minute. After approximately ten-odd minutes passed, Li Zongyuan’s laughter arrived within his ear: “Master, that car just now ran into a problem. It’s at the side of the road being patched up.”

“Which car?” Xu Yangyi faintly raised a brow and questioned.

“The GT-R NISMO. It’s, it’s that car those group of chuuni kids were sitting in...” Li Zongyuan said in shock.

Xu Yangyi nodded. Were it not for the other reminding him of this matter, he really wouldn’t have remembered.

At the side of the road, three youths walked out of the car. The oldest was no more than twenty and the youngest had an appearance of roughly fifteen or sixteen.

Nonetheless, they were dressed in vogue. As long as the clothing on their bodies was recognized, one would know the price was considerable. In addition to their presently ill-mannered faces, not only did they not draw the sympathy of others, even quite a couple cars suddenly increased their speed once they drove here. Among the few cars, a sonorous whistle came from the driver’s seat.

It appeared this location exceeded the vanity they were able to satisfy.

“What’re you looking at, huh!” Hu Jiaojiao turned her head and cursed: “Haven’t you ever fuckin’ seen a good car? Retard!”

License plates in China feature the character of the location. In this case, it is: 明A——AA6666. The Ming character denotes the region of the car. The letter A refers to a specific part of the region.

Not really her big brother. Actually her older male cousin through her mother. In Chinese, cousins are considered siblings.



Honestly not sure if Chuunibyou here is necessarily correct. Chinese is “Second-year middle school” To be honest though, this is really the only thing that makes sense to me. If you do not know what a Chuunibyou is, in English, it is known as “Second-year Middle School Syndrome”, but this is a term made popular by the Japanese. Encapsulates an idea that a person has a certain delusion of themselves, i.e: magical powers. Called middle school syndrome because that’s when this weirdness is likely to occur. Anyone can get it though.

I think I made this note in early chapters, but in China there is an idea of a super wealthy group of kids known simply in Chinese as “Second Generation”. It’s the rich kid with a supercar. Referred to as second generation because their parents hauled ass to become rich, but they reap the benefit.

## Chapter 84: Meeting Old Friends (2)

---

Hu Jiaojiao tossed away a Sprite bottle in passing. It landed in the road and flipped around noisily. The weather was blistering, yet a problem had occurred with the car. A group of people in bright and neat clothes under the sun was the same as a joke. No one would be in a good mood.

Vroom! Just at this time, another black car drove by. Hu Jiaojiao originally wasn't of the mood to look at the car, but to her shock, she caught sight of Xu Yangyi in the back row.

The other seemed to look at her like a commodity, glancing indifferently.

"Fuck!" Hu Jiaojiao's Hermès handbag angrily pounded on the group's car. In her heart, a nameless ghastly fire flared in bursts. The whistle of another person from before seemed to have turned into firewood and this emotionless glance caused her fury to erupt in an instant!

"Hu Ba, fix the car." She coldly said: "I'll be driving next."

"How come?" Her elder cousin walked over, helped her shake her fan, and laughed: "Are you upset?"

"That idiot just drove past!" Hu Jiaojiao said grumpily.

"Which idiot?"

"The one that swung his hand out first!" Hu Jiaojiao kicked the tire: "He even fucking glanced at me! You didn't seek the look in his eyes! It really made me fucking angry!"

"Who gave him the guts to look around everywhere!? I didn't see, but even I'm angry! The fuckin' hell he lookin' at!"

Spewing out her resentments and rolling her eyes, she clenched her teeth as she sat down in the driver's seat.

A look? Alright, Momma's gonna embarrass you to death! Got the

guts to rumble with me?

Just him? Hu Jiaojiao sneered loathingly, pulling at the folds at the corner of her mouth. As soon as she began paying attention to the other, it was because of the other's appearance. Indeed, he was handsome. In addition, she was hard-pressed to admit it, but he had quite the manly air. An attraction like a wild beast. Yet looking onwards, she just wasn't satisfied.

His looks were quite decent and his car was even good? [Get lost](#). Playing the rich kid in front of me?

Without even thinking, her thoughts grew heated in an instant. By chance, as her car surpassed the other's, her bottle of half-finished Sprite flew past.

"Young miss, the car is ready."

At this moment, the driver's respectful voice rang out, and Hu Jiaojiao impatiently waved her hand: "Sit in the back!"

"Pick up the pace! Why're you so slow!" The fire of her heart wouldn't scatter, and she slapped the car door and yelled.

The two youths glanced at each other and shrugged. They both had a premonition that they would have to sort out the shambles of this egotistical queen.

"The next time I see Uncle Hu and the rest, I'm going to give them some advice. If Jiaojiao goes on like this, she's going to stir up a disaster." The youth furrowed his brows and sighed: "We're urging her, but she won't listen. Anyways, we'd hate to scold her. Mingshui Province is pretty decent right now..."

"How is that fine? There are many people in Mingshui Province that her parents dare not to provoke." The youth said helplessly: "There's nothing to do about this. Besides, stop caring about her household matters. You won't win any favor inside or out."

"Yeah." The young man thought it over and sat down in the car: "I don't know why, but I keep feeling a bit off. I probably didn't

sleep well last night.” Before his voice even fell, followed by a swooshing sound, the car had already suddenly charged forth! Its speed nearly arrived at a furious extreme!

A chorus of startled cries rang out!

“Slow down!” The young man’s face had paled in fright and the driver’s complexion was even more like a cadaver’s. The young man shouted sternly without thought: “Hu Jiaojiao! You’re courting death! I haven’t lived long enough yet!”

“Take it easy! Fuck!” The youth also shouted, his forehead wet with cold sweat. Upon hearing these words, he didn’t shield his younger cousin for the first time: “Jiaojiao, even if you want to find trouble for that guy, we’ll catch up to him sooner or later with our car’s speed! What are you so rushed for?!”

“I’m not!” Hu Jiaojiao yelled just as she stamped down on the accelerator.

The driver said heavily: “Young miss, my duty is to protect your safety. If you really are still going to speed up, then...”

Hu Jiaojiao firmly pursed her lips, finally slowing down the car. “I’m gonna have fun with whatever I please later on and you guys aren’t allowed to stop me.” She snorted, and the anger within her heart flourished further as she stifled her fire.

“We’ll do it your way.” The young man recovered his lazy manner, merely his brows were tightly furrowed: “In any case, your parents will end up cleaning the mess... Nonetheless, Jiaojiao, I advise you, it’s fine if nothing happens to a family like ours. If something really occurs, a big incident that can’t be contained...”

“Aren’t you a bother!” Hu Jiaojiao turned her head and said angrily: “Are you my parents? What do you care?”

“Fine, alright, okay, I don’t care. As you will.” The young man’s voice gracefully raised at the tail end and he said no more.

Xu Yangyi was listening to music, and the car drove unhurriedly.

This sensation of the rising sun and falling moon was leagues more vivid than the cold, lonely walls within the stone room. Everything was like a picture, not a dry and dull darkness.

If in the future, his realm high, he would traverse the entire world, broadening his horizons on all kinds of sceneries... He looked somewhat spellbound at the sunset that dyed the sky, the corner of his mouth slightly curving. His finger joyfully tapped on the car door.

Vroom! Simultaneously, a car flitted past at lightning speed from behind him. He vaguely saw a young beauty with her hair blurring into a wave, raising her middle finger at him and cursing. It couldn't be distinctly heard, but looking at the shape of her mouth, it seemed to be—idiot? Wasn't this a bit familiar?

“Mister, that 6666 car moved ahead of us.” Li Zongyuan said in front.

“Follow her.” Xu Yangyi said neither swiftly nor slowly.

Screech! At this time, red lights flashed in front of the car, and Li Zongyuan hurriedly stopped in fright, yet discovered the other was driving. Although Li Zongyuan didn't possess a cultivator's zeal, he held a cultivator's breadth of mind. He merely furrowed his brows and started the ignition and drove again.

However, before he even drove five meters, he had no choice but to summon his courage and say: “Master, that GT-R... appears to be making a go at our Audi...”

The smile at the corner of Xu Yangyi's mouth vanished. What was the most annoying to a person lost in thought?

Disturbances.

He didn't want to pay attention to these people, yet they had come bothering his hard-to-come-by pleasure, like a housefly. This matter truly caused him to be a tad vexed.

“Overtake them.”

“Mister... we can’t. The car in front slowed down first and then sped up just to keep us under control. They’re driving even slower than a tortoise crawling right now. At this speed, we won’t even get to the Four Great Joint Pools by tomorrow...”

“Awesome?” At the same time, Hu Jiaojiao looked at the Audi in the rearview mirror with slanted eyes, spitting her chewing gum out of the car: “If you’re not gonna admit your wrongs nice and easy, then I’ll make it so you’ll never get past me even the day after tomorrow!”

The young man and the youth in the back seat laughed wryly. They understood the other’s temper all too well. She was a stereotypical young mistress. If she couldn’t give vent to her anger, then she would drag them along with her in hardship, devoid of the basic consideration of others.

“See, there’s going to be trouble later.” The youth sighed: “I’m sick and tired of having to clean up after her for all these years.”

“Who’s making you be her older cousin?” The young man looked at the sky with somewhat of a migraine: “Right now, we should’ve originally arrived, but now? There’s no way we’re getting there in two hours.”

Xu Yangyi looked at the car ahead from the back seat. Indeed, the other’s car skills were quite exquisite, firmly suppressing him. But not only was it them, there was a line of at least four car or five cars behind. Impatient drivers had already stuck their heads out and began cursing.

“Is that a luxury car? Why don’t you let others move?”

“Speed up, GT-R! It was hard for me to get the weekend today to go out and see the scenery with my family! Have you no civility?!”

“Haven’t you backed things up for half an hour? What’re you complaining for? Did we mess with you?!”

“Go look for whoever provoked you! Can’t you see that only a

single car can ride on this road?!”

“Scram!” Hu Jiaojiao stuck her head out, and cursed, her anger soaring to the heavens: “Come pass me! If you can’t, then don’t fucking waste your breath!”

“You want me to yield the road? Fine! Get that bastard behind me to get out and apologize! If he apologizes, then I’ll get out the way!”

Xu Yangyi raised his chin and Li Zongyuan stuck his head out in tacit understanding: “What are we going to apologize for?”

“You...” Hu Jiaojiao clenched her teeth and shouted furiously: “What do I care about you?! In any case, it’s you that has to apologize!”

Xu Yangyi nodded and Li Zongyuan pulled his head back in.

“Fuck! Which family’s idiot is this?! [Is her father Li Gang](#)!?” The last vehicle was a rather ordinary car. The driver appeared to be a twenty-one or twenty-two-year-old university student. Slamming the steering wheel, he said angrily: “Has a photo been taken? Take a photo, and we’ll get ready to spread it on Weibo! If she wants to be so popular, then we’ll give her a helping hand!”

“I took a photo! I’ve been taking photos. This is really pissing me off!”

“Do it. I came out this weekend to have fun and wanted to go to the Four Great Joint Pools for a good while, but I ran into such an idiot in the end.”

All the surrounding voices were drawn into Xu Yangyi’s ear. His face absent of a single hair of change, he said: “Run into them.”

“Okay... Huh?!” Li Zongyuan believed himself to have heard mistakenly.

“I said...” Xu Yangyi cranked up the car window and looked chillingly at the car ahead: “Run into them.”

“Okay...”

Li Zongyuan inhaled deeply and the car went back in reverse by two meters. Followed by the forceful stamp of the accelerator, and in the wake of a loud rumble, the Audi and the GT-R suddenly crashed together!

Bang! A loud noise rang out, and the five cars on the road were all stunned!

“Fuck!” The student in the last car suddenly shouted out in fright: “A tailgating accident!”

The red tail lights of all the cars didn’t have enough time to flash, and they stopped their ignitions in unison. Everyone left their cars and looked at the two cars ahead in astonishment.

“A crash?” A middle-aged man looked at the place the two cars had hit and gulped: “These brothers have quite the temper. They dared to hit this car...”

Countless cell phones were raised up simultaneously, aimed at the two cars altogether.

Boom! At the same time of the crash, everyone in the car ahead was intimately close to having their foreheads touch the object in front of them. Hu Jiaojiao’s first reaction was... couldn’t this idiot drive?!

Yet within the young man’s heart, alarm and anger mingled together—he had observed the scene prior. This was in no way some tailgating incident! From the start, the other didn’t care what their car was! Or what their license plate was! This was just to screw with them! They had stepped on a hard nail this time! Furious, he recognized this foolish girl was practically goddamn rotten bad luck!

The entire traffic lane stilled. Everyone had left their cars, but no one of the two cars in the accident had exited their vehicles.

“Continue.” Xu Yangyi’s eyes carried a wisp of frostiness, and he looked at the car ahead: “You’re not allowed stop before I give the



word.”

“K-keep on hitting?”

Xu Yangyi didn't respond. His gaze already explained all.

Some people loved to play the housefly. In regards to such houseflies, sometimes, he was truly disinclined to care. However, if they really caused him trouble, he wouldn't mind swatting them to death with a palm. For example... in a time when he had just recently ended his monotonous secluded meditation of over half a year and begun enjoying the picturesque scene of mountains and rivers.

Without answering, Li Zongyuan pursed his lips and reversed two meters once again. Everyone in the surroundings was dumbstruck.

“He's... He's still going?” The four college students in the last car were likewise frightened. Even the middle-aged male driver from before was dazed in place.

Forget about the first time, there was a second? This wasn't a big temper, this driver was incredibly irrational!

Get lost is the best approximation. In Chinese, the slang is more like “Go to your grandfather” or something like that. Northern dialect of “get lost”, “scram”.

“Is her father Li Gang!” Is a cultural reference to a case in China during 2010. This guy was drunk driving and while bringing his girlfriend back to his dorm, he hit two people, causing the eventual death of one of them. As he was being arrested, the guy shouted out “Go ahead, sue me if you dare! My father is Li Gang!” because he thought his father would give him immunity. His father happened to be deputy director of the local public security bureau. This caused public furor and outcry and the guy pretty much got reamed for it. In January 2011, this guy (Li Qiming) was sentenced to six years in prison and fines.

## Chapter 85: Meeting Old Friends (3)

---

Hu Jiaojiao saw everything from the rearview mirror, only feeling her scalp tingling frantically! The first time wasn't considered the end... he was still planning on coming a second time? Was there no natural order? Was there no law of the land?

Did he not know fear?! He didn't understand the significance of this car's license plate. The meaning of this car had went unrealized!

However, whatever her rage, it was no less than the fear in her heart. Her thoughts were embroiled by violent fury, and nevertheless, a screech came out from her mouth: "K-knock it off! D-don't hit us! There are people inside who are seriously injured!"

The three people in the back, boggled out of their minds, were unable to restrain the blackening of their faces.

"Hit them." Xu Yangyi used his spiritual sense to perform a sweep over and smiled even colder: "If they don't admit repentance, continue to hit them."

Hum! The sound of the accelerator growing louder was heard, and Hu Jiaojiao was frightened out of her spirit. She realized the other really was getting ready for a second run to finish the job!

"Brother! Brother! It's enough!" Not only was it not confined to him, the other people were so scared that they broke into cold sweats from head to toe. The middle-aged man couldn't restrain his loud shout: "Brother! Don't hit them, their background is obviously great! Brothers, I urge you; people like us can't afford to provoke the people of this license plate! If you strike again, there really will be an accident!"

The students put their hands at the sides of their mouth and shouted : "Big brother, don't hit them. If you crash into them again there'll be real trouble! They were in the wrong before, and

we took photos! You're clean! If they sue you, we're willing to supply video!"

"Yeah, it's better to avoid unnecessary trouble, my man. Just forget about it."

"Brother, things are more or less fine."

Although the car window was shut, Xu Yangyi could hear these voices crystal clear. Li Zongyuan dared not to make a decision, only obliged to looking at Xu Yangyi.

"I read a news article on the web in the past." Xu Yangyi suddenly laughed and said: "[A middle school student or a high school student went to help an old person, but was extorted out of a couple ten thousand by the old person.](#)"

"There is a crack in the ethics system." He looked outside the window somewhat in a trance and said quietly: "I thought to myself, what would I do? The gained result is, considering the conclusion, is to file a lawsuit. Naturally, this was my mere thinking as an ordinary person."

"A single person thinks of settling peace. A hundred people bring harmony, and as a result, everyone is contributing bricks and tiles for this crack."

"The silent endurance of Confucianism isn't talking about such patient tolerance. Of course..." He stowed his gaze: "The most important thing is that this woman insensibly caused me this degree of trouble."

"Smash it up. I guarantee there won't even be a single hair that falls." He crossed one of his legs over the other, tranquilly lit a cigarette, and looked at the butt of his cigarette as he said calmly: "Until they come to their senses."

"Yes!" Li Zongyuan said loudly in response. This type of feeling... although he didn't understand it, it seemed to be pretty awesome.

Boom! In the midst of everyone's stupefaction, the over 700,000

Audi A6L and the 2 million-plus GT-R NISMO crashed together once again!

The second time!

“Fuck...” The middle-aged man couldn’t contain himself from cursing: “These brothers... got character... but what’s going to happen later? Not to mention first whether the people of this license plate are ordinary people, this is a car worth several million!”

“Blargh...”

Inside the car, the youth was unable to bear the dizzying commotion and vomited on the ground. Before he even spoke, the sound of Hu Jiaojiao’s disdainful voice retching rang out: “I’m sick to my stomach! What’re we doing!”

“Sick to your mother!” The youth cursed simply without a thought: “Let’s get out now!”

“Shut up!” The young man looked hatefully at Hu Jiaojiao, as well. Never did he expect even in his dreams that this matter would come to forceful blows without any consideration. They had encountered a madman today!

It was strange that their skin hadn’t broken on this second time, yet merely this terror caused them to break out in a body-wide cold sweat in fear! He was already terribly regretting in abiding Hu Jiaojiao’s picking of a fight! Who knew that the other wouldn’t give a damn about them at all!

“Apologize! Apologize now!” The youth glanced behind and screeched: “H-h-he’s coming to hit us again!”

S-still coming? The young man’s complexion changed!

“If you want to apologize, you go!” Hu Jiaojiao released a throat-tearing screech. Even though she was so panicked, she had never been humiliated like this! In which occurrence was it not others apologizing to her? When has she erred in any matter? On what

basis did she have to apologize to that low-class plebeian?!

“Hu Jiaojiao.” The young man glared unwaveringly into the other’s eyes: “This is big brother’s car!”

Hu Jiaojiao was dazed and then spat in contempt: “So what?! You want me to give this country hick an apology?! Listen up to me loud and clear! No way!!!”

The silence lasted approximately half a second.

“Hu Jiaojiao...” The young man inhaled deeply and opened his mouth again: “This is the car I sought out from big brother to borrow. Forget about it, you listen up to me...”

“Starting from now, we don’t know each other.”

Hu Jiaojiao was stunned.

She was unable to understand; how could this happen in the end? Was it so frightening? Because the other had run into them twice, the schoolmate that had protected her for ten-odd years broke off all ties with her? The tree had collapsed in a mere instant, yet it was due to a process of termites in the past, extending onwards for several years.

“We apologize!” Without basically giving her more thought, the young man stuck his head out and shouted: “Sorry! This matter is our wrongdoing!”

Screech... Just as the car pulling back in reverse again, it finally came to a halt. Every person that was present let loose a sigh, however, they witnessed an even more inconceivable scene next.

The young man stepped out of the car with his nearly ashen face. In their social circle, face was more important than anything. On this day, it was him again that had to settle the affair that Hu Jiaojiao provoked! In addition, it was a clean up he was absolutely unwilling to do! He could already imagine that his face tomorrow would be published on all kinds of web pages and news articles!

“Hu Jiaojiao...” He clenched his teeth, his face growing more unsightly, and he nodded towards the inside of the car: “You best shape the fuck up.”

“If it’s not important in the future, don’t fucking come looking for me! In Panshan City, I don’t acquaint myself with people of your number!”

“Then don’t get along with me! Who cares!” Sullenness bubbled up in Hu Jiaojiao’s heart, and she stuck half of her body outside and shrieked.

The young man snorted coldly and turned on his heels, walking away.

“A real photo of a second generation rich kid or the kid of an official falling out at the scene...” A university student in the back softly sighed in emotion.

Thud...

Thud thud thud... The sound of closing doors continued to ring out in succession, and Hu Jiaojiao, the youth, and the bald driver all stepped out of their car.

“Open the door!” She stood before the head of the somewhat deformed Audi and firmly gritted her teeth: “Didn’t you want me to apologize? What? You dare not to open the door?”

“There’s no need.” Xu Yangyi’s voice penetrated through the thick window: “Just go.”

“Heh...” Hu Jiaojiao laughed angrily. This business wasn’t finished! She had lost a great deal of face in public, she and the young man had fallen out, and she was frightened out of her wits. Wasn’t it just stopping you for a bit? Wasn’t it just a beverage thrown at you? You damned unreasonable buffoon?! If we were in Panshan City, I could make your lousy car go through the [three deaths](#)! Now, you even fucking dare to find it convenient to show off your good manners?

“Mister, are we really letting them go?” Li Zongyuan asked.

Xu Yangyi popped in his earphones and nodded. It wasn't fright, but upon seeing this noisy girl, he was a tad troubled. In his mind, the silhouette of a woman that had invested her everything for her little sister suddenly jumped into his mind. Although it was somewhat fuzzy, it was brimming with vitality.

Of the various kinds of people nurtured from the same sustenance—people he knew back then—it was unknown who was still alive. It evoked a fleeting melancholy at the core of his heart, and he unexpectedly felt this present matter was rather dull.

Why fight with this young, insensible chuuni girl? All of a sudden, he thought the prior matter was somewhat ridiculous. He was disinclined to care about this affair.

Thud! Thud! Thud! The sound of the window urgently being rapped rang out, and with each knock, Hu Jiaojiao used greater force. Her mouth that was just quiet for no less than two minutes started up again: “Open the door!”

“What? Scared? Dare not to show up? Weren't you just so awesome? Forcing me to apologize!”

“Now, that I've come over, you won't open the door! What're you scared of?! If you're a man, come out and stand!”

Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply. Calmly removing the earphones he had just put on, a wisp of thick killing will flashed within his lake-like eyes. Li Zongyuan sensed the surrounding qi come to a boil without warning! As if it had transformed into a thousand daggers in the grip of the Grim Reaper, qi erupted!

“Master! You can't!” He was nervous, wet with sweat, and turned his body and said promptly: “You're going to receive the pursuit of the Cultivation Court like this! This woman's status shouldn't be low!”

“My hand.” Xu Yangyi sneered as he pushed open the car door:

“Could it be that it would kill such a nameless individual?”

Thunk... Amidst the focused eyes of many, he exited the car. Followingly, a person immediately felt a gaze nail into their body. It wasn't that woman, but rather the bald man. It appeared his martial arts were considerable, but it was a pity...

He wasn't a cultivator; what use was the height of his martial arts?

“Oh? Finally willing to come out?” Hu Jiaojiao sneered as she stroked her Hermès handbag: “And I still thought you dared not to? Hu Ba, give him an apology.”

Everyone was watching, yet the bald man seemed like he didn't sense anything. As he stood before Xu Yangyi, everyone discovered that he was surprisingly over a head taller than the latter! He reached an outlandish height of over 1.9 meters!

“I-is this a bodyguard?” Someone coldly gasped: “S-she left the door and even brought a bodyguard?”

“How is this an apology? This is a threat!” Someone sneered as they spat contemptuously: “There are plenty of people like this in this era. The law is inferior to human system!”

Xu Yangyi looked indifferently at Hu Ba who was like a small mountain and suddenly laughed. He laughed as he extended his fist, chuckling as it dazzled before Hu Ba. The other observed Xu Yangyi without hardly a sliver of emotion, tauntingly watching the fist that appeared agonizingly feeble. Afterwards...

Boom! A heavy sound rang out! Everyone in the surroundings felt a gale brush their faces! Hu Jiaojiao's hair flew back! The tremendous power of the wind caused her to shut her eyes. The shock within her heart nearly made her screech once again!

Was this still a man?! This was in no way human! This was a monster! Was an ordinary person capable of rousing wind pressure? Are you kidding me?! That was right... Hu Ba! How



about Hu Ba!

She didn't screech and opened her eyes again. Everyone present was silent. Each person had heard the wind pressure from moments ago.

Thud... Subsequently, the sound of both of Hu Ba's knees hitting the ground echoed. Xu Yangyi's fist was at the side of his body. It wasn't aimed at him, but he knew right away. This man, a head shorter than him, with a single fist... was capable of killing him!

He only required a single fist!

This isn't precisely an isolated case from what I have read. China lacks Good Samaritan Laws, so that's why you'll see some messed up videos of people leaving other people dying in the middle of the road, etc. They are scared to get sued.

This three deaths things was difficult to find. From what I have found, the first death is the death of the mind and the death of the body. The second death is considered a funeral. You are dead to society. The third death is to be forgotten by everyone because of time. In that sense it is a "true death". From my research, this concept was brought by a famous novelist, Eileen Chang, or Zhang Ailing (same person, but non-anglicized).

This food idiom may have been explained in the past, but it pretty much means "everyone eats from the same source/food, but turns out different in behavior, etc"

## Chapter 86: Meeting Old Friends (4)

---

Hu Ba's purple discolored lips spread open wide. Unable to utter a single word, his head was clammy with cold sweat. Xu Yangyi calmly walked towards Hu Jiaojiao, her entire body faintly trembling. Her hair slowly fell down.

Clunk... Her handbag, a Hermès handbag, fell on the ground from the midst of her five trembling fingers, and both her legs shivered. Watching the slowly walking Xu Yangyi, her face was devoid of blood.

T-t-this was a monster!

Moments ago, there was no one able to sense it deeper than her! Just now... she seemed to be placed at the eye of a hurricane! She even believed herself to have crossed over into one of [Master Xing](#)'s blockbuster kungfu movies!

That sensation of believing herself to have died for a split second... was too profound. So profound that now as she watched Xu Yangyi calmly advance, her body began to instinctually tremble! She was terrified to the extreme!

“D-don't you come over!” She said shrilly. In the last second, she was still yelling angrily to get Xu Yangyi to come, but in the next, she even felt the menace of his approach! The crook of Xu Yangyi's mouth curved, and he sneered, still walking forth neither slowly nor hurriedly as before.

“Don't you come over! Don't come over!”

Thud! Hu Jiaojiao's back was already leaning against her car. She was genuinely terrified.

“Do you know who my big brother is?!” Xu Yangyi's shadow became increasingly distinct within her pupils. She was so frightened that she was already rambling in fright, her voice crowingingly sharp: “I-i-if you do anything to me, my big brother

won't let you off! In Mingshui Province... No! In the entire country, it'll be hard for you to step an inch! Don't you come over!!!”

Xu Yangyi walked before her. The distance between the two of them exceeded no more than twenty centimeters.

“Idiot?” He studied Hu Jiaojiao with a smile that wasn't a smile: “Was that a curse for me?”

“Not at all! No! It wasn't a curse for you! I wasn't cursing you!!!” Hu Jiaojiao nearly wept in fright, screeching her response.

Swoosh! Xu Yangyi raised his hand.

“Eeeeeek!!!” Hu Jiaojiao immediately yelped as she crouched down. A finger snap rang out. Xu Yangyi laughed, watching the truly crying Hu Jiaojiao. He turned around and departed. At this time, applause echoed and a man's voice resonated simultaneously.

“I haven't seen you in three and half years, but you're still the same.”

A sentence thereupon awakened Hu Jiaojiao from the middle of her nightmare. In a twinkling, the winter day turned frosty. She stood up straight away, wiping her runny ears and yelling hoarsely: “Big brother!”

“Big brother, hurry up and handle this! Those guys don't want me!”

“T-this thug bullied me! Boohoo, boohoo!”

Her complexion faintly flushed and she pursed her lips, even squeezing out a few pitiful teardrops. Just as she turned her head, she caught sight of a man dressed in camouflage who was standing at the side of her car and bearing the smidgen of a complex smile. Nevertheless, his gaze wasn't on her body.

Behind him, there were also a couple people. Some had stirred expressions, some raised their middle fingers at the man connected

to the Audi, and some were grimacing exaggeratedly. However...

There wasn't anyone looking at her.

"Why are you here?" Xu Yangyi was likewise surprised, yet he suddenly came to a realization: "Ming A-AA6666, this is... your car?"

"This is my car!" The man hammered his chest: "We of the Nantong Province branch, all of the surviving champions, finally meet again!"

"Welcome back, paragon!"

Hu Ba was in a cold sweat. His mouth wished to say something, yet nothing came out. He was none the wiser of what matter had occurred behind. He only knew that was a fist, a fist that he had never seen! Even the boxing champion he had studied Muay Thai from couldn't strike out wind pressure!

This was a legendary realm! It was fundamentally impossible for this to exist in reality! Not only was it him, everyone was stunned. At the present scene, when there wasn't anyone paying attention, seven people had appeared. However, no one had noticed them. All of the people were watching Xu Yangyi in shock.

"My god..." A university student said, his voice shaking: "D-d-d-did you all see that? Just now, t-t-that's girls hair flew up!"

"Is this [Yip Man](#)?! " A female university student firmly grabbed onto the arm of a male classmate beside her, her eyes radiating light: "He can fight ten-on-one, right!"

"How can it stop at ten..." After the astonishment, the look in the male classmate's eyes turned to extreme shock and worship: "Maybe fifty will do..."

"Is this real or fake...?" The middle-aged man fished out a cigarette, but couldn't put it in his mouth no matter what. Both his lips and fingers were gently shivering: "Is there still a true martial arts master in the world? One so young?"

None dared to speak. They had all been rendered stunned by that fist of moments ago. If the contrast of Hu Jiaojiao at the side was absent, that fist possibly wouldn't have been considered much. It would only make everyone feel that it was fast. Rather fast. Extremely fast.

However, if there was the addition of all of Hu Jiaojiao's hair flying back in the instant the fist was displayed... That spectacle was too staggering! An inhuman strength!

"Big brother, Big brother!" Hu Jiaojiao snivelled and teared as she wept, running over to the leading man in camouflage like a helpless little birdie. Her Hermès handbag, a bag worth a good few ten thousand, had landed on the ground because she had been shaken to fright by that fist. She dared not to retrieve it.

The man glanced at the girl running over and raised a brow towards Xu Yangyi: "Why?"

"You should know, Chu Zhaonan." Xu Yangyi shrugged his shoulders in a very devil-may-care manner: "I just didn't expect that this was your car. It ain't too convenient for me to find you right now."

Chu Zhaonan nodded, looking towards Hu Jiaojiao who had ran only half a meter from him. Not even sweeping over her with an eye, a slap sealed itself on her face!

Pow! A crisp noise rang out, causing everyone to sober up from their astonishment once again. The women flinched. Even if they were separated by some distance, they could feel the pain of that slap. The men gulped. Likewise, they could feel the force behind the other's slap.

"Huh... Eh! Ah!!!" Hu Jiaojiao had nearly been sent flying by the slap, and she covered her nose as she fell on the ground. After she got up, her voice was a yelp of pain. Ensuingly, it was a screech because she saw that her hand was covered in blood from her nose. In the end, it was a shriek of incredulity!

Why?! How could her beloved big brother that had always treated her well, recognized by all the scions of Mingshui Province's political elite, hit her? No, that was wrong! Her big brother seemed to know this bastard? He had actually hit her for this wretch?!

“B-Big brother! Y-you...”

Before she even finished speaking, Chu Zhaonan had already grabbed her by the throat and lifted her up. His face cold, he said icily: “Apologize.”

Hu Jiaojiao couldn't even get out a word. She had never witnessed her big brother's expression so cold.

Their social circle had ranks. Chu Zhaonan was a deputy minister's grandson and the sole child of a provincial governor. There was no question he was steadily seated as number one. She, Hu Jiaojiao, was a silk pants, however, Chu Zhaonan was even more of a [silk pants](#) than her!

If he said he was number two in the province, none would dare to call themselves first! Concerning Chu Zhaonan's command, she was simply without the will to resist. It was like a bellwether giving orders to a flock of sheep. She could only nod her head with the utmost of effort.

“Hah...” Gao Ye's exhaling voice came from behind: “I've heard you mention this young beauty a good few times. Aren't you pretty good to her? Are you really willing to hit her?”

Chu Zhaonan laughed and scratched his thumb across Hu Jiaojiao's face: “Listen, I don't owe you anything.” He looked at Xu Yangyi in passing: “But I owe him a life.”

Hu Jiaojiao's scalp tingled madly! If she were this close in the past, she would surely be rather happy. But now, she was shivering from head to toe in fright.

How was this possible?! This classless plebeian was actually

capable of making her big brother owe him a life? Was he deceiving her?

Chu Zhaonan loosened his hand, and Hu Jiaojiao presently cared nothing for face. Almost weeping as she crawled before Xu Yangyi, she half knelt as she wiped her tears and bawled, her voice hoarse: “I was wrong! Mister! I...”

“His last name is Xu.” Chu Zhaonan said quietly from behind her.

“Hiccup...” Hu Jiaojiao’s sobbing voice paused in breaks. Subsequently, she bawled even louder: “Mr. Xu! I’m sorry! I was wrong! I was really wrong! Please... boohoo, boohoo... please forgive me...”

The people in the surroundings soon became stupefied. What was going on in this drama? This reversal was too fast! Director, are you certain the screenplay you wrote is without problem?

“W-what is going on?” A driver took a drag of his cigarette, the muscles on his face trembling: “This is... forcing someone to apologize in style, and then afterwards, an even more awesome person makes this bad-ass apologize?”

“This is frickin’ marvelous!” On the contrary, the students were enjoying the drama without weariness: “This reversal has standard and adversity!”

This reverse sweep in plot was too abrupt. So unexpected that the surrounding people started to silently enter their cars and drive with their spirits rejuvenated.

Yes... Although the time was a bit late, they had unexpectedly watched a good show. [Hue hue](#), they could post it on their WeChat Moment’s to get likes.

“I put my fucking money on it! That floating hair scene is absolutely going to net me a thousand likes!”

“Why the heck are you fooling around so dramatically?” As car after car drove past at their sides, Xu Yangyi looked at Chu



Zhaonan, not knowing whether to laugh or cry: “You don’t owe me... Oh, that’s right, get up.”

The sound of Hu Jiaojiao’s weeping came to an immediate stop, yet she carried a sense of terror and promptly jumped into the car.

“I owe you.” Chu Zhaonan answered, his face bereft of emotion.

“Let’s walk first, brother Xu.” Luo Sanfeng came over and rolled up his sleeves and rubbed his fists: “I’ve been carrying the grudge of that kick for a long time... Just you wait... you, y-you’re at the fuckin’ middle stage of Qi Condensation?!”

He couldn’t control this shriek. Just as his anger riled, it immediately drained away. Xu Yangyi laughed: “I was lucky. Nothing but a fluke.”

“As if!” Luo Sanfeng flipped off Xu Yangyi vindictively. He didn’t make a sound.

“Apart from myself just entering the middle stage of Qi Condensation half a year ago, they’re all at the initial stage.” Chu Zhaonan chuckled: “Didn’t all of you listen that you should be earnest in cultivation? Do you realize the disparity now?”

“This isn’t the place to talk.” He leaned his head: “A lot has happened in these three years. Moreover, I can’t stay around here for long. Brother Xu, you’re situation is somewhat delicate. We’ll be headed out first.”

As the others set forth, Chu Zhaonan raised his hand to stop them: “There are some matters that all of you are better off not knowing.”

[“It’s a JQ!”](#) A baby-faced cadet glowered at Chu Zhaonan. Xu Yangyi vaguely remembered this person had been oppressed by Chu Zhaonan.

What answered the cadet was a middle finger, and Chu Zhaonan and Xu Yangyi jumped, landing directly in a farming plot at the side. Finding a farming path, they sat down.



“You sent me on a good chase.” Chu Zhaonan passed over a cigarette: “My time is tight. There are a few words I must say to you.”

Xu Yangyi nodded, the deep emotion in his heart was like a tide. Three years... A three whole years. These were genuine old friends. Originally, they could even be said to hold some animosity. However, there was a matter that caused them to walk together, devoid of the most meager apprehensions.

They were both people who had survived amidst a holocaust. True comrades-in-arms.

In an unseen place, every person strove with their best efforts to live on. In the end, of [thirteen people](#), only seven remained.

Master Xing is referring to famous Chinese director/actor Stephen Chow.

Ip Man was a famous martial artist known for being the master of Bruce Lee. In recent cinema, he has become very popular. This reference to “he can fight ten men” is talking about a scene in the first movie. If you have the time, watch all three! The ones with Donnie Yen in it.

Silk pants is a term for very, very rich in China. An idea that, well, your pants are made of silk.

Hue hue = 呵呵哒. To my understanding, this is a Chinese forum slang kinda like lol/lmao/rofl, but with a different context. More like a mischievous/aloof laugh. So I thought hue hue would work.

JQ is Chinese internet slang. I thought about localizing, but it's hard to get a close meaning in English. JQ is the first letters of the pinyin of Ji Qing = 基情. This phrase is used somewhat jokingly by straight dudes to suggest homosexual relations.

Just a reminder that there were thirteen champions from each city branch in Nantong Province. We got confirmation that of the thirteen, six died during the Vermilion Snow Incident.

# Chapter 87

---

Next chapter is 88. Author skips 87.

# Chapter 88: Jadewave of the Joint Pools (1)

---

“They’re all in my Hidden Dragon Legion.” Appearing to see Xu Yangyi’s mood, Chu Zhaonan said straightforwardly: “Mingshui Province’s Branchmaster Thousandedge has received the Black Kill Order.”

The Black Kill Order!

Xu Yangyi’s gaze suddenly glimmered. Naturally he knew what this was, however, never did he expect by any stretch it was actually this thing!

The Black Kill Order. Any traitorous cultivator and any cultivator of any race who abandoned the Great Dao would be named on the list of the Black Kill Order. It could be said the Black Kill Order was the highest ranking! It was also the list of the most evil and terrible figures!

It had no conflict with the Heavenly Demon Ranking. The Heavenly Demon Ranking was arranged by strength, however, the bounty behind was of the Black Kill Order’s publishing! Any cultivator on the Black Kill Order wouldn’t know rest until death, an indefinite period without limit!

“Who issued it?” Xu Yangyi clenched his teeth and calmed his mood, and he asked heavily.

Chu Zhaonan looked at the starlight of the heavens and said after ages: “Brother Xu, don’t you know... besides the CSIB, there is one other way to issue the Black Kill Order...”

Xu Yangyi extinguished the butt of his cigarette between his fingers and looked at Chu Zhaonan, his gaze like a sword: “By the name of a Core Formation cultivator?”

Chu Zhaonan pursed his lips and nodded.

Everything became clear... As if a streak of light had flashed through Xu Yangyi’s mind, all connected together.

It was no wonder Chu Zhaonan was urgently searching for him.

No surprise the government had erased his existence.

No mystery that Thousandedge had taken action.

No question that even in death, the three scouts dared not to speak of their orders.

There was a Core Formation master, the apex of the world, that had issued a Black Kill Order to the entire cultivation world! Kill on sight! If he's alive, I want to see a person! If he's dead, I want to see a corpse!

"Who is it?" He vanquished the killing intent that surfaced in his heart and questioned coldly.

"Daomaster Floatingcloud." Chu Zhaonan looked straight into his eyes: "This time, Daomaster Floatingcloud only issued it to the disciples of his sect. Altogether, it's three branch masters of the Featherwood Guard, five branch masters of Heavens Law, a deputy minister of a CSIB branch, and a regional chairman of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion. They... are all Foundation Establishment seniors. Among them, Senior [Primejewel](#) of the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion is already at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment."

"Presently, the Vermilion Snow Incident has yet to be settled. However, once a few years pass, after waiting on the Vermilion Snow event, its influence has continued to die down..." He didn't continue speaking and shifted topics: "In these couple years, it's been no more than the blink of an eye for cultivators of our generation."

Xu Yangyi shut his eyes. The pursuit of ten Foundation Establishment cultivators and one Core Formation cultivator! However, the next words caused him to open his eyes.

"Because you possess an Emperor Armament in your hands." Chu Zhaonan looked at his watch and said faster: "Brother Xu, besides

these people, no one else knows you've been named on the Black Kill Order! The other regions don't possess this warrant. After you came out from the spatial crack, it was the best result for you to be in Mingshui Province. Even if Thousandedge wishes to kill you, I've already requested the personnel of the Cultivation Court to keep an eye out in Panshan City. So long as he's not scared of falling out of grace and ruining his future prospects, this place is temporarily secure."

He looked deeply at Xu Yangyi: "But... this safety is in no way long. The exchange of benefits between Core Formation masters isn't something we are able to participate in. Brother Xu, your time... is rather tight."

Xu Yangyi's gaze glimmered and only after a while did he say: "You know of the Emperor Armament?"

"On that day, Heavens Law recorded all video." Chu Zhaonan looked at his watch: "Not good, I've stayed here long. Perhaps I've drawn Thousandedge's suspicions. I have to leave. Brother Xu, Daomaster Floatingcloud still dares not to take brazen action against you for the moment. He doesn't wish for the other Dao Masters to know you have an Emperor Armament in your hands. You must grasp certainty in these times!"

"As soon as Daomaster Floatingcloud's exchange of benefits is completed, it will be the time when all of humanity's cultivators erase your mark..." Before he finished speaking, he took a key and stuffed it in Xu Yangyi's hand. "Later on, there'll be someone waiting for you. Take the thing in your hand and use this key to open it. Lastly... never ever tell anyone you have an Emperor Armament."

"I must go." Chu Zhaonan stood up and passed over a cell phone: "I have paid back what I owed you. In the future..." He paused and said seriously: "I WILL meet you." He extended his fist.

"Naturally." In the air, the fists of the two silently bumped.

“Vermilion Snow...” In the next second, the duo said the same name simultaneously, yet at the same time, they held their tongues.

After a brief moment, Xu Yangyi gazed at the other resolutely: “Leave her to me.”

“I promised Firecloud, that I, Xu Yangyi, for the rest of my days, shall behead this demon.”

Chu Zhaonan nodded, and Xu Yangyi tossed him a pendant: “Find the woman in this photograph for me.”

“Your lover?” Chu Zhaonan tucked the photo into his pocket.

“No.” Xu Yangyi shook his head: “Only a promise.”

Even though Chu Zhaonan left, Xu Yangyi didn’t depart. Their meeting was too abrupt, but tremendously important, as well. He needed time to arrange his thoughts.

He took drags of cigarette upon cigarette, and the farming path became covered with cigarette butts. Eventually, he raised his head, looking at the stars in the sky. Despite the night wind that blew on his hair, he murmured: “Because of Heavens Law’s recording, the desire of a Core Formation master was roused. As for the Unrivaled Beneath the Heavens Arena established by Daomaster Floatingcloud, he was most certainly the first to arrive at the scene, thus, he issued me a kill order.”

“It’s not limited to this... It’s quite possible all of Heavens Law’s avatar’s data was intercepted by him.”

“Emperor Armament... In the end, what are you? You’re actually able to draw Daomaster Floatingcloud’s kind of status to personally dispose of me?” He grew silent, and an impatience appeared by the utmost chance within his heart. Nonetheless, it swiftly abated.

“Soon... I will know of your true identity...” He took a deep drag of his cigarette and narrowed his eyes at the smoke that scattered

in wake with the wind: “Master Decrypter Jadewave, huh? Don’t disappoint me.” He continued to gather his thoughts.

He thought of why Chu Zhaonan had found him. Listening to his good will, he and Thousandedge were already considered at arms against each other. However, the cultivation world couldn’t get involved with local government affairs. That was to say...

If Thousandedge wanted to transfer the entirety of Mingshui Province’s surveillance, he would have to go through the consent of Chu Zhaonan’s old man!

“Chu Tianyi...” In his mind, a fairly lucid silhouette emerged in his mind, and he laughed. The person who obstructed his advancement back then ought to have been him... But, he held no great hatred towards Chu Tianyi. On the contrary, he was respectful.

A mortal, an ordinary person, in a situation of several thousand Qi Condensation cultivators fleeing in disorder, was able to stand together along the other Foundation Establishment cultivators with his strength that couldn’t even truss a chicken, directly in the face of life or death. Not to speak whether he was right or wrong in the fierce protection of his heir, this unswerving cardinal righteousness brought Xu Yangyi’s considerable admiration.

Because of Chu Zhaonan’s father who was taught by Chu Tianyi, by all rights, Thousandedge was rejected.

And so... as he left the city walls, perhaps he had been discovered by the Chu Clan who was strictly paying attention to each stirring of water in Mingshui Province. He dimly remembered the words he once heard Hu Jiaojiao and the rest had said. Her big brother was hurrying on his way. Pondering this, it was Chu Zhaonan coming at that time. Although this outing possessed a few minor twists and turns, it was connected to his own true foundation, causing him to understand his situation. This significance wasn’t minor to the slightest degree in comparison to decrypting the

small chest!

All problems concluded here. There was only a single question, the most grave and seemingly the most difficult to come to a decision, across from him.

“Do I leave?” He took a deep drag of his cigarette. He hesitated for a brief moment, however, it was a mere two minutes. His gaze had already turned staunch. Hesitation wasn't whether to abandon humanity. To pragmatists, there was no giving up or not, only if something was of use!

Xu Yangyi's hesitation was whether or not to leave Daomaster Floatingcloud with a vestige worthy of remembrance for an entire lifetime before he moved!

The heavens never severed a man's path. Even if it was the secret Black Kill Order of a Core Formation master and even if he was only at Qi Condensation at the present, he equivalently possessed a unique superiority!

Fear.

Fear regarding the Emperor Armament. The fear of the Emperor Armament harbored on his person! This was his greatest support right now!

Daomaster Floatingcloud... Before settling the checks and balances of the other powers against him, he wouldn't dare to pierce the heavens with this matter because he himself desired to wield the Emperor Armament as its sole controller!

The words that Chu Zhaonan possessed were quite interesting... He narrowed his eyes, “Apart from these people, none are aware you have been named on the Black Kill Order. The other regions don't have your warrant.”

In the midst of this... so long as he was courageous enough, his operating space was actually incredibly great! Once succeeded, there was a possibility he would immediately be put on the entire



nation's wanted list! His bounty even so high that it would cause people to be speechless!

That, however... was truly an audacity that shrouded the heavens! As this thought arose, it could be settled no longer. In his mind, it rolled like a wave of fire. He almost didn't give any additional consideration and immediately cemented this thought.

If you shall be so heartless, then I will not speak of any civility at all. He was silent. Within his mind, an insane scheme began to build to completion bit by bit.

"You will regret..." After ages, he sneered as he stood up: "Even if I'm going to run, the item promised to me that year should be regarded, as well."

"That, with my status as the human cultivator Xu Yangyi, is an item that I seized, which ought to belong in my possession."

No worries... There was still enough time. Presently, even a minute couldn't be squandered, but... a minute couldn't be rushed! A single misstep, errors at each pace. The more urgent, the greater the possibility a result wouldn't be attained!

Success was taken from within details, and riches and honor were sought amidst danger. This plan was going to be a walk on a fearless, insane, extremely careful, and difficult path. Any fraction of a deviation, and he could possibly fall off this tightrope.

"Right now..." He looked at the night sky dotted with a multitude of stars and said icily: "The true identity of the Emperor Armament is the crux of all of my plans."

"Floatingcloud knows, yet I don't. With the enemy in darkness and myself in the light, this is the strategist's principal dread. Everything must be known about what the Emperor Armament is first."

"Floatingcloud, you face me, an insignificant Qi Condensation cultivator, yet you lack the great courage to dare to kill first and

ask questions later. A benefit that stirs the entire pool with a single ripple, eh..." He sneered at this and whistled towards the sky: "I view you as important."

Finished speaking these words, he freely returned to the highway. Arriving at the side of his car—the other car had long left—he discovered there were two more people. It wasn't Hu Jiaojiao, but rather the young man who had left the earliest.

"Mr. Xu." An enthusiastic expression covered the young man's face, and he approached and grasped Xu Yangyi's hand, firmly shaking it: "I've long since heard Boss Chu mention you. It is today that we meet each other at last. I didn't expect that even in front of me, I wouldn't recognize you. I must apologize for this matter first of all. I enabled Hu Jiaojiao to make a mess of things... I truly am embarrassed. In the future, Mr. Xu's business is I, Zhao Yuanjing's business."

"You are?" Xu Yangyi laughed. These people ought to have been Chu Zhaonan's acquaintances. By the look of it, Chu Zhaonan had talked to these people as he departed.

Primejewel. I am unsure if this is a Daoist title or actually a name. But I will just roll with this for now. The entire Chinese word is also considered a "gold or silver ingot".

## Chapter 89: Jadewave of the Joint Pools (2)

---

“I am the unworthy child of Deputy Provincial Governor Zhao.” Zhao Yuanjing seemed to laugh bashfully and lowered his voice: “If Mr. Xu has any unpleasant matters to speak of in Mingshui Province later on, find us brothers to smooth things over... Right, Mr. Xu, brother Chu left a trunk here last year; said it was yours?”

Xu Yangyi smiled and nodded. So the person Chu Zhaonan had spoken of turned out to be Zhao Yuanjing. As for the other person, Xu Yangyi felt it to be a tad interesting. It was Hu Ba.

“What are you doing?”

Hu Ba was like a servant, helping them pull open the car door and silently getting into the driver’s seat.

“This business is interesting.” Zhao Yuanjing chuckled: “Hu Ba is a distant relative of Minister Hu of the Ministry of Land and Public Resources, too. However, he just requested my support for a word. He wants to pay respects to Mr. Xu and study martial arts under your school. Of course, I dare not to come to a decision. Mr. Xu nevertheless has to be requested to make a decision.”

“He is unable to study my martial arts.” Xu Yangyi didn’t even look at Hu Ba and sat down in the back seat.

Hu Ba didn’t say anything as well, and it was moreover impossible for Zhao Yuanjing to urge the matter. Following the growl of the ignition firing up, they drove towards the Four Great Joint Pools once more in the dark of night.

On the road, Zhao Yuanjing made indirect and covert inquiries of Xu Yangyi’s origins. Nonetheless, whatever was asked was met with nothing. He felt it was strange; he had probed many things that needed to be known in the discourse of society and even used many kinds of etiquette association methods in an experimental nature, yet he discovered Xu Yangyi was simply unaware.

How did a man like this get Chu Zhaonan to say to him: “you must handle this man’s affairs later on with all of your heart”? How was such a person intersected with their lives?

Yet as it happened, this unquestionable man lacked the restlessness of his peers in each and every one of his moves. Conversely, his calmness caused Zhao Yuanjing to feel praise. He was able to clearly sense this serenity was in no way manufactured.

There was even an instant where he grew skeptical of Chu Zhaonan’s sexual orientation. Afterwards... he found it too dreadful to contemplate in detail...

So in the midst of such idle chat, they drove all the way to the Four Great Joint Pools.

Beneath the cover of night, there were many travellers and photography enthusiasts camping at the lakeside of the Four Great Joint Pools. In the night, the vast starry sky was like a cleansing and the night sky was like an inky blackness. The silver radiance that spilled down on the surface of the lake revealed rays of glimmering light, which reflected on the waves, as if the surface was a floating and drifting mirror. The summertime fireflies that glimmered like the stars fluttered at the lakeside grass. The gentle sound of the wind and the muffled voices of people not only didn’t make this place feel noisy, but instead contrasted its tranquility.

The sides of the pool water stretched as far as the eye could see. Over a dozen volcanoes were like torches in the night, towering below the intimate, divine serenity. Among them, there was a tremendous dead volcano that was no less than a thousand meters high and three thousand to four thousand meters wide. Like a sacred flame of a torch, it bordered the heavens.

“Mister, this is China’s famous volcanic group dating back to the Quaternary period. The Four Great Joint Pool’s volcanic group constitutes fifteen volcanoes in total. The biggest is that one called Old Black Mountain.” Li Zongyuan respectfully helped Xu Yangyi

open the car door, laughing as he explained.

Xu Yangyi looked at the volcanic group before his eyes in somewhat of a trance. The blue sky was unlimited and the open plains were boundless. In this infiniteness, the volcanoes were like fifteen sharpened swords. Even a distant viewing caused a man's heart to shake.

However, who would've expected that in the volcano lakes of the greatest Old Black Mountain, several hundred meters beneath the water, there was a millennium-old demon concealed away?

The magic that created being, a lost pond of ancient times, and the concentrated blooming of worldly qi ultimately converged here. It formed a truth that humans were hard-pressed to realize.

"Mr. Zhao." Xu Yangyi looked at the continuous undulation of the fifteen volcanoes. Under the curtain of night, the volcanic group was like a crouching tiger. He said quietly: "I have minor business you cannot accompany me on."

In his heart, Zhao Yuanjing was somewhat troubled. He would act on Chu Zhaonan's instruction. However, if Xu Yangyi didn't take the initiative to be friendly with him, could it be that he had come to gild face?

"It's of no consequence, Mr. Xu. I will take your car and rest." However, he didn't reveal a thing, his laughter still resplendent: "Once Mr. Xu goes tomorrow, we can walk together again. Do you mind?"

Xu Yangyi glanced at him and nodded: "If we have still not returned by tomorrow evening, you may go first."

Zhao Yuanjing smiled and nodded, lighting a cigarette. Narrowing his eyes as he watched Xu Yangyi and Li Zongyuan's departing silhouettes, he suddenly sneered: "It really is a show."

"You think you're awesome since brother Chu has your back?" Both his hands extended out to part, and he combed his hair that

had been made messy by the wind: “I’m willing to help you and help you without the heart to. Although it’s work either way, there’s a big difference...”

Xu Yangyi and Li Zongyuan strolled to the foot of the mountain, but didn’t walk on the proper path. Instead, they walked to an extremely desolate region. Since the beginning they left the car, Li Zongyuan had a bag on his back. Now that he opened the bag, the inside was packed with camouflage clothing, combat boots, and the required necessities.

Xu Yangyi began to change clothes without a second word. Several minutes later, he breathed in deeply: “This attire will do.”

“Are you certain this is it?”

“Set your mind at ease, mister, it’s right.”

Xu Yangyi nodded and drew back a few steps. In the next second, spiritual force suddenly revolved around his entire body! A formidable power belonging to the middle stage of Qi Condensation caused his entire being to be akin to an arrow departing from its bow string, rushing towards a mountain wall that was without path!

“Ninety-Seven... Tiger Crane!”

With each of Xu Yangyi’s stomps, a deep dent immediately emerged at the location where his foot fell. Taking advantage of this forward charge brought an instantaneous distance of six to seven meters. His entire person was like a lizard crawling beyond, drawing not the slightest attention as he climbed upwards within the darkness of night.

Click... Click... At the same time Xu Yangyi ascended above, he was none the wiser that a bearded man was incessantly pressing down on a shutter release with his hand trembling. The man dared not to even activate his lighting, and his Adam’s apple wavered desperately. His hand shaking fiercely like he was spasming, his

camera lens was directly facing Xu Yangyi.

At a simple and crude tent, the bearded middle-aged man had bread, milk, and some sealed provisions placed at the side of his leg. Nonetheless, he had no time to eat. Just now, his constructed digital camcorder was prepared to film a private educational video concerning the Four Great Joint Pools during the night. Yet through a series of unexpected events, he had to leave for the bathroom. As he was glimpsing over the digital camcorder, however, he saw a serious thing!

This was in no way a human!

If it was a man, there was simply no chance that it could run up the mountain like so! A leap of six to seven meters... Dashing up the mountain without a path at all, w-was this [Tarzan of the Jungle](#)?

“A cryptid... This is surely a cryptid...” His breathing became rushed as if he was an astronomy enthusiast that had filmed a real flying saucer. His right hand was originally holding a newspaper with a shocking title emblazoned on the cover: “A Mysterious Water Monster Appears Unexpectedly at the Four Great Joint Pools”. Presently, this hand had somehow let go of the paper.

He wanted to put it on his leg, yet begrudgingly, he picked it up and set it down a few times, finally opting to throw it on the ground. Lowering his voice, he shouted towards the tent: “Old Fang! Old Fang! Quickly! Hurry up! Something big’s happened!”

He shouted a couple times, but there was no response. Nervous, he was wet with sweat. He wanted to go in and wake the other up, yet he was afraid he wouldn’t witness this astonishing scene with his own eyes! Between this tangle of deep worry, his body leaned over and collapsed, his face anxious in one moment and excited in the next. Finally, he gritted his teeth. I yelled a few times, but you didn’t get up, so I won’t shout! Serves you right that you can’t see this!

He fiddled excitedly with the digital camcorder, pulling the camera lens closer. However... it was too distant now. He could only capture a humanoid organism on a thousand-meter tall, sloped cliff, as if it was running and leaping like a strong and robust mountain antelope. Even he couldn't confirm whether or not this was a person!

Was it a yeti? A legendary undiscovered species? A martial arts super expert? Hot damn! Regardless of which one it was, he was too excited to sleep!

“Mommy... Mommy! If I knew earlier I could snag a photo of this, I would've definitely bought a specialized camera worth a couple tens of thousands! T-this is too fuckin' sweet!” He clenched his teeth and rubbed his hands in excitement, all of his sleepiness having vanished without a trace.

Xu Yangyi didn't know he had already been taken as a yeti, an inhuman species. To climb this mountain, not to mention himself at the middle stage of Qi Condensation, even an initial-stage cultivator would spare hardly any effort in this task, as well. Li Zongyuan had long since morphed into his demon form, blindly following behind Xu Yangyi.

“Mister, how about I carry you?”

Xu Yangyi shook his head. He felt he hadn't moved about in a long time, so he wanted nothing more but to move around and stretch his legs. His hand grabbing onto a rock, both of his legs pierced into the mountain like a chisel. He narrowed his eyes and looked at the bright moon and myriad stars in the sky. While they were still so far from him, at this instant, it seemed as if he capable of reaching out with his hand and touching them.

Under his feet, a tree several hundred meters tall had already become the size of an ant. He could even see a few indiscernible tents. Above, the moonlight dyed the night clouds with different depths of black. Occasionally, a night bird could be seen flying



past. The fresh air poured into the bottom of the heart and caused a man to flutter away and ascend, a desire for immortality.

“Gazing at the sunlit clouds slowly rising amidst the mountain, my spirit is washed. At the extremes of my eye, I trace a returning bird secretly embarking into the mountain grove.” He lamented sympathetically.

“Nice poem!” Li Zongyuan wasted no time to praise.

“...” Xu Yangyi silently swept an eye over this imbecile, and his hand gently grabbed out again. This time, utilizing spiritual force, he crossed no less than over a dozen feet in a twinkling. Afterwards, he used both his hands like tiger claws and nimbly grabbed onto the cliff wall.

“Fuckin’ A! The hell is this!” Xu Yangyi’s action caused the bearded man’s eyes to spark: “This is a fucking flying squirrel! What the heck is this thing? A mountain spirit? A field monster? Twenty meters in a single jump? The reincarnation of a frog?!”

He truly did almost squeeze into his camera, to the extent that he guessed for a couple tens of minutes as to what this nearby creature’s appearance was. Was its entire body covered in hair? Did it have a single eye or horn? Did it have hands so long that it went past its knees?

Mother! Sweet mother! It was all because of the damned digital camcorder! It was too much of a let down!

Xu Yangyi was none the wiser that there was a quiet spectator. After his spiritual force erupted in its entirety, he scaled close to the mountain top in merely half an hour.

Li Zongyuan gasped roughly from behind. At the beginning, when Xu Yangyi didn’t utilize spiritual force and only relied on his cultivation-fortified body, he was still able to maintain about equally the same. But once Xu Yangyi flared with spiritual force, he had long since been flung distant at the rear!

Xu Yangyi laughed. From what he could see from where he was, there was still over a hundred meters to reach the mountain top. He sucked in deeply and stifled the boiling passion within his heart.

Since the commencement of the graduation ceremony, the two words “Emperor Armament” had followed him doggedly like a lingering shadow. All his affairs were connected to the Emperor Armament.

Vermilion Snow, the mysterious space, the Eternal Alchemy Canon, and the Black Kill Order... It seemed to be the thread that pulled everything along. Now on this day... the truth would finally come to light.

I had no idea what this was in Chinese until I looked it up. So in China, the name for Tarzan of the Jungle is “Orangutan of Mount Tai” LOL. For those unaware, Tarzan is a Disney character. A jungle man that lives in the forest. Interesting to note though that Mount Tai = Taishan is how Tarzan’s name is pinyinized.

Poem by Tang Poet Du Fu. And I was beginning to wonder where the poems went.

## Chapter 90: Jadewave of the Joint Pools (3)

---

With an application of force in his step, Xu Yangyi soared towards the mountain top like an arrow leaving its bow. However, at this moment, his pupils suddenly needed. Soon after—his body at an impossible angle to an ordinary person—he faced back in midair and turned, unceremoniously jumping off Li Zongyuan's back who was running.

“Heaven Eye!” Simultaneously, he snarled lowly and his eye turned blood red in an instant.

“Dear god!” At the other side, the bearded man yelped in fright. He confirmed once more that this was in no way a person!

The demon form went unseen by him. Thus, he only saw that after the humanoid creature charged towards the mountain top, it turned around high in the sky, and like so, as such... it had stopped in midair?!

“What is this?!” Just at this moment, the urgent voice of a man rang out at his side. A slim middle-aged man pushed the other away, his complexion flushed as he zoned in on the digital camcorder: “Old Zhou! You fuck, you didn't frickin' call out to me! You went and shot a a collection of this thing... I-is this a mountain god?”

“I don't know how many times I called you!” Old Zhou was also nervous, and the two men crammed in together. Their heads seemed as long as a bundle of sticks, and they dared not to breathe loudly, their eyes watching the digital camcorder unblinkingly.

“Master?” Just as Li Zongyuan opened his mouth, he felt the front of his eyes abruptly turn cold.

A drop of liquid had dripped onto Xu Yangyi's forehead. Xu Yangyi customarily extended his tongue and licked, his eyes suddenly alight. This... was blood!

“Huh...” Xu Yangyi half crouched on Li Zongyuan’s back and patted the other’s head, making a silent signal. He grimly gazed up in the air. Beneath the Heaven Eye, there was none that could hide. He finally saw... at the mouth of the Old Black Mountain volcano, stretching all around for an unknown distance... a boundless silver thread like a spider web!

It was as if the dead volcano had been inserted with a mirror as thin as a cicada’s wing, parallel to the ground. The moonlight reflected on this surface projected a deathly luminescence! In no way did he doubt that were it not for the swiftness of his response, perhaps he would’ve just been [completely torn apart into pieces!](#)

Even if his reaction was sufficiently quick, at that moment, seven to eight bloody scars had appeared on his arm, somewhat sinking into his flesh. Blood trickled down from his arm like a fountain, dripping onto Li Zongyuan’s body below. He stretched his arms, his expression calm. This was the first time he had sustained an injury since the graduation ceremony.

A spectral figure appeared at the mountain top. Away from the light, its appearance couldn’t be clearly seen. A voice like a rusty blade grinded: “The Ming Clan is handling affairs. Solicitors withdraw.”

Xu Yangyi laughed. With a gentle pull, his body climbed up the rock face once again. In a single leap, he arrived below the entire large silken formation, and extending a finger, lightly flicked.

Huummm... A noise like a chiming bell rang out from the silk, and the silver thread, fine as a hair, softly trembled. Subsequently, the first thread spread over to ten, ten spilled over to a hundred, and a hundred circulated among the myriad of them!

Huuuummmmm... Countless threads vibrated synchronously, causing the heart to tremble! Between them, only a single arm could be accommodated for entry. Not a person saw that atop the man’s Baihui meridian, a black hair extended forth, creeping a

thousand meters away to the side of pool water.

Over yonder, there was a glossy rock like a mirror. A young man with a well-tailored western suit stood on the surface of a stone that was roughly four to five meters wide.

He was approximately twenty-seven or twenty-eight. His expression was placid, a face absent of too much color, merely, there was a red vertical line between his brows, and a shawl of long silver hair that draped behind him. He gently rocked a folding fan in his hand, not a bamboo one, but rather a fan of silk surface and jade structure. The white fan's face slightly unfolded in both of his jade hands.

[“On a pavilion of ten li, we bid farewell under a frosty autumn sky... Our hair black, the years past, when we meet, will it be white...?”](#) His appearance wasn't handsome and it moreover wasn't beautiful, yet it possessed a kind of graceful magnificence, an eminent and unapproachable temperament. Perhaps his appearance wouldn't stick out from the masses, but if he walked within a crowd, he would surely become the focus of attention.

[“In this life, regret not for the opportunity missed... If fate brings us together in the next life, may our affections persist.”](#) He faintly sighed and unfolded his fan with a swish: “Someone has come at Fourteen's position.”

Behind him was not a shawl of long hair, but rather... boundless silver locks! Like flooding mercury, they spread forth on the ground! They extended a thousand meters... Over ten thousand meters! It covered the volcano lake with a layer of silver silk wrapping!

Afterwards, it spread out again, seemingly infinite, filling the entire night sky! The screen formation like a mirror's surface in the sky was surprisingly weaved from his long silver hair!

“Lord God, are we required to assist?” Behind him were three elderly men wearing tunic suits, their cultivations shockingly at

the late stage of Qi Condensation. However, they were extremely deferential to this young man. As for the young man, he had no more than just recently tread into the middle stage of Qi Condensation.

“Unnecessary.” The man called Lord God quietly closed his folding fan, looking at the mirroresque surface of the several-thousand-meter-sized dead volcano lake and mumbling: “Senior Jadewave’s appointed time is coming. I have not met senior for ages, as well. I shall respectfully welcome the elder.”

“As for that moth...” He used his folding fan to lightly strike his palm. Originally, his suit, folding fan, and cape of hair were completely inharmonious things, yet they seemed to fuse together naturally on his person: “To come here at twelve o’clock at midnight, the moment of the witching hour, this person has presumably come here for a decryption request, as well. If he is able to come, I will make him kneel at my side and give him an opportunity once I have finished my questions.”

An old man slightly bowed, laughing: “Lord is benevolent.”

Swoosh! In a place a hundred meters distant above Xu Yangyi, fine sandstone rolled down. A shadow walked above him, looking down on him against the moonlight. He discovered it was a middle-aged man without the sliver of an expression, his appearance approximately over forty years old.

He was garbed in a tunic suit. However, his eyes were devoid of a trace of vigor, and his entire person was also lacking an iota of temperature. Even his walking posture was somewhat mechanical, as if he were a corpse that had just crawled out from the cemetery. Chillingly looking at Xu Yangyi, he repeated: “The Ming Clan is handling affairs. Solicitors withdraw.”

“Gulp...” At this time, behind Xu Yangyi and with his voice odd, Li Zongyuan said: “M-Mister, he’s not a human.”

The other had already transformed into his human form at some

unknown time. Xu Yangyi's gaze swept past, and his brows immediately began to furrow.

Li Zongyuan's entire face suddenly sprouted a few warts and then receded straight away. In one second, his eyes turned to the size of copper bells, his eye sockets bulged, and his pupils scattered, yet in the next, they transformed back into human shape. Wisps of black mists were radiating from his body and yellow liquid came out freely from his seven apertures... At a glance, Xu Yangyi knew that perhaps Li Zongyuan's demon form would manifest.

This situation was exactly the same as Vermilion Snow's back then!

"What's going on?" He asked heavily.

"I don't know." "It was rare for Li Zongyuan's mind to be exceptionally clear, and he shook his head and said: "I keep feeling... my body is heating up indescribably, and my qi sea is fluctuating. I-I don't know why."

Xu Yangyi nodded, raising his chin towards the man in the tunic suit: "He's not human?"

"Yes..." Li Zongyuan seemed to be enduring something and clenched his teeth: "The Ming Clan, it's God Ming's clan... Their original bodies have never been revealed. But according to the most reliable legend... they should be Heaven Worms. In the era of war between the Yellow Emperor and [Chiyou...](#) this was their name. In the modern age... cough, cough, cough... they're known as silkworms..."

"A puppet... A puppetry divine ability... The Ming Clan's sole divine ability... Master, be careful. The Ming Clan is a great demon clan of over a thousand years of inheritances..."

Xu Yangyi raised his hand, stopping the other from continuing to speak: "Are you alright?"

"I..." Just as Li Zongyuan opened his mouth, his entire mouth

split open to his cheeks, and he said painfully: “Master... save me. I-I’m dying... I don’t know what’s happening...”

He worried that Xu Yangyi simply wouldn’t care for him. As it went, the life-death pact was always one directional. If the master died, the demon familiar would die. If the demon familiar died, not a damn thing would happen to the master.

Whether or not he died wasn’t connected in itself to Xu Yangyi. The other possessed no compulsory reason to save him. The anxiety within his eyes almost turned tangible. Within his body, his blood and qi were at a complete boil. Xu Yangyi looked at him for three seconds and nodded.

Li Zongyuan shiver as he let loose a long sigh.

Xu Yangyi didn’t take action. The Ming Clan... He had read a few records of them. As a human cultivator, some of the demons’ great powers had to be clearly understood. For example, the Ming Clan, a heritage of over a millennium. It had nearly witnessed half of China’s historical development. From under their family, they had previously produced three Core Formation cultivators. While this quantity appeared not to be many, they were number one within the same realm of Core Formation!

And thus, this clan also had a title: the number one beneath Nascent Soul! Even if the Ming Clan hadn’t produced a Core Formation demon in the past recent several centuries, their rank in the top five of China’s demon clans was almost ironed and nailed in place!

Yet so what of it?

Since Li Zongyuan was his demon familiar, only he could met out death and punishment as his master. Never was another’s obstruction in disallowing assistance a justification! Even supposing Xu Yangyi threw Li Zongyuan away and then kicked him, that was his matter, as well. As for his affairs... never was anyone permitted to interfere!



“Ten Cardinals Red Lotus...” His hand swiftly compressed an art. Already having been memorized within his veins and arteries, silent qi clamored in an instant!

Even though Li Zongyuan’s mind was rushed, he began to tremble upon hearing this gentle sound! This... was below a public venue with countless people! THIS was at a scenic spot of the fifteen dead volcanoes!

A demon form could be concealed, but a divine ability was fundamentally incapable of being hidden! Once Xu Yangyi used this move, according to the limitless degree of silver strands...

The entire firmament would become a sea of fire!

“Mhm?” At the lakeside, the the brows of the man with a folding fan furrowed dispassionately. He sensed... in the direction of Fourteen, a heart-churning qi condensing up in the air at an astonishing rate! It shook his heart... to the stage that he felt his emotions stir!

“Looks like the person who has come isn’t just a moth...” His gaze hung downwards, and he stifled his bubbling astonishment of moments ago at the bottom of his heart. It was the fluctuation of a divine ability.

This person... was truly insane... Actually daring to utilize a divine ability in the mortal realm! There were at least several tens of campers in the surroundings of the volcanic lake. Once used, the confrontation of divine abilities would transform the color of Heaven and Earth!

As for the witnesses... there were a few tens of people at the volcano lake and at least over a hundred people down below!

He actually dared? Did he not fear the tracking of the Cultivation Court? This was practically... to a degree that he dared not to, regardless of law and morality!

“Cultivators are prohibited from displaying their endowments

before humans because we are true super beings...” The eyes of the man with the folding fan narrowed: “If you’re forcing me to reveal my might with you in front of mortals... then...”

He inhaled deeply and closed his eyes. After five seconds, they suddenly opened, his eyes already completely morphed into a white color, the pupils unseen!

“I shall aid you in your endeavor!”

Completely torn apart into pieces - is what I decided to go with. The actual word here refers to an ancient Chinese punishment where the person is cut into small pieces. Grisly.

This is one of the few things that unless you really know Chinese to a decent level you can’t see the beauty of. This line, from what I was able to find, originates from the Song Poet Liu Yong (987-1053). In Chinese, the line actually rhymes and sounds nice.

This line is also from the same poem as mentioned before.

In China, Chiyu is considered the god of war and pictured as a tyrant who fought the future Yellow Emperor. This time period itself though is considered the “Three Sovereigns and Five Emperor’s Period”. Thought to be 2800 BC to 2000 BC.

# Chapter 91: Jadewave of the Joint Pools (4)

---

His long hair spread out over the entire volcano lakeside, long hair that extended to the horizon. At this moment, it moved freely in absence of wind and seemed to upsurge great silver waves in the sky! Observing it remotely, it was like an avalanche. Watching it closely, it was like a tide of ice!

“God Ming’s Supreme Dao, Vermilion Envys Scarlet!”

At the border outside the volcano lakeside, over twenty figures were quietly standing within the darkness. All of them... wore tunic suits, and moreover, were nearly identical to the man that Xu Yangyi had saw before!

“Boundguard Spiritsword Formation...” The man produced an art with both of his hands and sneered as he grinded his teeth: “Beat him... for me.”

Boom! At this instant, At the center of Xu Yangyi’s hand, his ten fingers exploded with a radiant blaze! It was so distinct, as if it was a lantern in the dark. Regardless of how distant the person, all could see it clearly.

“Hey, wifey, what’re you looking at?” At the foot of the mountain, there was a family that hadn’t been wed for too long, still not asleep at the front of their tent. The husband cradled his babbling son and suddenly said suspiciously to his wife: “What’re you look... Am I seeing this right?”

The wife laughed as she raised her head, yet just as she glanced, her eyes saucered: “No... You’re not mistaken. Is there some object... flashing on the mountain? No... burning?”

“Huh, what’s going on?” In another tent, several backpackers who were drinking beer looked at the not too distant mountain top of the volcanic lake: “Fire?”

Somewhere else, in front of a digital camcorder... Old Zhou and

Old Fang, the duo spread wide their mouths, not daring to believe their own eyes! This humanoid organism... Its hand was burning with fire? No, no, no... It appeared that flame was born from itself?!

What the fuck was this thing?!

“I-I think...” Old Zhou touched his chest and said trilly: “D-did we just see a monster?”

“Ignite!” At the same time, Xu Yangyi bellowed, spiritual force converging in his hand. All of a sudden, it advanced towards the “mirror” of silver silk in the sky, pushing past!

Rumble!

In an instant, this blazing inferno radiated without restraint! From the beginning of this dot, at the center of the sky, countless vestiges of flame shockingly appeared through the inception of this point!

It was a seal... formed from an endless amount of hairs. After they were burned by the fire, there was the marvel of a flame flower blooming in the sky!

In no longer than ten seconds, it was a hundred meters... three hundred meters... five hundred meters... over a thousand meters! The entire expanse of the sky reflected a web that had been scorched by fire! A fiercely flaming blaze caused the sky to turn red in reflection, making the stars in the heavens lose their color! It was by the burning that the afterglow of sunset turned into red clouds!

“Heavens!!!” At this instant, the whole tourism region of the Four Great Joint Pools boiled!

A heavenly web! A burning heavenly web! There was actually a heavenly web above their heads?! Followed by the fire’s intensity, the greatness of this heavenly web could finally be plainly reckoned!

Who ignited this fire? Who spun this web?

“The video camera! The video camera! No, no! The cell phone! Cell phone!” A man wildly yelled as if he had won the lottery. Shouting himself hoarse, he called out for the people within the tent: “Come out! Hurry up and get out here! Fuck! Look! Look fast! Nature’s most magical spectacle!”

“I-is this some natural phenomenon?” Somewhere else, an old man, his face flushed like an impassioned young girl, seized onto his camera with maximum strength, taking pictures without regard for the internal storage: “How marvelous! What mystique! Such beauty! I venture to guarantee! This will absolutely be this year in all of China... No! The most wonderful natural landscape in the whole world!”

“Fuck! What the heck is this thing?!”

“Is this Judgement Day?”

“Merciful Heavens... It’s stunningly beautiful!

“Simply unbelievable!”

Only two people didn’t gasp in surprise. They only dumbly looked at the web burning in the sky, seemingly cut apart from the heavens and earth. That night, the kind of shock that seemed like the fury of a god, caused their hearts to grow cold!

“M-m-m-monster!” Old Zhou’s voice was hoarse, and his entire body swayed back and forth like a pendulum. Only they... Only they knew this humanoid organism had done this!

“Monster! A monster!” Old Zhou, this is real fucking monster! There are really monsters in this world!” Old Fang screeched, but it wasn’t just them... Everyone at all four sides of the Joint Pools was screeching, yet Old Fang was especially excited!

“Old Zhou! These things must be safeguarded! W-we’re people that have truly witnessed monsters!”

“We can fucking prove it! There truly are monsters in the world!”

The web of silver silk, the dividing thread that isolated the worlds above and below the mountain, was a flat mirror in the air. At this instant, the entire whole had been transformed into flying ash by his hand!

Formidable power... Xu Yangyi's heart was presently overcome by emotion. He knew the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus was powerful, but in the cultivation room, he had still suppressed its might. Now that all was unleashed, the human realm's marvel of the fire sea in the sky and the gasps of surprise and involuntary shrieks below caused him to distinctly recognize how powerful this divine ability was!

This was merely the Fire Manipulation Art... In the future, there was still the divine abilities of the three later steps! In that case, what ought to have been their degree of strength? Someday, when he was at Foundation Establishment, to what level of power would the weaving of ten divine abilities attain?

“Go!” Without more thought, he had already grabbed onto the delirious Li Zongyuan, charging towards the mountain top. Yet in the next second, he immediately ceased to move. Exhaling on both of his fists, he punched out with maximum power, smashing a hole that could contain a man into the mountain and tossing Li Zongyuan in.

Before him... were over twenty men. Men that had identical appearances, the exact dress, and the same height. Like [jiangshi](#), they floated high up in the air. Under the rays of the moon, they radiated a fear-inducing killing aura, as if waiting on their arrival.

Xu Yangyi was in no way convinced they were Foundation Establishment cultivators because they were all at the initial stage of Qi Condensation! However, only those at Foundation Establishment were able to fly!

“You're making this more complicated than it has to be.” He

cracked a finger and it crisply rang out: "This is your trump card?"

Swoosh swoosh swoosh... At this instant, as if they were responding, the twenty-plus men turned their heads upwards in unison. Their whole faces split open like building blocks, yet what laid on the inside was not a brain, but rather a mechanical structure that could be vaguely seen!

Crack crack crack... Following the turning sounds of gears, dazzling swords unexpectedly came out from their mouths. In addition, the seemingly mechanical operation surprisingly prevented Xu Yangyi from seeing through.

Was this a formation?

With his fists arranged at his chest, Xu Yangyi gravely awaited the confrontation of the twenty-plus swords sprouting from their mouths, over twenty sword-containing puppets!

THIS was the opponent's divine ability! THIS was a true contest of divine ability versus divine ability!

Beneath moonlight, the twenty-plus swords glimmered like frost and snow, swords that were emitting a deathly radiance, spewed from mouths. Afterwards, the bodies of the twenty-plus men distorted at an inhuman angle and their joints inverted. They were like fishes swimming in the water and the air was their water. No longer standing, their entire beings rather appeared to recline in the sky. Using their heads to aim towards Xu Yangyi, they seemed like swordfishes prepared to attack in the air!

Crack crack crack... A machine sound, as if it were the knell of a death god, resonated through heaven and earth. Over twenty sharp swords were targeted towards him at the same time!

Xu Yangyi suddenly revolved his entire body's spiritual force. He didn't care at all for Li Zongyuan's life, and to date, the other didn't possess absolute allegiance, however, Li Zongyuan had followed him for a long time in any case. Beneath the best of his

ability, he didn't mind saving the other's life.

“Kill!” A crowing shout issued forth from the mouths of the twenty-plus puppets. In an instant, they metamorphosed into over twenty phantasms. Like butterflies flitting through flowers, they bore the glimmer of chilling stars, flocking towards Xu Yangyi!

“Be still...” At the instant both sides were at the verge of coming to blows, an ethereal voice abruptly rang out from the center of the volcanic lake.

Swoosh... An azure halo of light, a spreading faint ring of luminance, erupted from the volcanic lake. Without granting anyone time to react, half a second later, Xu Yangyi, the twenty-plus puppets, and the man at the lakeside were all rendered unable to move a single step.

It was like a woman's veil, soft and elegant, yet it caused a suffocating beauty, a power that could not be resisted. Subsequently, with the echo of a gentle hum, a light-blue cover that only cultivators were able to see fell on top of the dead volcanic lake.

“All Fellow Daoists set your minds at ease. Beginning from this instant, all of us cannot be known to anyone in the outside world.” The voice was quite odd. At first, it sounded unearthly, but another listen caused a person to be unable to discern whether it was male or female. The first half was a man's voice and then the second half turned into a woman's.

“This is...” At the lakeside, the man's gaze faintly shimmered. Afterwards, he bowed deferentially and laughed: “Respectful greetings, Senior Jadewave.”

His seemingly infinite hair, at this moment, surprisingly dissipated into strands of qi, transforming once more into the appearance of a shawl of hair.

Xu Yangyi didn't speak, only calmly sensing the immobilizing



force within his body. Such strength... ought to have been Foundation Establishment or perhaps... even higher! China was a land of several million square miles, a place of hidden dragons and crouching tigers, in no way limited to the obvious list of apex authorities!

The voice hummed in agreement and said casually: “Old Black Mountain hasn’t been dyed with blood in over three centuries... Those who come are guests. What decorum is killing?”

Although the voice was odd, it carried not a shred of killing aura. Before the voice even fell, Xu Yangyi only felt the confinement on his body loosen, and he stood steadily on the ground.

Yet the twenty-plus puppets before him appeared to scatter at their frames, all of them crashing down. Followingly, Li Zongyuan’s unconscious body flew high into the sky and slowly flew towards the pool. Finally, it quietly sunk into the water.

“Fellow Daoist’s demon familiar is a bit interesting. He was actually advancing here. He will stay with me for two hours and will be automatically awakened when the time comes. Fellow Daoist needs not to be concerned.”

Advancement?

Xu Yangyi faintly raised a brow. At a glance, Li Zongyuan’s demon form, a single-horned toad, was rubbish. He was actually able to evolve now?

Generally speaking, any demon beast could be traced back to a Godbeast. Merely, a majority of bloodline were becoming thinner and thinner. If an opportunity didn’t exist, they would eternally remain unawakened. He didn’t continue thinking of this question, instead, he calmly walked towards the volcanic lake.

The moonlit volcanic lake was several thousand meters in scope. The waves were gleaming light and the waters were crystal and clear, yet they evoked an unparalleled mystery.

He slowly walked over to the lakeside, looking at the man who was growing closer. The other's back was facing him, and the man said quietly: "Leave."

Xu Yangyi chuckled. He walked neither swiftly nor slowly, his expression quite ordinary, just the crook of his mouth faintly curving. Both of his hands were folded in his pants pockets, and if he were whistling then, it was practically like he had come to the Four Great Joint Pools for a stroll on the green grass.

The man slightly tilted his head, his pupils long and narrow and his gaze like a flying sharp blade. His voice carried a trace of ice-cold killing intent: "Take another step and you won't be leaving Old Black Mountain."

His voice not yet fallen, his pupils had already suddenly transformed into slits! The whip of a leg brought with it the sound of breaking wind, distinctly reflected within his pupils!

Putting on a show? Alright, then let's see whether you possess these qualifications!

Jiangshi are the Chinese version of vampires. Contrary to their western counterparts, they're more like zombies and hop around. Instead of sucking blood, they absorb qi. The most common depiction of Jiangshi is in Qing-era dress and with a talisman stuck on their heads. I believe the video games series Darkstalkers has a Jiangshi character in it.

## Chapter 92: Jadewave of the Joint Pools (5)

---

“Impudent!” The three surrounding old men snarled in unison, however, Xu Yangyi’s fluctuation in movement was too fast! They simply didn’t have the chance to step forward and obstruct him!

Boom! In the next second, Xu Yangyi’s leg had already kicked both of the man’s crossed arms.

Thump thump thump... The man fell back three paces in astonishment, looking at the Xu Yangyi incredulously.

“Lord God!” The three old men had already charged before the man, anxiety worn on their faces: “H-have you...”

Raising a jade-like hand, the man stopped the talking of the old men. His gaze flowed: “I will give you a chance to speak your name.”

“To touch me with your human body is already your mortal sin...” Before his voice even fell, a wisp of surging fury suddenly flashed through his eyes. A second kick... had appeared within his pupils once more! It was even faster than the first kick! It was aimed right at his face! Carrying the sound of breaking wind in the air, all that could soon be seen of the long, slender leg was an afterimage!

“Lord God!”

Boom! Xu Yangyi’s foot stamped into the ground. In an instant, the man had already leapt back into the air, his hair like millions upon millions of small snakes. Boundlessly extending, they immediately inserted themselves into his surroundings as if they were a spider web, causing him to float strangely in midair!

His gaze bore a trace of shock as he look towards the lakeside stone platform. Never did he expect this human’s speed was actually so fast! It wasn’t particularly great, but the explosive force was surprisingly so powerful!

“His body can actually match my demon form?!” Before this thought even subsided, he discovered to his shock that there were only three people on the stone platform!

Where was that man?! Where did he go off to?! Fury and disbelief melded together, yet behind him, the violent sound of wind echoed like the emergency break of a vehicle racing at high speed coming to a sudden halt!

“God Ming’s Supreme Dao... Cocoon Weaving The Self!”

Buzz! In a twinkling, his hair encapsulated him in a silk cocoon from head to toe. Subsequently, in the next second, a tremendous strength that could topple mountains and overturn the seas, separated by layers of defense, caused him to shiver.

“A human that can contend against my demon form...” He sucked in deeply, but suddenly heard a voice float into his ear.

“Xu Yangyi.”

“Remember it. Nex time you want to take action against a human, you best weigh your own bit of worth first.”

Silence.

The three old men below looked at the sky, flabbergasted. They couldn’t believe at all that the young master of their clan, the God Ming of the present age, had actually been beaten to this stage by a human who hadn’t utilised a divine ability!

Although physical combat wasn’t the expertise of the puppetry divine ability, any person of the Ming Clan knew that puppets were their weapons, and their weaknesses were their own bodies. Thus, everyone had a body-refining arcane effort passed down from ancient times that they trained in. In regards to some ordinary cultivators, an adult of the Ming Clan simply wasn’t required to stir their puppets to action and could play with them to death by use of a single hand.

Yet now... their young master had actually been kicked flying by

a human?

“Impudent!!!” Sullenness and raging fury formed twisting vipers within God Ming’s heart. He had underestimated the other... however, the response his opponent had given him was even more violent! Without any reconciliation, there moreover wouldn’t exist the currying of favor. One kick, two kicks. This was also informing him: you’re not as high and lofty as you imagine!

He was no longer able to maintain his expression, tranquil like water. This was a provocation! A humiliation! A human’s blasphemy of the gods! A blasphemer... had to pay with their soul!

In an instant, the silk cocoon ruptured apart into countless threads, thrashing onto his Xu Yangyi’s body, yet he didn’t resist it. Such minor pain was a tad better than nothing.

He narrowed his eyes at God Ming who had walked out from his cocoon. At this instant, the other’s silver hair was wildly dancing, but his skin had turned completely black like a silkworm before molting. Strange white runic patterns covered his body and his two eyes were likewise a white of deathly stillness.

“Open the tenth coffin...” His voice like an ice-cold god of death: “If you wish to die... I will aid you in your goals.”

“God Ming!”

“Adults must think three times before taking action!”

Dong... At this moment, a melodious chime rang out from the lake. Xu Yangyi brought out a watch from his pocket and looked at it. It was twelve o’clock midnight, the moment of the witching hour, punctual on the dot! Legend had it that from five o’clock to six o’clock in the evening, and then twelve o’clock at night, this time of shifting day to night was called the witching hour. In this period of time, yin qi was greatly flourishing and things that were incapable of being seen ordinarily became visible. Such as now...

On the surface of the barren lake, the rhythmic chiming of a bell

slowly rang out. In the tranquil night, it was incomparably distinct, quietly reverberating in the mouth of the volcano. Each sound caused people to feel a distant serenity, a residual lingering. Yet if it was attentively listened to, a kind of sensation that provoked a man to a mad devil's slaughter was mingled with a boundless pain and despair, but in the haunting ring of each chime, it bubbled forth like waves upon waves of tides!

Indeed, this was the ring of a bell... that ordinary people would never hear for all eternity. Yet this was no more than the essence of the chiming bell. There wasn't a person that added any divine ability to it. Although the mind was faintly influenced, it was in no way incapable of being resisted.

Crash... At twelve o'clock midnight, there were an abundance of creatures in the volcanic lake. At the present, all of them were surprisingly swimming together at the water's surface, as if they had heard some beckoning. Frolicing to their heart's delight, they seemed to be waiting on some descent.

They were waiting... waiting for the arrival of a true monarch, unknown to any man, seated at the top of the food chain in the volcano, beholden to the eyes of ordinary people!

Even if the Mesozoic era's apex predators, the [Mosasaurs](#) of the Cretaceous period, existed here, they would be incapable of claiming themselves as king. It was the eve of the emergence of one of the nation's true masters, the ruler of the lake.

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes, looking at all of the transformations on the lake's surface. He discovered to his shock... mist had arisen.

This mist was dense, nearly covering his eyes in an instant. He almost couldn't see anything distinctly outside of four meters. However... a soft crashing sound could be heard little by little from the heart of the lake. It seemed... something was gradually rising from the lake's center.

It was quite curious, the mist so heavy that he couldn't even see his five fingers as he extended his hand. However, that rising thing made everyone clearly see its true appearance!

That of a courtyard. A courtyard built with all kinds of bones!

A withered skeleton in a Daoist robe was holding onto some unknown bone no less than a meter in length to strike a damaged, oxidized, three-meter sized bell

Dong... Dong... The human skeleton rang the bell, and the sound traveled onwards to the four reaches of the deathly still, dense fog and the pavilion of myriad bones. If an ordinary person was here, they would've long been scared out of spirit and soul!

At twelve o'clock midnight, when the withered skeleton rang the bell, all things knew that as thick fog sprang up all around, they had to be quiet. Even the lakeside fireflies seemed to sense something at this moment.

The bell rang out twelve times. In the thick fog, two balls of enormous green light suddenly shimmered faintly from beneath the water. Hazy and appearing imposing, they were moreover... hurriedly rising upwards!

Xu Yangyi and God Ming were unable but to fall back a step. Everyone could hear the throbbing sound of their hearts. It was coming... Xu Yangyi deeply inhaled, pursed his lips, and clenched his fists. A legendary... greater demon that had survived since the era of the Five Dynasties and the Ten Kingdoms. Old Monster Jadewave was on the eve appearing amidst this expanse of thick fog.

Those two balls of green light... He understood they were the other's eyes gazing up ahead from several tens of meters below the water!

CRASH! A tremendous noise rang out! His eyes narrowed and his hands customarily adopted a defensive stance. This was because

within his eyes, the pavilion of myriad bones was suddenly rising!

“No, it’s not rising! Rather...” He gasped coldly: “Rather... this is a pavilion the other built on Its body!” A gigantic black shadow swiftly bulged at the center of the volcanic lake!

It couldn’t be clearly seen what it was and it was moreover unknown as to its magnitude and length! All that could be heard as this tremendous body ascended were countless streams of water sliding off of its body, like the pouring of a tempest!

Thump... The ground faintly trembled, and Xu Yangyi distinctly felt a kind of imbalance at his center of gravity. This was the other striding a step forward.

“Hiss...” Amidst the heavy mists, the sound of water like torrential rains pitter-pattered. Two balls of green light appeared like a lighthouse in the fog, looking over the five people present. Each person could clearly see...

The lake water beneath their feet... had dropped by at least five meters! A several-thousand-meter sized volcanic lake... had declined by five meters! One could well imagine the Jadewave’s demon form! The current scene was deathly silent.

Xu Yangyi and God Ming could still be considered well, yet the three people behind had long since broken out in a mad sweat, their legs trembling.

“Hiss...” A strange sound was heard, and each time it arrived, it was bound by the accompaniment of the quiet rustling of the lakeside grass. At the start, Xu Yangyi was still unaware, but in the turn of a wink, he immediately understood.

This... was Jadewave’s breathing! When the other breathed, a small whirlwind from the heart of the lake... served to subdue the surrounding grass below.

“I am Jadewave.” A voice indiscernible from man or woman leisurely echoed within the mist: “Fellow Daoists have waited



long.”

The millennium-old, tremendous demon of Old Black Mountain’s volcanic lake, Old Monster Jadewave, had finally come into being! The demon’s form was unknown, Its face unseen, the size of Its bulk unrealized, and the realm of Its divine ability was furthermore unascertained.

It was like this expanse of mist, incapable of allowing people to see its original appearance. Its voice was not great, far from the stage of aweing mountains, yet it crisply rang out in each person’s heart.

“Junior is a successor of this era’s God Ming. I have met Senior Jadewave in the past.” God Ming stifled the killing intent he bore against Xu Yangyi in his heart, smiling as he faintly bowed. Followingly, a gold box flew into the heavy mist: “An insignificant bit of good will. I hope senior will kindly accept it.”

The box appeared to have lost its gravity. The heavy mists clearly shrunk back, and the box immediately transformed into a black shadow, flying in. A brief moment later, a voice rang out.

“Three Centuries Vermilion Fruit. Fellow Daoist is considerate.”

Xu Yangyi cupped his hands, but didn’t say anything. He hadn’t brought anything to give. Of the Ming Clan, he already had some understanding of them from Li Zongyuan’s words earlier on. In comparison to such a great demon clan, he truly was considered a pauper.

“Fellow Daoists need not be panicked. Everyone knows of my rules. Although I, Jadewave, have not traversed the human realm, I have never engaged in the unscrupulous business of [theft](#) that would lower my own prestige.” In the mists, the tremendous head of an unknown creature spoke leisurely: “I have personally received the commissions of you two. I certainly will not cause the both of you disappointment. Junior of the Ming Clan, you are a successor of this era’s God Ming. The Ming Clan can be considered

to hold karma with me. You may put forth your riddlings first.”

“My explanation is only [half of a two-hour period](#) per person, not a moment more, not a moment less. Fellow Daoists, please attend to yourselves.”

“Yes.” God Ming answered respectfully. Not to mention he was only one of God Ming’s successors, the Ming Clan had no less than twenty inheritors. Even with the status of God Ming of this era, there was also no way of him NOT being incomparably afraid of this thousand-year-old demon.

He took out a ring, and with a gentle stroke, a screen of golden light suddenly appeared. Within, an ancient, almost tattered roll of sheepskin turned over endlessly.

It was a storage ring!

Xu Yangyi’s eyes burned. This was a true symbol of incredible wealth and status. The selling price of a storage ring could attain up to over a billion [renminbi](#)! To him, this was an astronomical figure!

And this was only as one of the successors of this era’s God Ming. A cultivator of such status would be able to produce it. Especially... since the other was actually wearing three rings on the forefinger, middle finger, and ring finger of his right hand!

“Undo the seal.” Jadewave’s voice was faint.

“Senior...” An old man behind God Ming, bowed and said: “It’s not that the Ming Clan will undo it on purpose, but rather...”

“Shut up.” God Ming didn’t even glance at the old man and cupped his hands and said: “I sincerely obey your instruction.”

He inhaled deeply and traced the ring once again. Immediately, a ray of golden light, as if it could push aside clouds to see the sun, rushed out from the ring, carrying the sharp and clear cry of a dragon, seemingly capable of illuminating the entire space!

Mosasaur = Dragon whale - is the translated for the name for the dinosaur/type. I searched the internet, but could not find an exact dinosaur that the Chinese call “Dragon whale”. However, the clue from the Cretaceous period narrowed down my search. What’s tricky here is that I’m not sure if dragon whale is just a catch-all for big aquatic dinosaurs or a specific dinosaur. My research has lead me to believe that the author is possibly talking about the Giant Mosasaur-class dinosaurs.

I want to bring the word theft to everyone’s attention. What is really being said is an idiom from one of China’s classics, The Water Margin, that literally translates to “imitating the dog and stealing the chicken”. From my best guesses, this refers to imitating the loyal nature of a dog, but then stealing, presumably, the chicken.

It sounds weird to say “half of a two-hour period”, but this is more so referring to how old Jadewave really is. The proper word for two-hour period would be 时辰 (shi chen), which in ancient Chinese time is two hours of time in the modern age. In ancient times, a day was formed from twelve of these two-hour periods.

I thought I would make a note out of this anyways. If anyone is unclear, the renminbi is China’s national currency. Also known as the Chinese Yuan.

# Chapter 93: Seven Stars Executing Demon

## (1)

---

Although this mere momentum was vast, it was yet unable to illuminate this expanse of mist.

“The Dragon Swallows Setting Sun Talisman?” Jadewave seemed to be dazed: “To use such a formidable seal to imprint on this ancient scroll, a bit interesting...”

Red light like a roaming dragon revolved around the sheepskin three times. God Ming bowed lowly. In an instant, the entire space stirred! It was a faintly undetectable and minute vibration, like the flapping of a dragonfly’s wings.

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply. He absolutely could not relinquish such an opportunity to broaden his horizons. The cultivation world was filled with a myriad marvels. Presently, even he could see...

This was a supreme treasure!

“ROOAAAARR!!!” A roar that seemed to step across the long river of time appeared to be heard from the sky. It rended the time, space, and domain that descended here. Among the desolate will, even if it was a formless noise, it was sufficient to cause the hearts of men to quake in fear!

“Go.” In the heavy mists, a soft and gentle voice rang out. Following the echo of a tremendous bang, the roar of some invisible creature, like it had been struck by a bullet, suddenly vanished.

Xu Yangyi pursed his lips. This power... While Jadewave’s definite realm was still unable to be made out, all that was known... was that It was strong... extraordinarily strong! Perhaps... It was even stronger than Vermilion Snow! It was no wonder that the other held such confidence to take residence here.

No mystery that Jadewave dared to seize the scenic cultivation land of the Four Great Joint Pools alone.

“Four years ago, father obtained this picture scroll. In these four years, he was unable to decipher it. I request Senior Jadewave for an assisting hand.” God Ming said.

“Hehe...” Within the heavy mists, laughter rang out, followed by the gurgling sound of water: “The Ming Clan is an inheritance of a thousand years. In the present world, it cannot be said to be in the top three noble demon clans, yet there exists no question it is in the top five... An item that all of you also cannot solve... is a bit interesting.”

The thick fog receded and the sheepskin paper immediately flew into the mist, vanishing.

Xu Yangyi carefully watched all of this. Originally, it was Li Zongyuan that knew how to contact this old demon, however, the other was surprisingly approaching evolution at this moment. All in all, it was necessary of him to be cautious and careful. Although the legends of the outside world had said Jadewave treated people cordially and so on, it wasn't outlandish that not even ten thousand preparations were enough against such a millennium-old demon.

Subsequently, he suddenly discovered that he couldn't hear a thing! All that could be seen was God Ming and the tremendous black shadow within the heavy mists were talking about something. It seemed that his sense of hearing had been stripped of right now!

Several seconds later, he set his mind to ease. This ought to have been the transaction of Jadewave and one of God Ming's successors. It was normal that he couldn't hear it.

He looked at his watch again. Ten minutes had passed. In such a situation, he watched sixty minutes go by on his watch. After half of a two-hour period, a light crumbling sound seemed to come

from all around. Afterwards, his sense of hearing returned to his body.

“So it was like this. I didn’t expect it was actually such a thing...” God Ming’s complexion bore an abnormal smear of red, and he bowed deeply: “Many thanks for dispelling the confusion, Senior! Past members of the young generation were surely grateful to you!”

“Hehe...” A dry laugh was heard from the heavy mists: “Junior of the Ming Clan, although this item is exceptionally precious, for the sake of your many unknown generations of deceased ancestors, I will remind you of two matters.”

“One, the Dao of the Heavens rewards the diligent. For gains to exist, there must be losses. Great opportunity is accompanied by great risk. This object is a supreme treasure, and you must also have the destiny to enjoy it.”

“Two, presently, you are only a successor of God Ming. To merely rely on this item, and if you desire to become this era’s God Ming, and even break through to Core Formation, destiny is still required.”

“Junior will bear Senior’s instruction to mind.” God Ming cupped his fist. Soon after, he used a jade box to store the ancient scroll with extreme gingeriness and put it in his storage ring.

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes. The middle finger’s ring. He inwardly memorized this.

“Junior, it is your turn now.” In the thick mists, Jadewave turned his head and appeared to look towards Xu Yangyi: “Come.”

Just as Xu Yangyi was about to take out the half of the small chest, Jadewave suddenly spoke: “Halt.”

Xu Yangyi stopped his actions. Followingly, he sensed a feeling within his body like soaring clouds and sailing mists as he flew straight into the heavy fog!

“This...” God Ming’s gaze suddenly twinkled. The Ming Clan was an inheritance of a thousand years. There were some secret histories that only they knew. For instance...

Unless it was an item that outsiders could not be permitted to see, Jadewave absolutely wouldn’t pull people before itself!

His own sheepskin scroll recorded the sliver of a world-shaking story, yet even this was taken out before outsiders. This boy... actually possessed an item even more precious than his own? A treasure that couldn’t be put forth or seen?

“Lord God.” An old man bowed and said: “Will we... be taking our leave immediately?”

“No...” A coldness grew within God Ming’s eyes, and he licked his lips: “Are you aware...”

“Senior Jadewave... has only ever cared for the life or death on its own volcanic lake... however, senior cares in no way at all for the life or death that has departed these grounds!”

“I still have debt that has to be reckoned with this ape.”

Xu Yangyi flew into this mists, involuntary of his own will and freedom. After approximately ten seconds, he finally sensed he had come to a stopping point. Nonetheless... this stopping point was shockingly a location covered with scales, a tract no less than several tens of meters in size!

This... was Jadewave’s palm!

“You’re very lucky.” Before he even opened his mouth, Jadewave’s voice, seemingly carrying a boundless, deep emotion, was heard from the mists: “This item... even caused me the thought of plunder. You truly... possess great destiny...”

Xu Yangyi’s footsteps slightly recoiled back a step, and he immediately heard Jadewave’s gentle laughter: “If I wished to pillage, you wouldn’t be standing here. Although this item has great destiny, the greater the destiny, the greater the challenge is

more often than not. I am old and cannot enjoy such.”

“Begin.”

Xu Yangyi looked at his watch, right on the dot.

“In the year 2000, China gathered the power of all biologists and geneticists to research and develop three ultimate Slaughter Weapons.” Jadewave said quietly: “They are true weapons of massacre. A single one can contend against a Core Formation master. This is one of the Chinese government’s trump cards. Each province’s avatar of Heavens Law has the application to enable their privileges.”

Xu Yangyi didn’t interject. Although what Jadewave was speaking about wasn’t related in the slightest to the main subject, he still continued to focus his attention and listen.

“Cultivation Civilization. What a beautiful noun. However, it is merely maintaining the hard-obtained surface of the weak balance. Each side is careful and cautious. Junior, do you know why it must be solemn and prudent?”

Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to open his mouth, the black shadow within the heavy mists laughed: “It’s simple... Nothing more than annexation... Humanity is aware of the cultivation world. Aware of the many rare treasures. They wish to annex the cultivation world. As for the cultivation world, they have always looked down upon humanity as insects. If not for the nuclear bomb, a weapon of mass destruction, filling the skies and being created, the cultivation world would’ve long since killed their way to rivers of blood.”

“What kind of consequence would arise from such annexation? It is a cold war. Like that of the United States and the USSR. Buddhism, Daoism, and Confucianism stand on the side of humanity. They desire joss sticks, but nearly all cultivators revere themselves as the sole supremacy, believing themselves to be gods, but offering no respects to the deities. What we cultivate is our own Dao, one’s own truth. The self approaches god. These three



schools cultivate [the Dao of the Joss Stick](#). Whatever the case, they also cannot let go of mankind. This is humanity's second trump card."

It laughed: "Junior, I will remind you out of friendliness. If Nascent Soul still exist in this world, they can only be among these three schools of several millenniums of inheritances."

Xu Yangyi didn't speak and inwardly took note of this.

"The final sword... is the item in your hand, the Emperor Armament."

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply, listening to Cultivator Jadewave's decryption with rapt attention.

"Each emperor controls China's fate. Among them likewise, there is an item closely related to them. It is known as the Emperor Armament... Perhaps this emperor died on top of it and dyed it with his imperial blood or maybe it holds an immense origin..."

"For example, Liu Bang of the Han dynasty's Snake-Beheading Sword. For instance, the lost Realm-Inheritance Jade Seal... These are Emperor Armaments. However, these Emperor Armaments also possess the greatest might concurrently as they enjoy a nation's destiny. Such as the buried [Snake-Beheading Sword](#) beneath Beijing... Once a cultivator moves against humanity, be they the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment to the Great Circle of Core Formation, a path of survival nearly ceases to be."

"The Heavens protect humanity." Jadewave seemed to sigh with boundless vicissitudes: "If any of China's heroic masters cultivate, they need to be Nascent Soul Dao Lords. They are the exalted from amidst the myriad masses... and even to this day, their souls guard this Earth..."

"Perhaps you do not see..." A tremendous green ball of light raised upwards to look at the night sky dotted with stars: "But I do..."

“Since the far-off ancient times, they... have always, always been guarding against the cultivation world. In China’s history, there existed thirty-two sovereign kings who took their accompanying Emperor Armaments and buried them in the Earth after their deaths. These Emperor Armaments are a barrier. Otherwise... the present mankind could only be slaves. In the ancient era, without nuclear missiles and with technology and science, Emperor Armaments were humanity’s greatest trump card against resisting the cultivation world.”

Xu Yangyi’s mind billowed like a tide. This incomplete chest was actually the artifact of a king? There was such a legend? The kind of secret... that didn’t exist in any book or any unrecorded history had been truly left unbequeathed? Forgotten to history, a secret Chinese tale that could only be handed down from mouth to mouth?

He silently gripped the chest. The chest was ice-cold, yet he took hold of a fiery sensation. If... this was an Emperor Armament, then... which emperor was it intimately related to in history?

Xu Yangyi could already see its might. If this was the Emperor Armament’s explanation, then all was clearly resolved. Why was Vermilion Snow frightened of it?

If it could slay Core Formation, what was there to say about half-step Core Formation?

“However... the item in your hands... is more terrible than an Emperor Armament...” As Jadewave began to speak, the enormous green lights that were its eyes flashed, and its voice couldn’t help but carry a shred of dread.

The first time Jadewave saw this item, It immediately understood what it was! Jadewave’s first instinct was to plunder! This was an item that truly existed in legend! However, Jadewave immediately discovered that this item... had recognized a master! It had acknowledged a man’s Dao! It had approved of a man’s

truth! At that time, Jadewave had immediately extinguished such a thought.

It was a legend too old... Jadewave dared not to use its own life to probe. It was said that once this item protected its master, it would not defend a second a time!

“Junior...” Jadewave adjusted its mood: “China has over thirty provinces. In each province, there is a person that wields an Emperor Armament. However... they are all dead armaments. Because they were buried after an emperor’s death, they are titled dead Emperor Armaments, Umbran Armaments.”

“You might be unaware, but when an emperor died in the ancient era... any item he carried on his person, including palace maids and eunuchs, all would be buried with him! Of course, these were the closest ones. Included among these was a most significant element; they wouldn’t allow any Emperor Armament to drift about in the outside world.”

“And yet... exceptions will inevitably exist. Some Emperor Armaments, their wielders holding the greatest injustice, are unwilling to pass on. Even though they [leave for immortality](#), they bear incomparable resentment and curses for being buried in an emperor’s tomb. It is such an Emperor Armament, an Animus Armament that has never been witnessed in China until now! A living Emperor Armament!”

“A living Emperor Armament is a spiritual object throughout eternity! An Animus Armament cannot arise because of death to age. Only a dead emperor—an ancient, dead emperor bearing countless resentments, hatreds, and injustices is able to cause this execution of remembrance, unvanquished for a millennium to remain to this day. It is truly an irony that a living emperor cannot create an Animus Armament, but a dead emperor can... as for this living Emperor Armament... It in itself is a colossal hidden treasure. In its life, it will only protect one master, recognize one master, and determine one master... As for this person...”

Jadewave paused and began to laugh: “They need to hold the greatest relation with this emperor and moreover be willing to assume the responsibility of his long-cherished desire that spanned across a thousand years!”

“At the same time... only the sole Animus Armament... in all of China’s five thousand years of history... can bring a titanic destiny for its wielder.”

From what I was able to find, the Dao of the Joss Stick is a more abstract concept of what Jadewave is trying to say. It’s more along the lines of “worship”, since joss sticks are used in Chinese culture to pay respects to ancestors/gods. What Jadewave is pretty much saying is that the three schools desire worship, which is why they are bonded with humanity.

Liu Bang’s Snake-Beheading Sword is also known as the Red Firmament/Heavens Sword. Legend states that Liu Bang (256-195 BC) used this sword to behead a white snake. Liu Bang would lead the Han dynasty from 207-195 BC. The Realm-Inheritance Jade Seal is referring to the lost imperial seal of the Qing dynasty, modern-day China’s last dynasty.

Leave for immortality is used euphemistically to describe an emperor passing away. The literal words are “Dragon enters Dinghu”, however the story behind this refers to the Yellow Emperor essentially riding on a dragon to the heavens to become an immortal. I’m leaving some stuff out, but that's the gist of it.

# Chapter 94: Seven Stars Executing Demon

## (2)

---

Boom! Within Xu Yangyi's heart, a flash arced through like a clap of thunder. Never did he expect by any musings that Emperor Armaments... were actually even separated by life and death!

The doubt in his heart finally had answer. Although this answer was quite superficial, it seemed to raise a corner and actually conceal even more secrets!

His gaze twinkled. An Animus Armament had identified itself with his own Dao? What Dao had it recognized of his? If there was certainly an activation opportunity, it was when the eight cultivators had confronted Vermilion Snow, giving him a kind of shock. But... what he came to be enlightened in was how a cultivator should be! What cultivation was!

Which [Lord of the Nine Quiniums](#) would acknowledge what a cultivator was?! As to the nature of cultivation?

He was silent, not uttering a word. Jadewave gently flicked a finger and a lotus flower suddenly drifted out from the heavy mists. In a flash, it touched the Emperor Armament, and a noise like the grating strike of a sword sharply echoed in the sky without warning!

Dong! Although this noise was momentary, its lingering aura was prolonged. It seemed to have been heard from a thousand years ago, carrying an aura of immeasurable murder and causing the minds of men to shudder!

Xu Yangyi suddenly felt his heart madly palpitate. Following the dispersal of that ripple-like sound, it slowly settled. It was as if... something was clutched tightly onto his heart, a kind of forceful pinching. Just as he sighed in relief, his pupils immediately shrunk! At this twinkling, the Emperor Armament lightly

shivered, and a blood-like mist swiftly formed a curtain like a movie. Two figures emerged on its surface!

“This is!” A violent trembling came from beneath Xu Yangyi’s feet, and Jadewave’s entire demon form shook severely as if It had laid eyes on some extremely terrible object, nearly throwing Xu Yangyi into the pool!

Above the blood curtain, a series of images that seemed to smell of a sanguine reeking appeared like an undulation. Finally... it was clearly exhibited!

“[We... We are unreconciled...](#)” Not a person was seen. All that could be viewed was a pale hand slowly rising upwards: “This immortal pill... how... how could...”

Crash... The man’s hand hung powerlessly, streaking across an exquisite table. The elegant and ornate antiques immediately fell to the floor, followed by an ear-piercing sound of shattering.

At this moment, in front of him, directly poised towards the night outside of the room, a brightness suddenly spilled forth like a ray of immortal light! It was like a sun in the blackness! It demanded absolute attention! In the sky, immortal light and golden rays gave birth to a lotus at each pace! In an instant, the sky was covered with a golden light, as if a golden tent had been hung! It was utterly intoxicating!

“Hah...” In the heavy mists, two green flames trembled fiercely. Even a thousand-year-old demon was simply incapable of believing in the object it was looking at.

Swish! At this instant, the blood curtain shattered with a rumble. The current scene was quiet like death. It was no more than three seconds and the time was quite short, yet the silence left behind seemed to last a century.

“Senior?” Xu Yangyi finally spoke because the Jadewave before him appeared like it had died. There was no response, but the

sound of a tremendous heart beating seemed to be heard reverberating in the space.

“Senior?” After five seconds, Xu Yangyi cupped his hands again and made a second inquiry.

“I... I know...” Ten seconds later, Jadewave’s voice rang out again, yet the demon appeared somewhat terrified as if Its soul had departs Its mortal coil, Its heart in distress.

“This is... a blood-drenched Emperor Armament...” Enormous green flames looked complicatedly at Xu Yangyi: “Just now... this was the implemented intent of this Emperor Armament’s master as he died... In the cultivation world, there is a special name for this... A Millennium Grudge...”

“It bears an emperor’s execution of intent and resentments, crossing over a thousand years... Junior... be careful. Even I do not know more regarding Animus Armaments.” Jadewave’s voice finally recovered its original state: “Too many items, because the execution intent of their masters is terribly intense, will have a final image sealed within from back then as it is looked upon...”

“But this isn’t the most important thing.”

Jadewave sighed deeply: “Junior, can you see the last beam of light?” Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to reply, Jadewave’s voice carried an incredible cautiousness: “That... is also an Emperor Armament!”

“Before its master’s death, there was another Emperor Armament that struck this Emperor Armament!” Jadewave’s voice already bore a faintly indiscernible shivering: “Junior... remember this clearly... This attacking Emperor Armament... I have seen it during the time of my nascence... Witnessed it!”

Xu Yangyi keenly felt, was it that Jadewave’s body was actually trembling at the moment?

This thousand-year-old greater demon was trembling because of



this Emperor Armament!

He inhaled deeply and clasped his hands: “Please speak, Senior.”

“Remember its name... junior...” Jadewave’s voice was wrought with hoarseness, as if It had sunk into Its most terrible memory of the past: “Its name... is the [Xia-Yu Sword](#).”

Jadewave laughed wryly: “This is a name that perhaps you are a stranger to. However, it has another name that you are bound to have heard...”

“The Sword of [Xuan Yuan...](#)” Not waiting for Jadewave to finish speaking, Xu Yangyi stifled the shock in his heart and replied.

Silence came again. After no less than a full minute had passed, Jadewave continued to speak: “[Starry Heavens Flower and Rootless Lotus...](#) Golden light like muslin, a power shakes Xuan Yuan... It... is the Xuan-Yuan Sword! There’s no mistake... It is the strongest Emperor Armament since the beginning of history, the Xuan-Yuan Sword!”

“Someone... used this Emperor Armament to kill this emperor! As for this little chest... it waged a battle against against the Xuan-Yuan Sword! Consequently, it was chopped into two parts! What you hold is the upper half!”

“Killed by an immortal artifact, this emperor carried a Millennium Grudge. As he approached death’s door, he used his spirit to nourish the rise of an unparalleled hatred... It was then that the sole Animus Armament in China’s five thousand years of history was created!”

“This is how it is... It surely is... Beyond a doubt...” Jadewave’s voice had already fell into a loop, however, this answer caused it incredulity!

Who was it? So fearless to commit regicide!

Moreover... the Emperor Armament actually taken out was the presently long-lost Xuan-Yuan Sword, the strongest Umbran



Armament! As for the surface of the Xuan-Yuan Sword... it was actually dyed with an emperor's blood! Who was the departed soul that had met a wrongful death beneath this sword?

And while this Animus Armament in itself was ordinary, after it had been cleaved in two by the Xuan-Yuan Sword, it continued to silently be passed down to the modern age, bound with an endless grudge.

Jadewave sighed deeply. It dared not to ponder in the direction of this secret. It was too terrible, simply surpassing the category that Jadewave was able to participate in.

“Junior, even now... you still dare to hold it?”

Xu Yangyi calmly studied the simple chest, taking a long and unhurried sigh in his heart. Striding across a millennium, an execution of will left unscattered. Bearing inexhaustible resentment, hatred, and injustice, forged from a life into this Emperor Armament?

Which emperor were you? In history, what splendor and magnificence did you leave behind? A deep sigh seemed to bound across from ancient to modern times. Soon after, he tightly clutched the chest, absent of hesitation. But, you have come to me on this day! Regardless of who forged you, no matter who you once were, you are now simply mine, Xu Yangyi's fortune!

Jadewave's gaze continued to shimmer, as if It was considering something. Finally, the demon nodded its head imperceptibly.

“A good resolute nature... or perhaps it could be said... a newborn calf does not fear a tiger?”

“Forget it, never mind... There exist no destiny between me and this object. An Animus Armament... A taboo in China's five thousand years... Since a master has been recognized, it is not worthwhile of me to set hands on it.”

Jadewave sighed with extreme reluctance in its heart. Between

its life and opportunity, it chose the former. In its gaze of a thousand years, a wisp of envy appeared, but eventually, Jadewave pacified its mind and coughed lightly: “Each Emperor Armament has a successor. In present day China, there are over thirty successors. However, successors of Umbran Armaments cannot leave their province. So long as they are within their province, they can then awe those who cultivate within the province.”

Xu Yangyi cupped his hands: “Many thanks, senior, for dispelling the confusion.” He looked down at his watch. There was still half an hour. “Junior still has a few questions.”

Seemingly nodding, Jadewave said in turn: “I know what you’re going to ask. I’m not finished speaking, as well. You’re going to ask of the carved image on the Emperor Armament, yes? Who it originates from?”

Xu Yangyi nodded. This was the part he was puzzled over.

“Hehehe... Young fellow... I don’t know whether I should say your luck is too good or too bad... You might believe the line of runes carved on the edge of your sole Animus Armament to be a decorative design, but I just happen to recognize these markings by chance.”

Laughing, Jadewave’s voice turned grave: “This is a hieroglyph. Its meaning: to unravel its secret!”

“Junior, the Emperor Armament in your hands is badly damaged. I do not know why, but you have stirred it to life and assumed the responsibility of its destiny and karma. However, you best find its other part as soon as possible, otherwise...” The demon shook Its head: “An Animus Armament... Among five thousand years, a nation, and over a billion people, this item has barely come about... Dead in the hand of its emperor, how great is the hatred and thirst for vengeance carried? Who is it? For it not to disperse in a thousand years? As for what will happen, none are any the wiser.”

“Is there a clue?” Xu Yangyi’s gaze flickered, and he immediately questioned.

“Of course...” Jadewave began to laugh: “However, don’t we have to discuss your condition now?”

Xu Yangyi chuckled: “Since I have come, I naturally know the rules. Please speak, senior.”

Jadewave nearly said immediately without the slightest hesitation: “The hidden secret of the Animus Armament... You must share it with me!”

“Not a joint collaboration of you and I, but rather... from your mouth, orally narrated to me, without any remaining vestiges of pen and paper allowed! In addition, establish a Dao-heart oath that you will voluntarily enjoy the pleasures with myself! All karma shall be of your undertaking!”

This was Its price!

It ventured not to strike any thoughts towards the Animus Armament. Especially once It knew this Emperor Armament had been used to murder a ruler, It simply dared not to imagine what kind of aftermath would come about from the karmic retribution lying in the darkness!

Fortunately... narrowing Its eyes at Xu Yangyi, this little Qi Condensation cultivator was unable to know of such a thing like karma. Whether or not it was real or existed, Xu Yangyi was far from the time of touching these things by means of his own cultivation and knowledge...

Only Core Formation and above had the qualification to begin searching for karma, to trace the origin before the cause... What was there even to deceive to a trifling Qi Condensation cultivator? In particular this overt plot.

All was in Its hand. What It grasped was nothing else but the most significant knowledge and information! This was the

advantage of living so long!

If Xu Yangyi didn't agree, this most crucial item would forever be left unknown to him!

If he did agree, this hidden treasure would be jointly shared, and he would be saddled with the karma. This was a perfect method of evading the causality.

Jadewave had fished for several centuries and finally... finally a true big fish had taken the bait! With this sum, It had gained a complete return on investment!

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. In his mind, he was swiftly considering everything. There was no doubt that there was obviously a huge pitfall to this condition, however, it was necessary of him to promise at the moment.

Be it cultivation or knowledge, Old Demon Jadewave was on a completely different level apart from him.

Lord of the Nine Quiniums is my fancy way of putting something that might otherwise be "Lord of the Nine-Five". This concept of nine quiniums refers to section in the book of changes that describe nine sets of five that make up the world in some respect, i.e: the five elements. Modern day usage, this term is another way to refer to an emperor. Another translation of this might be "All King", but you lose out on the nine-five portion.

This "We" here is not referring to a group of people, but is a pronoun used by nobility, mainly an emperor/king. If you've watched/read historical materials, you may know it was quite common for royalty, not just Chinese but also European, to refer to themselves as "We". One example that comes to mind is in French.

Xia Yu is referring to a legendary Chinese ruler who founded the Xia dynasty, Yu the great. Because of the lack of documentation of his existence, he is considered a somewhat unproven, but mythical, figure. Noted for bringing flood control to China and his

noble character.

I feel most people may be unaware, but Xuan Yuan was the name of Huang Di a.k.a the Yellow Emperor. His sword, the Xuan-Yuan Sword, is an item of real myth and has spawned a series of rpgs by this title. It is said that the sword was used to defend the world against evil.

This note is mainly referring to “Starry Heavens Flower/Rootless lotus... etc” This is my best stab at it. Starry Heavens Flower is my literal take of the translation of an actual flower called “baby’s breath flower”. Red Spider Lily isn’t so much referred here, but it was the only thing I found that made sense in reference to the flower that Jadewave is talking about. Sometimes, the author tries to get very poetic. Here, I believe Jadewave is trying to make an allusion of life and death, since Red Spider Lily (Rootless Flower) grows in the netherworld/hell in legend. Meanwhile, Baby’s breath flower is obviously about life.

# Chapter 95: Seven Stars Executing Demon

## (3)

---

“I promise.” Xu Yangyi was devoid of hesitation, fully aware this was an open conspiracy. What was most important for him currently was still the advancement of cultivation.

“Splendid!” Jadewave laughed heartily, the demon’s laughter uninterrupted for a full minute. It then said: “There is indeed a clue left behind on the surface... Although it is not complete, do you know why there are five holes on this box? Yet there is only a single person?”

Perhaps because it was in a greet mood, Jadewave didn’t wait for Xu Yangyi to respond, and then laughed: “Do you know of the deities of the Five Phases?”

Xu Yangyi shook his head. As a pragmatist, he only cared whether or not something was of use, careless of its origin.

“Junior...” Jadewave laughed: “All of China’s theories are founded upon the Five Phases. This is the root of China’s cultivation world. As for this root, it originates from the Book of Changes.”

“The Book of Changes is the joint origin of China’s two schools of Daoism and Confucianism... The five celestial deities are Jupiter, Saturn, Mars, Venus, and Mercury... The five ruler deities is the truth of these five holes! They have another name by which they are called... The Five Primordial Celestials.”

“The person carved on this chest... No, god, his name is known as [Tai Sui](#)!”

“A leopard-headed man mounted on top of a boar-headed horse, this is undoubtedly the god of Jupiter!”

“Next, you must find a human specialist of relics. Mankind’s evaluation of dynasties is far more superb than mine. Discover

which dynasty this item is from... Afterwards... search in history, in a time where Daoism or perhaps Confucianism was revered, of an emperor who received the greatest injustice in death. I wager the lower half of this ruined Emperor Armament is there!”

“Where is that place?” Xu Yangyi immediately questioned.

Jadewave began to laugh: “Do you think... after the emperor’s death, you’re able to take away the item from where it is located?”

“Only when both halves are united as one will you be able to bring about true information pried from the Animus Armament. Perhaps you have presently obtained a benefit from within, but... Hehe, is the only Animus Armament produced in five thousand years merely this?”

“The true information hidden within it is only truly complete when it is opened.”

Silent, Xu Yangyi digested this obtained information. This long discussion in the night had finally unraveled the final knot within his heart. Otherwise, he would always have a hole in his heart as he used the Eternal Alchemy Canon to cultivate. It couldn’t be seen in the beginning, but the further ahead into the future, the more tangled it would be, until finally, once it became a paranoia, it would form a heart devil. Perhaps it would then be difficult to forge ahead.

Today, he felt everything dissipate like vanishing smoke and scattering clouds. So it turned out he was being hunted... because of it. This little box actually held such a great history. An injustice spanning a millennium, a blood-dyed Emperor Armament. It was no wonder it was carrying an arcane effort such as the Eternal Alchemy Canon.

What do you wish of me to accomplish? What is the pursuit of your thousand years of hatred? Nonetheless... these things aren’t important. As long as you aid me in ascending to the apex, I shall fulfill your desire of that year!

“Many thanks.” He cupped his hands. While this evening may have seemed to lack tangible gains, it strengthened his heart and spirit, far better than cultivating for several decades.

He looked at his watch. Twenty-four minutes.

“Remember our agreement.”

A tremendous green radiance flickered. Just as Jadewave was planning on descending, Xu Yangyi suddenly turned around: “There’s another matter that I wish senior can guide the way.”

“What matter?” Jadewave was aloof; a minor matter was without trouble, not necessarily out of reach. Its mood was quite well, fabulously great. Was it truly believed there was someone with the ease of mind to decrypt matters for people at the Four Great Joint Pools?

Granted that there was a reward, the price to get Jadewave to decrypt was rather high... Jadewave only determined the reward that a majority of clans were able to pay with clenched teeth. Its own cultivation had already reached a bottleneck. Without great opportunity, it couldn’t break through, so it had thought up of this method to bait fishes.

A century... two centuries... three centuries had past, It had ultimately waited for this day! This ticket was sufficient to make up for three centuries of time! Enough to make up for stifling Its nauseating intolerance towards these insects! This... was a once in five thousand years... Animus Armament condensed from one of China’s over a hundred emperors!

Jadewave gently laughed in the heavy mists, not knowing which emperor it could be... who could harbor such a fierce hatred. Even above all men, a Lord of the Nine Quiniums still bore such an execution of ideal. He had actually congealed this item of legend. As for the Millennium Grudge of that emperor, it was evident he held a titanic relation with the cultivation world... To be able to incur the attack of the Xuan-Yuan Sword’s wielder, Jadewave



dared not to shoulder this karma. However, the greater the karma, the destiny was likewise immense!

Life or death was merely between a thought. This folly was sufficient to make that foolish human boy undertake it.

“With senior’s cultivation, it should be no issue to forcibly use Innersight. After Junior obtained the Emperor Armament, a bit of a mishap appeared in my body. I’d still like to request Senior to dispel my confusions.”

Jadewave’s expression finally turned a shade solemn. At least... until this boy obtained the hidden secret of the Emperor Armament, he mustn’t die.

“Yes.” Jadewave answered insipidly. Xu Yangyi only felt an icy coldness, like a pair of eyes had sprouted within his body, looking at all of his secrets. He guessed once more of Jadewave’s cultivation, elevating it by a single level.

“There’s no problems... Hold on.” Jadewave carefully swept over every part of Xu Yangyi. There wasn’t anything odd, until it had arrived at the qi sea. After Jadewave had originally done a round of inspection, it suddenly discovered there appeared to be something bobbing up and down within the billowing qi sea.

“Let me get a careful look.” Jadewave narrowed its eyes. In the next second... the demon saw it clearly! It was a stone-like seed. However... It recognized this seed! A name that even caused a demon to tremble!

“God... God... God... Godseal Spark!” The inside of Jadewave’s heart surged wildly like mad tide flooding the heavens: “Impossible! It cannot be! H-how could this be! Such a thing... Such a thing...”

“I understand... I understand! So it was like this! The origin was as such!!!”

CRASH! From the violently surging lake surface, a giant wave

that was several tens of meters high suddenly rose up! Jadewave's two enormous eyes glimmered indistinctly. Anyone could see and realize that the demon had suffered a tremendous shock!

Xu Yangyi was on a hair-trigger lookout. Indeed, he did not know what this object was that appeared once he finished cultivating the first part of the Eternal Alchemy Canon.

"This is..." Both of God Ming's eyes trembled with apprehension. As he looked towards the tremendous thick mists in shock, he unexpectedly discovered that the dense fog held signs of dissipating!

"This... Could it be that Senior Jadewave has suffered a shock? But how is it possible? Isn't the other but a mere Qi Condensation cultivator?"

Just at this instant, in the vast sky dotted with stars, the first star of the Big Dipper, Tian Shu, suddenly erupted with a burst of eye-piercing radiance!

The shocked Jadewave shivered from head to toe, swiftly raising its head to look towards the sky and bellowing with a hoarse voice: "I REFUSE!!!"

"This Dao Master took no more than a glance! A mere glimpse of the eye! Why?! On what basis must you behead me?!?!"

"Could it be that you are the Will of Heaven?! Bullshit! Who gave you the right to slay me?!?!"

A Dao Master!

Xu Yangyi and God Ming entirely fell back a step. This change had come too quickly, too abruptly! Senior Jadewave... No, Daomaster Jadewave suddenly frenzied and moreover snarled its realm for the first time since the beginning of history!!

A Dao Master! A Core Formation master! Unless one was at Core Formation, they were not allowed to appellate themselves as a Dao Master! Nonetheless, these things weren't the cause that put Xu

Yangyi on immediate guard. The true reason...

Someone... was slaying Jadewave? Beheading a demon? Executing a Dao Master Greater Demon? Who dared?!

In the sky... there was no response whatsoever. Subsequently, under the illumination of brilliance like snowy muslin, the Tian Xuan, Tian Ji, Tian Quan, Yu Heng, Kai Yang, and Yao Guang, [these six stars](#), deafeningly erupted with gentle moonlight!

[“Heavenly Demon Art... Tortoise Unto Xuanwu!”](#)

A life or death crisis unexpectedly pervaded Daomaster Jadewave’s entire body! At this instant, it simply dared not to care about others. In the wake of a furious roar that crossed the sky, a fierce tide of qi without peer suddenly exploded!

Boom... With the sound of tremendous quaking, the whole dead volcano of Old Black Mountain trembled!

RUMBLE! All the pool water of the Four Great Joint Pools flew into the air in harmony. At this moment... the thousand-meter pool bottom could shockingly be seen! Xu Yangyi’s gaze focused. He seemed to catch sight of a fin.

“You desire to slay me?! How could it be so easy?!?!?” Jadewave raved madly, his furious shout carrying an even crazier laughter: “Heavenly Demon Art! [Demon Refines The Savage River!!!](#)”

Swoosh! All the lake water in the air seemed to uniformly transform into imitated scales of light-blue armor in this second! The armor defended above Jadewave! In this instant, the several thousand meters of the volcanic lake had all come into this armor covering!

Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed, and he backpedalled at lightning speed. Likewise, God Ming no longer cared for image and frantically burst into retreat! Someone... There really was a person taking action against this Core Formation Greater Demon who had lived for over a thousand years! However, the eyes of these two similarly carried

a scorching blaze!

This... was the divine ability of a Core Formation master! It easily flipped over rivers and turned over seas! It shrouded the heavens and blotted out the sun!

Moreover, looking below Jadewave's foot, the thousand meters of lake water had come to a boil in the air! Yet while watching a thousand-year-old Greater Demon's move, countless tonnes of lake water congealed into form, needless of foundation! Though watching the sky... the seven stars of the Big Dipper sparked synchronously! There existed a person... who had leapt over an immeasurable distance and crossed through infinite space to bring these seven stars to execute this demon!

“This is a true cultivator!”

“We cultivators ought to be like this!”

Xu Yangyi looked at his watch; it was his 52th minute. The 52th minute of an hour... since he had entered here.

Tai Sui isn't actually so much the name of a god, but apparently more so the title of a position depending on what you believe in. This title is known as “Grand Duke Jupiter”.

These are stars that make up the Big Dipper. I was unsure whether to translate them into english, english counterpart of their chinese names or just leave them in pinyin, since these stars exist in Chinese astrology under their own name. In english the stars are labeled from alpha to eta ursae majoris. Chinese translated names are respectively: Celestial Pivot, Celestial Rotating Jade, Celestial Shining Pearl, Star of Celestial Balance, Star of Jade Sighting-Tube, Star of The Opener Heart, and the Star of Twinkling Brilliance.

You may or not be aware, but a Xuanwu is a mythical tortoise entwined with a snake in Chinese Mythology. In the Chinese constellation star map, Xuanwu, the Black Tortoise, assumes the

northern position. Xuanwu is also the name of a daoist god who happens to be accompanied by a tortoise and a snake.

Reference here to the word “Savage”. In Chinese, this word has a bunch of different meanings and I took on definition of “harsh and unreasonable” here. However, Jadewave might actually be referring to an actual river called the Heng River. I’m honestly not quite sure here.

# Chapter 96: Seven Stars Executing Demon

## (4)

---

At the same time, a curved blade that only a cultivator could see fell down from the sky with a rumble! The seven stars of the Big Dipper, their starry edges had converged into a simple long blade. There existed no adornment whatsoever. It was simple, yet rough.

However, the killing aura congealed on the body of this long blade... caused all vegetation in the volcanic lake to wither and die in an instant, an air that brought all living things to servitude.

It wasn't slow, but rather completed in the blink of an eye. The blade carried a brilliant heavenly might. Beneath the chop of this blade, in the wake of each place it neared, the plants on the ground shriveled. Afterwards, like a drop of blackness piercing the water surface, it swiftly extended over the entire Old Black Mountain from the beginning of the volcanic lake's surroundings!

A blade, the opposition of all things in life or death. The blade appeared not to be fast, but in the last second it emerged, it had already ruthlessly slashed towards the protective shield, which was no less than a thousand meters in range, in the next second!

Swoosh! Xu Yangyi tightly shut his eyes, leaving merely a sliver.

It was like a heavenly god had descended at this very moment! Enormous wind and spiritual pressure caused his spiritual sense to seemingly scatter!

BANG! The surface of the heart-shaking protective shield melted like ice and snow. It didn't even obstruct the blade by a hair, utterly shattered! CRASH! Difficult to reckon in tonnage, the lake water fell into the volcanic lake once again, bringing forth a torrential rain that filled the sky!

"This is a battle of cultivators!" Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply, using his fastest speed to fall back to a crack in the mountain wall.

Each movement in the outside world affected his heart.

With one turn of a hand, clouds were born and rains summoned. Mountains collapsed and oceans seethed! So long as a cultivator followed the Dao with heart and soul, who wouldn't be in great admiration because of this scene?

Swoosh! Subsequently, in the wake of a furious roar that shook the heavens in the next second, the falling lake water carried with it an even greater amount of noxious blood!

He clenched his teeth, employing maximum swiftness and glancing towards the outside. The sky was the same as always. It appeared as if nothing had occurred. However, the mists in the lake had completely dispersed, the pond brimming with bloody redness!

A body, so enormous that it was terrifying, reclined in the pool. It was like a crocodile, its lower and upper jaws of equivalent length. The inside was teeming with sharp teeth that were a few meters in size. It didn't possess four limbs; its four limbs were four fin-like appendages. Its entire body was covered with bluish-black scales. A fish-like tail. Merely...

Its head was not on its body! Rather... the head and body were rendered two separate segments! The large eyes of its skull bulged wide, unclosed even in death and bearing grievances. It brought the lake to be brimming with blood as it slowly fell down.

Not a person could speak. Xu Yangyi tightly clenched his fists, stifling the shock of his heart. The breathing of God Ming and the three old men was rushed, their faces flushed red.

The moment the hare had reared its head, the falcon had swooped down for the hunt! In the blink of an eye... Daomaster Jadewave's unexpected corpse was on the scene!

"This is..." After several minutes, Xu Yangyi settled his mind and said heavily: "A [Mosasaurus](#)?"

A creature extinct since the Cretaceous period of the Mesozoic era! An absolute overlord in the water!

“A Mosasaurus?!” At the other side, God Ming simply dared not to believe his eyes: “Jadewave... Its true form... was actually a Mosasaurus?! The Mosasaurus that has been extinct for several million years? A thousand years ago, this lost species still truly existed?”

THIS was a true strange species of ancient times! Yet such an ancient lost species had been slayed by the falling of the heavens' seven-star blade! A thousand-year Dao foundation, a dynasty's complete destruction!

There wasn't a person present that could speak. The distance was unknown and the location was a mystery, but separated by myriad mountains and vast waters, this delivered blow... Someone had beheaded this millennium-old Mosasaurus as such!

Even Daomaster Jadewave's resistance had become a move worthy of ridicule. It even couldn't say a word as It had been beheaded beneath that blade! The event had lasted no longer than a twinkling!

What kind of divine ability was this?! What was its realm?

At this moment, Xu Yangyi simply didn't ponder it and rushed towards the volcanic lake with full power, layered with both Life Sacrificiation and Flying Star! At nearly the same time, God Ming's gaze continuously flickered. In the next second, his speed increased explosively, charging towards the volcanic lake like a streaking meteor!

In an instant, the two of them had raised their speeds to the pinnacle! Simultaneously, there was only the sight of the other in each of their eyes, bearing a fierce battle intent not concealed in the slightest!

Of an entire demon physique that had reached the Core



Formation level, the skin, flesh, blood, special parts, and so on were all treasures! However, the most important was the demon core! This was the demon core of a Core Formation demon that had just died! The origin crystal of an ancient, lost species! This... was its second life!

When this demon core was carried on the body, the worry of qi exhaustion would cease to be. It could be well imagined that if both sides were lanterns burning down to their final flames and one side activated the infinite energy mechanism that was the Core Formation demon core, how would this battle method even be combated?

To possess such an item... even late-stage Foundation Establishment to the limit of the Great Circle would be provoked to somewhat of a consideration! Granted that it couldn't be absorbed, it could still be self-detonated. The explosion of a Core Formation demon core was explanatory in its terror!

No one would permit it and none could allow it! In an instant, the atmosphere arrived at a burning-white intensity!

“Scram!!!!” God Ming issued a furious snarl, his white head of hair moving freely, absent of the wind! In an instant, it extended over a hundred meters, like a spider spitting out silk. His eyes bloodshot, he swiftly shot forth, bringing with him a strong gale!

In the wake of his angered howl, his twenty-plus puppets that had been rendered immobile by the deceased Daomaster Jadewave rattled once again with a cracking noise at this moment. In the space of several seconds, seemingly pulled on by a thread, they arced towards Xu Yangyi like electricity!

“Mongrel!” God Ming was on the edge of his toes; what arcane effort did this lowly cur cultivate? His speed was actually THIS fast?!

With the layered combo of Life Sacrificance and Flying Star, Xu Yangyi's speed was not a bit slower in comparison to God Ming's!

The target was likewise evident—the heart within Jadewave’s body, the location of the demon core!

Whoever had killed Jadewave or why they had beheaded the demon was currently unimportant. What was important was this great opportunity; no one was willing to relinquish it!

Whoever first seized this thousand-year-old demon core... was the person who was able to take the initiative to snatch it! That person’s opponent... would be certain to die here! Just at this time, the two of them halted in step simultaneously. Their gazes shifted away from their surroundings for the first time, looking all around vigilantly.

Crack... Crack... A sound just like breaking glass could be faintly heard from each direction. At the beginning, it was still rather gentle, but in less than a minute, it immediately resonated through the entire expanse!

Crack crack crack crack... The space between Heaven and Earth seemed to become this sound.

Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply. Immediately, he assumed a half-crouching stance, like a stalking cheetah waiting to pounce with full power. He realized that this... was the restriction that Daomaster Jadewave had set up beforehand, so outsiders couldn’t see!

Following Daomaster Jadewave’s demise, this restriction was soon on the verge of turning into scattered ash in the wind. In other words, everything here would be seen with crystal clarity by everyone!

And yet... what of it! What was to display power and might before the masses? With the corpse of a Core Formation Greater Demon ahead and the origin crystal before him... to act fearfully here of the slightest thing, caught between hesitation and indecision... was not his style!

If all of you are going to watch, then observe! I'll allow all of you ordinary people to see the other side of this world! Today, I, Xu Yangyi, am the leading actor!

At this moment, Jadewave's corpse suddenly emitted countless rays of white qi. The quantity was vast like mountains and seas, nebulous like fog and mist. Wafting in the wind, all of it flew towards the sky! It seemed to be a dirge between heaven and earth!

Xu Yangyi penetrated through the fluttering qi that filled the sky. His gaze unblinking, he looked across at God Ming whose lips were tightly shut, likewise half-crouched on the ground, and his hair of several hundred meters frenzied like a silver serpent.

The other was also glaring daggers at him. Neither side was willing to yield an inch, opposed to each other at polar ends!

Crack crack crack... BANG! Now, the restriction collapsed with a rumble! As for the qi that filled the heavens, it shockingly condensed a tremendous qi flower that was no less than several hundred meters in the sky!

Boooom! In the next second, all that was visible in the world was light. This was because the qi explosion... had given birth to spiritual light that veiled the horizons! There were layers upon layers, harmonious and magnificent, stunning the hearts of men. A full several hundred meters in size, it erupted at the top of Old Black Mountain!

At this instant, an unknown number of eyes suddenly opened in China! They looked incredulously towards the direction of the Four Great Joint Pools! In a villa, there was an approximately ten-year-old youth who wearing a suit and leisurely sampling wine. A young girl around sixteen years old was in the middle of massaging his temples.

He seemed young, but his expression and eyes appeared to have weathered many countless moons, as if they were an old, secluded well, serene and without ripple. Without warning, his hand

shivered, and his goblet rolled onto the floor, spinning. The red liquid within it spill over his entire body!

“A Red Spider Lily blooms... A Core Formation cultivator has fallen?!” In the next second, he had already appeared on the balcony outside the room, looking incredulously towards the direction of the Four Great Joint Pools!

“A Core Formation cultivator has met their end?” At the same time, in Guifang Province, on a mountain that had underwent an untold number of years, there was [coffin that had hung suspended](#) here for several hundred years. As the tremendous qi flower completely exploded at the Four Great Joint Pools, a cracking noise rang out from the suspended coffin, and a pale hand like that of a corpse lifted the cover. An emaciated old man donned in the clothes of a Qing dynasty official sat up in shock, looking towards the direction of the Four Great Joint Pools in a daze.

“Heaven Eye!” Meanwhile, at the river bottom of Shanghai’s Soothharkener Palace in a several-meter wide maelstrom formed from river water, an eye no less than a meter shockingly appeared, looking towards the direction of the Four Great Joint Pools.

Normal people would be incapable of sensing it, but late-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators and above could all perceive it! That in the sky... like a wave, there were layers upon layers of raging, frantic qi fluctuations! It was like the stormy battering of waves on the shore, scouring China’s lands!

They could also see... in the direction of the Four Great Joint Pools, white qi converge into an alabaster flower. Right now, the unfolding petals seemed to remind everyone that there was a Core Formation master who had passed on into immortality!

“This... is Senior Jadewave?” A woman standing on a balcony said shrilly in shock.

“As expected, he tread into the Core Formation realm... however, he’s actually died now?” In Xichuan Province, there was a

beautiful girl wearing an evening gown, her hand holding a goblet trembling incessantly.

“He was oldest-living one at Core Formation! Who was able to cause his demise?”

“Core Formation falls, and the Red Spider Lily blooms... This... has never been witnessed in China for over two hundred years!”

Simultaneously, at a villa, in the wake of a roar just like a dragon's, the entire building thunderingly collapsed. A resplendent streaming brilliance charged straight into the sky like electricity! In the villa, of everyone, not a person dared to drive. Several tens of people were all half-kneeling on the floor and said loudly: “Respectful partings, Ancestor Floatingcloud!”

The throne room doors of China's Forbidden Palace suddenly separated. A vermilion phoenix issued a clear and shining cry, illuminating half of [Beijing's seat of government](#)! Afterwards, it faded away at the horizon's extreme.

“Respectful partings, Ancestor Hiddenscent!” Two women in the style of ancient palace maids knelt on the ground and said in unison, their foreheads touching the ground.

The Core Formation masters were on the move! The demise of a millennium-old Core Formation demon; its hidden secrets... Even Core Formation cultivators would be incomparably tempted!

Before all else though... they couldn't allow another to seize it first by any means! Otherwise... even a Core Formation master wouldn't be able to shoulder the self-detonation of a thousand-year-old demon core!

I almost mistranslated this. Fun fact: Mosasaurus in Chinese is literally Azure Dragon. If you want a better visualization of a mosasaurus, look up the one from the movie “Jurassic World”. Not gonna lie, the thought of a cultivating dinosaur made me laugh.

悬棺 - hanging/suspended coffin. Copy paste this word and look

at images. This is what I believe the situation of the coffin might actually be, versus hanging in midair.

In the story, nearly every mention of Beijing is actually more along the lines of “Beijing seat of government”, which is referring to the central governing building in Beijing, but it's a mouthful to say that it. I figure just shortening it most of the time is along the lines of saying “Back at Washington/Paris/Berlin” and is implicit in meaning. This time, the scene is actually in the governing seat building.

# Chapter 97: Spirit Treasure Vortex (1)

---

“Kill!” In that moment the Red Spider Lily bloomed at the lakeside of the Four Great Joint Pools, the illumination of brilliant rays of qi ought to have rendered all people incapable of opening their eyes, yet neither Xu Yangyi and God Ming shuttered their gaze. On the contrary, right now, they happened to both erupt with heaven-shaking bellows and rushed towards the volcanic lake in unison!

Everyone recognized that at most... they only had half an hour of time! If the demon core wasn't seized in hand by then, this opportunity would cease to be any of theirs! Once one approached, the hand could not be otherwise stayed!

“Open the tenth coffin!” God Ming issued a screech that tore at his throat and split his lungs. At this moment, before a genuine treasure, his style of a cultured and refined gentleman was nowhere to be seen!

This time, none of the old men stopped him. Following his order, one of the old men's pair of eyes suddenly erupted with faint green light. Ensuingly, he began to echo with a mechanical cracking from head to toe. From his center... his entire person began to neatly separate, revealing countless elaborate gears within and as well as... a fine bronze coffin.

Countless hairs dug into the small holes on the coffin that were dense like pinholes. In the wake of a rumbling explosion, the coffin responded and splintered apart. It was a boy around ten years old wearing an exceptionally spacious red long gown. His hair was dishevelled and there was a blue talisman stuck on his pale forehead. Chained in silver shackles, he shrieked quietly and rushed towards Xu Yangyi like a marionette, together with God Ming!

The puppet's skin was snowy white, yet its eyes were completely

black. Its mouth seemed to lack a lower jaw, open wide to a terrifying degree! The inside was packed with rows of sharp teeth! Soundless cries bubbled forth from its throat, stirring the qi and blood to instability and the mind to disorder!

“Severing Dragon Typhoon!” Similarly, Xu Yangyi snarled furiously. The time was at hand, a struggle for every second on the clock! He was unable to tolerate a smidgen of reservation! His silhouette was like a shooting star overtaking the moon, charging straight to the lake! Both of his hands assumed a clawed stance, his blue veins bulging. In the air, they dragged out ten several-meter white scars like a spiraling hawk, forcibly lacerating the night sky!!

A single blow! All that was sought was one strike! In the two of their hearts, they were both exceptionally cognizant. The moment of contact was bound to be an alternation of killing moves, the mere beseechment of a single strike would determine victory and defeat!

“Hissss...” At this time, the boy’s throat suddenly expanded and his arteries swelled. In the next second, three snake-like tongues darted out from the black-eyed youth’s mouth, travelling across several tens of meters! Not before long, the tongue surprisingly weaved a net in the sky, dexterously unimaginable! It unwaveringly obstructed Xu Yangyi’s path of advance!

“Chrip!” The tongue net was spread thick with countless inch-long mouths. Already, they opened up collectively! Ghastly white teeth revealed inside, a menacing screech was issued concurrently! Those who stepped forward would die!

Xu Yangyi’s gaze was like lightning. Presently, each judgement was incomparably important. However, courage was even more of the essence!

Those who obstruct me shall be slain without mercy!

His figure didn’t diminish in the slightest, and he furthermore didn’t halt in step like an ordinary person because an object had



suddenly appeared in front of him. Even now, the net seemed completely worthless against him! On the contrary, his speed grew even faster! Like a shooting star streaking across the sky, his charge was directed towards the tremendous net that was a few tens of meters in size!

“Rapid Shadows!” At this moment, both of his hands suddenly formed into fists! A white qi halo erupted in his hand with a rumble, and two qi blades rushed forth without pause! The large tongue net practically served to be of no obstacle whatsoever, already turned into shreds of ground meat, flying down!

Yet God Ming didn’t even bat an eye! He hastened towards Daomaster Jadewave’s corpse with full strength. In addition to the talisman stuck to his leg, his speed was even faster than before!

Likewise, Xu Yangyi didn’t spare a glance. Whoever grasped onto the origin crystal first would be the one standing at the very end!

In the midst of his peak speed, he seemed to feel time become sluggish, and the strong odor of blood wafted through the air. This was from the wounds he had gained from the small, fine piranha-like mouths biting into his body as he crashed his way through the tremendous net!

With the distance already drawn back by a small segment, Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply, absent of any hesitation. In the next second, his hand condensed a blaze no less than a few meters!

“Ten Cardinals Red Lotus!”

Within his body, qi soared like a tide. He was simply apathetic as both of his fists attacked with full might in the wake of his charge! Yet he was not advancing... he was retreating!

“Wind Brandishes Traces!” Snarling in fury, his speed quickened by three-to-four fold in an instant! In the sky, like a human-shaped cruise missile, he borrowed the recoil of the Ten Directions Red Lotus and the sudden acceleration of the added Wind Brandishes

Traces! He dragged a long flame tail, roughly a single-fold faster than God Ming and rushed before the corpse!

“Bar his path!!!” God Ming only caught sight of an inconceivable shadow surpass him all of a sudden. Almost without a thought, he let out a furious roar that shook the four stretches.

The three old men had long since rushed towards the corpse, however, their speeds were far from comparing to Xu Yangyi and God Ming. Under the swooshing sound of countless strings collapsing, God Ming’s long hair that filled the sky forcefully flung something, surprisingly tossing over the black-eyed boy!

Woooosh... With the sound of fluttering paper, the talisman on the red-gowned, black-eyed boy’s forehead immediately transformed into fiery stars, igniting spontaneously, unprovoked by the wind.

“Hiiisssssss!!!” In the air, the boy let loose a heart-shaking screech! As it flew over on course, his entire body grew larger as if he was filled with air! Followed by a hissing noise that rained down incessantly on the ear, all of his clothes burst apart into shreds and his body warped! The flesh of his shoulder endlessly changed, and just as he was about to fall, he had already morphed into a colossal monster, one that was a full three meters in height. Growing the heads of a tiger, bear, and pig, along with the tail of a snake, it was covered from snout to tail in black fur!

“ROAARRR!!!” The chimeric tiger-bear-pig faced towards the heavens and bellowed angrily, unleashing the dissemination of a corporeal sound wave! Xu Yangyi’s pupils needed; he could neither advance nor retreat!

Boom! The qi and blood of his chest roiled, directly slamming into the boy’s wall-like sound wave. He rigidly gritted his teeth: “Dragon Biting! Rapid Shadows! Tiger Crane!”

“Be broken! Break! Break!!!” Xu Yangyi only sensed each and every one of his entire body’s cells come to a boil! The time of life

and death was drawing near. Confronted with a great enemy, such a battle that sent the adrenaline soaring, and combat that could counted by the second, all he felt was his heart expedite!

Boom... A hair of a ripple emerged before him, and subsequently, both of his hands whirled madly like electricity. The front of the formless barrier immediately fluttered with over a hundred ripples!

Bang! A second. Barely a second! The sound of glass shattering rang out before him, and the roar of the three-headed demon beast came to a sudden end! His reactions seemed to have never been so quick. He calculated it a bit and knew from God Ming's despaired face that even like so... it was too late!

The disparity was roughly half a second! He... would enter the demon physique half a second earlier than God Ming! Without any pause, right now, time was everything. He observed the tremendous, mutilated wound become increasingly closer, so that he could even smell the towering visceral stench! The bones inside and the internal organs were all visible!

“NOOOO!!!!” God Ming was in a state of madness, his hair like a tide. Followed by his blood-dripping screech, all of it pierced towards Xu Yangyi! It was a silver ocean! A sea of death!

Xu Yangyi carried not the slightest bit of hesitation, already charging towards the massive, labyrinth-like wound!

“NOOOOOO!!! BE GONE!!!” God Ming's shriek reverberated in the entire dead volcanic lake: “I demand your death!!!” Over twenty puppets had soon flown over to Xu Yangyi's side! The three-headed demon beast was already less than ten meters away!

So long as it was an instant... All that was needed was a mere twinkling! At this time, Xu Yangyi's heart suddenly throbbed violently!

“Puh!” A mouthful of blood sprayed out from his mouth without

the least forewarning! He stood frozen in shock. In a split second, his body's strength had vanished. This mouthful of blood wasn't from an injury, but rather... the blood in his body that was inexplicably billowing.

He looked on in astonishment towards his qi sea. That stone-like seed was actually cracking open at the seams at this critical moment! An indescribable sensation bubbled up in his mind, a kind of thirst... for qi, a longing for flesh!

In an instant, sudden enlightenment surfaced in his mind. Standing here, he could clearly feel the erupting waves of shiver-inducing qi within the wound of the tremendous, several-hundred-meter long greater demon. It was the fluctuations coming from the demon core. However, these fluctuations were unexpectedly drawn to the strange seed within his qi sea.

"The heavens aid me!" Originally, God Ming was grinding his teeth and urgently rushing forth, yet he suddenly saw Xu Yangyi who was standing still for approximately two to three seconds! The time was brief, but it was already enough! His twenty-plus puppets had charged behind Xu Yangyi!

"Kill!" Beneath his ecstasy, with an explosive shout, over twenty swords pierced towards Xu Yangyi's rear in unison! As for Xu Yangyi himself, he seemed not to have regained his wits at all! At this moment of grave mortality, his body trembled without warning. In a twinkling, he regained clarity. Behind him, over twenty squalls of wind pierced directly towards the middle of his back, mingled with a deathly screaming!

"Damn!" At surprisingly such a pivotal juncture! He immediately charged forwards, yet it was still too late. By the interweaved cries of iron and metal, over a dozen wounds, so deep that the bones could be seen, emerged on his back!

"Fuck!" He rigidly clenched his teeth, his forehead slick with cold sweat in no matter of time. He had promptly escaped, so there

existed no mortal wounds. However, blood torrented out, drenching his camouflage uniform in mere moments!

The sharp pain caused his back to ache with a scorching heat! As for the camouflage clothing on the upper half of his body, it had also been torn to shreds under the criss-crossing of these twenty-plus swords! It had turned into rags hanging off his body.

God Ming sighed deeply, his gaze becoming ice-cold: “This game... should be concluded...”

“Puppet Transfers The Self.”

Just as these four words were said, a sudden fuzziness appeared in the space between one of the twenty-plus puppets and himself. Already, he had exchanged positions with that puppet, standing at Xu Yangyi’s side.

Without anyone’s discovery, at this moment, as blood gushed out from within Xu Yangyi, the blood within Jadewave’s body headed towards his wounds in a devilish manner, rising against the current and upwards! It was like a blood-sucking leech had caught the scent of its natural predator!

Xu Yangyi faintly panted; he had lost too much blood, yet there existed no feeling of dizziness. There wasn’t enough time for him to consider why as he calmly stared at the enemy before him.

Likewise, God Ming didn’t even bat an eye at him. The matter seemed to return to the starting point once again. Both of their hearts were burning brightly as if lit aflame. Xu Yangyi wordlessly swept an eye over his watch. The time... A whole two hours and tens minutes had passed.

With the passage of these ten minutes... there was at most an additional ten minutes until other cultivators were bound to hurry over! Late-stage Foundation Establishment... as well as the Great Circle, even Core Formation cultivators! They would not permit any Qi Condensation cultivator to divide the soup of Daomaster

Jadewave's legacy!

Xu Yangyi and God Ming already stood at the gateway of a demon core. How could they possibly be willing! Once the demon core was made to recognize a master, no one could take it! In daring to take it, was it not to venture the taste of an origin crystal's self-detonation?

## Chapter 98: Spirit Treasure Vortex (2)

---

“My god...” Xu Yangyi and God Ming were none the wiser that at this moment, the entire scenic area of the Four Great Joint Pools had seethed over! All of the ordinary people were in a state of passions!

They shrieked and were frightened. Just now, the body of an unknown creature, so large it was terrifying, had appeared here all of a sudden! Ensuingly, two men like immortals used moves that they could only read about in books, moves that could only be seen in movies!

“Did anyone take a video?!”

“What the heck is this?!”

“I’ll Weibo it later! T-this is an unknown creature!”

“Are they immortals?!”

“There’s actually such a thing in this world?!”

Old Zhou and Old Fang stood up before the propped-up digital video recorder, terrified out of their minds. They dared not believe in all that they watched!

What... was that white tide that filled the sky? What was that exploding giant flower high up in the air? How were these two people able to radiate white light? And even fire?

“T-this isn’t real...” At the volcano mouth of Old Black Mountain, a camping youth knelt on the ground like he was making a pilgrimage, shuddering from head to toe: “This is an immortal... A true immortal...”

Xu Yangyi and God Ming weren’t worried about everything in the surroundings whatsoever. Now that events had arrived at this stage, how could things be gotten away with! Since power had been displayed before mortals, then let it be displayed! When matters

came to a head, bold action was needed. A Core Formation origin crystal could not be set aside by any measure!

God Ming stood among the sword dance of his twenty-plus puppets. With the three-headed demon beast stationed at vanguard, his white hair waved about madly, and he suddenly laughed: “I have no time to tarry with you...”

“This next blow will send you on your way!”

“Just how I like it.” Xu Yangyi licked at his lips. Within his body, a frenzied sensation became stronger and stronger in his qi sea! He had to employ his fasted speed to end the battle between the two of them!

Within these five minutes, everything had to come to a close. Two minutes to take the origin crystal, and three minutes to leave.

“God Ming’s Supreme Dao...” God Ming inhaled deeply, the surrounding qi around his body flaring: “Falling Sunlit Cloud Violesence.”

Buzz... In his surroundings, all the puppets were like twenty-plus funnels, frantically sucking in the the qi in the environment! As for his mouth... because of the qi he had absorbed, a thumb-sized bullet of spiritual light had astonishingly congealed. Furthermore... it was still progressively becoming larger!

Right now, THIS was his true trump! One of the hidden aces in his hand!

“Ten Cardinals Red Lotus...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze grew solemn. This was the most troublesome person he had encountered in the middle-stage Qi Condensation realm!

At the core of his heart, God Ming took a long sigh. This move was quite fearsome. Extremely fearsome. However, just by barely relying on this technique, he held confidence to strike down the other! Above all... He silently stroked the ring on his middle finger. Inside, he still a Phaseshift Talisman; he had absolute certainty



that he would leave here!

His sole miscalculation was that during the decryption, such a great matter had surprisingly occurred! He could only willfully take out the tenth coffin, otherwise...

In the next second, his pupils suddenly needed!

“Life Sacrificatio.” Following these words, God Ming discovered to his shock... that his opponent’s two hands began to burn with raging flames! In an instant, the oscillations of the surrounding qi reached a degree that caused his heart to tremble in fear!

This was Xu Yangyi’s ace! From the beginning until now, Life Sacrificatio had only been used once in a location that God Ming didn’t catch sight of! And thus, this was the winning bullet!

“Die!” This qi fluctuation forced God Ming’s eyes to bulge in shock and brought his heart to sheer terror! No longer was this within his calculations, his forehead dripping profusely with cold sweat. Never did he ever expect that his opponent would actually be able to raise the might of this divine ability once more!

Followed by his angered bellow, over twenty balls of spiritual light converged into a skull-sized orb of purple radiance in half a second. Its power was racing thunder manifest as it arced towards Xu Yangyi like electricity!

Simultaneously, Xu Yangyi brandished both of his hands. With a roar... a two-headed fire dragon charged at the light orb!

A pair of dragons had left the sea, multiplying their might to exhibit supreme power!

Boom! The two divine abilities collided together. The radius several tens of meters around the demon corpse trembled! The charred odor in the air rendered people incapable of opening their eyes! The vigorous eruption of the qi wave had caused everyone’s hair to go flying back!

A ray of fiery splendor and the sharp cry of a dragon’s roar burst

within both of their hearts. Immediately... all the lake water came to a boil!

Huuuummm... It wasn't limited to just the lake water. The pair standing before the demon corpse's wound detected... that the entire demon corpse was rocking! Starting from just moments ago, the three-hundred-meter-plus demon corpse... was swaying ceaselessly! This could absolutely not be the doing of a Qi Condensation divine ability!

"This is..." Xu Yangyi's gaze twinkled as he looked at the lake bottom. He could sense that these tremors originated from the lake bed! In the next second... the whole demon corpse began to swivel about! It seemed an invisible hand was moving it! Xu Yangyi immediately looked towards the lake water. His eyes abruptly contracted!

At the center of the lake water... a tremendous vortex... a maelstrom no less than a full two hundred meters in size swiftly took form. At the core of the vortex, a shiver-inducing qi fluctuation began to faintly erupt from within!

At the lake bed, light originally ought to have not existed there, however, at the heart of the vortex, a thousand rays of treasure light ascended! From the blackness... it passed through from the lake bottom that was so deep that the floor could not be seen... dying the lake surface an expanse of golden resplendence!

Inhaling deeply, Xu Yangyi nearly moved instinctually at first, yet immediately stopped, standing in place like a nail! This... was the treasury of a thousand-year-old demon... on the precipice of rising to the lake surface! Countless spirit stones and spirit treasures, a spiritual tempest birthed by the lost control of spiritual sense!

"Not good!" In his mind, God Ming was in a state of great panic. He was just about to make a break towards the shore and flee, but the moment he glanced at Xu Yangyi, a stormy fury reached the

zenith in his heart!

Why... are you still not hiding?! If I hide and he doesn't, wouldn't I just be handing over the Core Formation origin crystal, a supreme treasure perhaps not even chanced upon once in a thousand years, into his hands?!

Whoever shirked back because of this spiritual tempest... This was tantamount to announcing their elimination! By virtue, only by hiding on the shore could this black hole-like maelstrom be completely departed from!

"I... will also not hide!" His eyes nearly flushed red. Cackling miserably, his voice hoarse, he forcibly stood his ground!

At this instant, at the several-thousand-meter volcanic lake of Old Black Mountain, all cultivators and ordinary people could see the lake water like that of a funnel. An immeasurable number of shrimps, crabs, and fishes had been stirred into the nexus of the funnel by its imposing natural power. It formed a shiver-inducing black hole of death!

The heart of the black hole seemed to be the gargantuan mouth of a demon. As the terrible qi fluctuations became increasingly distinct, the treasure light below became greater and greater!

Ruummmmbbbblee... Waves of sound like muffled thunder could be heavily heard from underneath. As of now, this volcano, dead for a thousand years... was erupting once again!

RUUMMBLE!!!!!! Three seconds later, a golden spirit spring rose straight into the sky! Its height... was five hundred meters! Its width... was two hundred meters! It was an earth dragon spewing water! An immortal coalescing a spring!

This wasn't the golden color of spring water... but rather the countless magik artifacts, talismans, and medicinal elixirs accompanying the spiritual spring rushing directly into the air! There were hundreds of them, thousands! Ten thousands of them!

Among them, there was even an endless number of spirit stones! They made up a figure that towered by the tens of thousands! Brilliant and scintillating, it was a blossom of color, a myriad hues of purple and red!

It seemed that at this moment, a small crack had split open in the heavens, releasing the vast, butterfly-esque stars that laid within. In the sky, a prismatic rain drifted. Falling down on the earth, it overlooked the startled stars scattered in color, flying in the sky as the whirling sound of rain arrived!

Crash!

At this moment, not a person present dared to say anything!

Thonk... A tourist sluggishly sat down on the grass, his faltering hand dumbly pointed towards the hundred-meter fountain.

“T-this is... a miracle...” Somewhere else, there was an old man, his throat dry. Regardless of the two figures on the lake at this moment... no matter that tremendous monster... and despite the presently flaring kaleidoscopic foundation... Everything was like a dream!

Each ordinary person had been amazed by the magnificent view before their eyes. Crystalline lake waters formed a fountain that gushed into the sky. Bending moonlight below, it reflected three layers of shimmers, dispersed into a pearl. Amidst it, endless treasures, spirit stones, and even more supreme treasures were flushed out by the spring water! It glittered with an enchanting radiance.

Boom! It was unknown which bottle of precious medicine shattered, but an invigorating, delicate fragrance dispersed in the air. Simultaneously, a void shadow of a purple flower emerged in the surrounds of the spring waters, like fresh flowers blooming in full at the side of a fountain.

Bang bang bang...

Boom boom... Crack crack crack... Countless brittle echoes began to ring out from the several-hundred-meter tall fountain. A limitless number of pill elixirs, talismans, and magik artifacts transformed into dust among such battering. Afterwards, they became layers upon layers of rainbow brilliance, dying the fountain... a display of fireworks and lanterns, fiery trees and silver flowers!

In the Four Great Joint Pools, Xu Yangyi, God Ming, and everyone was motionless! They were waiting!

Shing! A sharp sword ruthlessly tore through Xu Yangyi's left shoulder. Inside the vortex, there was anything and everything! There were pill elixirs, Daomaster Jadewave's flesh that had ripped and crumbled apart because of the treasury, and all kinds of magik artifacts and talismans! There existed opportunity, but also great danger!

Blood quickly pervaded the maelstrom. Xu Yangyi rigidly clenched his teeth, not saying a word. On his body, stomach, thighs, arms, and shoulder... there were already ten-odd bloody holes. So injured was he that a human shape could not be made out, his sole fortune that they weren't fatal wounds. It was nothing more than heavy injuries.

At the center of the vortex, a boundless number of blades, swords, and armors had been tangled together by qi into a whirlpool formed of lake water, furling up into a sword barrier! As for Xu Yangyi, he was in the thick of this barrier.

Sharp pain charged into his brain from his whole body. His body had long since been pierced clean by the edges of over a dozen magik artifacts! Blood poured without inhibition, yet he still didn't retreat a single step!

A Core Formation Dao Master's hidden treasury had become a sky-spouting fountain. Even though the magik artifacts within lacked the control of spiritual force, their piercing degree was

equivalently not something a Qi Condensation cultivator could endure.

Yet if he gave in, without sacrifice, from where would it be obtained! Without abandoning oneself and life, how the hell would a millennium-old origin crystal be struggled for!

He gazed across the vortex, likewise, God Ming was situated inside. The other's injuries were hardly any less severe than his! The twenty-plus puppets had all broken apart, only the three-headed demon beast left in control, yet minus a head! As for God Ming himself, he had early on transformed into a bloody figure. His body arts were inferior to Xu Yangyi's, and the bloody holes on his body... amounted up to twenty!

Yet his opponent... did not flee, as well!

"Fall back..." God Ming's throat bore a bloody raspiness, and he grinded his teeth: "I am one of the successors... of God Ming... If you leave here, I will carry your sentiment until the end of time..."

"Fellow Daoist, our Ming Clan is one of the five great demon clans! You have to think this over clearly... If you leave now, I will bear your sentiment, as if nothing has occurred! However..." He wiped blood at the side of his lip, thirsty for the sanguine fluid. His hair was white, he wore a suit, and he carried a folding fan, yet he simply lacked a single shred of elegance and refinement of his most initial style.

His teeth grinded audibly as he clenched them: "But so long as you dare to continue, you shall be faced with the Ming Clan's hunt, no rest until death! Unbounded for all of eternity!"

## Chapter 99: Spirit Treasure Vortex (3)

---

Xu Yangyi licked his lips, his mouth heavy with the reeking of blood. His lung had just been pierced through by an unknown magik artifact... His breathing had become full with bloody chunks...

Grimly lifting his chin, he faced towards the side and spat out. He looked at his counterpart, and the crook of his mouth suddenly curved: “That’ll have to wait and be put off until later if you’re even still alive.”

His intent to kill didn’t need to be explained. Whoever obtained the demon core first wouldn’t only be able to borrow the support of the accumulated ocean of qi within the thousand-year-old origin crystal and experience [a resurrection in both flesh and magical energies](#) in an instant, but would moreover be capable of forcing all to tread carefully!

Regardless of Qi Condensation, Foundation Establishment, or Core Formation... None ventured whether or not the possessor would cause the demon core to detonate!

“Hahaha!” God Ming faced towards the sky and let loose a long laugh, yet before he could finish laughing, he began to cough loudly as his wounds were aggravated: “Good... I will be waiting on you!”

There was no further talk. They were waiting... on the eruption of this great treasury, a thousand-year-old hidden treasure. Even Daomaster Jadewave’s demon form was incapable of supporting it, transforming into shreds... However!

The demon core... would absolutely not shatter! Soon... very soon, it would appear on the water’s surface! Both of them could feel... down below, there existed a fist-sized object that happened to breaking through layers of obstacles. Five seconds... four seconds... three seconds... Afterwards, it was certain to be spouted

out!

This blanket of golden prismatic light, already at a speed too difficult to distinguish with the naked eye, dyed the top layer with a light-blue halo from the bottom!

Xu Yangyi's gaze turned solemn. There wasn't anyone who knew, but even now, he was teetering on the edge of collapse. He used Innersight; the small stone in his qi sea was shockingly covered with cracks! A feeling of bloodthirst and frenzy that he was almost hard-pressed to contain battered each of his muscles as a few minor cracks swiftly invaded the inside of the stone, sliver by sliver. He gritted his teeth and forcibly stifled the discomfort in his body, unwaveringly locking onto the bottom of the vortex.

The inside had already been contaminated red by a tremendous amount of Daomaster Jadewave's blood, calculated by the ton. Of every one of the wounds on Xu Yangyi's body, the lake waters that carried blood seemed to find a place to drain into! He was in a state imperception... but drop after drop of pure demon blood quietly flew into his wounds in the wake of the seed cracks becoming greater. It was like it was watering the seed!

Two seconds... one second!

The two of them riddled with scars, their gazes flashed explosively without warning. Simultaneously, God Ming and Xu Yangyi charged towards the heart of the vortex with speeds almost irrespective of former or latter!

At the same time, a rumbling followed like the sound of rolling thunder. At the heart of the maelstrom, the bottom radiated an aqua-blue color.

Bang... A bolt of white lightning began to echo from within the vortex. Subsequently, there was a second and a third! There was... an immeasurable number! A fist-sized, aqua-blue sphere noiselessly appeared at the vortex bottom. In its surroundings, there was no water, wind, or trace of life. It seemed like nothing



could approach it. It existed there, yet it appeared not to exist there, isolated from the world.

In the instant it emerged, in the vortex, supremely dense qi, qi from the shatterings of millennium-old treasures, unexpectedly transformed material! Bolts of qi lightning resonated in this cyclonic maelstrom!

The wind was so furious like it could uproot mountains! The rain so overflowing like it could flood rivers! In an instant, the area below became a nest of thunder spirits!

Xu Yangyi's heart seemed to palpitate with each rotation of the origin crystal. Based on the light, the magnitude of terror from the qi inside it could be felt. It wasn't the same as Vermillion Snow's half-completed product. Only perfection could be used to describe this origin crystal.

"It... can only belong to me!!!" Accompanied by manic cackling, God Ming continued to charge, both his eyes scarlet-red. He had left the three-headed demon beast at his side. Xu Yangyi's speed wasn't slower than his in the slightest, but at this moment, what followed was deranged laughter: "Explode!"

At this twinkling juncture of life and death, God Ming towed the three-headed demon beast towards Xu Yangyi in rapid advance. In the wake of a loud noise, the beast exploded at the side of Xu Yangyi's body!

"Fuck!" Xu Yangyi's pupils suddenly contracted! The demon beast's self-detonation was an additional wound on top of his injuries, but this wasn't the most crucial matter at all! The most pivotal was...

The qi shock wave born from the detonation had forcibly brought him across and pushed him out! The origin crystal... was there at the bottom of the vortex!

"Mortal!" God Ming laughed heartily: "You are undeserving to

touch this object!”

“When I refine it, the Ming Clan will be certain to personally visit your doorstep to demand repayment!!! HAHAHA!!!”

God Ming’s laughter reverberated throughout the entire vortex. At the beginning, the two of them neither gave way to the other. For a time, he had once believed his opportunity was lost, yet by a freakish combination of factors, mistakes and errors of both Yin and Yang, he had arrived at this moment!

In this terrible storm, everyone had already been run haggard by scars. Although the loss of the tenth coffin’s explosion was great, how was it comparable to a Core Formation origin crystal? The self-detonation this time was sufficient at last to fling away that repulsive tick!

“It... is mine!” Already, God Ming’s speed was so fast that it was difficult for the naked eye to distinguish! The closer he neared the vortex bottom, the more magnificent the blue color was! Even now, he could sense the colossal might like holy light within the origin crystal within reach!

His hand—already his smile crazed and his eyes scarlet red—extended with the quickest speed. Behind him, Xu Yangyi had been battered away a good ten-odd meters by the detonation of moments ago. Presently, he had taken the lead, yet there was still ten meters!

It’s mine... It’s mine! This supreme treasure belongs in the possession of I, God Ming, by all rights! I am THE favored son of Heaven and Earth! So long as I touch it... it will immediately hail me as master! Even if a Core Formation master stands before me, they won’t dare to make a move against me! Confronted with another Core Formation cultivator’s origin crystal, do they venture whether I dare not to detonate it?

He didn’t look at Xu Yangyi who was behind him. A sliver of a merciless smile hung at the crook of the latter’s mouth. As his

hand neared closer and closer, Xu Yangyi took out his watch again and looked at it.

“Two hours and twenty-three minutes...”

Xu Yangyi closed his eyes and softly shouted: “Li Zongyuan.”

Swoosh! There were two slender tongues, yet they were incomparably precise! At the instant God Ming’s hand was on the verge of touching the origin crystal, they suddenly shot out from above the vortex! One tongue had hooked around God Ming’s middle finger with incredibly accuracy! The other tongue... had hooked his entire soul! The Core Formation origin crystal!

God Ming was stunned. He almost dared not to believe in this tremendous reversal. Time appeared in slow motion. The fist-sized origin crystal, in the wake of his eyes, along with his slowly opening mouth, and following his line of sight... flew upwards.

The enormous disparity between reality and dream caused the inside of his brain to become an expanse of empty whiteness. It was only after a full three seconds did he react!

“NOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!” A miserable scream that tore at the heart and split the lungs echoed in the whole lake bottom!

This was Xu Yangyi’s true ace! From the beginning, he had been looking at his watch, always waiting upon the time when Li Zongyuan would regain consciousness! From the start, he hadn’t been planning on having a proper talk with God Ming!

Presently, they were in the water! And Li Zongyuan had just completed his evolution moments ago! There only one opportunity. Xu Yangyi had kept on enduring, enduring it for now! In his spiritual sense, he had finished communicating with the other early on.

God Ming exhausted his full strength as he charged towards the direction from where the tongue had disappeared like he was insane! However, as soon as he turned around, he saw a giant fist!

Boom! The fist heavily smashed into his face!

Bang! At the same moment, a bolt of qi-condensed thunder struck Xu Yangyi's body with a rumble!

"Puh!" A mouthful of blood sprayed out from the gap of his rigidly gritted teeth. His whole body was covered with countless wounds of all shapes and sizes, bubbling into a spring of blood in an instant!

All of a sudden... an unknown number of his bones broke. Even his qi sea was madly shaking, no end in sight! He simply dared not to examine his own injuries. Mustering his strength, he used all of his strength to raise his fist and pound it into God Ming's face for a second time!

Yet he hadn't discovered that at this moment, the small stone inside his qi sea was close to completely shattering! A shiver-inducing aura wildly launched from there within!

"Mongrel!" With his eyes maddened, God Ming leaned his head. His wounds were even more critical than Xu Yangyi's! Without one or two years rest, they were fundamentally incapable of being healed... Before this thought even vanished, a wave of fierce aching graced his nose. Subsequently, it extended to his entire body! Already, Xu Yangyi's fists were falling down on him like raindrops!

"Puh! Bah! Hurk!" Arrows of blood flew in the air. The qi lightning was so dense that it was solid. Inevitably, there were several that struck the two of them. Xu Yangyi tenaciously clenched his teeth. Even though the roots of his teeth were trembling, by no means would he relinquish this opportunity to defeat the other!

The golden core's disappearance right before his eyes caused God Ming to lose his supporting pillar. It was an absolute drop from the paradise of heaven to the inferno of hell. He... was already without the slightest will to battle!

Boom! Boom! Boom! Like he was beating leather, Xu Yangyi's final punch brought God Ming's body to drag out a long bloody line in the sky. God Ming wailed miserably as he fell into the vortex.

It wasn't that Xu Yangyi was unwilling to use qi, but rather... currently, he had long since been without a dividend of qi! The combination of Life Sacrificiation and Ten Cardinals Red Lotus added on top of withstanding the spirit treasure vortex formed from the ruin of a thousand-year-old treasury had in the end delivered him to the stage of a lantern deplete of oil! His qi sea was a void. So long as he wanted to employ a smidgen of qi, even to come bubbling around his fist, he would feel a stabbing pain akin to a scraping blade!

In his body, pain swelled forth like a tide, injury upon injury. He moved his hand straight behind him, his line of sight somewhat nebulous, and gently cried out: "Li Zongyuan..."

His voice was marred by the blood that spilled out incessantly from between the gaps of his teeth.

"Mongrel!" God Ming flew back ten-odd meters, yet surprisingly stood up in madness. His fingers stirred, and he learned of an emptiness on his middle finger! The storage ring on his middle finger was absent!

That damned gremlin! That fiend of an inferior bloodline! It had actually plundered his storage ring and ran off as he was preoccupied with the human refuse before him!

Damn... Damn! Dammit! Damn it all to hell!

His rationale had already been agitated to insanity! To lose something and then regain it, to gain something and then lose it.... It was right before his eyes! In but a mere blink it was a difference of two to three meters, but in the end, it was still not his!

He had already been beaten to the extent that his facial features were beyond all recognition; even standing was challenging. Blood

flowed from his seven apertures, and he looked on with wide eyes... at Xu Yangyi's hand that stuck out towards his rear. A tongue delivered a fist-sized object that radiated blue light into the other's hand.

“AAAHHH!!!” God Ming turned towards the sky and shouted furiously. That item... was the origin crystal that had almost fell into his grasp just now!

“Origin crystal?” At this moment, several hundred kilometers away in the sky, a blazing rainbow paused, seemingly in a state of immense shock. However, at the next instant, it rushed towards the Four Great Joint Pools with an even swifter speed!

“Did someone... attain Jadewave's Core Formation origin crystal?” Likewise, a few hundred kilometers elsewhere, in a different direction, a flush of startlement appeared on the face of a woman wearing a qipao. Followingly, with the settling of her next step, she was already a thousand meters away!

At every spot her high heels fell, a lotus was born at each pace. Rootless lotuses swayed gently in the sky as if they were supporting her advance. At the same time, there were also several charging auras cursing loudly!

“This bastard!”

“Who could possess such fortune! To actually seize a Core Formation origin crystal?! One that was even before us!

“Urgh... A Core Formation origin crystal... A Core Formation origin crystal! This son of a bitch's luck is straight out of this world!”

Xu Yangyi's sole hand held onto the origin crystal. At this instant, his entire body was already dripping with blood from head to toe, his breathing labored like an ox. However, in that splinter of time that he grasped the origin crystal, he knew that everything had been worth it.

Streaks of blue qi, like a river entering the ocean, quickly and violently flooded Xu Yangyi's qi sea, and his body was restored at a breakneck speed. In nearly the blink of an eye, qi immediately poured into his body, filling him to the brim! It moreover continued to rejuvenate him at an incomparable frightening rate! It was practically the same as pressing the resurrection button in a game!

Just a note I want to make for people who study Chinese as well. Author tends to use some gaming slang every now and then and “resurrection of flesh and magical energies” is literally “Full Meat, Full Blue” (满肉满蓝). It was confused at first, but quickly made the connection to a red hp bar/blue mana bar.

## Chapter 100: Spirit Treasure Vortex (4)

---

At this instant, Xu Yangyi ceaselessly went from heavy injuries to a state of gentle breathing in the blink of an eye. An origin crystal was the total bodily quintessence of a Core Formation greater demon! Regardless of whether it was used in medicine, substituted as a supreme-grade spirit stone in a Spirit-Focusing Formation, or used casually as a “maximum HP/MP speciality potion” in the midst of battle, it was a universal panacea!

With it, there was absolutely no concern of qi exhaustion during battle! It was tantamount to a second life! A protective talisman! Whoever obtained it first would be the one able to stand at the very end! That was the situation. But what was even more important...

Was the fear of the consequences!

Right now, he gripped a nuclear warhead in his hand. Whoever dared to come first would be the first to experience the flavor of millennium-old Core Formation greater demon’s self-detonation!

Merely, he had not yet discovered... that in all the lakewaters, a blood pearl was still being congealed, drop by drop, flying into his wounds... while the origin crystal’s qi was directly flowing into his qi sea and being completely absorbed by the small stone.

Presently, within his mind, a crisp cracking echoed out! The stone in his qi sea, that seed, had completely fragmented apart into pieces at this instant!

Boom! Just as Xu Yangyi softly stabilized his body and footing, he suddenly staggered! An incomparably ancient memory bubbled forth in his mind! It bore a nebulousness, yet it was incredibly clear to him. He carefully ruminated it, but was unable to remember a thing!

The most important was that there seemed to be some object in



his qi sea that was making a droning noise. There was simply no time to observe what it was. Subsequently, his skin began to split open without warning, inch by inch! Nonetheless... there was no pain!

There was no presence of blood and there was moreover no pain. His eyes saucered in shock as he looked at his hand. After the skin cracked open... green leaves began to unexpectedly sprout on his hand at an unhurried pace!

Swoosh! A green leaf unfurled, and in the blink of an eye, the degree of his skin crumbling apart strung together from his arm to the rest of his entire body!

Swish swish swish...

The sound of countless green leaves rang out, as if they buried a billion-year-old organism, blossoming from within his body!

“M-Master!” Li Zongyuan’s frightened-witless voice screeched out from behind him: “T-this is demonization! Y-y-you’re a, you’re...”

A demon!

Li Zongyuan dared not to give voice to this word. This was because this answer was too outrageous to be thought of! Xu Yangyi couldn’t possibly be a demon! From childhood to adulthood, there wasn’t the slightest hair of a connection between any of his kin and demons!

“I-I understand... Why I suddenly evolved w-was because of when y-your blood fell onto my body at the mountain top... Y-you...”

“Shut your mouth!” Xu Yangyi exploded into shouting without warning. At this moment, the killing intent in his eyes was crystal clear to Li Zongyuan. Li Zongyuan further realized that if he continued to speak, he would undoubtedly die!

This man before him who appeared to be truly transforming into

a “plant man”, he... was a fiend capable of overturning a successor of this era’s God Ming! Li Zongyuan fundamentally dared not to disobey the other!

God Ming looked on in despair at Xu Yangyi who was standing ahead of him. Noticing the other’s body as tree leaves spread forth, he suddenly faced towards the sky and laughed bitterly!

“Hahaha! HAHAAHAHAHA!”

“Hehehe...” His laughed seemed to exhaust his body of all his strength. In a flash, he was even feebler, and he used his bloodshot eyes to pin Xu Yangyi with his gaze: “You’re a demon!”

“You ARE a demon!”

“You yourself are the mark that you have always slain!”

“I know... Hahaha, I understand... So it turned out that Daomaster Jadewave was killed like so... Mongrel... You are truly fortunate, yet truly unfortunate... You are a demon... YOU are a demon! Hahaha! You’re actually a demon!”

Yet the one laughing until the end wasn’t him. The most crucial thing... His life-saving Phaseshift Talisman was inside his middle finger’s ring! As for this ring, it was presently in the other’s hand!

“Mongrel...” After a while, his mood seemed to settle down. Xu Yangyi looked indifferently at him, and his hand was already clenched to a deathly tightness. He could only take the boundless resentment and rage in his heart and bury it at the very bottom. “There will be a day when my Ming Clan inevitably takes your head...”

Swoosh! Before his voice even fell, his head had soared high into the air. The flying head still maintained the speaking motion of the mouth.

Severing Dragon Typhoon.

Spurt. An arrow of blood scattered across the sky and dyed Xu

Yangyi's body and face. He didn't even bat an eye.

"Then I'll be waiting." Xu Yangyi coldly pulled his hand back, licking his lips that were covered with a bloody flavor. Afterwards, he tightly clenched his fist, studying the green leaves that were still growing on his person! What was this?

No... It couldn't be, it was an absolute impossibility that he was a demon! He... was a demon slayer! Since he was eight years old and onwards, this was his identity! It wasn't true... He could not be by any measure or pace! He gritted his teeth, grabbing at a green leaf, yet felt it to be rather strange. Such a situation was akin to gripping one of his own fingers. He sucked in deeply and tore it off!

Swoosh! A bloody vestige stretched across the sky!

The leaf had been torn off, but nonetheless, a bloody mark suddenly spurted high into the air from his body! It seemed as if he had torn off a slab of flesh! A layer of skin! Sharp pain abruptly rushed into his brain, yet not a sound made its way past his throat!

"M-Master! D-don't! A demon form is the body... Gurk!"

Before his voice even fell, Li Zongyuan spat out a mouthful of blood and flew back several meters. Prompt, he dared not to continue speaking again. Xu Yangyi used gaze like he had seen a dead man as he looked at Li Zongyuan, causing the other to break out into chills from head to toe. After ages, Xu Yangyi moved his gaze away. However, like they had suffered the effect of the sharp pain, the green leaves on his body surprisingly receded away, layer by layer.

"This?!" Li Zongyuan's eyeballs went round. What the heck is going on? If master is a demon, once the demonization begins, there's no way it can be paused! This is an ironclad law of demon development!

The more awesome the demon form, the purer the bloodline. This was a natural law impossible to break! But if it

wasn't, then what were those leaves! Did he perceive it incorrectly? No... He shouldn't have. Just as those leaves emerged, he truly felt a sliver of demonic aura. Although it was quite minute, it was extremely distinct!

In Xu Yangyi's qi sea, the seed was already gone without a trace, the green leaves further unseen. He didn't say anything, calmly standing at the center of the vortex like so. As he sensed the surrounding thunder progressively diminish... the maelstrom gradually dissipated. He clenched his hand, looking at his body that was normal as always. After a brief moment, he laughed.

"I knew it was a hallucination."

"I am myself, Xu Yangyi, a demon slayer. There can be nothing else."

His mind seemed to come to serenity, and he leapt out from the vortex that was on the eve of fading away. Clutching God Ming's head, he stood on top of the Mosasaurus corpse. It was over... it was finally finished. So long as he left his spiritual sense brand on the origin crystal and made this masterless origin crystal acknowledge his aura... none would come to rob!

At the far end of the sky, ten-plus earth-trembling auras swiftly drew near. This was a warning. A warning that no one was to make a move on Jadewave's hidden treasury. Nonetheless, he didn't care.

Why had he fought with his life on the line for the origin crystal?

How can I abandon my great efforts because of your shred of spiritual pressure? Why even cultivate then with such a self?

Although this time's decryption was in no way as fierce as his battle at Heavens Law, the degree of tension has surpassed it! Twenty minutes was the determination of life and death. He and God Ming had exercised the talents of both of their entire bodies. Any one of his advantages had to be exhibited to the max. In the

end, thanks to his overlooked demon familiar, fortune had come to smile upon him!

“Hehehe...” He watched the ten-plus auras at the sky’s edge that were like starfire, silently laughing. With his blood, he smeared it on the origin crystal’s surface. In an instant, the origin crystal erupted with a dazzling blue glint. In the lake of the whole dead volcano, a ring-shaped, blue spiritual light akin to a tremendous ripple turned the entire world into a cerulean color!

At this moment, the myriad sounds went silent without exception.

All gazes fell on the dead volcano. Countless ordinary people stared on with wide eyes and mouths ajar at the ripple-like diffusion of blue radiance in the sky. Below Old Black Mountain, they fiddled with their cameras, blankets draped on their bodies and clutching at quilts... All of them looked awestruck at the sky.

A blue flowery design, like a Snow Lotus of the [Tian Shan mountains](#) blooming at night, emerged at the summit of Old Black Mountain. Afterwards... similar to an enormous shock wave, it loudly spread outwards with a speed that eluded imagination!

“Oh...” A youth looked sluggishly at the mountain top, his mouth hanging open. The scenery in the sky was comparable to an immortal’s descent. An extremely terrified shriek came involuntarily from the inside his mouth, and his legs went somewhat weak. In his pupils, a cerulean ripple exploded forth in the blink of an eye!

“W-what is... this...” A family of four, parents and their children, held hands. The husband was already thirty-seven or thirty-eight years old. At this moment, he began to recall a time of ten-odd years ago when he was in college, the day he had watched his first movie. That time... was like now. Over a hundred people assembled at the top of a building and watched the brilliant blue that billowed out from the clouds in the darkness.

“An immortal... A demon?”

A pair of young lovers held each other hands, the man dumbly looking at the sky. Presently, the ground had already turned into a world of blue by the illumination of the tremendous blue ripple. The woman responded without the slightest awareness: “Thanks...”

“[Jesus Christ... Sweet Mother Mary!!!](#)” The hands of a pair of foreign tourists shivered. The camera trembling fiercely in their hands took aim at the sky: “Is t-this a Chinese marvel? A natural scenery exclusive to this place?”

“It’s so magical...”

“I can’t believe it...”

Swish! In the sky, a formless soundwave seemed to flash through! A blue halo suddenly erupted! A youth looked at the field before himself in shock, and the whole plain rang out with rustling. This sound was accompanied by the swift outer proliferation of the sky’s curtain overhead! In a twinkling, it arrived before him!

Swoooooosh! Below Old Black Mountain, the clothing of countless people all floated upwards! The women’s hair flew back abruptly! It was like the Old Black Mountain had transformed into the eye of a hurricane at the moment! It launched a wind pressure towards the four reaches, far and near!

Boom! Similar to a giant, transparent storm hand, it directly rushed past in front of everyone!

“Oh! Heavens!”

“What’s going!”

“Has the sky collapsed?!”

One second... two seconds... three seconds, it wasn’t until after they felt that the wind had subsided did people lower their guarding hands that tightly covered their eyes. They looked

around their surroundings, trepidation present in their hearts.

Night. It was still night. The mountain was still a mountain, and everything of moments ago seemed to have not occurred.

“The mountain...” A foreign tourist hanging onto his camera looked at the mountain in a daze: “What the heck happened... at the top?” Presently, it was already half past two in the early morning, yet there wasn’t a single person sleeping at the Four Great Joint Pools.

One person started to run off and then there was a second... Everyone below began to dash forth! They only had one sole objective, the dead volcanic lake of Old Black Mountain! What had transpired there? Why had some spectacle taken that location as its nexus? What was there within?

Their burning hearts carried the thirst to solve this riddle, and they madly rushed towards the Old Black Mountain! They would forever be unknowing that at this instant, the surrounding campers of Old Black Mountain’s dead volcanic lake were absent of the suspicions like theirs, empty of their seething passions, rather... they were all silent!

They had witnessed everything! All of it! The several-hundred-meter fountain that had gushed high into the air! The people below simply wouldn’t see the corpse of the massive “alligator”, a few hundred meters in size! The immense thunder vortex!

The eyes of each person erupted with flame. So nervous were they that dared not breathe, closely standing side by side together. That was because... there was still a person present. A man raising a head! Although he was drenched in blood from head to toe, and despite his faintly indiscernible face... none dared to advance!

There wasn’t a person that dared to question, and there was no one that ventured to walk forward. There existed no person who dared to loudly clamor!

Tian Shan mountain range is located at the far west of China. It covers Xinjiang, Kazakhstan, and Kyrgyzstan. It is known in english as Heavenly Mountain or Mountain of Heaven. I left it untranslated as such, since it is weird to say “heavenly mountain mountains”.

I changed the dialogue here. The author here uses english literally in the raws: “ohgod... ohgod”. I felt I made it more “authentically” english. Nice contrast between all the “God” and “Heavens” I have to translate for the Chinese speakers in the book.



# Table of Contents

## [Archfiend](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1: Disciplinary and Investigations Unit](#)

[Chapter 2: M-Files \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 3: M-Files \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 4: Venture Pharmaceuticals \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 5: Venture Pharmaceuticals \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 6: Venture Pharmaceuticals \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 7: Friendship Boat](#)

[Chapter 8: The Most Complicated Seems Most Simple](#)

[Chapter 9: Berserker \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 10: Berserker \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 11: Earthburst Golden Lotus \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 12: Earthburst Golden Lotus \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 13: Qi Sea \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 14: Qi Sea \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 15: Apology](#)

[Chapter 16: Submitting Grades](#)

[Chapter 17: Manager Su \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 18: Manager Su \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 19: Manager Su \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 20: Manager Su \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 21: Leaving for Heavens Law Branch \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 22: Leaving For Heavens Law Branch \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 23: Leaving for Heavens Law Branch \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 24: Multi-Level Marketing](#)

[Chapter 25: Vermilion Snow](#)

[Chapter 26: Branch](#)

[Chapter 27: Unrivalled Beneath the Heavens \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 28: Unrivalled Beneath the Heavens \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 29: Assailing the Middle Stage \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 30: Assailing the Middle Stage \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 31: Assailing the Middle Stage](#)

[Chapter 32: Assailing the Middle Stage \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 33: Graduation Ceremony](#)  
[Chapter 34: Jade Chest \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 35: Jade Chest \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 36: Battle Royale \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 37: Battle Royale \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 38: Battle Royale \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 39: Battle Royale \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 40: Battle Royale \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 41: Battle Royale \(6\)](#)  
[Chapter 42: Battle Royale \(7\)](#)  
[Chapter 43: Paragon!](#)  
[Chapter 44: Faction Showdown \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 45: Faction Showdown \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 46: Faction Showdown \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 47: Faction Showdown \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 48: Faction Showdown \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 49: Asura Grounds \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 50: Asura Grounds \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 51: Asura Grounds \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 52: Asura Grounds \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 53: Emperor Armament \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 54: Emperor Armament \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 55: Emperor Armament \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 56: A Fleeting Life like an Empty Dream \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 57: A Fleeting Life like an Empty Dream \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 58: Time Flies By \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 59](#)  
[Chapter 60: Time Flies By \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 61: Chinacultivation.com \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 62: Chinacultivation.com \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 63: The Eternal Alchemy Canon \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 64: The Eternal Alchemy Canon \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 65: The Eternal Alchemy Canon \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 66: Black Kill Order](#)  
[Chapter 67: An Old Friend](#)  
[Chapter 68: Chase to Kill \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 69: Chase to Kill \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 70: Chase to Kill \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 71: The Mountain God Moves](#)

[Chapter 72: Cultivation Civilization \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 73: Cultivation Civilization \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 74: Refining the Heart \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 75: Refining the Heart \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 76: Refining the Heart \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 77: A Millennium-Old Demon](#)  
[Chapter 78: The Middle Stage of Qi Condensation \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 79: The Middle Stage of Qi Condensation \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 80: The Middle Stage of Qi Condensation \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 81: Ten Cardinals Red Lotus](#)  
[Chapter 82: The Demons' Qi Clan](#)  
[Chapter 83: Meeting Old Friends \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 84: Meeting Old Friends \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 85: Meeting Old Friends \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 86: Meeting Old Friends \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 87](#)  
[Chapter 88: Jadewave of the Joint Pools \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 89: Jadewave of the Joint Pools \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 90: Jadewave of the Joint Pools \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 91: Jadewave of the Joint Pools \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 92: Jadewave of the Joint Pools \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 93: Seven Stars Executing Demon \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 94: Seven Stars Executing Demon \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 95: Seven Stars Executing Demon \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 96: Seven Stars Executing Demon \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 97: Spirit Treasure Vortex \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 98: Spirit Treasure Vortex \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 99: Spirit Treasure Vortex \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 100: Spirit Treasure Vortex \(4\)](#)